



**eBooks
Teach**

This Novel Provide It

Team's

PROLOGUE

I am a result of a polygamous marriage, A marriage that was a thorn in my Mother's heart. Each time when she told her story a part of her bled, it's something that she couldn't date back to without coming back with an ocean of tears. She was young at that time and very innocent, she told me that her upbringing was one that I should never envy. She lived in a small village, a village that undermined women. See during those times, Girls were brainwashed into thinking that marriage was their highest calling. Theywere discouraged into seeking education as means to better themselves. At home, theirfemale elders were strongly advised to teach them nothing but domesticated work. You had to be taught how to clean, cook, do the laundry as early as the age of 12. Even though in those times girls were oppressed, My Mother never gave up on her dream of going to school. She wanted to be different, she wanted to be educated. They had a mobile clinic that would come at least 3 times a month to provide medical care and attention to those who needed it, she told me that the female Nurses who came stole her heart. She envied them and how they would carry themselves, not forgetting their eye catching uniform. She always made sure to wake up very early and do most of her chores before the mobile clinic arrived, if her Father wasn't around at home her Motherwould finish up the chores and she would rush to the

clinic to observe the Nurses while they went about with their work. She would say and I quote:

"Mani that was the only place that gave me peace, the only place that made my world fascinating. It gave me hope that one day I would be like them"

Her Mother was very supportive of her dreams but her Father shared different sentiments. He was looking forward to her Daughter marrying a wealthy man since they were poor, he made sure that my Grandmother taught her everything that she needed to know in preparation for her to get married. My Mother and her Mother had it all figured out, they agreed that when she turns 17 she would run away and go to Johannesburg the city of gold and made her dream come true. Her dream of becoming a Nurse. I would like to say yes she did run away and fate was on her side like a husband leading her through and supporting her dream but.. That was not the case. As soon as she turned 17 and was ready to make her escape unfortunately some old man took an interest in her, he eyed her for the very first time when he saw her Emhlangeni formally known as the "Reed dance" for young virgin women who are coming out of age..

Umhlanga (Reed dance) is a very popular ceremony amongst the Zulu and Swazi tribes. It's where unmarried and childless girls leave their homes to gather for the eight days event in a certain village. With Swati girls they gather at a place known as "Ludzidzi" Royal village, whilst the Zulu girls theirs is at Nongoma in KwaZulu-Natal. It was first

introduced in the 1940s at Swaziland under the rule of Sobhuza the second, in adaption to the much older "Umcwasho" ceremony. The culture went further on to be popular in most parts of South Africa not forgetting it's introduction in KwaZulu-Natal by chief Goodwill Zwelithini, who is currently still the king of the Zulu tribe. All girls are obliged to undergo a virginity test before they could participate in the reed dance ceremony. If you pass the test, then you will be allowed to participate in the dance. The girls are required to wear traditional attires which include skirts that are made of bead work, they also wear Izigege and izincuba a type of clothing that reveal most parts of their bodies such as the buttocks. Umhlanga is every Mother's joyful moment and every Father's pride. It shows that their Daughter is respectful of the culture and rules which are withheld in the household. It's how Parents continue to be respected by other villagers, unlike when your Daughter's pride has been taken out of wedlock then you become a joke of the village and all respect is gone. When such happens, other Parents are forced to drive their Daughters away from home in order to restore their dignity since she had brought shame into their home...My Mother's marriage was the only thing that brought joy into her Father's heart, that was the only moment that he had ever been proud of her. Her being married off to that man despite the age difference meant that her family was going to escape the life of poverty and most girls were going to look up to her and most would be jealous, not forgetting the village as a whole respecting the Ngwenya household...

Prior to my Mother's marriage the old man had two wives already and the first wife was said to have an evil heart and she was very related to witchcraft, rumors circled around that she was able to keep her man with witchcraft. Although my Grandfather knew the dangers of having her Daughter married off to that man, he didn't care. All he cared about was his status and the respect that he was going to get from the village. Indeed the negotiations and the traditional wedding were a success, People had plenty to eat and drink. She told me that people ate so much meat that they even had to take some to their homes. They had slaughtered a cow and 4 chickens. Even after the wedding was over my Grandfather had another cow and chickens slaughtered for villagers to come and eat just for bragging purposes. The man had taken out 10 cows for Lobola. He had also given them one of his farms, My family became the most richest family in the village when my mother got married. Villagers bowed down to them, they worshiped the ground that my Grandfather walked on and most men begged him for jobs at the farm. He went from a nobody to an important person in the village because of her Daughter's marriage to a rich man who was almost his age..

She said that things were okay when she moved in with her husband and her sister wives, although the first wife didn't like her that much but her and the second wife were

very close. Along the way she learned that the reason why her husband married her was because he wanted her to give him a Son, seeing that both wives only gave him Daughters. He had hoped that a young wife would give him a son that he had desperately been wishing for but things didn't go according to how he had planned. My Mother's first pregnancy it was a boy but he died shortly after birth, she and the second wife stood firm together that the first wife was the reason behind my Brother's death. I mean if my Brother survived that meant he was going to inherit everything and the first wife couldn't have that, she couldn't have a young girl take over everything that her and her two girls were meant to inherit.. A few months after my Mother fell pregnant again, unfortunately she miscarried and again the first wife was suspected in having a hand. She just didn't wanna give up. The cycle went on my Mother fell pregnant again and I was born, I was said to have survived because I was a girl. The first wife allowed for my birth to be a success since her witch Aunt "already saw" that it was a girl.. After my birth things started to go bad for my Mom. Her husband that loved her dearly began to withdraw from her, he started to treat her like shit because he was disappointed that he was a Father to yet another girl again, life in her marital household was no longer nice. She thought about going back home but that would bring her Parents shame and her Father would disown her, so in hopes of starting on a clean slate she ran away. She ran away with me and she didn't even have much with her other than a small bag with my nappies, she didn't pack anything for herself..

She had to save me from growing up in an abusive environment, she had to put herself first before anything.. Young as she was with a baby and being on the run wasn't easy, but then that brave step led her to the city of gold. A city that her and her Mother always talked about, a city that was meant to welcome her by making her dream of becoming a Nurse come true...

How she ended up in Johannesburg was that she was found walking on the side of the road at night by a truck driver, the driver had a heart to stop and gave her a lift, on their journey to Johannesburg she told him the truth and he felt sorry for her. When she told that part she would say "Mani God didn't leave me, God heard my prayer. If that driver didn't stop I don't know what would've happened to us".. When they got to Johannesburg he allowed for her to live with him in a room that he was renting up until she was able to stand on her own two feet. When she was busy seeking independence, she was drawn closer to the stranger that helped her that night, that's when a romantic relationship was initiated between them. When she thought that her problems were over he started getting really sick and then he died. We learned later that he was HIV positive, his job that kept him away from home made him to indulge his sexual hunger by sleeping with a lot of women and some he never used protection. We also learned that

he had a church of kids that he never really took care off. When he died we were back to square one, my Mother had to hustle her way through in providing for me. By God's grace she got herself a job from a very well known and wealthy family, the Ndarha family. She became their servant. Life became better but it was not long until tragedy visited us again, my Mom got sick and then she passed on. She had kept it from everyone that she was HIV positive too, she never even bothered to seek medical attention until she was gravely ill with full blown Aids. She wanted to keep it from her employers, because she thought they would kick her out if they found out that she was HIV positive. When she passed on I had to step up and take over from her..

01

I ask myself almost everyday how my Mother managed to land herself a job as a servant for the Ndarha family. The most powerful, well respected, and rich family known around Gauteng. No random citizen would ever get a job like that, not even if they served their loyalty on a gold platter. Each time she would say and I quote "Mani.. The things which are impossible with men are possible with God, that's how he got us from the slums of Johannesburg to a more beautiful place" I've come to realize later in my life that actually the first part of her speech was quoted from the book of Luke 18 verse 27 (nkjv). She taught me to be grateful for the life that we lived because no one would've provided us with such other than God. He saw our sufferings and decided to show mercy upon us.. My Mother made everything seem beautiful, no matter how ugly it was. Even if the Ndarha family was said to be impolite to her, she would never mention it. Instead, she would try to find beauty and gratitude of that situation..

Our servant's quarter was very beautiful and welcoming. We had a television set, we had a bathroom, a mini kitchen and we had two bedrooms. Despite the title that it carried, the Servant's quarter became my home from when I was 6 years old until now.. My Mother had to prove herself and her loyalty to the family, being a family that's always in the public eye we had to be perfectionist in everything that we did. Our lives were rehearsed, I had to familiarize myself with confidentiality and discreet from a very young age, no one and I mean no one was supposed to know what happens behind closed doors, we were sworn to secrecy.

Now a little background on the Ndarha family:

Uta Isaac Ndarha was part of the struggle, him and some dear friend of his David Mdluli were comrades who committed their lives in fighting the apartheid system that had oppressed our kind. Though they were pretty young at that time but their spirits and willingness to make our country a better place weren't young at heart. Unfortunately

when he's friend got arrested UTat'Ndarha left all that he knew in pursuit of something different, by then his heart had been stolen by a beautiful lady named "Nontsikelelo". As if tragedy couldn't stop following him, their relationship was short lived, her family hated the fact that UTata was doing nothing with his life but persuing a passion that was going to disappear like a puff of smoke. They didn't want their Daughter to be married to someone who was a comrade, who might get arrested anytime. It didn't matter to them that he had left that life, the title and deeds of being a comrade never left him. When they broke up, UTata worked a few odd jobs to make ends meet so he could help his family financially..He came from a low class family, he's Father was a Pastor and his Mother was never employed. He had no qualification whatsoever as he dropped out of school in grade 9, to be a part of the struggle. In his early 30s he took over his father's church who had passed on from a heart attack, he changed the name of the church to "Shield of faith ministries" and that's how he became a minister. Fate brought him back his long lost lover, when they reunited uNontsikelelo already had a baby from her previous relationship after her failed relationship with UTat'Isaac. It wasn't very difficult for him to take her back with the Baby, by then Nontsikelelo was a qualified teacher and not forgetting that she was very beautiful. They both decided to leave their place of birth in the Transkei, for a better life in Johannesburg. That's when the gold in the city of gold fell on Ndarha's hands. Still a person who was very much interested in politics, he started his own political party named "The Independent party" while also starting another branch of "Shield of faith ministries" in Johannesburg. He struggled a bit to get support judging from the fact that there's a lot of political parties, but then with the help of his old friend David they joined forces and made the party a success. It wasn't hard for the party to be successful because his friend was now recognized as one of the people who fought during the struggle because of his jail time. To cut the story short, their political party went on to become an influential party, it shocked everyone when they won the last general elections and became the ruling party. They're currently still in power and they want to keep it like that for years to come. UTata agreed for his friend to take the presidency seat, after all he was the one who made the party to gain popularity and get a lot of votes. It was fitting for David Mdluli to be the president while UTata became the deputy president. He continued with the church to honour his Father's legacy, the church has grew since from then until now.. When the political party came into power, UTata and his wife were already blessed with two twin girls, they named them Xolelwa and Xoliswa.. Xoliswa is no longer a part of our lives, not because death took her away from us but.. Let's say that's a story for another day.. After the passing of my Mom the family decided to keep me since I had nowhere to go, my Mom had passed on when I was just 12 years old. I grew up in their household, life was good I was young by then and they played the Parent role in my life so I never felt that void of being

Motherless. Things were good and I mean very good until I turned 15, that's when Jojo and I started feeling something more for each other than typical Step Brother and Sister. Jojo is Nontsikelelo's Son that she came into the relationship with, and UTata raised him as if like he was his own. I thought that he was Jojo's biological Father but then he slapped him with the truth after finding out about our relationship, he was so angry at that time, that he beat us senseless. He beat us so bad that my body was bruised for at least two weeks or so. I was then sent back to live at the Servant's quarter in hopes that Jojo and I won't see each other that much anymore. We did stay away from each other for a month or two but then we got back together and we kept our relationship a secret. We kept it a secret until I turned 16 and Jojo was 19, that's also when he broke my virginity. We were so young and so very much in love, we had plans and we were going to make it out together.. It wasn't long until his Father found out again and this time he threatened to kick me out, Jojo who cared a lot about me decided to move back to the Transkei and lived with his Mother's family only if he's Father would still keep me around and that was the last I've heard of him. Before he left he promised me that he would be back for me when he has gotten his life in order but years passed and he never came back, Jojo never came back for me nor came back home but he still keeps contact with his Mother and his sister Xolelwa. I lost all hope of him coming back when I saw him acting in some Xhosa drama and that small role opened doors for him in acting up until he created and produced his own drama "Usapho". That's when it became the biggest thing that happened in the film industry. Now I just see him on social media, on Tv, and in the papers. The hate between him and his father or step father rather, was fueled more over the fact that Jojo's drama circled around the affairs of this family. He portrayed exactly what happens in the family behind closed doors, that was his revenge to the man that he hated so much. See uIsaac Ndarha is not the picture perfect minister or person that he claims to be, he is a cold hearted and ruthless man. He has physically and verbally abused Jojo from when Jojo was young, I'm guessing it was easy for him to do so because he wasn't his biological child. Nontsikelelo came to realize her Husband's true colours when he started getting rich, he totally changed but she couldn't leave. She was in this marriage too deep, she was enjoying the benefits and the good life that she allowed this man to abuse her Son. I thought he was only like that to Jojo I was shocked to witness him doing it to one of Daughters Xoliswa. When she came out that she was lesbian he did what he did best and that was beating her in hopes that he would get the "demon" out of her but Xoliswa never changed. She stood for who she was and what she believed in, that's when her Father sent her to the military and made sure that it's a military base that was very far from us. Unlike Jojo, we never heard from her. She never called nor wrote us, we don't even know if she's still alive.. On the other hand Xolelwa was saved by the fact that she was a pushover, she feared her

father more than anything in this world. She followed his rules and today she works at some government hospital as an HR, her Father got her the job and also blessed Xoliswa's fiancé with tenders. She is 21 years and she is set to get married very soon to an older man who was chosen for her by her father, this man is a minister of sports and recreation.. When it comes to me he started feeling somehow about me after the wholeJojo situation, I held on so that I could get my matric and leave. Maybe go study somewhere and never look back but.. Things didn't really go according to plan. After completing my matric he told me that it was pay back time, I had to take over and be theservant. Serve them for what they have done for me and my Mother, he even went as far as threatening me that if I run away he will find me and make my life a living hell. He will make sure that I don't get hired and when I have suffered enough to his satisfaction he will have me killed. I am 27 years of age and my life hasn't even started yet, my life revolves around the lives of my "Masters", after all I am the Servant's Daughter..

02

ARMANI

Host: we have come to the most important award of the evening, an award that broughtthis house together tonight. An award that you viewers at home have been long waiting for. Now to present the award for the most watched soap opera, put your hands together and help me welcome the living legend uMam' Valencia Mhlanga!

People started clapping their hands as Valencia made her way from back stage to the Mic. She is indeed a living legend, she has been on our screens since from 80s so I've heard.. She waited for the house to settle down. The Camera moved from her as everyone was still clapping and making noise, it showed us the Audience and then somehow it was stuck on Jojo for a few seconds. My heart literally melted, he looked sohandsome with his nicely trimmed beard and his wide smile revealing his pure white teeth. As I was still admiring him, his girlfriend leaned over and whispered something to him then my smile vanished. Rumors have been circling around that he was involved with a girl by the name of Nomfundo, she is a makeup stylist. At first I thought that it was just rumors until Jojo confirmed to the papers and on social media that they actually in a relationship after a few cosy pictures of them were leaked. Xolelwa came inrushing with a bowl of Marshallmellows.

Her: Is it finished? Did they announce the winner?Me:

Not yet

She threw herself on the couch next to me..

Valencia: first and foremost I would like to congratulate the winners who obtained awards for the previous categories.

She paused..

Valencia: It is such an honour for me to be presenting this award, this is the biggest award of the night. It is the heart of the whole ceremony. May we please have the nominees for the most watched soap opera.

Voice: The nominees for the most watched soap operas are:

Isibaya- Desireé Markgraa (Bomb Productions)

[Applause]

*

The Throne - Connie and Shona Ferguson (The Fergusons film)[Applause]

*

Uzalo - Gugulethu Zuma and Duma Ndlovu (Stained Glass Productions)

[Applause]

*

7de laan - Danie Odendaal (Danie Odendaal Productions)

[Applause]

*

Isidingo - Gray Hofmeyr (Pomegranate Media)

[Applause]

*

Isikhalo - Noncebo Molefe (Molefe productions)[NO

RESPONSE FROM THE AUDIENCE]

*

Usapho - Jojo Ndarha (MetFilm production)

[Applause]

**

Not only did people clap when they mentioned Usapho but they also made a lot of noise, so much noise that uMam' Valencia couldn't continue. The camera moved again to Jojo, though he was smiling but I could see that he was Nervous. Nomfundo's hand was under Jojo's strong arm, she was busy patting him a bit on the arm with her other hand.. I stood up and made noise too, since I was only with Xolelwa in the house..

Me: We taking it home!! It belongs home with the other two!!!! Wuuuuuuuh!! (screaming)I sat down..

Valencia: Wow so much love for Usapho

The Audience started screaming again and I quickly went on social media to check. I went on Facebook to check and there was a lot of comments..

[Noxi

]

"Guys which song are we going to collect the award with? I'm sure it's going to be Ridin'dirty? I hope it is"

[Andile]

"Hmmm guys can you see the Camera is focusing on Jojo a lot, they patrolling and trying to catch him ridin' dirty so they can write a headline about him tomorrow"

REPLIES:

Vuvu= "Hehe and soze mntaka Aunty, they won't catch us ridin' dirty" Musa=

"They trying to catch us ridin' dirty asinavalu LOL"

Buli= "But guys can you see how hot Jojo is tonight?? This guy gives me an orgasmeverytime when I see him"

Xolo= "I just imagine those strong arms holding my thighs while he thrusts in deeper and deeper, I swear I'll squirt on the first stroke .. Hmmm Nomfundo is lucky"

Sweeto= "Lol that insecure bitch is holding on to him for dear life! Sweety let him breathe it's an award ceremony not a night club no one is going to steal him"

The ridin' dirty thing is from a song. Since Jojo is no stranger when it comes to scandals she stopped explaining himself and now when they run an article on him he would just say "Here they're again, patrolling and trying to catch me ridin' dirty" so from thereon it just became our motto..

My heart was on my knees now, my mouth was dry. I was very nervous, if Jojo wins this award then it'll be for the 3rd time now.. Usapho is on it's last season which is Season 3. They wanted to close it with this award..

Valencia: And the award for the most watched soap opera goes too...

This is it, Xolelwa and I held hands as she Valencia opened the envelope and paused for a while.

Valencia: And the award goes too... Isikhalo by Noncebo Molefe!!!

Everyone froze for a moment, even the winner stood up after 10 seconds had elapsed. No one expected this and not too much noise was made. I speak for everyone when I say no one knows this Isikhalo person and drama, I have never even seen it playing on any of the mzansi magic Channels. The camera moved from the winners as they made their way on stage and it focused on Jojo for a while, I'm sure they were expecting a reaction from him that was going to sell their papers tomorrow but he furnished them with a fake smile and he clapped his hands in unison with the others to congratulate the winner..

Noncebo Molefe: Ohh my I don't even know what to say. I didn't expect this, I knew we were nominated but I didn't expect to win such a big award in a category that has the best in the game. I.. I'm sorry but we still trying to process everything.. Wow!! Uthixo uyaphila, Modimo o a tshela(God is alive)

Xolelwa: Armani.. Kwenzeké Ntoni? (What happened Armani)Me: I

am not sure

I took the remote and changed the channel..

Xolelwa: Isikhalo? I have never heard of it before, where does it even play?

Me: I have no idea

(Silence)

Her: Do you think uTata had something to do with this? I mean he has been trying to shut Jojo down because he hated Usapho

Me: Initially I thought so too but I'm not sure anymore, if UTata was behind this don't you think he would've done it a lot sooner? He wouldn't have let it run up to season 3

I clapped my hands once.. Me: I

wonder what happened!

I took my phone and checked what people were saying on Twitter:

Zinhle Langa

@Zee

-SA will always remain corrupt when it comes to the Entertainment industry, I wonder how many People they had to bribe to get this Award!

TeamUsapho

**

Mbuso Shongwe

@Mbu_Noxman

-Kudlaliwe ngathi la! We got played!#

TeamUsapho

**

Mpho

@ThatgirlMpho

-I am so disappointed hey.. SAFTA awards, what a shame!#

TeamUsapho

**

Viola Ndimande

@Vai

-ANC is no longer in power so who do we blame now? TIP (The Independent Party). They knew that Usapho was a drama that exposed the cruelty that happens in politics so now they trying to shut it down! They trying to shut us down!

**

Something was not right, something was definitely not right.. The first two seasons strongly focused on the affairs of the political family, what happens behind closed doors then season 3 focused on the corruption of political parties, how those in power are damaging our country. Season 3 was more nicer than the last season it deserved to win this award.. If uNdarha is behind this then I salute him, he is a snake he waited all this long to strike at the last moment..

—

JOJO

I wanted nothing but to be out of there, what I felt deep down was beyond what you described as "Anger" or "Mad". I couldn't just get up and leave, My assistant Tashi felt like it would add up to my good boy image if I made my way to the winner and congratulated her before we left. She wanted the media to capture that moment so people will think that I am not a sore loser. Where do I even start when it comes to Tashi? I could write a whole book about her. Tashi has been in my life for as long as I can remember, she has always been there as my assistant before I even had my own production company, she was there before I became this big shot that I am today. She basically runs my life or she is my life. She is the voice of reason, she handles my schedule, she is my unqualified psychologist and my sidekick. She's very smart, and knows what's good for my image, I trust her a lot.. She is a very beautiful blonde and spending so much time together we happened to have fucked a few times but it just ended there, no feelings were caught, no strings attached just sexually satisfying each other. We have kept that part of our life a secret, if the media finds out it'll be a story for days.. We arrived at my place and I was still steaming, I needed answers none of this was making sense!. Nomfundo walked in after me while being followed by Tasha, I took off my jacket and threw it in on the high chair. I then looked at Tasha...

I took a few deep breaths while counting backwards in my mind to calm myself down. I was so angry that I was even shaking.

Me: Did you see that?

She opened the cupboard and reached for the box of glenfiddich, she opened box and took out the bottle while Nomfundo sat on one of the high chairs observing the scenariocarefully. Tashi took a whiskey glass then poured a bit of the whiskey and handed it to me, I gulped it down without thinking twice. I banged the glass against the kitchen counter while clenching my Jaws. Just as she was about to pour again, I took the glass and threw it against the sliding door, it only broke when it came into contact with the floor..

Me: Fuuuuuuuuck!!!!!!!

That scared Nomfundo a bit..

Tashi shook her head and looked at me, she went and took out another glass while abreath escaped her lips. She poured again and I gulped it down..

Tashi: Throw that one again and see what's going to happenI

looked at her and she looked at me, she starred me down..

Me: Tomorrow you should make calls.. Find out what happened

She ignored me and got the bandages together with my fingerless gloves in one of thecupboards..

Me: We need to know what happened.. I'm not going to take this lying downShe took my hand and started wrapping the bandage around my knuckles..

Tashi: Tomorrow it's a Sunday.. We can't be making calls on a Sunday. People are relaxing and having nice meals with their families and friends, whatever we decide onhas to be on hold

Me: Sundiqhela Nataschi (don't start with me)

She tightened the bandage and then looked at me for a comment, I returned a seriouslook without saying anything until Nomfundo cleared her throat..

Nomfundo: I'll finish up with that Tashi thank you

Tashi had a smirk on her face..

Her: Then I'll pour myself a glass of wine and-

Me: And maybe you should go home.. It's late

Nomfundo got down from the chair and came all the other way around to us, she pushed Tashi out of the way..

Her: Thank you.. I'll take it from here (smiling)

Tashi chuckled while shaking her head..

Nomfundo continued with what Tashi had been doing but she wasn't doing it right, she was extending it to my fingers..

Me: You not doing it right

Her: How am I supposed to do it? Kahle kahle nje vele ngenzani la? (what am I even doing here)

I looked over at Tashi and she damn wanted to laugh but she stopped herself..I sighed..

Me: Tashi..

She looked at me, I waved my hand around..

Nomfundo looked at me a bit annoyed.. I didn't have time to deal with her nonsense right now, I had a lot to deal with. Nomfundo and I have been together for almost 6 months now, and she's not a fan of Tashi. I understand where she's coming from, no woman would feel comfortable with another woman being that close to her man..

Nomfundo: Good night Jojo

She walked away and I grabbed her by her arm pulling her back..She looked at me..

Me: Aren't we forgetting something?

Her: Good night

She walked away again and I still grabbed her arm, this time the grip was a bit tight...Her:

Ouch!!!

Me: You have a small arm.. Don't make me break it

She looked at me, a part of her wanted to be stubborn about this situation but a part of her convinced her to forfeit.. She got closer and perked my lips..

Her: Good night

I let her be, she took her small bag and walked upstairs.. Tashi almost choked on the wine while trying to laugh, I unwrapped the bandage and threw it on the counter..

Tashi: Maybe I should go too.. I hate driving at night

She gulped down the wine and took her bag, she calmly walked her way to the door while swinging her small ass two and fro. I made my way to her and put my hand around her small waist, she was wearing a sexy black dress. I turned her around and she put her finger on my lips while biting her lower lip.

Her: She's upstairs (whispering)

I swallowed and my eyes landed on her cleavage.. Her:

Good night

She removed my hand around her waist and walked away again, I was already getting an erection from thinking about the things that I could do to her. She opened the door and I closed it behind her, I roughly turned her around and her hair pin fell, most of her hair crowded her face. I parted it from her face and looked at her, her breathing was a bit abnormal as she didn't know what was going to happen next..

She put her hand on my cheek then lowered it till it landed on my belt, all along I'm still staring deep in her eyes and she returned the look. She unbuckled my belt and moved her hand to my already hard shaft. I leaned over as if like I wanted to kiss her but I didn't, I felt her warm breath against my lips. She squeezed me a few times and my hand moved up to her exposed..

[Removed]..

—

AMARN

I

Just when I was leaving the house to go and retire on my bed I was met at the door by the parents. They hardly around, most of the time it's just me and Xolelwa around the house. Their lives are very busy, I didn't know that being a Deputy president could be this tiring.. There's something about the Father of this house, though I have lived with him most of my life but I haven't gotten used to the person that he is. No matter how welcoming the environment is, when he walks in the atmosphere changes and he

makes everyone feel uncomfortable. For a minister I don't know why he doesn't work on his heart, I hate the fact that at church he keeps this facade of being a good religious leader but behind closed doors Isaac Ndarha is a devil

Isaac: Armani.. You still up?

They had to attend some dinner with a few other important people, they always have to keep appearances since the president cannot be in many places at once..

Me: I was about to go to my quarter and sleep I

moved back as they made their way in..

Him: What has been keeping you up this late? Me:

Xolelwa and I we were watching movies He

nodded and looked at his wrist watch..

Him: Well it's late I should go to bed.. Good night Me:

Good night

He walked away and left us at the kitchen. The only part of my happiness around here is Umama uNontsikelelo, she is a very kind person and she treats me like a Daughter not forgetting the kindness of her Daughter too.. Xolelwa..

She took off her fur coat and handed it to me

Her: Zihambe njani iHaward? (how did the awards go) I

swallowed..

Her: uJojo uyifumene la Haward? (Did Jojo win that award) I

cleared my throat and looked down..

Her: kukho ingxaki? (Is there a problem)

I looked at her in that elegant green dress, even with worry written all over her face she still looked beautiful..

Me: uJojo.. UJojo khang ayifumane iAward (Jojo didn't win) She

looked at me for a while and laughed..

Her: That was not funny

I maintained my serious expression and she saw that it wasn't funny..Her: If

Jojo didn't win then who did?

Me: Some other drama.. Isikhalo

Her: Isikhalo? Isikhalo santoni? Isikhalo saphi? (Isikhalo?.. What is that)I

shrugged my shoulders..

Her: kodwa.. Yeyake Armani andiyivisisi ncam' le uyithethayo, thetha into evakalayo(But..Armani I don't understand what you telling me)

She started blowing air on her face, trust this woman to be dramatic..

Her: uthi kwenzekela ntoni? Yatsho yonyuka ne high high (What really happened? My BP issky rocket high now)

We heard uNdarha calling from the living room..

Him: Nontsikelelo!!

Her: Ndiyeza Tata (I'm coming)I

gave her the coat..

Her: We still going to talk about this

Me: Good night

Her: Goodnight Bhabha

03

XOLISWA [TIGER]

I could feel the sjambok tearing my skin, those two Men who were holding my hands tight and pinning me down making sure that I don't get away couldn't even look at what was being done to me. The first whips were extremely painful, but as he continued I died inside. That physical pain started to feel numb. I couldn't feel anything anymore. This is not the first time he's done this, he has been trying to turn me "Straight" by beating me hoping that I might just wake up tomorrow and be what he wanted me to be but I couldn't, I wasn't going to live a lie anymore.. Everytime when this happens, my mother

would down herself with whiskey and my twin Sister Xolelwa would always be crying and begging me to turn straight so that he could stop doing this to me. Armani was the one who always cleaned those wounds, May God bless her heart. She has a very kind heart and she's the most sweetest Person I've ever known...

Her tears and her gentle touch would always confirm to me that the wounds were deeper than I had imagined, my back became a Map with all those scars that he left on me.. I would block out all the pain by listening to Armani's voice, she would be singing one song everytime when she cleaned my wounds:

"Angithandi ukuhlala lapho kune nkani khona, noma abanye bengahlala.. Nkosi ngithanda phezulu" (I don't want to live in a place where there's a lot of quarreling, even if others can remain but God I prefer being at the top)

She would sing it and sing it up until I fell asleep, although she a few years older than me but she was like a Mother to me. She did what my Mother couldn't, she cleaned me up everytime when that Man messed me up. I never saw disgust on her face, all I could see was sadness and sorrow, sadness of what her eyes were seeing. I remember the first time when he did it my body couldn't sustain the pain and that resulted in me having a loose bowel, I messed myself so bad and she was left to clean me up. She did with tears in her eyes, she did with a little prayer:

"God please lower your hand and have mercy", she was the best thing that ever happened to that house. I pray that one day she makes it out, I pray that her God will save her from that Devil's house..

I felt someone shaking me..

Her: Tiger wake up!

It was my Girlfriend, Lolitha..

I extended my arm and got her, she laid her head on my chest as my heart was busy beating fast.. Over the years I have managed to build a new life for myself. I had left the military in hopes to never keep in contact with my Family ever again, or have them track me down..

The reason why they call me Tiger is because I have a huge tattoo of a tiger's face covering my back, I wanted it to cover those scars that my father left me with..

Loli: Do you want a glass of water?

Me: Ya.. I think we should go and get that

Lolitha and I have been dating for almost 3 years now, she's a very nice girl and her family accepted me as one of their own. I feel very lucky to have her in my life, I wouldn't want to share my love with anyone else other than her... I am a tattoo artist, my little business is doing well, it pays the bills and I want to grow it further make it more than what it is right now. Lolitha doesn't know anything about my past and my family, I have hidden my real identity from her, her family and the friends that I have. I don't want anyone knowing me because I don't want my Family tracking me down, at the end of the day People extend gossip to others. The only person that I still keep in contact with is my Brother Jojo, he comes to visit me every now and then I also visit him at times but only when his girlfriend is not around, he also visits my place when Lolitha is not around..

She got me the glass of water..Me:

Thank you

Her: Same nightmare?I

nodded..

Her: What is it about?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I already told you Loli.. It's the same shit, a lion chasing me and at the end devouring me

I drank the water, I've been lying to her about this nightmare thing..

Her: Maybe you should see someone, maybe this dream means something I mean everynight it's the same dream, maybe your ancestors are trying to communicate with you or something

Me: Yeah right

Her: Peaches I'm serious.. I'm very worried about youI

sighed deafed..

Me: Fine I will see someone

Her: I'm serious T.. You hardly sleep at night because of this dreamThe

nagging was becoming a bit annoying now..

Me: Mom I'll go and see someone I promise

She smiled..

Me: Thank you

Her: For what?

Me: For being you.. And I'm sorry

Her: Sorry for?

I poured her with the remaining water..

Her: T what the hell?

Me: That's me getting back at you for.. You knowHer:

You had to do it now? At night? Gosh!

She took off her PJ top leaving me to stare at her small firm breasts, her nipples werehard probably from the coldness of the water..

She wiped herself with the PJ top busy going in circles around her breasts, she then looked at me busy admiring the moment. She threw the Pj top at me and walked away, Ifollowed her to the bedroom but she blocked me from entering..

Her: You taking the couch

Me: What? Come on!

She slowly closed the door..

Me: Don't play like that open the door

Her: Goodnight Peaches

Me: You can't lock me out of my own bedroom what's wrong with you?She didn't say anything..

Me: At least give me my phone then, a Pillow and a duvetThere was total silence..

Me: Loli!!

She opened door and gave me the pillow together with my phone..

Me: Locking me out of my bedroom that's messed up!Her: I

love you too.. Goodnight peaches

I didn't argue with her I went straight to the couch..

–

JOJO

The first thing I do when I wake up in the morning is to feed my two pitbulls before going out for a jog. My mornings start exactly at 05:30am, with a jog around the neighborhood..

When I got out of my yard, before I could even start stretching and preparing for my jog Paparazzi was already getting close. This is the very first time that they have come to my place, I don't even know how they bypassed the security because the neighbourhood is private residences. security is supposed to be tight. I really wasn't expecting this, especially at this time of the morning. I put on my hoodie hat, I was wearing a sleeves hoodie then I started with my jog. Unfortunately I had forgotten my headsets, they would've made it easier for me to ignore them . It was 3 of them, two were taking pictures and one was doing a video..

The one doing a video caught up with Me..

Him: Jojo good morning.. How are you feeling this morning?

In this type of situation Tashi will always say "Just ignore, they trying to get a story from you". I tried my out most best to ignore him..

Him: Do you think the awards were fair last night?I

still ignored him..

Him: How do you feel that a not so popular drama won?I

stopped and looked at him..

Me: Leave me alone

I started walking and he walked next to me, keeping a distance between us..Me:

Nditheni wena Saan? (what did I say)

Him: I just wanna know your take on why a not so popular drama won the award over

the most watched and loved drama in SA, are you losing your touch?Me:

Kwedini sundiqhela ikaka va? (don't fuck with me)

I made my way to him as he took a few steps back..Me:

Sundiqhela (Don't fuck with me)

Him: I just wanna know what-I

upped my pace..

Him: What? You gonna hit me now?

As he was walking backwards he tripped and fell, I grabbed his phone from his tight grip and threw it far while he's friends were busy taking pictures..

Me: I will break your jaw right here and right now! Wena saan try me!

He was in a foetal position and protecting his face by covering it with both his hands..I heard one of my Neighbours calling out.

Her: Jojo is everything okay?

Me: If I ever spot you around my neighbourhood again I will break your jaw, do you hear me?

He nodded...

I kicked him a little..

Me: Voetsek godukani! (leave)

Neighbour: Jojo what's going on?

It was Mrs Williams.. She tied her robe while making her way to the other two..Her: No

no no.. You can't do that here! Please this is a private residence

I kicked him again..

Me: Ndithe vaya saan! (I said leave)

Mrs Williams came back to us, and helped him up..

Her: You not supposed to be here, this is a private residence

Him: What about my phone? He broke my phone

Her: Sir Please leave.. Take your friends and leave or else I'm calling the police and let them know that you trespassing

Paparazzi 2: But We witnessed Jojo attacking him, we took pictures! We have proof

Paparazzi: Just because you rich and famous doesn't mean you should treat people like this!

Mrs W: Gentleman please leave, it's very early in the morning you not supposed to be hanging around here

I moved away from them as Mrs Williams tried reasoning with them, I got my phone and called Tashi:

"The subscriber you have dialed is not available, please try again later" Me: You

have be fucken kidding me!!

—

ARMAN

I

I haven't been very forthcoming about everything that I have already put out, there's one thing that I haven't mentioned. It's been a few years now or so, that I have been sleeping with Isaac Ndarha but not according to my own free will. If I remember correctly it started when I was 20 or 21, it got so bad that he caught feelings for me.. The very first time when it happened my body froze, I couldn't believe that after everything he has put me through, he would also result into taking advantage of me in this manner, so much so that I'm thinking this the reason why he doesn't want me to move out and start my life somewhere else. I don't know how but this has been going on for too long and at some point I stopped fighting what he was doing to me emotionally, I just gave in to this horrific sex affair that's going on. I mean what's use of fighting it if it's never going to stop until he says so. Although his age is no longer impressive but he is really trying to keep up his sex game, he is currently using some pills to make his erection strong and have him go on for a bit longer...

The only thing I hate is that he doesn't want us to use condoms, he got me some pills that I drink after sex to prevent fertilization, and if fertilization has occurred it prevents implantation. He gets me the pills every month and I drink them exactly after we have had sex.. I was on top of him with my hands balancing on his hairy chest, he had his hands on my butt busy helping me to go up and down on him.. [REMOVED].....

...

It would be a big mistake if he could pass out on my bed, It was almost 6:30am and bynow I am supposed to be in the house preparing breakfast because at exactly 8am weleaving for church. I wiped myself with the toilet paper and then flushed it down the toilet, I looked at the water as tears formed.. I didn't even have to blink for them to fall. Ihated myself for what was happening, Umam'Nontsikelelo is going to die if she could ever find out about this, I don't wanna mention how much Xolelwa is going to hate me. Iwant it to stop but how do I stop it? Ndarha is a ruthless man he is going to kill me if I try anything stupid, he tells me that all the time..

A knock at the door disturbed me..

Him: Mani?

I wiped my tears and got out, I closed the door behind me. He was buttoning his shirtwhile looking at me...

Him: Are you okay?

He extended his hand and wiped my tears..I

faked a smile...

Me: I'll be fine

Him: I love you very much never forget that

Me: I Lov-

I forced my throat to give me the voice to say those words..Me: I

lo.. I love you too

He leaned over and kissed me on my left eye..Him: I

will see you later at the house

Me: Okay

He made his way to the door and I followed him, I locked the door when he had gone outThen I sank down while hugging my legs and started crying.. I felt like I was going crazy, and I hated my mind and my body for honouring him and betraying me into making me find this horrific act pleasurable at times.

I got up and went to the bathroom, having him come inside of me made me feel dirty as always. I ran the water in the bathtub and almost poured all of my foam bath in, I wanted his scent to leave me. I wanted the scent of his cologne to leave my quarter tooth that I took the toilet spray and sprayed all over.

I was disgusted with myself...04

ARMANI

I took the bowl of egg mayo salad and made my way to the dining table, I put it in the middle next to the bowl of sliced tomatoes.

Nontsikelelo: Mani sit down and join us

I looked at Ndarha, that statement didn't seem to bother him. He was fully concentrating on his breakfast. Xolelwa tapped the chair next to her and then I pulled it and sat down

Me: Thank you

Nonts picked up her glass of juice and smiled a little at me as I dished up in that awkward moment..

Ndarha: Armani

I froze and looked at him..

Him: I would like you to skip church today

We looked at him as we waited for him to explain further..

Him: I'll be having guests over after church, I want you to prepare a meal at least for 6 people

Me: Ewe Tata

He looked at Xolelwa..

Him: You can't go to church too.. I want you to take Armani to the mall so that she can buy everything that she needs, you can use your card I'll replace the money later

Xolelwa agreed too..

Nonts: What guests?

He ignored her for a few seconds as he chewed on his bacon..

Him: Xolelwa I also want you to keep an eye on your Mother, make sure she drinks a lot of water and sleep it off

Nonts: Sleep it off? He

cleared his throat..

Him: Unxilile Nontsikelelo (You're drunk)

That was unexpected..

Nonts: And-

Ndarha: Sundenza isbhanxa! (don't make a fool of me)His

voice was firm..

Him: Uncing'ba andazi ngala bhotile yeBranti ngaphantsi kwebedi? (you think I don't know about the bottle of Brandy under the bed)

Everyone kept quiet..

Him: unxila ude unxile nange cawa! (you drink so much that you even drink on a Sunday)

He threw the fork on his plate and stood up..Him:

Armani my Bible and car keys

He walked away and I stood up too, Nontsikelelo kept her eyes on me as I went and got his Bible from the couch as well as his car keys and his phone. I quickly made my way out and followed him to his car, with shame and guilt choking me. I felt like Nontsikelelo saw through me..

I handed him his keys and he unlocked, he opened at the back to put his Bible..Him:

Thank you

He got in and then started the car, he treated me and pretended as if like nothing happened between us this morning. I salute him for acting dumb, this man knows how to pretend.. I made my way back in as he took off, I took a deep breath and walked to the living room.

Nontsikelelo got up from the chair..

Her: I'm going to sleep a bit

Xolelwa: Kodwa Ma-

I put my hand on her shoulder and she looked at me, I shook my head no. We waited for her to walk up the stairs before we could say anything..

Xolelwa: You know she's going to drink right?

Me: I know..

I exhaled..

Me: Let's go to the mall

Her: You think it's wise to leave her alone in this state?Me: It's

not the first time that's she's drinking

Her: Fine then I'll go get my keys and my purse

Nontsikelelo is a broken soul, she usually deals with her feelings and emotions by drinking whiskey and Brandy every now and then. I thought rich people had no problems,I guess I was wrong..

—

NOMFUND

O

Me: I don't know.. I think I should just save myself from being heart broken and break up with him

Her: Are you insane? You going to let a white bitch take your man?I was

on a call with my big sister Charmaine.

Me: Charmaine I don't think Jojo loves me okay?

Her: You guys have been together for what? 6 months now? Don't you think that's long enough for him not to love you? I don't think Jojo is that type of guy to push time with someone, he seems like a person who is always honest and upfront about everything

I sat down on the bed..

Me: maybe he does love me but not as much as I love him

Her: Nomfundo just stop all the insecurities and love your Man before that skinny whitebitch takes him for real

I laughed..

Her: Don't give her the satisfaction of seeing you insecure Me: I

guess you right, thank you for the advice sis

Her: Anytime

I come from a household with both Parents, we weren't rich but there was a lot of love. My Mother and my Father were always and still are supportive of my dreams. My Mother is unemployed while my Father works at cashbuild as a manager, he has been working there for as long as I can remember.

I studied marketing at varsity but getting a job in that field after graduating was very difficult, I was unemployed for one year and 6 months when I decided to keep busy by doing makeup tutorial videos and uploaded them on Instagram and YouTube. I landed my job as a makeup stylist after Someone had seen the hype and views on my videos and the person told Jojo about me who contacted me and asked if I can come and work for him by being a make up stylist for his Actors and Actresses. At first I thought it was a joke, but he called me after I had left my number on his DM..

It didn't end there, I also became their wardrobe stylist and that's when Jojo and I felt something for each other, we were very close and before I knew it he made his move. He said he liked me from the very first time when he watched one of my videos. I really enjoy my job, it comes with a good pay and it's very fun..

I fixed my towel as Jojo walked in, I had just finished bathing when I made that call to my Sister. He was breathing heavy and sweating, today his jogging took longer than usual..

Him: Good morning

Me: Good morning

Him: Are you good?

Me: I'm fine

He made his way to me..

Him: You don't look fine.. What's wrong?

I kept quiet..

Him: Nono?

He put his hand on my chin and made me to face him..Him:

Talk to me.. What's wrong?

I kept quiet..

Him: Come on.. I don't like it when you like this

His soft side will always melt your heart, why can't he be like this all this all the time?He ran his thumb around my lower lip and leaned over to give me a kiss..

Him: Talk to me..

I might as well just be honest with him..

Me: I don't like your relationship with Tashi, I don't like how close she is to you and the time that you guys spend together, I know it's going to make sound like I'm insecure but...

I got all emotional...

Me: I even feel like you sleeping with her (Crying)

He sat down on the bed and made me sit down on his lap, he wiped my tears..Him:

What makes you say that?

Me: I don't know at times I get this fear that you might be sleeping with her.. Behind my back

Him: If I wanted Tasha she would be the one sleeping on my bed instead of you. I don't want you thinking about that because it's never going to happen, I'll never hurt you like that

He continued wiping my tears..

Him: I would never do that to you okay?I

nodded..

Him: I love you so much

Me: I love you too

He got me off him and then he stood up, he took my hand and kissed it..Him: Plus

I can't take no white girl to go and meet my Mama

I chuckled..

Him: If I wanted Tashi I would get Tashi, but I don't want her.. I want youHis

words sounded so sincere..

He unwrapped my towel and wiped his face with it..Him:

She is strictly my assistant and my friend

Me: Do you promise?

Him: I promise

He threw the towel on the bed and picked me up, I wrapped my legs around his waist and my arms around his neck..

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

We started kissing...

Him: Not as much as I love you

Me: You lie.. I love you more than you love me Him:

Uyaxoka Ntombazana ndini! (You are a liar)I

laughed..

Him: You going to keep me company as I take showerMe: But

I've already showered

Him: Then too bad for you, you going to shower again

—

ARMAN

I

We got to the mall and made our way to Woolworths, Xolelwa was awfully quiet. She had been very quiet when we made the trip, Which is unlike her..

Me: Are you alright?

She looked at me as I pushed the trolley..Her:

I'm fine I guess

We went from shelf to shelf..

Me: Get the Tiramisu cake She

got it...

Her: You know Mama told me something the other dayMe:

Ya?

(Silence)

Her: Ucinga ukuba uTata uyakrexeza (she thinks my Dad is having an affair)

I stopped the trolley and looked at her, as I felt my stomach turning in and my cheeks started burning..

Me: Wha.. What?

Her: Imagine after all these years that they've been together he goes and does this? Mama was there when he had nothing! They were dependent on her salary as she was the only one working, instead of treating her like a queen and appreciating her he goes and does this? It's not enough that he drove Jojo and Xols away for good, now he had to break her down like this?

Me: Wow I.. When does he get the time to cheat because he is always busy and they always together attending meetings and what not

Her: He is a sneaky bastard, I'm sure he finds a way to go and see her.. I really would like to know who she is and see how she looks like to be breaking a marriage like this, these girls should be ashamed of themselves busy going around and sleeping with married men!

She clicked her tongue as she put the mayonnaise inside the trolley..

Her: I hope he uses a condom so that he doesn't give her any sicknesses! I'm telling you

this is pure disgusting!

—

NOMFUND

O

The water slowly ran down on our bodies as he poured the shower gel on me. He rubbed it off on my body gently caressing my breasts as it created a foam all over my body. Our sex life is okay, I am not very skilled when it comes to doing freaky things but I try my best to satisfy him, most of the time I let him be the one in control and I follow his lead..

He got closer and French kissed me while pushing me back against the wall, the tiles weren't very slippery because we had a shower mat in the middle to stop us from slipping.. We normally don't use a condom, big as he is a condom would cause more pain and create friction so I long had opted to using contraceptive pills, I am very alert when it comes to them and I take them everyday as recommended..

He turned me around and I put both my hands on the wall for support, I bent a little and he parted both my legs.. [REMOVED]..

05

ARMANI

"I hope he uses a condom so that he doesn't give her any sicknesses! I'm telling you this is pure disgusting"

Those words echoed in my ear as I was busy preparing the lunch that Ndarha wanted me to do for his guests this afternoon, but my concentration was not at the best level. He promised me that I was the only woman that he is sleeping with other than his wife, and I never really saw the need to get tested or anything like that because he gave me his word

Xolelwa: Are you alright?

I didn't even hear her walking in, I was too much lost in my thoughts.. Me: I'm

fine

I was busy marinating the chicken pieces so that we could grill them later on.. Me: How is she?

Her: She's sleeping.. Think she had a few glasses when we went out(Silence)

Her: Can I help you with anything?

Me: You can cut the onion and green peppers for my beef stewHer:

Okay

I let a few seconds pass before starting the topic again..Me:

Xolelwa

She looked at me..

Me: You mentioned that your Father shouldn't bring your Mother any sicknesses.. You think he's sick?

Her: We don't know how many girls he is sleeping with and we not sure if he's using protection

Me: You think there's more than one?

Her: It's possible

That really worried me.. We continued doing what we were doing and Xolelwa started humming a certain song..

Xolelwa: Mmm... Mmmm..Pain!

You made me a, you made me a believer, believer.. Pain! You break me down, you build me up, believer, believer.. Pain!.. Mmmm"

Me: What are you singing?

Her: I'm not sure just started hearing this song playing in my headMe:

That's unusual.. Ushiwa zinqondo (you going insane)

She laughed..

Her: Seriously I just heard it playing in my head

Me: Okay then let's get moving.. Time is not our side

Xolelwa: Just remind me to check up on her again after a while

Me: I'll remind you

—

XOLISWA (TIGER)

"I was broken from a young age

Taking my sulking to the masses

Writing my poems for the few

That look at me, took to me, shook to me, feeling meSinging

from heartache from the pain

Taking my message from the veins

Speaking my lesson from the brain

Seeing the beauty through the...

Pain!

You made me a, you made me a believer, believer

Pain!

You break me down, you build me up, believer, believerPain!

Oh let the bullets fly, oh let them rain

My life, my love, my drive, it came from...

Pain!

You made me a, you made me a believer, believer"

That is one of my favorite songs, that song got me through my darkest days. Days were I thought I was never going to make it.. I was in my studio playing music and smoking weed, I was waiting for Jojo. We usually chill at my workplace on Sundays, smoke weed, drink beer, and listen to music.. I saw his car pulling up, I went and unlocked the door.

He got out wearing his glasses and a cap, no one is supposed to notice him, because I am not ready for my family to track me down..

He walked in with a few cans of Heineken..I

locked the door behind him..

Him: It's flipping hot in here

He took off his glasses..

Him: Switch on the aircon

Me: Nigga you don't help me with my electricity bill, the aircon is for my clientsHe

turned around and looked at me..

Him: How you holding up? You look good

Me: I am good.. And you?

Him: I'm good too

I went and switched off the music, he put the cans away and gathered two chairs..Me: Saw

what they did to you with the awards man

Him: It's a messed up situation, someone sabotaged meI went
and joined him..

Me: We know who did that

Him: Andicingi (I don't think so) .. Why would he wait this long?I

took one of the cans..

Me: Ya it's messed up

Him: How are things going with you? How is Lolitha? Me:

We good can't complain.. How is Nomfundo doing?He

shrugged his shoulders..

Him: She's good I guess

Me: I sense a bit of a problem..

Him: I don't know.. I feel like I should let her go, I'm wasting her time

Me: Thought you loved her

Him: I thought so too but.. It's just about sex and her company, same thing that's happening with Tashi. We once tried the relationship ish a few years ago and it never worked out, we decided to be fuck buddies. The sex is great, better than a relationship

Me: Have you ever loved any of the girls that you've dated before?

Him: No I don't think so.. At some point I thought I loved them but.. I don't know Man, I don't know what's happening with me. It's more about the sex than anything else

I nodded..

Me: I think we both know what the problem isHe

looked at me..

Me: Armani..

Him: Don't start Xols

Me: You know your heart belongs with her, she was the very first girl that you've loved and I think those feelings are still there

Him: That was a long time ago.. Those feelings are no longer there

Me: Lie to me all you want but you can never lie to yourself, that's why you don't wanna go home. Apart from Dad, she's the biggest reason why you don't wanna visit home

Him: let me go and take a piss, you better start rolling that joint.. When I come back we going to talk about you and why you don't wanna visit your Mom and your twin Sister

He drank his beer and then walked away..

—

NOMFUND

O

Charmaine: I'm at the gate come and get me phela I am scared of your dogsMe: Eish..

Did you get the bathing salts?

Her: Yes... Come and get me

Me: I'm coming

I took the remote for the gate and went out to get her. I was in pain, my vagina was burning and it was very sore. So much that I couldn't even put on an underwear so I had a towel wrapped around my lower body.

Me: Bruno No!!

The dogs were at the gate busy barking at her, they were waiting eagerly to taste her flesh should she dare walk in. These dogs are very vicious because Jojo feeds them meat only. They only used to Him, Me, the maid and possibly Tashi. Well they are used to her too because she's always here..

I opened the cage and instructed them to go in, when they were in I locked it and opened the gate for Charmaine..

Her: Cishe ngathi ngiyafa la (I thought I was going to die) Me: I

didn't realize that he let them out today

She hugged me..

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Her: I'm good

We broke the hug..

Her: I hope Jojo won't get mad that I came to visit Me:

He is not a monster

We made our way to the house..

Her: Here are your things

Me: Thank you.. How much did they make? Her:

Together with the cream they made R220 Me:

Okay I'll do an immediate transfer

She looked around..

Her: Jojo must be rolling in cash, this house is beautiful and it looks expensive

Me: It is a beautiful house She

turned and looked at me..Her:

So? Rough morning?

Me: sort off

Her: Uzwa ubuhlungu ngaleyo ndlela? (Are you in that much pain)Me: You

have no idea

Her: Kanti why don't you just talk to him about this? It's not rightI

cleared my throat because my voice was scratchy..

Her: He sounds like a sadist

Me: He is just dominant when it comes to sexHer:

Does he ever let you be ontop?

Me: No.. He prefers being in control.. Can I get you something to drink?Her:

I'll make us something to eat and drink.. Tell me something

Me: Yes?

Her: Was Jojo ever sexually abused when he was young?Me: I

don't know.. Why do you ask?

Her: He is showing signs that he was once abused when he was young

Me: I doubt.. He is a man and he has a big appetite when it comes to sex so it's normal

Her: It's not normal, sex is a two way street you must also enjoy yourself or else yougoing to hate sex with all your heart because it's always painful

Me: I don't know Charmaine, let me go relax in the bath.. Thank you for getting me thebathing salts

Her: Anytime little sis'

—

JOJO

Him: How was it?

Me: It was good

He got up from the chair and made his way to me, he put his hand on my shoulder..Him: I am making you a man my boy, I am making you a man

That was my step father praising me after he had forced me to have sex with my baby sitter. I was 13 years old, and my first sexual encounter was with a grown ass woman. Prior to that his Sister used to molest me, and she would also have me do things to her. It was our little secret, I never told anyone about that and she also took it to the grave with her..

Xols: Here.. That's her now

I took her phone and looked at her picture, I whistled..Me:

That's Armani?

Xols: That's her

Me: She's.. She's..

Her: Beautiful?

Me: Yeah she's very beautiful.. You have her on Facebook?Her: Ya on my fake Facebook account

Me: Do you have more pics?

Her: Yeah sure.. I'll download them and send them to you via WhatsAppMe: Or you can send me her Facebook name

Her: Her account is private, you won't see anything unless you her friend(Silence)

Me: I wonder how she is holding up

Her: Why don't you just go home and see how she is doingMe:

No..

Her: Why?

Me: I made a promise to her that I never kept and I'm sure she has moved on now, she's better off without me. What we had is done, it was a long time ago and I'm sure that she hates me

I gave her, her phone back..

Me: She hates me

06

JOJO

Later on after spending some time with my Sister I decided to drive back home and rest a little, I needed to take the urge off and I was happy to not have bumped into any traffic officers in my state.. When I got home Nomfundo was in the lounge with a visitor and they were watching a movie, her visitor looked familiar.

Me: Molweni (Greetings)

They both looked at me..

Nomfundo: Where you coming from?

She got up and came to me..

Me: I was out visiting a few friends

Her: Ohh.. Okay..

I looked at the lady..

Her: This is my Sister Charmaine, remember I once showed you her picture Charmaine also stood up and made her way to us..

Me: I did think that she looked familiar I extended my hand to her..

Me: How are you?

Her: Ngiyaphila wena unjani? (I am well and how are you) Me:

I am good

Her: Just so you know.. I'm a big fan, Usapho is the best thing that has ever happened to

us or to our screens

Me: Thank you.. I appreciate that

Her: I think that you deserved to win that awardMe:

You and a bunch of other people

Her: Ohw

Me: Sorry if that was offensive

Her: No it's fine

I looked at Nomfundo..

Me: I'll be upstairs resting a bit

Nomfundo: Okay

Me: Was nice meeting you Shantel

Her: It's Charmaine

Me: My bad.. Charmaine

I walked out while yawning and I made my way to my study. I locked the door behind me

and went to the shelf. I removed a few books, then I got my cocaine. I have been doing cocaine for a few months now, I was introduced to it by one of my friends who is also in this industry. It is very addictive and very expensive at the same time..

—

ARMAN

I

The guests had arrived, It was the Minister of transport with his two sons. When Ndarhasaid 6 guests I didn't think that he was counting himself, Xolelwa, and Umama uNontsikelelo. They were standing in the living room busy talking and I started with the drinks. UNdarha and the Minister were going to have whiskey, then the rest were going to have juice.. His other Son was not around as yet

Ndarha: Siyabulela Armani (Thank you Armani)

He said that when both of them have taken their glasses from the tray, I moved on to Umama no Xolelwa and the Minister's Son. The youngest..

Xolelwa: Thank you

Nonts: I had mixed Nontsikelelo'a drink a bit with whiskey, it was her ordersShe took a sip and then looked at me..

Her: Nantso ke Nontombi (That's it my girl)

I gave our youngest guest his juice too. I wasn't wearing a maid's uniform, I had on a simple dress, my pumps, and I had covered my weave with a doek..

Me: Let me start preparing the table

Xolelwa: Do you need help?

Me: No thank you.. I'm good

As I was about to walk out, some gentlemen made his way in. He buttoned his jacket and fixed his tie, he made his way to the Minister and Ndarha. The minister greeted him with a hug and Ndarha shook his hand..

Ndarha: Armani

I made my way to them..

Ndarha: get this gentleman a glass of whiskey pleaseGentleman:

On the rocks

I slightly bowed and then made my way to the kitchen to pour him a drink. He was good looking, had a beautiful smile and looked like he was in his late 20s. There way that the minister was busy interacting with him, and hitting him on the shoulder a little. I could tell that it was his Son, the one that they were waiting for. I took his drink to him and he had moved from his Father and Ndarha, he was busy entertaining his little Brother and Nonts together with Xolelwa..

Me: Here is your drink Sir

Him: Thank you

Me: I'll start preparing the table

I walked away and left them interacting to prepare the table for them..

—

JOJO

"Hands up in the air I just want the I just want the baddest bitch in the world Right here on my lap.."

I was listening to music all fucked up and checking a few tweets, I bumped into Tashi'stweet and it read:

"So my friend had rough sex last night and today she can't get out of bed, told me thatit's sore"

I know that the tweet was indirectly related to me.. I replied:

"You make me sick"

I tossed my phone on the desk and laid back on the chair, for some reason the cocainetoday had different effects on me. I wiped my face with my hand and it came back withblood, I stood up and went to check myself in the mirror.. I was having a nosebleed..

Me: Shit!

—

ARMAN

I

I stood there and checked if everything was okay before I could call them to come anddine. Carbonet Sauvignon was next to the guava juice for those who were not going to drink, and next to each plate were two wine glasses. One glass had water and the otherglass they will pour a drink of their choice..

I saw the Minister's son making his way to me..Him:

Hey

He greeted me with a smile..

Me: Would you like me to get you anything Sir?He

chuckled..

Him: No.. Not really

He put his glass on the table..

Him: Heard you were the one who prepared this lunch for us

Me: Yes Sir

I would steal glances at him and then look down..Him:

Please call me Mongezi

I bowed again..

Me: Okay.. Mongezi

Him: You Armani right?

Me: Yes Si.. I mean Yes Mongezi

Him: Well I'm a bad person because Nontsikelelo and I were gossiping about youI didn't know how to respond..

Him: Why don't you join us?

Me: I.. I don't think that's appropriate

Him: Come on

He turned around..

Him: Can Armani join us for lunch?

Nonts: Of course she can.. Armani is part of the familyHe turned and looked at me..

Him: See

I smiled a little, but my smile vanished when I saw Ndarha looking at us.. He didn't lookhappy at all..

—

XOLISWA (TIGER)

It's always nice spending some time with Jojo, I'm grateful to still have him in my lifeespecially with everything that's going on.

I got to my place and Loli was cooking..

Me: Mmmm.. Something smells good

She didn't say anything..

I put my keys on the table, not my car keys unfortunately I don't have a car as yet. My business doesn't generate much money for me to get myself a car.. I went up to her and hugged her from behind, I tried kissing her on her cheek but she moved.. She was playing music from her phone..

Me: What's wrong?

She walked to the fridge while singing loud to the song that was playing on her phone..

Loli: Just don't make no excuses, no no.. Why you gotta lie to me, Just be a man about it.. Baby, you don't gotta lie to me, no.. Just be a man about it

I chuckled while shaking my head..

Me: Okay if you going to be childish about this, suit yourself

made my way to the bedroom as she sang louder..

Her: If you cheating just be a man about it and admit it!!!!!! (shouting)

—

ARMAN

I

Mongezi was sitting next to me and he was being a gentleman, he first opened the chair for me and now he is putting the napkin on my thighs..

Me: Thank you

Him: You welcome (Smiling).. Would you like the juice or wine? Me: I

don't drink.. Juice will be fine

Him: And she doesn't drink.. Wow

I chuckled.. When I brought my eyes up and looked at everyone Ndarha's deadly stare gave me chills down my spine..

Mongezi: here is your juice

Me: Thank you

Nonts: Armani I must say that you a good cook

Me: Thank you

Minister: This food is really nice

Me: Thank you Sir

Minister: See Son.. This is the type of woman that you should marry one day..Intombazana elishayayo ibhodo (A girl that can cook)

Nonts: And not lezinto ekuthwa zi hey hey queens nton ntonWe all

laughed at that comment..

Xolelwa: They called Slay Queens Mama

Nonts: Zona ezo (Those ones)

My napkin fell..

Mongezi: Don't worry I got it

He picked it up and placed it on my thighs again..

Him: This is too sexual for me just so you know, stop dropping your napkin on purpose(whispering)

I laughed..

Me: It wasn't on purpose (Whispering)

Him: Dammit and I believe you (Whispering)I

laughed..

We heard the chair being dragged back..

Ndarha got up.. He loosened his tie Him:

I'm coming.. I need some fresh air

He walked away.. Nonts picked up her glass on the table and smiled.. Her:

"Chairs" to Armani.. Sana lwam' uyakwazi upheka (You can cook)Everyone

else raised their glasses up too..

"To Armani"

ARMANI

The Lunch went well if I may say, but for Ndarha it wasn't so nice. Ever since he excused himself he never returned back, leaving us to have dinner with the Minister and his Sons. Mongezi is a ball of energy and he is a fun person to be around, I don't know how many times I was blushing and giggling. I felt different, for the first time in a long time I felt very relaxed and in a good state. For a moment there I even forgot that Ndarha existed, that's how fun the lunch was

This family is very kind and friendly, The Minister kept on hinting that they taking me home with, because of my food. He really enjoyed my cooking. I don't know how this man can be friends with Ndarha because they different, he is very sweet and kind while Ndarha is the devil. I learned later that his wife passed on, so it has been him and his kids ever since her death...

We stood at the door bidding them farewell, the minister even took some of the food with him..

Minister: Well we had fun I don't wanna lie, even though Ndarha left us Nonts: I

apologize, he had to attend an important matter

Minister: Next Saturday Me and him must go golfing to make up for this lunch Nonts:

I'll let him know

He looked at me..

Him: Armani thank you very much for the food Me:

You welcome Sir

Him: Xolelwa.. Don't forget to send me an invitation to your wedding Xolelwa:

Yes Sir

Him: Not to keep you ladies any longer.. We will be on our way Nonts:

Drive safely

He smiled and walked out..

Nonts: Mongs..

Mongezi: Thank you for inviting me

He hugged Nontsikelelo and kissed her on the cheek..Nonts:

Thank you for coming, I know how busy you areMongs: I'm glad I
came..

He gave me his charming look and smile.. Mongs:

Turned out the lunch was worth it after allNonts
smiled..

Nonts: I'm glad you enjoyed

He moved to Xolelwa and put his hand on her chin..

Mongs: Hope I'll have a date to your wedding Nkosazana (Princess)Xolelwa
laughed..

Xolelwa: I hope so too

He finally moved to me, he put his hand around my waist and kissed me on the cheekHim: I hope
I'll be seeing you again soon Ndoni yamanzi (beautiful lady)

I looked down as he removed his arm from my waist..Him:

Have a good night ladies

He put his hand on my chin and lifted my face up so that I can look at him..Him: Bye

Me: Bye

He walked out.. Xolelwa started hitting me on the shoulder repeatedly..

Xolelwa: Wow!!

Nonts: Suphapha Xolelwa (Don't be forward)She

gave Xolelwa her glass.. Feel me up

Xolelwa took the glass and walked away, leaving me and Nonts alone..

Nonts: Seems like Mongezi has taken an interest in you. He is very charming I didn't say anything..

Her: You know after we buried your Mom I made a promise to myself that I will love and treat you as if like I gave birth to you

She put her hand on my cheek with tears in her eyes..

Her: I feel like I have failed you somehow.. Ndikuphoxile sana lwam'.. Your Mother must be disappointed in me wherever her soul is

I got emotional too..

Me: It's okay.. You didn't fail me

She wiped her tears..

Her: I wouldn't allow Mongezi to be that close to you if I didn't trust him, they more like family to us.. We have known his family for a very long time and he is a very good boy

I nodded..

Her: I'm not forcing you to him but.. He will treat you well.. And I saw some chemistry at the table

I chuckled..

Xolelwa came back with the glass..

Nonts: Enkosi Xolelwa (Thank you Xolelwa)

Me: Let me clear the table

Nonts: don't worry.. You go and rest Xolelwa and I we'll put the dishes in the dishwasher and the maids we'll take care of them tomorrow

Me: Thank you

Xolelwa: I'll come to your quarter later.. We have to talk I

rolled my eyes..

Me: Yeah I know, you and gossip I

made my way out of the house..

–

JOJO

Following the minor nosebleed came a very serious headache, I had drank pain killers and I was laying in bed now trying to fall asleep but I couldn't. So to entertain myself I looked at the pictures of Armani that Xols had sent me via WhatsApp. She looked so beautiful and a bit mature from that 16 year old vulnerable girl that I left a few years ago when moved from Johannesburg to the Transkei. I wonder how life is for her now, is she involved with something, does she still remember what we had, are those feelings still there?. Xols was right maybe the reason why I can't commit to any relationship is because things didn't end well between me and Armani, I didn't get closure and I've never forgotten her.. I decided to call Xolelwa to check up on her

Xolelwa: Stranger!!!!I

chuckled..

Me: How are you?

Her: I'm good and you?

Me: I'm good

Her: I'm glad you called.. How are you holding up with the whole award saga?

Me: Shouldn't you have called a bit sooner about that? What kind of a sister are you?

Her: Ahhhh.. You always busy, you know we have to make an appointment to even call you

I laughed..

Me: Yeah whatever you brat!

She laughed too..

Me: How is everything at home? And how is everyone?

Her: You know how life is at home and uMama drinks whiskey a lot nowMe:

That's nothing new

Her: uWorse ngoku Jojo.. Ucinga ukuba uTata uyakrexeza (She's worse now.. She thinks Dad is cheating)

I sighed..

Me: Ke ngoku ufuna ndithini Xolelwa? (What do you expect from me)

Her: Andazi Jojo.. If she keeps on going like this, she is going to have health problems plus une high high

Me: Andikhathali! (I don't care) she's doing this to herself, this is the same woman who chose to stick by that Monster knowing very well the type of Person that he is! She saw what he was doing to us, but she decided to turn a blind eye and not do anything!

She kept quiet for a while..

Xolelwa: She's still our Mother despite everything

Me: Yeah Xolelwa leave me alone with Mom and her issues, she's a grown ass woman. She can walk away from that toxic marriage but she doesn't want to..

Her: Are you going to come to my wedding?

Me: I wouldn't miss it for the world

Her: Remember the promise that you made?

Me: I know.. I'll make sure that Xolelwa attends your wedding when I find her Her:

Thank you

Me: Other than Mom drinking like a fish.. How are you? Her:

I'm good no complaints

Me: Unjani u Armani? (How is Armani)

She kept quiet..

Me: Xolelwa?

Her: I'm just wondering why you asking about her all of a sudden, you have never asked about her

Me: I'm just asking

Her: She's fine

Me: That's good

Her: And no I won't give you her number

Me: Never asked for it

Her: Jojo you know the story between you and Armani, she's finally at peace don'tbother her

Me: Yes Madam I won't bother her

Her: Well I have to go.. Call again sometimeMe:

Okay.. Ndiyak'thanda va? (I love you) Her:

Uthandwa ndim (I love you too)

I hung up..

–

ARMAN

I

Me: I don't know seriously

Her: Don't do that Armani, I haven't seen you in a while I miss youMe: I

will call you and let you know when we can meet up

Her: I'll be waiting for your call

Me: Okay

Her: Bye Babe

Me: Bye

That was my best friend on the phone with me, Her name is Nsovo born and bred I in Venda before her family moved to Johannesburg. We were friends since from grade 8 up until matric, then she went to varsity and I fully committed to my Servant's duties. I try not to keep contact with old friends and classmates because I feel like I'm below their standards now, they all up in there and I'm down here. My life is really embarrassing. Nsovo is the only one who still forced communication between us, afterall she was my best friend. We both had dreams, she reached hers and I couldn't reachmine.. After that phone call I made my way to my quarter, the door was unlocked. That'sunusual I always lock it..

I opened and made my way in, my heart almost stopped beating when I saw Ndarha standing there. He had his back facing the door. I didn't know how to react, I stood there all frozen..

Him: Vala ucango Armani (Close the door)I

slowly closed the door..

He turned around and looked at me, he was holding one of my teddy bears..(Silence)

Him: When did I buy you this again?

Me: It was..

My voice was a bit scratchy so I cleared my throat..Me:

You gave it to me after my Mom's funeral

He looked at the teddy bear with a shallow smile..

Him: I remember you were scared and confused, I made a promise to you that I'll take care of you

He looked at me..

Him: Didn't I live up to that Promise?

Me: You did

He looked at the teddy bear again..

Him: The Minister.. He is like a Brother to me and his Sons, I consider them my Sons too I didn't say anything..

Him: Are we going to have a problem Armani?

Me: What kind of a problem?

Him: I don't know.. You tell me... If we going to have a problem then I'll take care of it.. You know I take care of problems very well

I shook my head..

Me: We not going to have a problem

Him: I didn't think so too

He put my Teddy bear on top of the fridge and made his way to me, I took a step back. He fixed the sleeve of my dress and kissed me on my forehead..

Him: Get some rest..

He made his way out, I locked the door behind him and exhaled in relief..08

ARMANI

Although we have other servants working in the house I am the head servant, everything goes through me for approval because I've been here the longest and I know how everything should be done. From cleaning, to doing the laundry and then cooking. It's a very difficult job, takes most of my time and requires a lot of energy. I get an allowance of R10 000 a month but not all of that is meant for me to spend it right away. R3000 is for medical insurance, then I put away R2000 in a private fixed account for emergencies that no one knows about. At times I don't even use the whole R5000, because I occasionally eat at the house I don't buy much groceries.. It was a Monday morning and as always my morning started at 05:30am, today we are doing spring cleaning. Ndarha won't be around, he has errands to run from 8am, he will only be back at night. At least we will be able to breathe without his aura suffocating us.. I don't know what's with him but everyone seems shaken by him, the other maids are really scared of him too. Last night I was on the phone with Nsovo again, she proposed that this weekend we should have a girls road trip from Friday-Mon..

She doesn't know that I'm a servant, she knows that my Mother was a servant and that the family adopted me after she died. There's a lot of things that I can't tell her because we've sworn to secrecy, I just imagine telling her about the affair and she tells someone else then that someone else tells another person it will be a mess. A very big mess..

I need permission from Ndarha to go to this road trip, I need to ask him now since he has a busy week ahead of him, I might not see much of him. He's day starts off early too, exactly at 6am he is at his own personal gym. He really takes good care of himself, that's why he has a good body for someone his age. Most men at this age have pot bellies and most are fat but with him, he really spends time at the gym. The door was wide open, he was on the treadmill shirtless. He had on the Nike fitness/compression tights for men, with Nike sneakers. He had his headsets on and I didn't know if it was appropriate for me to disturb him while he is busy, I mean I've never done it before and I

don't want to upset him but at the same time this is important to me. I need fresh air, I need to get out of this house and breath..I started knocking but he didn't hear me, I knocked again up until he noticed me standing at the door.. He stopped the treadmill and got off, he also took off the headsets..

Me: Good morning

He signaled with his hand that I should start talking, he was sweating and breathing fast. The tights were very tight, they portrayed everything out including his manhood..He walked over to get the towel..

Me: I need to talk to you about something

Him: What could be so important that you had to distract me, Are you pregnant?Me: No I'm not

He took his phone and kept himself busy with it..

(Silence)

Him: You going to talk to me while you standing so far away? So that anyone who passes through the corridor can hear you?

I got in and closed the door, all along he is talking while busy on his phone..Me: Do you remember my best friend Nsovo?

Him: Should I remember her?

Me: Not really.. Well she called me and asked if we can meet up(Silence)

Him: I'm still waiting for the part were you meeting up with your friend has something to do with me

Me: We going on a road trip this coming weekendThat caught his attention..

Him: Are you asking or telling me?

Me: I'm asking

Him: Since when do you do those things?

Me: I thought it would be a good idea since we haven't seen each other in a very long time.. Plus I would do with some fresh air

Him: You talk as if like I'm holding you hostage I

kept quiet..

Him: Do you wanna go? I

nodded...

Him: I can't hear you

Me: Yes I wanna go

Him: You can go, as long as the maids can survive without you

Just like that? What's wrong with him? I mean Ndarha is very hardcore but he has been soft since from yesterday..

Me: Are you sure?

He gave me a serious look..

Me: I'm sorry, thank you.. I'll get back to work

I turned around all excited and made my way to the door then he cleared his throat, I walked back to him and kissed him on his cheek..

Me: Thank you

As I turned again he pulled me back to him..

Him: My wife will be up in 10min time, meaning we have 10min

What is he doing? We have never had sex in the main house to avoid being caught. He let go of me and went to lock the door, I felt somehow about this.. He came back to me and started kissing me, as much as this has always been against my will but he tries to make it less awkward by having both of us enjoy it..

—

JOJO

Today we got to the studio very early in the morning, since we on the last season of Usapho. I want us to close with a bang so that will require a lot of time from the team.

We were shooting a scene and the two main characters were busy joking around and couldn't get their lines right, which ended up pissing me off because they weren't serious

Me: Ikhona into ehlekisayo? (Is there something funny) The moment of laughter seized..

I paged through the script..

Me: I don't see anything that's funny in here I looked at them..

Me: All I see is everyone joking around and not being serious! Hlehle there's zero energy from you, I'm even getting bored watching you

Hlehle: We came here at 6am Jojo, we still sleepy

Me: You wanna go back home and sleep? Do that and we will change the whole script that you died and you will be out forever

They kept quiet..

Me: Are we here to play around and waste each other's time? They still remained quiet..

I clicked my tongue..

Me: Now- (interrupted)

Taschi: You guys are actually doing great, we need those bloopers Hlehle:

Thank you Mama Tash

She showed up from behind..

Tash: Hlehle your body language.. Work on that sweetheart, when you say.. What's that line again?

Hlehle: I think it's "Buphi ubungqina balento uyithethayo"

Tash: Yes.. I might not know what it means but I need a reaction from you, you were dull Tash is loved around here, she mothers everyone and makes sure that everyone is

giving in their 100%..

I got up and threw the script on the chair, I made my way out to my office. Taschi has been avoiding me since from yesterday, now she just comes in and takes over by going over my word busy disrespecting me in front of the junior staff..

I turned everything upside down trying to search for my coke, I thought I had brought it, but I couldn't find it..

After about 5 minutes, the door opened. Taschi walked in, she closed it behind her and exhaled loudly..

Her: They got the lines right, we need you back so you can approve the scene I kept quiet with both of my hands balancing on top of the table..

Her: Jojo?

I took the stapler on my desk and threw it at her, she ducked just in time..

Me: You can't just decide to be my assistant whenever it suits you! Bitch were you been? Her eyes were wide open, she couldn't believe that I took it this far..

Her: Are you serious? Jojo are you serious right now? I was breathing heavily, I was beyond pissed.

Her: I am not one of those girls you date and mistreat! I will have you locked up! Don't try me!

Me: Where the fuck were you yesterday?

Her: Didn't it hit you that maybe I wasn't feeling well since our sexual encounter on Saturday? You very selfish Jojo

I walked up to her as she stepped back until she was against the wall.. Me: Don't ever call me selfish you blonde bitch!

She slapped me across the face..

I grabbed her hair and threw her down..

Her: Ahhhhh (screaming)

She slowly got up and headed to the door, I stood at the door preventing her from leaving..

Me: Tash I'm sorry

Her: Please move

Me: I'm sorry please don't leave

Tears streamed down her face..

Me: Babe I'm sorry.. I didn't mean too.. Tash I.. I don't know what got into me, I'm sorry.. I can't afford to have you walk out on me, I need you.. You know I need you

She wiped her tears..

I tried touching her but she yanked my hand off..Me:

I'm sorry.. I'm so sorry

I pulled her closer to me and let her cry on my chest..Me:

I'm sorry.. I didn't mean to hurt you

—

XOLISWA (TIGER)

Lolitha was going to be around for a week before she goes back to school. She studies at TUT and schools were closed that's why she was around to visit. Lolitha doesn't know that I spend most of my Sundays with Jojo, I've been lying about that and giving excuses that I think now she's tired. I don't blame her though, the whole situation seems dodgy.

She was still sleeping and I was watching her sleeping peacefully, after the whole scenario at the kitchen yesterday we didn't say anything to each other. I love Lolitha with all my heart, she came into my life when everything was crumbling down and she made her family to love and accept me, I would be a fool to do anything stupid that would end our relationship. I don't know if I should just come clean to her, I'm scared that if I do come clean she might spread the word and my Parents will end up tracking me down. I have no intentions of going back home, I hate my Father with all my heart and I am not ready to face him anytime soon..

—

ARMANI

Sometimes I ask myself how Ndarha could be this sexual satisfying at this age, could it be that Xolelwa is right, is he sleeping with other people? Especially slay queens because most politicians are obsessed with slay queens. Is he exploring other sexual things with them? Is he even using condoms with them? A lot was running on my mind..He has a small table in the room, and I was on top of it with my legs wide open....

[REMOVED]....

09

JOJO

We were back to shooting the episode, it was still not coming together perfectly. Or should I say, I wasn't thoroughly impressed with everything that they were doing. Tashcihad gone out to get fresh air after our incident, I still didn't have my cocaine meaning that I wasn't at my best.

Me: Cut!!!!

They all exhaled..

Sabelo: What's wrong now?I

went up to them..

Me: Nicinga ukuba kuphi apha? Kuse stadium? Huh?.. Asizanga ukuzodlala ibhola ekhatywayo apha niyandiva? Khanenze into ebhadlileyo okanye nifokofe! (Where do you guys think we are? At the stadium? We not here to play soccer, get everything right)

Hlehle: Kodwa siyazama nje Jojo (We trying Jojo)

Me: I don't pay you to try, I pay you to do the fucken right thing! You guys think I need you? You think Usapho needs you?

They remained quiet..

Me: I made you who you are! I made all of you, if it wasn't for me some of you would benothing! I am not scared of shutting this whole thing down!

Sabelo: What about our fans?

Me: Fuck the fans! They didn't vote, they didn't get us an award! Instead they let someuseless no name Drama to get the award, so fuck the fans! And fuck all of you!

(silence)

Me: Do the right thing or else... We shutting this whole thing down you end up being stuck in adverts to make ends meet

I went back to my chair..

Me: We doing this shit one last time!

—

ARMAN

I

I went to check up on Mam'Gabi one of the maids, earlier on she said that she wasn't feeling okay. I don't blame her though she's old and she has been here for a very long time. She was my Mother's closest friend, when my Mother started working here uMam'Gabi was the one who taught her everything, ever since from then she also has been close to me. I don't know why she doesn't quit because her body no longer agrees with her when it comes to doing a lot of work. She is constantly complaining about her legs, her back and a lot of other things.

She was sitting at the back with her smokeless tobacco (snuff) in her hands and a toilet paper, can't separate her from that thing.. I sat next to her on the grass..

Me: Mam'Gabi

She didn't say anything for a while..

Her: Yazi Armani angikutholi kahle (Armani I don't get you)

(Silence)

Her: Uhlakaniphile futhi eskolweni waphasa kahle, kodwa impilo yakho nje usuyichitheekubeni yiGirly (You're smart and you passed your matric very well, but you have spent almost your life being a servant)

She sneezed..

Her: Why don't you go to university or get yourself a better job.. Hayi lento oyenza la (Not what you doing here)

Me: Akhukho Lula Ma (It's not easy)

Her: Yini engekho Lula? ngoba unyoko wasebenzela labantu iskhathi eside.. Bayamukoloda ngokuqhubekisa wena eskolweni (What's not easy? Your Mother worked

for these people for many years, they owe her that much to help you further your studies)Me: Some other things are not as how they seem Ma

Her: Your Mother spoke about you everyday, she used to say "Gabi ang'funi nje ukuthi uMani abeyisigqila salabantu, angifuni afane nami" (Gabi I don't want Armani to be a slave here, I don't want her to be like me)

Me: Well unfortunately I followed in her footsteps

Her: Don't talk like that.. I promised her that I was going to keep an eye on you but..She exhaled..

Her: uNontsikelelo wakuthatha wakufaka ekhwapheni (Nontsikelelo took you and put you under her arm)

Mam'Gabi doesn't know what I have been going through with UNdarha..

Her: I'm even surprised that she disagreed for you to go to tertiary.. Your peers are out there living their lives Armani, you need to do the same. You need to go out there and live your life, it's not like you don't have anything. You have your matric and the money you have been saving up.. Speaking of that money, how much is it now?

Me: It's getting there.. Now I just need to research and see where I can go, I wanna go far away where I won't be traced. Maybe even leave South Africa

Her: Hau! That's a bit extreme.. Why do you wanna move so far away? You just quitting your job and moving on, unless there's more

I looked down..

Her: Armani??

I fought back the tears..

Her: Armani talk to me.. Kwenzakalani? (what's happening)I

looked at her..

Me: Asilutho olutheni ukuthi nje.. (It's nothing much just that)(Silence)

Her: Kuqale nini? (when did it start)

Me: Ma?

Her: UNdarha uqale nini ukukhluhlukeza? (when did Ndarha start abusing you sexually) How did she know? Fear took over, no one was supposed to know..

Her: You can trust me.. Sengazi is'khathi eside ende ang'kaze ngatshela muntu (I've known for a while now and I haven't told anyone)

Me: How did you know?

Her: I used to notice how he would look at you use mncane (while you were still young)

There way he kept a close eye on you, making sure that no boy comes close to you. I did notice that he was raising you up for him. My suspicions were true the time when he separated you and Jojo, he's Anger was too much when he found out that you and Jojo were dating and that he even slept with you. He was very mad and he made it a point to separate you guys forever

I wiped my tears..

Me: Uthe uzong'bulala mhla ngacabanga ukubaleka (He said he's going to kill me should I even think of running away)

Her: ukhohlakele loya Baba (That man is evil) but his wife is more evil
Me: She has been good to me

Her: Armani she has allowed this man to abuse her children for a long time without saying anything.. I am very sure that she knows about this, but she's not doing anything. All that she knows is to drink everyday

Me: Ucabanga ukuthi uyazi? (do you think she knows)

Her: When your husband is no longer acting right you know
Me: If she knows then why hasn't she said anything

She shrugged her shoulders..

Her: Armani I want you to go from this place
I shook my head no..

Her: Don't let fear keep you here, you will stay here with that man abusing you until when?

You are 27 years old now Mani.. When will your life start?She

put her hand on my cheek..

Her: He separated you from someone that you truly loved and took your life away, it's time now.. It's time to go away from this and I will help you, I will help you to escape.. Siyezwana? (do we understand each other)

I nodded..

She came closer and hugged me..

Her: All I know is that he is not God.. Kuzolunga (all will be well)

—

ISAAC NDARHA

I saw him approaching the car, he had a file with him. He looked around and opened the door, immediately when he got in the driver made his way out..

Him: Mhlekazi

Bonza is a very corrupt lawyer, he has never lost a case and that's because he plays dirty. He would bribe judges if that's a little bit hard for him to do he would make evidence disappear, and the witnesses to disappear. He has been my lawyer and also helps me with other things too, what's nice about the whole thing is that he is also Jojo's Lawyer. So he has been helping me to destroy Jojo.

Him: I have something on Jojo

Me: Let me see

He took out his phone and showed me the video, I took off my sunglasses. The video it was Jojo doing what he was doing best, throwing a tantrum and verbally insulting his staff..

"Fuck the fans! They didn't vote, they didn't get us an award! Instead they were let some useless no name Drama to get the award, so fuck the fans! And fuck all of you!"

Me: How did you get this?

Him: From someone.. Someone who works inside Me:

This is good

Him: So I should upload it on social media? Me:

I'm wondering why it's not trending as yet I gave
him his phone back..

Me: Anything else?

He opened the file and took out a picture..

Him: I have found Xoliswa

I looked at the picture..

Him: I followed Jojo on Sunday and he stopped at some tattoo shop, the person who opened the door
for him was Xoliswa

Me: So they have been keeping in contact

Him: Seems that way

I looked at the picture again..

Me: She has changed..

Him: So what should I do next?

I looked at the photo one last time.. Me:

You do nothing

Him: I don't understand

Me: Despite what she is.. She is still my Daughter, so you do nothing Him: Yes

Sir

Me: I'm keeping this one.. Is there anything else? Him:

This one is big

He passed me some documents..

Him: Armani has a private account.. That's the money in the account currently Me: It's a
lot of money

Him: She has had the account for a very long time now Me:

And you only finding out about this now?

Him: Wasn't easy bribing someone inside the bank for this information.. People who work inside there are very loyal

(Silence)

Him: Why is she keeping so much money?

Me: Because she's planning on running away.. Dammit!! I hit him with the documents on her chest..

Me: Do you know that she could've ran away, possibly skipped the country and we were never going to find her

Him: I'm sor-

Me: Focus Bonza! You focusing much on Jojo that important details are slipping away, killing my wife is going to be useless then if Armani runs away

Him: It will never happen.. I promise

Me: For your own sake I hope so, lower your guard on Jojo for now and concentrate on Armani

Him: Yes sir

Me: Can't believe loya nondindwa played me like this! All this time I thought we were on the same boat but.. I swear I didn't see this one coming, I was beginning to trust her.

She planned this, she wanted me to trust her so that I can let my guard down and she runs away..

Damn you Armani!!

10

ARMANI

I couldn't get what Mam'Gabi said to me out of my mind, all along I was scared that if Nontsikelelo finds out about this it will break her but the thought of her knowing and keeping quiet. I don't know what kind of evil that is, I have been trying very hard to keep this from her. I was trying to protect her from another heartbreak, especially after she already lost Xoliswa and Jojo. This was going to be a nail in her heart, I thought it was going to kill her and drive her further deep into the bottle.. I walked up to her with the

bottle of whiskey and a glass, she was sitting on the couch and watching TV. I put the whiskey on top of the small table..

Her: Ndiyabulela Armani (Thank you)

Me: Can I make you something to eat? It's almost lunch time Her:

Ohh hayi okwa ngoku sana lwam' (not not now my child) She said that with a smile on her face..

Me: You will call me when you need anything..

Her: Okay

I walked away and stood at a far distance, watching her pouring the whiskey in the glass and then gulping it down. There way that she closed her eyes just showed that the whiskey touched her soul a little..

I felt a hand on my shoulder, It was Mam'Gabi..Her:

I know what you thinking

I followed her back to the kitchen..

Me: I can't believe she's sitting there and acting like everything is okay I leaned against the counter..

Her: Don't let hate cloud your heart my child I

folded my arms..

Me: I went on the internet, and London seems like a good place Her:

London?

Me: In England.. The plane ticket is a bit affordable compared to other places, if I can get a ticket and a place to live but my Money won't take me that far, when it's converted into pounds it won't be much plus I can't just go there it's not that easy..

Her: Overseas akufuneki i Visa? (don't you need a Visa) Me: It's

very complicated

Her: It does sound complicated but not impossible.. Akekho umuntu ongakusiza?

(There's no one who can help you)

Me: I'll ask my best friend Nsovo.. She might knowShe
smiled..

Her: Ngathi ngiyabona sewungifonela useLondon (I can imagine you calling me fromLondon)

I smiled too..

Me: Sounds a bit scary.. I don't know anyone from there, I'll be far, I'll have to start afreshwhat if I
don't get a job?

Her: Usuhlale la impilo yakho yonke uvalelwe ugqilazwa, impilo yakho uyazela la (Youhave lived
here all your life, being abused. Your life is here)

I smiled but not in a sincere manner..Me:

This house is all I know

Nontsikelelo walked in almost walking right into the fridge..Her:

Yhuuuuu!!!

She laughed..

Her: I almost fell

She balanced herself with the counter, her sleeve was falling off from her shoulder. Shepulled it
back..

Her: Ndicela amanzi (Can I have water)

I went over and got her a glass of water..Me:

I gave it to her

Her: Dankie Mani

She walked back while Mam'Gabi shook her head..

Her: I thought you were going to walk her back, take care of her as alwaysMe:

Those days are over!

Her: So let's talk about London again

—

JOJO

I watched the video again and then punched the table..Me:

Who took this?

I paused it..

Me: Who took this?

Taschi made her way to me and held my hand, she checked if I didn't hurt myself ofwhich I did..

Taschi: We can rule out Hlehle and Sabelo because this was uploaded when they werestill shooting so it's not them.. Clench your fist

Me: How is that going to he-

Her: I wanna see if you didn't hurt yourselfI

sighed..

Me: Taschi what's going on?

Her: We going to fix this like we always do.. I'm going to call Bonza and we going to findout who is a traitor in our team

Me: But it's out on social media, I'm trending alreadyShe

put both her hands on cheeks..

Her: We have handled bigger things than this, we going to deal with this too.. I promiseI put my hand ontop of hers..

Me: Why did we never work out?

Her: Because we better off being friends than datingShe

kissed me..

Her: I'll call Bonza

She walked out..

What is happening to me?

—

XOLISWA (Tiger)

I work with some girl her name is Kitty, she is fun and a bit too much at times. She's way too forward if I can put it like that, to a point where it might irritate someone. Though her personality is too much but she is the best tattoo artist after me of course..

Me: Still look good?

The client rose her head up and looked at the mirror, she turned to her side.. Her: I can't really see much

Me: You can go closer

Her: No it's fine.. I trust you, you can continue

I was doing a tattoo of Angel wings under her left breast.. Kitty: We all know how sexual that is for you Tiger

We all laughed..

Me: I'm a professional

Kitty: Yeah whatever but right now your clit might be swollen, holding that breast like that

Me: I don't think so

Kitty: Well I'm just saying hey.. Don't shoot me

Client: I'm straight but I wouldn't mind hooking up with you Kitty made noise..

Kitty: I rest my case

Client: Unless you don't find me attractive Me:

You're attractive.. Very attractive but.. We heard the door opening..

Kitty: Hey look who just walked in.. Hey Loli
I stopped what I was doing..

Loli: Hey kitty

Kitty: Hey sweetie

I took off the goggles..

Me: Hey

Her: Hi

Me: Everything okay?

Her: Yes uhm.. Can I talk to you?I

looked at the client..

Client: It's okay I'll get some time to breath, just don't take too long
Me: I won't

I got up and followed her outside, she looked very upset. She stood against the wall..
Me: Is everything okay?

Her: I'm leaving

Me: Leaving?

Her: Ya.. I am going home I'll be there until schools open
Me:

Why?

She didn't say anything..

Me: Is this about yesterday? Loli I'm not cheating
Her:

Yeah right.. Bye Tiger

My girlfriend is a bit of a cry baby. She's very soft, you hurt her anyhow she's going to cry a river..
She tried walking away but I pulled her back..

Me: Peaches I'm not cheating.. I swear

Her: Then what is it that you do on Sundays? You lie, you sneaky.. I'm tired okayShe
walked away and I still pulled her bag..

Me: Fine ill tell you the truth

She looked at me as if like she didn't believe my statement..

Me: Later on when I get home I promise that I'll tell you everythingI took
her hand and kisses it..

Me: Just don't leave okay?

She nodded..

Her: Okay

Me: I love you and I don't wanna see you cryingHer:

I love you too

I kissed her..

—

ARMAN

I

Xolelwa came a bit earlier from work because she had to prepare dinner for her fiancé and her in laws. Although Lobola was paid, Ndarha still forbade Xolelwa to move in withher fiancé until they got married they only visit each other. People are often happy whenplanning their weddings but Xolelwa is not happy, she doesn't love this old man Ndarha is just forcing things between them. It's an arranged marriage.

She showed us the video of Jojo that was trending on social media, Jojo has reallyturned into something else. He is not that sweet Jojo that I knew back then..

Nonts: Tyini! Ngu Jojo wam' Owenza lento? (Is this my Jojo that's doing this)

Xolelwa: He has always been bad but this, this is way out of line he is tarnishing hisname and everything that he worked hard for. Without his fans he is nothing!

Nonts: Andithi niyabona le fame yenu? iyenze unyana wam' waba sis'lwanyanya endingasaziyo!
(do you see this fame of yours? It has turned my son into some animalthat I don't know)

Me: Fame? To me it seems like Jojo is failing to deal with certain things, things that happened to him when he was young hence now he is like this

Nontsikelelo gave me an intimidating look..

Her: Uthi kutheni Armani? (what are you trying to say)I

kept quiet..

Xolelwa: either way Jojo is killing his empire.. I wonder how he is going to get out of this one

—

JOJO

We were on the phone with Bonza since he couldn't come down here..Bonza: I

just saw the video

Taschi: Can you find out who sent it? Trace the IP Address or somethingHim:

I'm on it

Me: How are we going to get out of this one?

Him: Well you might not like this

Me: I'll do anything Bonza to save what I have built all these years

Him: There were rumors that you doing cocaine so I think you must come out and say that you were high on cocaine when this happened, you used cocaine to get over the fact that you didn't win that award

Me: What?

Him: Your fans might show remorse

Me: I'm not coming out that I'm doing coke.. Forget it!

Taschi: It actually sounds like a good idea, then you can say you going to rehab for it..Him: See

everything is going to be as good as new.. I have to go guys, talk later

He hung up.. I looked at Taschi

Me: I'm not doing it

Her: Yes you're

Me: I'm not going to rehab for 6 months

Her: Of course not.. You can hide off somewhere, how about your Parents place? I doubt Papparazzi will get you there Daddy's place seems safe he hasn't made headlines.. I'm going to make a few phone calls I'm coming

She walked out..

—

ARMAN

I

I went outside to get some fresh air, being in the same room as Nontsikelelo was going to drive me crazy.. As I was outside my phone vibrated, I got it out and I didn't recognize the number..

Me: Hello?

Voice: È questo Giorgio Armani? (Is this Giorgio Armani)Me:

I'm sorry what?

Voice: Is this Giorgio Armani?

Me: Uhm?

Voice: I'm looking to place an order for a Giorgio Armani handbag.. It's for my girlfriendMe: I'm sorry but you've got the wrong number

I hung up.. Before I could even put my phone back in my Apron, The person called again..Me: Look

I said wrong number!

I heard him laughing..

Him: Never in a million years did I think you were this rudeMe:

Who is this?

Him: It's Mongs

Me: Ohhh my word.. I am so embarrassed, I.. Your voice sounds differentHe laughed again..

Him: It's okay I understand

Me: I'm really sorry.. I.. How did you get my number though?

Him: I know a friend, who knows a friend, who knows a friend.. Who got me your number I chuckled..

Me: You have friends in high places I see

Him: Maybe I do... How are you doing?

Me: I'm doing well and you

Him: I'm doing well too

(Silence)

Him: I just called to say Hi.. That's all

Me: Ohw

Him: Hi

Me: Hi (Laughing)

Him: I'll call you again to say Hi

Me: You are crazy

Him: Now that's offensive

Me: In a good way.. I meant you crazy in a good way

Him: I still think it's offensive (Laughing)

Me: I'm sorry then

Him: Well you can make it up to me

Me: How?

Him: By saying Yes to going out with me.. Tomorrow nightMe: I

don't know I mean.. I have a lot going on an-

Him: How about.. You'll get back to me?

Me: I'll get back to you

Him: On this number?

Me: Yes on this Number

Him: Bye princess

Me: Bye

He hung up. I couldn't stop smiling like a retard..11

JOJO

Nomfundo had gone back to her place so later on that day Taschi came home with Mein her own words, she needed to make sure that I don't "Self destruct". Things that they were saying about me on social media were just cruel, but not as cruel as how I acted on that video..

"Jojo is full of himself Period"

..

"I can't believe he treats his staff like that, if it wasn't for his good actors Usapho was going to be nothing"

..

"Iyadelela le Chap"

..

"But we did vote, it's not our fault that they did him bad"

..

I was trending with 30k tweets so far, I don't wanna see what the newspapers and magazines are going to say about me. This wouldn't bother me if it was another scandal, but I disrespected my fans and without their views, my pay check is going to be affected.

Taschi walked in, I was standing at the balcony..Her:

I prepared something for you

Me: Thank you, but I don't have an appetite

Her: I stood in that kitchen for half an hour cooking, don't play me like that I chuckled..

Her: If I was there, if I was in that room I would've spotted something. I'm sorry Me: It's not your fault.. It's not anyone's fault but mine

(Silence)

Me: Is this what I have become? Is this how I treat people? She came closer..

Her: I'm no psychologist but.. She put her hand under my arm..

Her: You are what you're because of certain things in your life that you never made peace with, you can't keep on avoiding it Jojo. It's eating you up and in turn you take out everything on People that care a lot about you

She laid her head on my shoulder..

Her: You need to go home

Me: I don't know.. There's nothing for me there anymore

Her: That's where you need to face your demons instead of running away from them and avoiding them

Me: You think the drug scandal is going to work?

Her: I hope so.. Look fans might be angry but they going to come around, Usapho is the best drama currently on Tv. They will rant, they will say they won't watch anymore but later at night they secretly tune in, because that's how good your drama is. Plus it's season finale everyone wants to know how it's going to end

I sighed..

Me: I won't be able to end it with a bang if I'm in "Rehab"

Her: You can write in "Rehab" then come to the studio in the morning.. No one would know except for the traitor

Me: We need to find the traitor as soon as possibleHer: We

will.. Bonza is on it

(Silence)

Her: Now can we go and eat dinner? I didn't waste 30min there for nothingI kissed

her on the forehead..

Me: Let's go

–

ARMAN

I

We were gathered around the dinner table and things were awkward. Things were very awkward. Xolelwa's Fiancé, Lukhele had come with his Daughter, Sindi who is a year older than me (28). I wonder how she feels knowing that she's older than her Step Mother. I could see that Xolelwa was uncomfortable with everything that was happening, I mean she's marrying this man very soon and yet they sitting next to each other as if like they strangers, rephrase that they are strangers. I remember when she said to me, "My Father said that it doesn't matter if I don't love him, what matters is that he loves me. I will grow to love him as time goes on". I wonder if she will, I wonder if she will "grow" to love him as time goes on. My concentration was on Nontsikelelo, deep down I'm still trying to figure out why she's doing this to her children, how can she sit there and act like everything is okay. Her Daughter who is 21 years old is marrying a man who is not even twice her age, and this woman is okay with it. Something is wrong with her, she is definitely sick in the head..

Nonts: So.. Have you guys decided on a date yet?

Xolelwa: Uhm not yet.. I haven't had a chance, I've been busy at workLukhele:

It has been busy

Nonts: Xolelwa you can always ask for help, you can't do everything alone.. Ndikhona(I'm here)

Xolelwa faked a smile. Ndarha wasn't around, not that I'm complaining. He was definitely going to ruin the whole dinner for us and make it more awkward..

–

TASCHI

Jojo decided to take a shower first before we could have dinner, I was in the bedroom sitting on his bed and waiting for him to finish. Jojo and I come very far, I knew him way before he became this big time shot that he is today. After completing my matric I briefly studied media at Boston city campus, and then a family friend of ours hooked me up with my first job as a skivvy. There was a drama series back then that wasn't very popular, I was running around getting everyone anything that they needed and Jojo was one of the actors. We started of as friends, got very close to each other and we dated but it never worked out. We tried again and still it didn't workout, so we decided to remain friends. When he started his own Production company, he needed people that he could trust and there I was. I wasn't going to be a skivvy forever so I took him on, on being his Assistant and here we are today. Whatever happens I'll always care for him.

He walked out with a towel around his lower body, by then I was checking out some photo album..

Me: You have changed from how you used to look when you were young
Him: Ya
time flies

I closed the album and put it next to me..

Me: This is awkward, thought I was forbidden in this room now that you have a girlfriend
He came to me..

Him: You'll never be forbidden

He pulled my legs and I fell on the bed, on my back..
He came on top of me..

Me: We shouldn't do it here.. I don't wanna disrespect your girlfriend on a bed that she shares with you

Him: She's not here

He started kissing me on my neck..

Me: Okay Jojo there's a few things we need to discuss
Him: I'm listening

Me: We need to start using condoms

He looked at me..

Him: Why?

Me: You not sleeping with me alone

Him: Nomfundo is clean, and I know you smart.. I'm sure that your boyfriend is also clean

Me: I'm serious Jojo

He sighed..

Him: Fine, but I don't have condoms now

Me: You will have to get them plus I'm tired of buying an emergency pill every now and then

Him: Is that all?

Me: One last thing.. I also wanna enjoy, our sex life used to be good until you started being selfish and satisfied yourself only

Him: Understood.. Anything else?

Me: That's all

He leaned over and kissed my neck again, I like the smell of his shower gel.. He kissed me on my cheek and then finally kissed me on my lips, which turned into a french kiss after a few seconds. It wasn't difficult for him to remove my dress since it's a wrap around, before he could proceed he looked at my breasts in that push up bra and bit his lower lip..

Him: I've missed you Me:

I've missed you too

I put my arms around his neck and we kissed again, I know Jojo is a bit rough when it comes to sex but once you sleep with him and then you sleep with someone else it won't be the same. I am glad that my boyfriend is a person who travels a lot, he is hardly around so we hardly have sex.. He held my small waist and lifted my body up a bit as he went down kissing me, from my chest up until he reached my belly button. He moved further down and gently bit my cookie through my underwear.. [REMOVED]...

—

ARMANI

After dinner I went straight to my quarters to bath and have an early night. Every night before I sleep Mam'Gabi and I share a scripture over the phone, and then after that scripture we hang up and pray. She has been my prayer partner for as long as I can remember. I had just finished bathing and I was on the phone with her..

Me: Yazi kube umbonile (You should've seen her)

Her: If you want our plan to work, you can't change your attitude towards her. You need to act the same

I exhaled and sat on the bed..

Her: Right now forget about everything you need to get rid of that anger before you start praying

I started breathing in and out..

Her: Tonight you the one who is supposed to share a scripture Me: I

even forgot

Her: Armani you need to focus

Me: Ngiyazi.. Ngiyaxolisa Mam'Gabi (I know.. I'm sorry Mam'Gabi) Her:

Okay I'll share but only for tonight

Me: Thank you

Before we went any further I heard the key turning.. I knew that it was Ndarha, he is the only one has a key to my quarters..

Me: Mam'Gabi I have to go

Her: Go where?

Me: I'll call you later

I hung up and stood up, waiting for him to come to me. He didn't look like his usual self, he seemed a bit upset. He took off his jacket and his tie..

Him: I took care of you, gave you everything. If it wasn't for me you would be out on the streets contracting Hiv like your Mother!

That wasn't something I wanted to hear..

Him: I love you Armani, I was willing to sacrifice a lot for you and for what? So that you could run away

I looked at him puzzled..

Him: I know about the secret account My

heart almost stopped beating..

He unbuttoned his shirt and took it off, he had a muscle vest underneath.. I shook my head..

Me: I wasn't.. I wasn't planning on running away

Him: Don't lie to me!!!

He grabbed me by my hair and threw me on the bed.. Me:

You don't understand I..

Him: I understand very well!

He got on top of me and forcefully pinned my arms on the bed by pressing his knees on them and then he repeatedly started punching me in the face.. All I could do was scream and apologize..

Me: I'm sorry

Him: You lied to me Armani! You made me believe that you loved me too, you made me believe that you enjoyed it when we made love but all along you were pretending!!

Me: I wasn't pretending (Crying)

He stopped after a while and then got off, my vision was already blurry.. Him: If you want me to be a monster, I will be a monster

He took out his phone and called someone.. He

was breathing fire..

Him: It's me... Wipe it clean..

After those words he looked at me..

Him: Try something like that again and I'm going to kill you! You will never get away from me!
Ever!

12

ISAAC NDARHA

I haven't been physical with Armani in a very long time until tonight, Anger came over me when I realized that she had been lying to me. I thought that we were seeing eye to eye now, I thought that we shared the same feelings but she had blindsided me. A part of me wants to kill her now get this thing over and done with, but another part of me is still deeply in love with her. I don't know what other life she's thinking about because this is the only life she knows, she has lived it for far too long now.. My phone disturbed me by ringing, I closed the tap. I had been washing my hands, washing her blood off my hands. I took the towel and wiped them, I then made my way out of the bathroom to get my phone on the bed. It was Bonza..

Me: Did you get my message?

Him: I did.. But

Me: But what?

Him: Wiping the account won't be easy

Me: What do you mean? I thought nothing is impossible with you

Him: I never said it's impossible, I just said it won't be easy. For that to happen I need to go through a few people who work there

Me: I thought we had an inside man

Him: We do but he's only limited to a certain things Me:

Can't you find someone to hack in?

Him: It would've been easier if it was a typical cheque account, it's a fixed account she signed a contract and when that date comes for her to go get the money she starts over again. It's going to take a while to wipe it clean without leaving any trail

This was disappointing, I didn't wanna hear this at all.. Him:

There's another faster way

Me: Which is?

Him: Armani herself.. She can go there and sign for it, she will get a penalty fee for withdrawing before the actual date but..

Me: Armani won't do it, she won't withdraw the money

Him: You have been able to make this girl do anything that you want, I'm sure you can convince her to do this

Me: It would've been easier if she had someone that was close to her heart, she has noone.. I can't threaten her or blackmail her with anything

Him: You have to find a way Ndarha.. Just until we can wipe that account clean Nontsikelelo walked in..

Me: I'll see what I can do

Him: Okay..

Me: I'll call you again tomorrow

Him: Yes Sir

I hung up and threw my phone on the bed..Her:

You missed dinner

Me: bendi busy (I was busy)

Her: You didn't miss much.. We were trying to come up with the wedding dateMe:

How did that go?

Her: We getting there

Me: That's good

She made her way to me..

Her: You know we haven't been sexual lately

She tried putting her arms around my neck but I moved..Me:

Not tonight

I got my phone and walked away..

Her: Uya kuArmani? (Are you going to Armani)I

stopped and looked at her..

Me: Andiva? (what was that)

Her: Undivile Ndarha (You heard me)I

was speechless for a moment..

Her: I'm not that stupid as to not see and notice what's happening around me.. Tell mesomething, are you going to abuse her until when? She is a beautiful girl and very smart.She deserves to be happy, she deserves to go out there and live her life with someone else

Me: I'll sleep in the guest room tonight

I walked out and closed the door behind me..

—

ARMAN

I

It was very dark in my quarters and I was curled up at some corner, I've been there ever since he left. I didn't even look at myself in the mirror, but my left eye was completely shut whilst my right eye the vision wasn't also that good..

Me: "Somebody told me once that pain is a game we all gotta play.. Then why am I in overtime and sudden death every other day"

Singing has always been the only thing that comforts me when I'm going through something..

Me: "I know that for the good of life there's a price we all gotta pay, But I'll pay 'till I'm poor and I still don't know what it is to have a good day"

What now? What am I going to do? I had a good plan, I've managed to keep the account a secret until now, how did he find out?.. I just felt like giving up, there's no use anymore. Ndarha is going to watch my every move and if he has already wiped my account, then it's over for me..

—

XOLISWA (TIGER)

The next morning I woke up a bit earlier than my usual time, and Loli was not laying next to me. That was very unusual because she wakes up late, and I mean very late. I lifted my head up and looked around..

Me: Loli?

It was quiet.. I got up and went to look for her, she was at the kitchen drinking coffee.Me: Hey She looked at me..

Her: Hey

I went and stood next to her..

Me: You not an early bird Her:

Ya I know

Me: What's wrong?

(Silence)

Her: After what you told me last night, I couldn't sleep

I had told her everything last night about who I am, my family, how cruel my father is.. Itold her about Xolelwa, Jojo, and Armani. I didn't leave any detail out..

Her: I can't believe that Isaac Ndarha is your Father.. The Deputy president of SouthAfrica

Me: You were going to find out soon because my twin is getting marriedI shrugged my shoulders..

Me: My Father is very private though I'm not sure if the wedding is going to be televisedHer: Do you have a picture of your twin sister?

Me: Yeah I stalk her on Instagram.. I'll show you

Her: You know UNdarha come across as this perfect human being. I mean he is a minister, a deputy president, a philanthropist. All along I thought that he was a good man... Then you tell me what you told me last night, it doesn't wanna sink in. How can your father treat you like that? He is a psychopath!

Me: No he is a sociopath

Her: What?

Me: A psychopath is not aware that inflicting pain on others is wrong, a sociopath is very aware of his/her actions and that they're wrong but they do it anyway

Her: I'm really sorry that you had to go through all that

She put the mug down and hugged me..

Me: It's okay.. It was a long time ago.. You can't tell anyone about this, about who I am

We broke the hug..

Her: I won't.. I promise

I nodded..

Her: Uhm..

Me: Uhm what?

Her: So can I??

I sighed and rolled my eyes..

Me: Yeah I'll call him to come over for dinner

Her: Like he will come here? To our place?

Me: If he's not busy.. Yes

Her: Wait.. We going to have Jojo come here? You going to call him to come here?

Me: He is my Brother

Her: Okay.. Uhm let's calm down

Me: I am calm

She hit me on my shoulder..

Her: Why you never told me this? That I'm dating a Ndarha

Me: This doesn't change anything you know?

Her: I know.. I know

Me: I'm going to bathI

walked away..

Me: You coming?

Her: I'll come.. I'll comeI

walked out..

—

NOMFUND

O

I kept on looking around, I have never done something like this before. I was even shaking.. I spotted his car a bit far from the flats, I made my way to him. It was a bit cold and still early in the morning, there wasn't much people on the road. I got to his car and opened the door, I quickly got in fixing my cap. I was still in my PJs..

Him: Relax

I took a deep breath..

Me: I've never done something like this before

Him: I know but you need to relax, if you acting like this he will notice that something is wrong

I swallowed..

Me: He won't know that I'm the one who secretly recorded him and sent the video to you right?

Him: if no one saw you then we good.. I will turn this whole thing around, who was there? Me: The..

The actors an-

Him: Think of someone else, someone technical Me:

The camera man?

Him: Well I guess we can work with that

Me: So what now?

Him: Leave everything to me I

nodded nervously..

Me: Okay

Him: Good work Nomfundo

Me: Thank you

Him: Remember.. Act cool, don't show any red flags Me: I

won't

Him: Good girl

Me: Thank you again

Him: Always

I got out..

—

JOJO

Nataschi rushed down the stairs.. Her:

Why didn't you wake me up? Me: You

were sleeping so peacefully She put on

her heels..

Me: I guess you won't have time for breakfast?

Her: Not exactly.. I'm meeting up with Phaphama to get you an interview Me: Yes

Mam'

Her: Have you thought about going home?

Me: It's all that I've been thinking about, after the interview I'm going home Her:

That's good.. I'm proud of you

She walked over and kissed me on the cheek..

Her: I'll see you later

Me: Later

She walked to the door, I sighed.. Thinking about going back home is a little bit depressing, but I have to do it.. It's about time I face my demons..

13

ARMANI

This is one of the days were I wish that my Mother could've aborted me or had given me away, where does one find inner peace and true happiness in a world full of soo much hate and monsters? Where does one turn too, when what you consider "Home" is a prison. 27 years now and I'm still waiting for that "One day" when things will be okay.

Why do evil doers always get away with everything? Is the power of the devil stronger than the one high up above? I've been praying for God to save my soul, not even an Angel has come to my aid. I am broken, I am shattered. What's left of me is only a shadow of what I used to be.. I heard different male voices speaking, a partial light was shining in the room each time when the door was opened. They were talking and I couldn't grasp much of what they were saying, I think I passed out on the floor last night. Why didn't hypothermia kill me? Could've been a cruel death but it would've saved me from this cruel world. I felt someone picking me up, I was drained and nothing made sense..

Ndarha: Get her phone

Even if I could lose my hearing but I will never forget his voice, this is a voice that I will never forget for as long as I live..

Ndarha: This man is going to come later to wipe out everything on the surveillance footage

Voice1: Ewe Mhlekaazi (Yes Sir) Voice2:

We need to get moving Ndarha: Let's go..

How far is it? Voice2: about an hour

drive from here Ndarha: Good.. I'll get her

to your car

What is happening? Where are they taking Me?

—

JOJO

I kept on calling Bonza but he wasn't picking up, I heard someone knocking..Me: Come in

The door opened and Nomfundo walked in..Her:

You wanted to see me?

Me: Yes I wanted to see you

She closed the door..

I sat on the table and looked at her, for some reason she couldn't look me straight in theeye..

Me: Called you last night, you didn't pick up

Her: I know.. I was busy

Me: With what?

Her: My makeup tutorial videos

I took my phone and went on her Instagram as well as on her blog but she hasn'tuploaded anything for 3 days now..

Me: You didn't upload them?

Her: Not yet

I put my phone down..

Me: Your phone?

Her: It's in my bag

Nomfundo possibly cheating on me is something that I've never thought about, it'ssomething I don't wanna think about. She would never cheat, I mean I'm Jojo. She wouldn't dare cheat on me..

Her: Is that all?

Me: Can we do lunch later on?

Her: I can't.. I've promised my Sister that I'll do lunch with her later onMe:

Where? I can make reservations for you two and pay the bill

Her: Thank you but I got itI

nodded..

Me: Nomfundo come here

She made her way to me..

Her: Yes?

Me: Closer

Her: I think this is close enough

Me: I will tell you when it's close enough

Her: Jojo I really need to get back to workMe:

Closer

She moved closer..

Me: Again.. Closer

Her: Wha-

I stretched my hand and pulled her closer, she freaked out..Me:

What's wrong with you?

Her: Nothing is wrong.. I'm.. I just wanna go back to work that's allShe was

trembling..

Me: Nomfundo what is wrong?

Her: I'm sorry

Me: What do you mean you sorry?

She kept quiet.. I shook her a bit..

Me: Talk!!

Her: I'm the one who took that video and uploaded it on social media

Me: What? No, it can't be.. You couldn't have possibly taken the video because you weren't even there

Her: I was you just didn't see me but Hlehle did (Crying)Me:

Why would you do that?

Her: I wanted to get back at you.. I know that you have been sleeping with Taschi behind my back
I didn't know how to respond...

Her: I'm sorry.. I shouldn't have sent itMy

phone rang, it was Bonza..

I picked it up..

Me: Hello?

Him: I tracked the IP address of the person who sent the Video, it was from the StudioMe: I
know.. It was my girlfriend she just confessed

Him: Really? I don't understand

Me: I'll call you later

Him: Okay

I put the phone down and looked at her as she wiped her tears..Me: Go
back to work

She didn't say anything.. She walked out..

—

ARMAN

I

I don't even know where I was I couldn't see much with my swollen eyes. All I could hear was a female voice..

Her: Uzoba right Sisi (You going to be okay)

Me: Who are you?

Her: Khamisa (Open your mouth)

Me: Ngikuphi? (where am I)

Her: Kuzomele udle, uzokwazi uthola amandla (You will have to eat, so you can pick up your strength)

Me: What's happening?

Her: Akukubi kangako, uzophola nje maduzane (It's not that bad, you will heal soon) Where am I?

—

NDARH

A

I finally got a call from Bonza..

Me: Did you guys arrive?

Him: Ya

Me: Is your Sister fine with everything?

Him: She's fine plus it's not like Armani is going to stay here forever Me:

Thank you.. Thank you very much

Him: Anything Sir.. Just make sure your story is believable Me: I'll

call you.. Bye

Him: Bye

I made my way to the house, I was surprised to see Xolelwa.. Me:

Aren't you supposed to be at work?

Her: Day off

I looked at the time..

Her: Have you seen Armani?

Me: No I haven't, I even went to check her at her quarters since breakfast wasn't ready but she wasn't there

Her: That's strange.. She wouldn't just go out without saying anything

Me: I don't want you to freak out, I know how close you're with Armani but..Her:

But?

Me: When I got to her quarters the door was wide open, it was forced entryHer: You think someone forced their way in?

Me: I think Armani got kidnapped last night or this morning.. I'm not sureHer:

How can?.. How can someone get in just like that? I don't understandI got her a glass of water and gave it to her..

Me: Calm down.. I will get to the bottom of this, I'll need to make a few calls.. Go and sit down

14

NOMFUNDO

During lunchtime Jojo asked to meet up with me at some restaurant that we often go too which is not that far from the studio. I was more scared than nervous I know that Jojo and I haven't been together for that long, but I know that messing with him is very dangerous. I don't know what he is going to do to me with regards to the video situation. Bonza confirmed my suspicions that Jojo is indeed sleeping with Taschi, he has been Jojo's lawyer and friend for a while now I mean after all, his job is to unravel things.. I saw him making his way to me, I have since ordered a cocktail that I was even halfway to finishing now.. He pulled the chair opposite me and sat down, his look sent shivers down my spine. He was able to keep his peace until the waiter came to our table..

Him: Good afternoon Sir

Jojo: Good afternoon please give me the usualHim:

Yes Sir

He looked at me..

Me: I'm still fine with the cocktail

He smiled and walked away..

Jojo looked at my glass and then looked at the time..Him: Tell me something

He laid back on the chair..

Him: Do you have proof that Nataschi and I, are sleeping together?I shook my head..

Me: No

He slightly nodded..

Him: So you decided to tarnish my name and reputation based on being delusional?I swallowed..

Him: This is becoming a drag Nomfundo, this level of being insecure is annoying nowI kept my silence, saying something now might not be advisable..

His phone rang, He took it out and looked at it..

Him: Xolelwa..

He looked at me..

Him: I have to take this.. It's my SisterHe answered..

Him: Xoks?.....Andikuva Xolelwa (I can't hear you Xolelwa)

I saw his eyes widening..

Him: Uthi kutheni? (What are you saying)He lowered the phone and stood up..

Him: Go pack a bag

Me: Pack a bag?

Him: We going to my Parents place.. Something happened with my-

He cleared his throats..

Him: My Step Sister was kidnapped

Me: You should go then I'm sure they need you

Him: You didn't hear me when I said "Pack a bag".. You coming with

He walked away and I was still sitting there trying to comprehend what he said, returned and made his way to the table. I stood up..

Him: I'm not going to repeat myself again

I took out R100 and put it on the table, then we made our way out..

—

ARMAN

I

I could see partially with my right eye, my left eye was still shut. I was able to get up from the bed and made my way out of the bedroom, I noticed that it was a small house. Probably a 4 roomed house.. For some reason I felt cold and drowsy, maybe the drowsy state comes from the pills that I was given. I opened the kitchen door and I was met by the sun, I had to close my other eye a bit..

I heard the lady calling out..

Her: Armani.. Wenzani? (what are you doing)

She quickly made her way to me..

Me: Please I need to go from here

Her: Asibuyele ekamereni (Let's go back to the bedroom) She touched me with her wet hands..

I pushed her off..

Me: You don't understand

Her: Sisi I have a taser, don't make me use it. Angifuni ukukulimaza (I don't wanna hurt you)

Me: Why are you doing this? Why are you helping such a cruel man? Ukuthembise ntoni? (What did he promise you)

Her: Woza.. Masibuyele ekamereni (Come.. Let's go back to the bedroom)

She took me back to the bedroom. I fail to understand why other women like to do this, they would protect an evil man even when proof is staring them in the eye..

–

XOLELW

A

My Father was not around he has been out trying to talk to his connections so that they can help us bring Armani back home quicker. He said the cops will take a while, by the time they start acting Armani might be dead or something.. My Mom was devastated, even the whiskey wasn't going down well she was broken..

Me: Here Mama

She took the glass of water from me..

I sighed and sat next to her on the couch..Her:

Your Father hasn't called?

Me: No.. Nothing

Her: Who would come to our house and take our Armani? I'm failing to understand Xolelwa exactly what is going on?

Me: I also don't understand We

heard Mam'Gabi's voice..

Her: Madam.. You have a visitor

Mongezi walked in..

Mongz: Sorry I took long

Mom: As long as you here

He hugged us..

Mom: Gabi can you please get Mongz something to drink?

Mam'Gabi slightly bowed and then walked away, Mongz sat down on the other couch. Mongz: I've actually meant to come a bit earlier but work

Mom: I understand, you have a lot on your plate

Mongz: But thanks for calling me

Mom: I really appreciate you taking your time and coming hereHim:

It's okay..

Mom: I know how much you care about Armani, unless I'm wrong

Him: I've known her for a short period of time but.. I still wanted to know her more, she is truly an amazing Person

(Silence)

Him: I have made a few calls and I hope we will find her soonI just

want Mani to come back home safe..

—

ARMAN

I

She brought in something to eat for me, whatever it was the smell got to me eventhough I had convinced myself that I won't eat..

Her: When you were sleeping earlier I cooked Pap and some stew

She put the tray next to me, next to the plate was a glass of water and a wet swab..Her: You can wipe your hands first

She wasn't that old and she seemed like a nice lady, I don't know why she's doing this..Me: You seem like a nice Person.. Why are you doing this?

Her: I will come and get the plate when you doneShe

made her way to the door..

Me: The man you protecting is abusing me, he is the one who did this to me. Please look at me and tell me how you going to enjoy whatever amount of money he is payingyou to guard me

I thought that she was perhaps going to be moved or something, after all she is a woman she should feel my pain. She just opened the door and walked out, locking it

behind her..

—

XOLISWA (TIGER)

Jojo showed up at work without his disguise, he is not supposed to be here. Luckily I didn't have a client but kitty had one. I looked at Kitty and her client, they were starring at him.

I walked up to him..

Me: Dude what are you doing here?

Him: I need to talk to you

Me: You couldn't call?

Him: No..

Me: What's up?

Him: It's Armani.. She has been kidnappedMe:

What?

Him: I'm on my way home as we speaking, but I'm going to fetch my girlfriend first she went to her place to pack

Me: How did it happen? Ndarha's security is top notchHim:

I don't know.. That's what I wanna find out

Me: Keep me posted

Him: Actually that's why I'm here.. I want you to tag alongMe:

That's not going to happen

Him: It's Armani Xols, plus I promised Xolelwa somethingMe:

What?

Him: That I won't rest until both of you have reunitedMe: I

don't know Jojo.. I mean

Him: Ndarha can't beat you anymore or anything like that, those days are over and he would never do that around me.. I promise

I would never let him lay his hand on you I

looked around..

Me: What about work?

Him: You don't have to stay for long.. Maybe a week.. I'm sure that girl will survive a week without you

I exhaled..

Him: It's Armani Dawg.. It's Mani

I didn't know how to feel about this.. 15

ISAAC NDARHA

I had met up with Bonza just to have lunch and then talk..

Me: It has been a while since I've handled things like this with her

Bonza: It will blow over

Me: I don't know why Armani can't just accept, I mean she could live a beautiful life. She could have everything that she wants, I have kept her away from the public to make our relationship easier when the time is right. All along she has been blindsiding me

Bonza: I don't think Armani will ever be happy with someone else even if she can move on

I looked at him..

Me: You really think so?

Him: She has known and been with you for far too long now, I have no doubt that she has Stockholm syndrome

Me: But I am not abusing her or anything, Armani has free will. I'm not holding her hostage in my basement or something like that

Him: Either way.. I'm not even going to touch on her past relationship with Jojo because

they were still young. You the only man that she knows emotionally, mentally and physically. Won't be easy for her to move on just like that

I sighed..

Me: I just wish that she could see things from my perspective, all that I've done so far Idid because I love her. All those private schools weren't cheap, I've taken care of her. She was never in need and all that I ever wanted was for her to love me the same way that I love her

Him: You two will get over this.. Maybe talk to her and tell her how you feel, you guys might work something out

I looked at the time..

Me: I do hope that we work something out

–

XOLELW

A

Armani means a lot to me, her abduction is unsettling to all of us who are close to her. Each passing second and minute of her not being around was getting to me, what if they hurt her or worse.. What if they kill her?

Gabi: Thatha (take)

She had made me a cup of tea..

Me: Ndiyabulela Mam'Gabi (Thank you Mam'Gabi)

Her: Be careful it's hot

Me: Thank you

She exhaled..

Her: Armani's disappearance has devastated all of us I thought for a while..

Me: Who would just get in and take Armani? It doesn't make sense Her:

Mhlambe umuntu onaziyo (maybe it's someone who knows you) Me: That makes sense

Her: Security is very tight.. No one can just enter and do something like this

What Mam'Gabi was saying actually made a bit of sense. It's someone who knows us..Me: You think it's Dad's enemies?

Her: Ngicabanga kanjalo (I think so)

Me: Why would they take Armani?

Her: Maybe they thought the Servant's quarters was an easy access or they know that Armani means a lot to the family

Me: I just want Armani home, safe and soundHer:

Has your Mom called?

Me: No since she left with Mongz, she hasn't calledWe heard someone ringing the doorbell..

Mam' Gabi: Athi ngiyobona ukuthi ubani (Let me go and see who it is)Me:

Okay

She went to check and I got my phone, I had no missed calls.. Not even a text message

I put it back the table. While I was still sitting there, lost deep in my thoughts I heard Mam'Gabi screaming. I freaked out a bit, I quickly made my way to the kitchen with my phone incase I need to call for help. When I got there I couldn't believe what I was seeing, it was Jojo. I had mixed emotions. Jojo hasn't been in home in a very long time, I only thought that he was going to make it home only for my wedding, didn't expect to see him..

Mam'Gabi: Ohhh Jojo, ithi ngikubone kahle (let me see you)It was an emotional moment, he came at the right time..

Him: Xoks..

I wanted to say something but I didn't know what to say, I was very emotional..Him:

Don't cry.. Come here

He met me halfway with a hug..

Me: I'm so happy to see you

Him: I'm happy to see you too.. Shhh sulila (don't cry) We
broke the hug and he wiped my tears..

Him: Look at you.. You look good

Me: You look good too

We looked at the girl that he was with..

Jojo: This is my Girlfriend.. Nomfundo, Mfundo this is my sister XolelwaNomfundo:

Hi.. I've heard a lot about you

She came and hugged me...

Jojo: And that is Mam'Gabi, she practically raised us after our Nanny leftNomfundo
went and hugged Mam'Gabi..

Mam'Gabi: Do feel at home.. If you need anything, ubize mina (If you need anything, callme)

Nomfundo: Ngizokwenza njalo Ma (I'll do just that)

Mam'Gabi: Can I make you both something to eat?Jojo:

How can I say no to your food?

Mam'Gabi: Did you guys come with any bags?

Jojo: Yes they in the car.. I'll get them later

Nomfundo: I would like to freshen up first

Xolelwa: I'll take you upstairs

Jojo: Wait

He looked at me..

Him: I have a surprise for you

Me: A surprise?

Jojo: Yes

Me: What's the occasion?

Jojo: No occasion.. Wait, I'm coming

Mam'Gabi and I looked at each other..

Mam'Gabi: Do you know what the surprise is about?

Nomfundo: I do

Me: Is it a car?

She chuckled..

Her: No.. I believe it's better than a car

Jojo went out..

Me: What could be better than a car? Nomfundo:

I'm sure you'll like this surprise Me: I am

anxious.. I really don't like surprisesThe door

opened again and Jojo walked in.. It was quiet

for a second..

Me: So where is the surprise?

He stepped aside and it was my twin Sister, Xoliswa. I immediately got a sharp pain that pierced through my chest, my stomach started turning in and I couldn't feel my body anymore.

Everything started moving in slow motion, Mam'Gabi did what she did best.

She was jumping around and screaming with her hands on her head, and busy thanking God. I felt dizzy, I felt light headed, my chest closed in. I struggled to breath.. I let go of my phone and it fell..

Me: Jojo

I stretched my hand to him and he quickly came to me and held me..Him: Are you okay?

Nomfundo: I'll get you some water

Me: Take me to my room

Jojo: But..

Me: Please

He picked up my phone..

Him: Okay let's go

Xoliswa had her hands buried deep inside her pockets and she was looking down..Jojo walked me upstairs while Nomfundo followed with a glass of water..

—

ARMAN

I

Sitting in this room without being entertained by anything depressed me more than anything. The silence was getting to me, all I could do was stare at the wall and be lost in my thoughts.. I heard the door unlocking, Ndarha walked in..

Ndarha: Thank you Linda

He closed the door.. Fear took over, when I saw him I remembered what he did to me, I don't think I've ever been this scared before. It's not like he hasn't beat me before, it has been a while since he raised his hand on me. He promised to never hit me again, because he saw that I was starting to get scared of him. I don't know why he went back on his word, he is someone who keeps his word..

He stood at the window and fixed the curtain, I sat on that bed not knowing what he was going to do to me.. He finally broke the ice..

Him: How are you feeling?

He said that without even looking at me..I

swallowed..

Me: I'm fine

Him: You will go back home soon, I don't want anyone suspecting anything.. I made up a story about you being kidnapped

Me: Ohw

Him: It seemed fitting to make up such a storyHe

turned and looked at me..

Him: For Xolelwa's sake

Me: For Xolelwa's sake

We heard a knock at the door.. Ndarha went to open, it was Linda with the tray..Linda:

Homemade custard

Ndarha: Thank you He

took the bowl.. Linda:

careful.. It's hot

Ndarha: Thank you Linda

She walked out. Ndarha made his way to me and sat on the bed...Him:

Homemade custard

I didn't say anything, he tasted it first..

Him: It's nice

I nodded..

He handed me the bowl.. I tasted it too..

Him: It's good that you can eat

Me: I've been eating all day

He laughed..

Him: Linda is a nice Person that's why I brought you hereHe

kissed my thigh..

Him: I'm sorry

I almost choked on the custard, Ndarha humbling himself and Apologizing?

Him: When I found out about the account.. I was sure that you were going to leave me

I didn't say anything but stared down at the custard..

Him: We going to get through this and start over.. Like old times?I
nodded again..

Me: Like old times

Him: Let me help you with that

He got closer and took the bowl from me..

—

XOLELW

A

Nomfundo: Here

Me: Thank you

I took the glass from her, my hands were still shaking.. Jojo helped me to hold the glass..

Me: How did you?? That was Xoliswa

Him: I know.. Ndandikuthembisile nje ukuba ndizamkhangela (I made a promise to you that I was going to look for her)

Me: Umfumene njani? (How did you find her)

Him: Story for another day

I drank the water..

Him: You alright? I

nodded..

Me: I guess so

Him: You wanna go downstairs?I

shook my head no..

Me: Not now.. I just wanna be alone

Him: I understand

He kissed me on the forehead..

Him: I'll check on you later

Me: Okay

They walked to the door and he looked at me

Him: Are you sure that you okay?

Me: I'm okay

I faked a smile..

Him: See you later then

They walked out..

16

JOJO

(no edits, excuse any errors)

Nomfundo was in my old bedroom freshening up, we going to be using that room for as long as we in this house. I brought her along with me because I wanted to keep an eye on her, after the video I don't trust her anymore. I went downstairs to check on Tiger, I spotted her outside at the pool. I made my way to her and my phone rang, It was Taschi..

Me: Tash Her:

You left?

Me: Yeah.. It was an emergency

Her: So what about the interview?

Me: I'm still going to do it, you will email me the detailsHer:

And the Rehab story?

Me: We will see..

Her: Are you going to come to the studio tomorrow?Me:

Yeah I'll be there

Her: Okay see you then

Me: Bye Babe

I made my way to Tiger..

Me: You good?

Her: I'm good

Me: She's just shocked, she has been waiting for this moment she never thought it would actually come

Her: Yeah I know

She seemed to be a bit down, wasn't herself at all..Me:

Missing the girlfriend?

She chuckled..

Her: A bit

(Silence)

Her: I made a promise to myself that I'll never come here ever again.. I was in my old room and it brought back all those memories

I put my hand on her shoulder and squeezed her..

Me: I know Man.. It's not easy for me too but, we had to do it.. Someday we had to be back here again

Her: I guess so.. Have you seen Nonts?Me:

Naa.. Xoks said she went out

Her: What's the Plan? With Mani?

Me: We'll gather all the information that everyone has and I'll call my contacts

Her: I wonder why I'm here because I don't have any contacts.. I doubt I'll be of any helpMe: You here to piss off Isaac

We both laughed..

I saw Mam'Gabi making her way to us, she was limping.. We met her halfway..Her: I wanted to talk to you before everyone comes back

Me: Okay..

Tiger: I'll be inside Me:

I'll check you laterShe

walked away..

Her: WhatsApp me Xolelwa's number, maybe I can call her and make things lessawkward between us

Me: I'll do so man

I looked at Mam'Gabi, she looked around..

Her: Jojo I'm glad you here because I think I know who took ArmaniMe:

You do?

Her: I don't even know where to start JojoMe:

What's happening Ma?

She shook her head..

Her: Ever since you left.. Azange Kwalunga for uArmani (Ever since you left.. Nothinghas gone right for Armani)

Me: Uthetha ngantoni? (what are you talking about)I saw tears in her eyes..

Me: Kwenzaka ntoni Mam'Gabi? (What's going on)She wiped her tears..

Her: UNdarha ndini lo wenu.. He has been abusing Armani both sexually and physically, Ithink he is behind this because Armani was planning on running away

Me: Wait.. What?

Her: Uhlukumezekile uMani Jojo (Armani has been abused)

I've always known that Nda was sick, but this..

Her: I think that's the reason he broke you guys up.. UNdarha has always wanted uMani for himself, ever since uMani has never dated anyone.. Uhlukunyezwa yilo Satan (she been abused by this devil)

I couldn't believe what I was hearing..

Me: I'm going to kill him.. I swear I'm (chuckled).. He is deadHer:

Yima Jojo (wait)

I was boiling inside..

Her: We have to be smart about this, Ndarha is very dangerous. If we go about this the wrong way, He might kill Armani and you.. Angisakhulumini ngo Xoliswa, uzonibulala nonke.. Nami futhi

I sighed..

Me: How the fuck did I not see this? You telling me Armani has been abused all those years?

Her: Yes

I wiped my face with my hands while shaking my head, I have failed Armani..

—

ARMAN

I

Ndarha ended spending some time with me, he laid with me on the bed and he was talking about things that only made sense to him. He kept on talking about our lives together, things that he will do for me, busy confessing his love to me. I know that he has fallen for me I just never knew that it was this deep. He keeps on saying that he loves me but how can you love someone and yet you busy hurting them, it doesn't make sense. I played along in his fantasy hoping that he will somehow let his guard down again, so I can revisit my plan of escaping.

His phone rang, he looked at it..

Him: I have to take this, it's the security at home

He got out of bed but didn't go out of the bedroom..

Him: Ndarha...

I watched him as his facial expression changed as he listened to the other person. Him: What do you mean they at my ho-

He looked at me..

Him: I'm on my way.. Thank you for letting me know.. Bye He looked at me..

Him: I have to go

Me: Is everything okay?

Him: There's cops at the house He looked really worked up..

Him: Linda!!! (screaming)

Linda rushed in..

Him: I want you to lock the house, I don't want Armani going out anymore. Don't let anyone in.. I'll get someone to come and surveillance the house

Linda: Okay Sir I'll do that

Him: It's important that no one comes in or sees Armani outside Linda:

Ngizokwenza njalo (I'll do as I'm told)

Ndarha looked at me..

Him: It will be best and safe for you to follow the rules I nodded..

I wonder what's going on, I have never seen him this worked up before..

-

XOLISWA (TIGER)

It was already getting dark so we decided to prepare dinner. It was Me, Jojo, and Nomfundo at the kitchen. Xolelwa still didn't want to talk to me, she had locked herself

in her bedroom. I hope tomorrow she will have a different attitude.. Nomfundo and I made the whole cooking process a bit fun, she was playing music and we were singing along while dancing here and there..

Nomfundo: "Ngisayo dakwa, Ngisayo lahla ngathi angina ndaba.. Ngisayo jaiva k'phumeilanga.. Yeh uzoqina ongang'bambanga, Yeh Kuzojika amakhanda, Yeh kuzokhishwa ama salad, sizofika ngale Namba"

Me: "Yeh kuzo fiwa macala.. Yeh kuzo fiwa macala.."

We were really having fun, while doing a slow routen dance that we composed along the way..

Us: "Awu, uyeye, Awu, uyeye, Awu uyeye.."

As we were dancing I turned around and noticed Xolelwa standing at the stairs looking at us. I stopped and looked at her..

She turned around and walked back upstairs.

Nomfundo: Yeh Kozu-

Jojo: Uyafundekela Nomfundo (Nomfundo you making noise)

Nomfundo looked at me and I shrugged my shoulders.. Looks like everyone was now suddenly in a bad mood..

Nomfundo went and stopped the song from playing on her phone.. Nomfundo:

Seems like we will have to finish cooking without any music Me: We not in a bad mood.. Azishe!

She looked at Jojo who seemed to be lost in his thoughts.. Me:

Asishe! (play the music)

She looked at Jojo again..

Me: Ohw I see you scared

I went and got my phone then started playing music from it, I played one of my old time favourite song..

Me: "Ng'jabulile ubuye mngani wami, haven't seen you in a while. Girl I thought you

better off without me, I ain't gotta stress about it nomore"

Nomfundo went crazy, that's actually my song with my girl..

Me: "One time for my shorty she the shit yeah She stuck around when I was going through some things yeah And now I'm proud to call her mine and even say it loud It'sgoing down, ziyaphihlika once you in this house 'Cause we gon do it all night.."

We continued dancing, a little too close this time around.. I had my arm around herwaist she had her arm around my neck..

Me:" That's just how it go, I ain't playing no games Love you like I should, ain't no damnthing changed Girl, that's just how it go, I ain't playing no games I'mma love you like I should, ain't no damn thing changed"

Nomfundo was taken a bit, she couldn't stop giggling.. Jojo walked out, I sang louderjust to get to him..

Me: "Ng'jabulile ubuye mgani wami Haven't seen you in a while Girl I thought you'rebetter off without me I ain't gotta stress about it no more"

We looked at each other and laughed, she squeezed my cheeks..Her: You so cute, if I wasn't straight we would hit it off

Me: Yeah probably not, I ain't tryna do my girl like thatShe chuckled..

Me: Speaking of my girl I have to call her

Her: Hau mela ingoma iphele (let the song finish playing)Me:

It'll be a quick one

I got my phone and she snatched it from me.Me:

Okay quit playing

Her: Let the song finish playing first

We heard the door opening, My Mom walked in followed by some guy. She was herusual loud mouth she didn't even see us straight away..

Mom: Cops are useless.. They very useless Nx!!

Her eyes finally came up and then they landed on us..Her:

Ngobani aba eKit-

She didn't even finish her sentence, when she focused on me. Her eyes widened,Nomfundo paused the song..

Mom: Xoliswa?

Me: Nonts

I never used to call her Mom or Mama like everyone else.. Her bag slipped off from her shoulder, it fell.. Her voice started breaking.

Her: Xo.. Xoliswa?

She held on to the kitchen counter with her other hand on her chest..

I made my way to her, her eyes were glowing with tears.. She put her hand on my cheek,she was shaking..

Her: Ohhh Thixo.. Andiyik-.. Xoliswa sana lwam'

She hugged me and I let her cry on my shoulder, she was holding me tight..

—

ARMAN

I

Linda walked in Again..

Her: Just wanted to see if you don't need anythingMe:

I'm still fine thank you

I noticed one or two bibles around the room.. Her:

You will call me when you need somethingShe

walked out..

Me: Wanna pray?

She stopped and looked at me..Me:

I pray around this time

She smiled a little.. Her:

Yes.. We can Pray

I got off of the bed and knelt down, she knelt next to me..Me:

You can pray

Her: Ohh okay

I wanted to see if Prayer will make her have a conscience..

–

XOLISWA (TIGER)

my Mom couldn't stop squeezing my cheeks, checking if everything is okay with me..Me: Nonts
ndi right

She smiled her tears..

Her: I thought I would never see you again.. You lookMe:

Like a boy?

Her: Suqhela Xoliswa (don't be disrespectful)I
laughed..

Her: Ndiyaphupha Noma? (Am I dreaming)

Me: It's really me..

Jojo: Nomf..

My Mom almost got a heart attack seeing Jojo, it was no secret that she loved Jojomore than Me
and Xolelwa..

Her: Jojo!!

The crying started all over again, she went up to him and hugged him. Jojo didn't hug her back..
Something wasn't right with Jojo, he was very mad all of a sudden, or should Isay after the talk
with Mam'Gabi..

Nontsikelelo's moment was short lived when Ndarha made his way in, it started being awkward. He
closed the door and looked at us, I had initially thought that I was going to

be scared when I see him but instead I felt something deep inside of me moving. I was beyond mad, and so was Jojo. The whole room kept quiet as he made his way to us.

Him: Xoliswa.. It's good seeing you again my baby

He opened his arms hoping for a hug but I looked at him as my chest went up and down He lowered his hands and made his way to Jojo..

Him: Nyana (Son)

He extended his hand for a handshake, Jojo put his in his pockets.. Jojo clicked his tongue and walked out, I followed him and then Nomfundo followed us.. We had him laughing behind us..

Ndarha: Ohh well.. That was expected, the Ndarha clan Jojo stopped..

Me: Let me..

I turned around and made my way to him...

Him: Finally reconsidered on the hug?

I punched him across the face..

Nonts Pushed me back..

Nonts: Xoliswa!!!

Jojo: Ouch!

Jojo and I share something in common, and that is going to the gym constantly. I go there everyday after work for maybe an hour or two..

Ndarha had a smirk on his face..

He nodded while rubbing his cheek..

Him: What are you taking? Hormone supplements? He

then laughed..

I made my way back to him but my Mom stopped me..

Nonts: Xoliswa!!! Stop it!

He laughed again..

Ndarha: Myeke Nontsikelelo.. Andithi uXoliswa yiNdoda ngoku (Leave her Nontsikelelo..Xoliswa is a man now)

I pushed through her..

Nonts: Xoliswa please.. Do it for me

Ndarha: Who wants to take another blow at me? Jojo perhaps?Jojo: I'm not going to take a blow at you, I'm going to kill you!

Nomfundo: Guys let's go.. Tiger come on

Ndarha: Ohh nguTiger ngoku?

Nomfundo pulled me back..

Nomfundo: Let's go

We all walked away..

Ndarha: What a family reunion! We should do this again kidsHe continued laughing..

17

XOLISWA (TIGER)

That night I laid on my bed it's funny how the bed seems to be still in good condition, meaning no one has ever occupied my room since I left that time when I was 16. My hand was still hurting from punching my Father, he should be grateful that I'm the one who threw that punch. If it was Jojo, we would be talking a different story by now. He wasn't gonna throw one punch at him, he was gonna go on until Ndarha was knocked unconsciously. He was gonna take him for a punching bag.. Before I could even close my eyes and get some sleep, I had to call Loli. I'm sure she's upset wherever she is, I was supposed to have called her earlier and told her that I arrived safe. I called her a fewtimes and she didn't pick up, she then video called me..

Me: Bun..

Her: Hey

I'm sensing I'm in trouble..

Her: Why would you be in trouble?

Me: You know I was supposed to have called you earlier

Her: I'm going to let you off on this one.. I also didn't call because I had figured that you were bonding with the family

Me: Yeah.. How I hope it was like that Her:

What happened? Is everything okay? Me: It's

nothing much..

Her: Talk to me

Me: I just wanna come back as soon as possible.. This is no longer my world Her:

Kwenzakaleni? (What happened)

Me: I punched my Father

Her: You what?

Me: I know it's messed up

Her: T.. That's so unlike you

Me: That's why I have to come back She

sighed..

Her: How did it go with your twin sister?

Me: Didn't go so well too

Her: everything just sounds so terrible Me:

It is

Her: I'm sorry Love

Me: It's okay.. What are you doing?

Her: You know the usual.. Eating and watching TV, it's a bit boring

Me: I know what you mean.. I'm bored too

Her: When are you coming back?

Me: I don't know but I wanna be out of here

Her: Just see how everything goes first, you haven't been there in a very long time obviously things would be awkward at first

Me: Sounds like you don't want me to come back home She
laughed..

Her: I didn't say that

(Silence)

Me: What you wearing?

Her: Clothes

Me: Define "clothes"

Her: Babe bye (laughing).. Don't forget to call me in the morning Me: I
won't

Her: I love you

Me: I love you too

Her: Bye..

Me: Bye Bun

It was difficult for me being away from Loli, it has always been me and her unless she's at school or we visiting her Mother's house..

I noticed a shadow reflecting under the door, more like someone was standing at my door eavesdropping. I laughed in disbelief..

Me: Xolelwa

She will never change, she used to do that a lot when we were young. She would be listening in when my Dad was all up in my room yelling at me or at times we would be listening at our Parents arguing.. I slowly got out of bed, as I tip-toed my way to the door

trying to catch her in action unfortunately I bumped into my small chair, which made her to run straight into her room. When I opened my door she was closing hers.. I hope that as time goes on she will come around, I don't wanna leave with things still tense between us..

—

ARMAN

I

It was very quiet, I could tell by the darkness outside that it was also very late. I couldn't hear any noise from the lounge, meaning that the TV was off Linda has probably long gone to bed. I got out of bed and made my way to the door, I didn't even have shoes on I have since been wearing Linda's clothes. She's more slimmer than me so her clothes are a bit tight. I was in one of her vintage night gowns, possibly something that started off from her great grandmother, then it went to her Mother, and she inherited it when they were gone. I opened the bedroom door, thankfully it wasn't locked. Maybe our prayer session earlier on made her to find compassion. I stood at the door for a minute just making sure that she's still sleeping, I then made my way straight to the kitchen without being detected. I touched the door and there was no key in the door...

Me: No.. No.. No.. Come on (whispering)

The moon provided a bit of light in the room I looked around but there were no keys on sight. I opened the drawers and carefully searched for the keys, disappointedly I came back empty handed. I exhaled in defeat, that was so close yet so far. I sat down on the floor, with my back leaning against the door as Jojo's words played in my head "I will come back for you, I promise" and then my Mother's words also rang in my ear "Promise me that you will better yourself and get out of here". I have lost all hope in Jojo, make that I have lost all hope in any man ever rescuing me and then taking advantage of me in return. I had made a promise to myself that I will not end up like my Mother. Her truck driver boyfriend wasn't abusive to her but he hurt her emotionally with all the cheating that he did while he was away, on top of that he brought her HIV. I saw how she was broken but tried to act strong, and because of that I told myself that I was going to be a strong independent woman. I was very serious with my studies, Though I wasn't the brightest but my marks were acceptable. I passed my matric with a Bachelors, I didn't get a distinction but my lowest percentage was 50% on the dot and my highest was 70%. That piece of paper was the only hope I had into leading me to the life of being independent, but then life had different plans for me..

—

NOMFUNDO

I thought that I had seen dysfunctional families before but this one, this one took the trophy. Jojo's home is broken no wonder why he never wanted to come here, I mean Tiger punched her Father right in the face without even thinking twice. I don't see myself ever doing that to my Father, even if I was a boy...

I mostly see Ndarha on TV and in the papers, when I saw him today he looked more handsome in Person. Not that I would date him but for a man of his age, he really does take good care of himself.. Jojo sat on the bed with me ontop of him, we were even halfway through with taking off our clothes. We kissed for a moment and then his head was buried on my chest, I still had my bra on. He came back up and we kissed again, just when I lowered my hand he stopped me...

Him: Stop

Me: Is everything okay?

Him: Everything is fine.. I'm sorry

I kissed him again then he picked me up and laid me on the bed, he came over me as I opened my legs to give him more room. I wrapped my hands around his neck and he looked at me, stared deep in my eyes..

Me: Are you okay?

He got my hands off him..

Him: Yeah I'm sorry.. I can't do this

That was a first. He got off me..

Me: What?

He walked over to the balcony, Jojo refusing to have sex? That was totally a first. I guess the stress around here is getting to him, but what's puzzling is that he has always used sex as a stress reliver. Why is he saying no now? Something is definitely not right..

—

XOLELW

A

The next morning I woke up and prepared myself for work, With all the tension that has been going on around here. I'm glad to be going to work..

Mam'Gabi put the plate of chicken mayo sandwich on the table..Me:

Thank you

I was fully concentrating on the newspaper that I didn't even look at her. A cup of tea followed the sandwich..

Me: Thank you very much

I only noticed after a few seconds that she was not responsive, which was unlike her. She would usually ask how I slept and how work was going, she was awfully quiet this morning..I closed the newspaper, then I felt strong arms wrapping around my neck..

Xoliswa: Good morning sweets..

She kissed me on the cheek and then went to pull out the chair next to me and sat down.Her:

Chicken mayo sandwich and tea still your favourite?

I folded the newspaper..

Me: Was my favourite

Her: You saying something to me? That's good.. At least we making progressMe: We not making anything.. I have to go to work

I got up..

Her: Can I ask you something?

I looked at her, she looked so different from when she was 16 and her voice sounded different too..

Her: Jojo tells me that you asked him to bring me to your wedding, so if today was your wedding and I came.. You would still be acting like this towards me?

I thought for a while..

Me: Bye Xoliswa

I left her there..

—

JOJO

Last night I couldn't even get some sleep, I kept on tossing and turning busy thinking about Armani. It disturbed me a lot to know that she has been abused all those years, quite frankly I thought that she would've moved on but I was wrong. I should have kept my promise, I should've come back for her.. I heard a gentle knock at the door, I turned around and it was that dude from yesterday who came with my Mother..

I was at the Servant's Quarters.. Him:

I can always come back later

I put her teddy bear back on the back..Me:

It's cool.. I was on my way out

He walked in..

Him: Mongz

He extended his hand to me..

Me: Jojo

I shook his hand..

Him: Everyone knows who you are

Me: I guess I didn't have to introduce myself then I

cleared my throat..

Me: Friend of the family? Him:

Yes something like that I

nodded..

Him: Nonts was telling me that Armani was like part of the family now, it must be hard on you learning about your step sister's kidnapping

Me: Step sister?

Him: I heard you guys grew up together.. Like Brother and Sister Me:

What haven't you heard?

He chuckled..

Him: Hade Joe (sorry) just that your Mom talks a lotMe:

Yeah that I know

(Silence)

Him: I have hired some private investigator.. I will find herHe
took her teddy bear..

Me: I bet you will

Seems like this guy has a thing for Armani..

—

ARMAN

I

Linda woke up early to do her laundry, before she started I asked her if we can pray firstand she agreed. After that I offered to cook soft porridge while she went on with the laundry.. She kept a close eye on me, she did the laundry right next to the kitchen doorwith a taser on her Apron pocket. I moved to the door, she looked at me..

Her: You not supposed to be out

Me: I know

I looked at her as she was bending and washing her clothes.. Me: You
should come inside and eat, just to get a bit of strengthHer: The
porridge is done yet?

Me: Yes

Her: Masinya so? (so quick)

Me: You were outside for a while now

Her: I guess I was

She wiped her hands and came in..Me:

Thank you

Her: For what?

Me: For your hospitality

Her: You welcome

She sat down at the kitchen table..Her:

You should let me dish up

Me: Please allow me.. You have been taking care of me ever since I got here.. Let me take care of you this once

She smiled..

Her: Thank you

I got the bowl and dished up for her..Me:

Here you go

Her: Thank you

Me: Enjoy

I went back to the pot and said a small prayer "God please forgive me for what I'm about to do"..

I took the pot and threw the porridge on her face, she stood up all screaming. I panicked for a second, I have never hurt anybody before.. She was going crazy, she tried to get it off her face..

Me: I'm really sorry but.. You.. You left me no choice.. I'm sorry

The first thing I did when I woke up was to change, I was in one of her dresses and sleepers. I made a run for it, I ran out of there and didn't even look back..

18

ARMANI

The gate was the biggest disappointment, it was locked. It had a bloody padlock restraining my freedom. I should've thought this whole thing through first before attempting to escape, I mean if I go back to the house how am I going to explain the whole soft porridge thing? Ndarha is going to kill me this time around. I looked around and the fence at the top had a bob wire, there's no way I could climb over it without hurting myself in the process. I suddenly felt dizzy, what now? What am I going to do?. I

spotted a car coming, the same car that got me here. If I'm not mistaken it's Linda's Brother, now shit has definitely hit the fan! My mind froze..

—

JOJO

Nomfundo had to go to work so I drove her there and then I came back straight home.. Tiger:

What's wrong with you?

I looked at her..

Her: You've been in a mood ever since you had that talk with Mam'GI

exhaled in frustration..

Her: You better let me in Man, you the one who dragged me here.. Remember? I trust

Tiger, and I trust she's not going to say anything to anyone about this... Me: Mam'G

told me that..

Just thinking about this whole thing was repulsive..

Me: Your Father has been abusing Armani sexually and physically Her: You

say what?

Me: I'm even finding it hard to comprehend everything.. Iyadika maan lento Xols (This situation is annoying)

Her: I knew he was capable of the most evil things but this..

Me: That's the reason why he never approved of our relationship because the bastard was keeping Mani for himself! He drove us away from each other because..

I closed my eyes and took a deep breath.. Me:

I should've known

Her: No one could've known, no one knows what goes on in that man's head We both

kept quiet trying to digest this distasteful act..

Her: Ngoku sizathini? (what's the plan)

Me: Mam'G says Armani was trying to escape, she's very adamant that Ndarha is behind the kidnapping

Her: I'm not surprised

Me: We shouldn't give it away that we know because he might hurt her if he can find out that we are on to him

She nodded repeatedly..

Her: Ya ndiyakuva (I hear you)

Me: Fuck Man! I should've come back, everything that's happening to her is my fault

Her: The blame game won't work.. Now we need to orchestrate a plan on how we are going to find her

Me: She also mentioned that your Mom might know about this and she's been quiet about it, emana ezenza imfama ehamba ngetonga kaSathana (She's been pretending as if like she's blind, with a walking stick that she was given by Satan)

Her: She never protected us her own children against him, what makes you think she was going to protect Armani?

I saw my Mom walking down the stairs...Me:

Speak of the She devil

She made her way to us..

Her: Molweni (Greetings)

Tiger: Nonts

She looked at Me..

Her: Jojo

I kept my eyes glued at the Vase that was in the middle of the table..

Her: Jojo, Xoliswa.. Andiyithandanga tuu into eniyenze phezolo (I didn't like what you guys did last night)

We kept quiet..

Her: This is your Father's house, you need to respect him

Me: Do you see what you doing?I

looked at her..

Me: You still protecting him

Her: He didn't do anything Jojo, ubulisile qha! (He greeted)Tiger:

That's bullshit and you know it!

She hit Tiger on her shoulder..

Nonts: Ndizakubetha Xoliswa uyandiva? (I will beat you up).. Where is the respect huh? You found us living in Peace! You came and disturbed our peace! Kakade nizokwenzaniapha? (what are you guys doing here)

Tiger: We here because we heard Armani got kidnapped

Nonts: Your Father is working on that, he's going to bring her back home.. He hascontacts in high places

Me: Of course he does.. After all he is the one who is behind this (low voice)Tiger

cleared her throat..

Nonts: Uthi kutheni Jojo? (What are you saying Jojo)Me:

Nothing

She clicked her tongue and walked away..

—

ARMAN

I

I had ran to the back of the outside rooms and that's when I saw that the wall that separated the opposite neighbours, didn't have a bobwire at the top. I took off the sleepers and threw them over first, then I climbed the fence and fell over. I quickly got up and looked around, it was quiet and the kitchen door was closed. I picked up my sleepers and ran straight to the outside toilet. I could've easily ran out to the street butthat would be risky, busy running around not knowing where I'm going will make Ndarhaand his puppy to catch me. It will be easy for them to catch me....

—

JOJO

I received a call from Nataschi, I answered..Me:

Tash

Her: How are you? Me:

I'm good and you?

Her: I'm good too.. How are things going at home?Me:

Things are fine at home

Her: Glad to hear that.. Are you coming to the studio today?Me:

Why?

Her: The interview tomorrow remember? They Emailed me the questions thought we could discuss them

Me: Totally forgot about the interview

Her: Are you sure that you okay?

Me: I'm fine.. You can Email them to me, I'll go through them

Her: Jojo I think it's best that I come or you come, that interview tomorrow is your Redemption. If you mess up..

Me: I don't really care about the interview TashHer:

What do you mean?

I hung up and put my phone away..

Me: So we need to think like Ndarha right now

Tiger: What was that all about?

Me: Nothing

Her: Jojo this is difficult.. Ndarha has a lot of contacts, he could've asked someone to help him

Me: Definitely not someone who is high profiled, Ndarha wouldn't risk being caught

Her: That's true.. It has to be someone underground, someone who is also powerful but not famous

Me: He's definitely not hiding her in a hotel room or something like that Her: He

wouldn't hide her in a place that could attract attention

Me: Question is.. How many People are involved?

(Silence)

Me: Is he is around?

Her: Haven't seen him

Me: Good

I approached the stairs..

Her: What are you doing?

Me: To distract that drunk called your Mother so you can sneak in and get his laptop if it's around his bedroom, just search for anything a journal.. Something that would help us with clues

Her: That's a good idea

Me: I'll tell Mam'G to stand guard too, if he comes back

—

Ndarha

I got a call from Bonza saying that he took Linda to the hospital, said something about her being burnt with soft porridge and Armani escaping. I didn't get out of the car I parked a distance away from the hospital and waited for him. After about 30min of letting him know that I had arrived, he made his way to the car. He opened and got in..

Me: Explain to me how Linda let Armani go?

Him: I don't think she did.. I think Armani poured hot porridge on her and then escaped Me: Linda had a taser, how did she let Armani overpower her? Armani is weak!

Him: Ndarha my sister could've died.. I knew this plan was going to backfire from the start

Me: I don't care about your sister! I care about Armani being found! If we don't find her and she makes contact with Jojo do you know the kind of trouble we going to be in?
Jojo is no longer young! He is famously powerful, he will do anything in his powers to bring me down.. To bring us down!.. Now focus!! Linda is not dead we will deal with her later, just transfer her to a good hospital and we will pay!

He sighed..

Me: I swear Bonza if we don't find Armani because of your stupid Sister! Hell is going to freeze!

19

NDARHA

Bonza got a few guys from around the hood to look for Armani, we gave them a picture of her and they started the search. There's no way that she could've gotten far, she doesn't have money, doesn't have clothes and I know she's damn scared. Not forgetting that she has no one.. We were back at the house and we were looking for clues, there has to be something that can lead us to her.

Bonza: Did you find anything?

Me: No.. You?

Him: No

I went outside and looked around.. Bonza said he had to unlock the gate when he arrived, we checked Linda's keys and no key seemed to be missing. That tells me Armani didn't use the gate, if she did then she would've had to go over it. The bobwire would've cut her, there would be traces of blood.. I walked to the back, there's a possibility she went over the wall. I checked thoroughly and I saw a dentation on the wall, she definitely went over the fence.

Me: Bonza!!

I went back to the house..

Him: Yes?

Me: She went over that wall opposite, tell your guys to check your opposite neighbours I bet they know something

Him: I'll do that

I looked at the time..

Me: I have a meeting with the PresidentI

looked at him..

Me: Don't mess up this time around

Him: I won't

Me: I'll call you later

Him: No problem

I hope that Bonza doesn't mess this one up.

—

XOLELW

A

Renei: Hey Xoks..

Me: Hey

Her: Didn't see you when you came in

Me: You weren't at the front

Her: Okay.. How are you?

Me: I'm well and you?

Her: I'm well too

Renei is one of the Admins here at the Hospital..Her:

There's someone who is looking for you Me: Who is that?

Her: She says her name is Sindi

Me: Really?

I checked my phone..

Me: She didn't call nor text me that she's coming

Her: Friend of yours? Me:

Something like that Her:

Okay

Me: Tell her I'm coming

Her: Okay

That's a bit strange, I mean Sindi at my workplace? We not even that close for her to come here.. I walked to the reception and Renei pointed at her, she was sitting on one of the benches. I took a deep breath and went to her..

Me: Sindi.. Hi

She stood up..

Her: Hello

Me: How are you?

Her: Ngiyaphila wena unjani? (I am well and you) Me:

Nam' ndiyaphila (I am also well)

Her: Do you have time? We can go out and have something to drink Me: It's not my lunch break as yet

Her: Ngeke ngithathe iskhathi sakho sonke Sisi (I won't take much of your time) Me: Okay let me get my phone and purse

I wonder if Lukhele knows that she's here..

—

ARMAN

I

My heart was on my knees, a lot was going through my mind and I felt like I was suffocating. I heard voices, female voices. One of the voices was nearing and then the person opened the door I swear my heart almost stopped. She freaked out..

Her: Yhooooo!! (screaming)

Voice 2: Yini?

Her: Khona umuntu la eToilet yakini (There's someone in the toilet)Me:

Ngiyaxolisa Sisi (I'm sorry)

I got out..

Me: I'm really sorry but please don't make too much noiseThe other

lady walked to us..

Voice 2: And then, uwubani? (who are you)I

looked at them..

Me: There's people who are looking for me, all I need is to use your cellphone pleaseThe one

who opened the door started talking..

Her: Khethi! Yazi lo Sisi ulimele (This lady is hurt)

Khethi: Mngani don't fall for it, benza kanje jiki jiki they rob youMe:

Please Sisi.. I'm in a lot of trouble

Friend: uthi who is looking for you?

Me: My.. Uhm..

Khethi: Your boyfriend?

Friend: Wuye okwenze so ebusweni? (Is he the one who did this to you)I

nodded..

Me: Something like that They

looked at each other..

Friend: Let her make the phone call

Khethi looked at me..

Khethi: Woza (come)

We all walked to the door, Khethi opened..

Khethi: If we get robbed..

Friend: Awuyeke ukuba yigwala nawe (stop being a coward)

Khethi: Let me get my phone

She unzipped her bag, just when she was about to take out her phone. The door flung open and two guys walked in..

They looked at us..

Guy1: Ntwana akusiwuye lo? (Is it not her)

The other guy took out a picture..

Guy: Wuye Ntwana (It's her)

This cannot be..

Khethi: Whoa! Stherr yini manje? (Stherr what's the matter)

Stherr: Sorry maan Khethi entlek sifunana nalo Sisi (We looking for this lady) Me: No please.. Please

Khethi: Ndaba zani? (Why)

Stherr: Khethi cava Joe, mina nawe si sharp. Sigaye lo Sisi then singene indlela (Khethi you know I don't have a problem with you, just give us this lady and we will leave)

Me: Please.. He's going to kill me please (Crying) The

Stherr guy looked at his friend..

Him: Mcove Ntwana sivaye (Take her and let's go) The

friend came to me, I was now wet with tears..

Me: Please.. I am begging you, if you take me there he's going to kill me.. Ibani nentliziyo (have a heart)

The guy started pulling me and I continued crying.. Me:

Pleaseeee (Crying)

Khethi came to my rescue..

Khethi: Stherr ima kancane (Stherr wait a minute)

Stherr: Khethi ungayenzi lento Joe (Khethi don't do this)

Khethi: Awume Stherr awuboni ukuthi uthukile (can't you see she's scared)By now I was holding tight to Khethi..

Stherr: Khethi yazi basigaye imali eningi for lo muntu (They paid us a lot of money for this girl)

Khethi: uyang'phoxa.. Angikwazi unje (You disappointing me.. I don't know you like this)He looked at us..

Khethi: Uyambona ukuthi uhluke mekile, mbheke ebusweni bamtrapile lomuntu wenaufuna ukumbisela ethuneni lakhe (You can see she's being abused, look at her face they beat up. Now you wanna send her to her grave)

Khethi's friend started talking too..

Her: Kunzima ukuba owesifazane, ngiyacela bandla.. Maningabi yizizathu sokushonakuka Sisi (It's difficult being a woman, please.. Don't be the reason behind her death)

They were quiet for a while..

Stherr: Eish.. Ku grand ke, mara angeke ahlale la.. Mele ahambe kule kasi eyy lomuntu yamfuna yong (It's fine then, but she can't stay here.. She has to go from this hood, this person is wanted)

Khethi: Uzohamba namhlanje futhi (She will leave today)Stherr:

Kungcono ke (That's better)

He looked at his friend..

Stherr: Asambe sothi one or two (let's go and drink)Friend:

Asambe (let's go)

Stherr: Ungakhohlwa mele ahambe ngoba bazothumela abanye (Don't forget, she must go because they going to send others)

Khethi: Lizoshona sehambile (before the sunsets she will be gone)Stherr: Sharp

They left.. Khethi turned and looked at me..

Her: Please tell me you have a place were you can go too? And don't tell me a placethat's far away

–

XOLELW

A

It was a very awkward moment because Sindi and I, we have never spent time together. We not that close, I don't think we will ever be close..

Her: Ithi ngikakumosheli iskhathi (let me not waste any of your time)I

looked at her..

Her: Why are you with my Dad? If you were not from a financial background I'd say you were after his money, but you not. Xolelwa you're 21 and he's 50!. I am his first born and I'm 28!! Kanti yini? (what is it)

Me: I am not comfortable talking to you about this.. Does your Father even know you here?

Her: It doesn't matter if he knows or not, what matters is I want you to leave him! Stop all this nonsense

I am not the one to entertain fights, I don't like fighting at all..I got

up..

Me: I have to go back to work

I stood up then took my Purse and my phone..Me:

I'm sure you can pay for your own coffee I left..

–

JOJO

I didn't really entertain my Mom, Mam'G did that for us. She pumped her up with Whiskey and she ended up passing out on the couch, so that gave Xols time to check the bedroom. I was just standing guard for Ndarha. Xolelwa is technology wise, she can hack a few things and access a few things.

She came back down..

Me: And?

Her: No laptop, no phone..

Me: There's nothing?

Her: Well I found his journal, his appointment journal.. He seems to have been seeing one person a lot

Me: Who?

Her: A lawyer by the name of "Bonza" he has a lot of appointments with him
Me: Wait a minute did you just say "Bonza"

Her: Yeah that's the name that kept on appearing a lot
Me: I can't believe this!

Her: What?

Me: I can't fucken believe this! Her:

Thetha Jojo (Say something)

Me: All I have to say is that, we find Bonza, we find Mani.. Ima need my fucken gun!20

JOJO

Bonza is a damn corrupt lawyer, what the public doesn't know is that he wins his cases by tampering with the evidence, eliminating witnesses, or bribing the judge. The public only sees what is presented to them, they don't see what is hidden behind that curtain. I don't find it coincidental that he is my Lawyer and Ndarha's lawyer at the same time. He is playing one of us and I know it's me. I had called him and asked him if we can meet up at my house, he initially told me that he is busy and all that nonsense but when I told him that it's business related he agreed. I am not really sure if he knows that I am home, I don't want him suspecting anything...

Xols: Do we have a plan?

I didn't say anything to her..

Xols: Jojo

I looked at her..

Her: Do we have a plan?

Me: The initial and only plan that we have is to bring Mani back home safe.. I'll deal with Bonza later

(Silence)

Her: I know that she's okay

Me: Huh?

Her: Armani.. Wherever she is I know that she's okay

Me: You would know that because?

Her: Armani has always been strong, her faith is what got her through a lot of things

Me: I do hope she is fine wherever she is.. I cannot fail her for the second time

—

ARMAN

I

Her phone kept on ringing, I was praying silently in my heart that she picks up. She's the only hope that I have..

Her: Hello?

That was a relief..

Her: Hello?

Me: Mam'Gabi

Her: Armani?

Me: Ewe ndim (Yes it's me)

Her: Armani.. Ukuphi? Uright? Bengikhathazekile ngawe (Where are you? Are you alright? I was worried about you)

Me: I am okay.. Mam'Gabi I don't have much time.. I need your help

Her: Anything Armani

Me: I need a place to stay just until I figure out what to doHer:

Ukuphi manje? (Where are you now)

I looked at Khethi.. Khethi:

Orlando, eSowetoMe:

Orlando, eSoweto

Her: Okay take a taxi to phumulani mall eTembisa. Tell the driver uya eTemibsa, ePhumulani mall. He will tell you how to get there. I will send my Nephew to go and waitfor you there eHungry lion. I will tell him to wear his red soccer tshirt, and a matching cap. Wena what are you wearing?

Me: Just a plain dress and sleepers, he cannot miss me because my face is bruisedHer: Your face is bruised?

Me: undibethile UNdarha (Ndarha beat me up)Her:

Uthini? (What are you saying)

Me: I have to go.. I will see you later

Her: Okay I'll call him now

Me: Thank you Mam'Gabi.. If it wasn't for you I..

Her: Don't even say it, I promised your Mother that I will look after youMe:

Thank you again

Her: Go to the taxi rank

Me: Okay.. Bye

Her: Armani?

Me: Ma?

Her: Pray

Me: I will

I hung up and looked at Khethi..

Me: I need to get to Phumulani mall, eTembisa

Her: At least Tembisa is not far.. I think you need to change the dress, I'll borrow you some clothes and I'll give you money for taxi fare

Me: Thank you very much Khethi

Her: Don't thank me as yet until I see you at the taxi rank, in a taxi to Tembisa

Friend:
Asambeni.. Iskhathi asikho (let's get moving, there's no time)

—

JOJO

Bonza made us wait for at least 1 hour 30min before he showed up. Tiger was even getting impatient. She was wrapping a bandage around my hand..

Her: Beating him up is a good idea? He is the only lead that we have to Armani don't forget

Me: I'm just gonna rough him up a bit, you know show him that we serious. Don't forget he is working for Ndarha and Ndarha cares a lot about Loyalty

Her: Done

Me: Thank you

I took off my tshirt as the door opened, he walked in..

Him: Sorry to keep you waiting, I was attending to something quite important
Me: It's all good

I looked at Xoliswa, she walked up to the kitchen door to lock it..

Bonza: Where you throwing a few punches at the punching bag?
Me:

Something like that

He looked around..

Him: So what is it?

Xoliswa came and stood behind him..

Me: Bonza I'm going to ask you something I

walked up to him..

Me: You better be honest with me

He looked at me and took a step back, bumping into Xoliswa. He freaked out a little..Him: What's happening guys? Jojo yini le manje? (Jojo what is this)

Me: Where is Armani? Where did Ndarha take her?

Him: What?? Who.. Who is that?

Between Me and Xoliswa he really wasn't sure who to concentrate on the most..Him: What are you talk-

Me: Sundiphambanisa Bonza! But most of all sundenza is'denge! (don't make me crazyBonza! But most of all don't make me a fool)

I saw from his facial expression that he knew exactly what I was talking about, he was starting to get a bit scared..

Me: Umsephi u Armani? (Where did you take her too)Him:

Jojo ang-

Me: Bonza!.. Bonza!!! That girl means the world to me so you better start talking because my patience is running thin

Xols: Tell the man what he needs to hear

He looked at me and tried to make a run for it but Xols pulled him back. I grabbed his Shirt and then started punching him repeatedly, Xols stepped back. The 3rd punch he went down, I went and put my knee on his chest and continued punching him. I looked at him and automatically in my mind I pictured him as if like he was my punching bag, all that Anger of him betraying me took over. I just kept on punching him senseless up until I felt someone trying to get me off, I came back to my senses. It was Xols..

Her: Stop man!! Jojo stop!!

I looked at Bonza and his face was bloody. I got off him and looked at my hand. The bandage was soaking in blood, Bonza coughed up blood for a few seconds and then he stopped. My chest and jeans had some of his blood..

Xols: Shit!!!!

She knelt next to him as I took a few steps back..Xols:

Stay with us Man.. Come on stay with us!!

I unwrapped the bandage..

—

NDARH

A

The President requested for my presence at the wrong time, there's a lot that's going on right now and the country is the least of my worries. Everytime when we meet up at a restaurant, we need to be in a private section of that restaurant. At times it goes as far as, occupying the whole restaurant. Being a President is not as glamorous as People think it is, the benefits are good but constantly having to look over your shoulder now that is not the life to live.. We usually meet at his house for safety reasons, I'm surprised today he proposed that we meet in public to discuss serious matters..

Him: Good old friend.. We have a lot to do, running a country isn't like downing a glass of whiskey

Me: I know old friend, that's why I'm here

Him: I need you to go to Kenya for at least two-three weeks Me: Go

to Kenya?

Him: The president of Kenya Uhuru Kenyatta, has requested my presence but.. I won't be able to make it. I called him and he has agreed to meet up with you

Me: What will I be doing there?

Him: Kenya is going to be our alliance, he thinks we coming there for the initiation of a friendship but you actually going there for something else

Me: Something like what?

Him: Something involving..

He looked around..

Him: Trafficking young girls from there and selling their virginities to the highest bidder

I sighed..

Me: It's not like you need the money

Him: I'm not doing it for money.. I'm doing it for warMe:

War?

Him: Certain contacts in the States agreed to help us with illegal immigrants. If illegal immigrants can go back to their home countries then South Africa will see me as a hero, look at Donald Trump and how he is making America great again

Me: With everything that's happening currently in our country illegal immigrants are your top priority?

He gave me a weird look..

Him: Are we developing a heart all of a sudden old friend?I

exhaled..

Him: We are where we are today because of how we do things, we give People what they want in exchange of votes and their loyalty to us

Me: Don't you think we should pause a bit with these illegal dealings, we going to end up getting caught

Him: What is this now? We have always played dirty. Ndarha this is who we're This came at the wrong time when a lot is going on, in my personal life..

—

ARMAN

I

With God's grace we made it to the taxi rank safe without being tailed. When we got there, only 3 people were short for the taxi to get full and we didn't wait for that long until it was full.. Khethi gave me R150 and she stood there with her friend until the taxi drove out of the taxi rank.. I took her numbers, she had written them for me on a piece of paper. I will be definitely contacting her, I won't forget what she has done for me.. I closed my eyes as tears streamed down my cheeks, I didn't think I was going to make it out alive..

—

JOJO

Xols was busy pacing up and down and that was giving me a headache, not forgetting that she was also making me dizzy. Bonza was laying on the floor, in a pool of his own blood.. I have never killed a person with my bare hands, no make that I have never killed anyone before..

Xols: Not only did you kill the only lead that we had to finding Armani but you killed a bloody Lawyer Jojo!!

She took the cloth and put it over his face..

Her: What are we going to do? His car is outside.. I'm sure security saw him driving in, what are we going to do?

I remained quiet.. Her:

Say something!!

I didn't know what to say because this situation was messed up..21

XOLELWA

I was very upset with what Sindi said to me earlier on, I couldn't even concentrate at work so I left early. Everyone must've noticed by now that I am a bit of a pushover, I just let people run all over me because I don't have a back bone. Compared to my Siblings I was the one who failed to be rebellious I knew that I wasn't going to survive the outside world alone, but most of all I feared my Father so much that I chose to be a good Daughter. All this was a bit easy because I had Armani, now that she's gone I really don't know what to do and who to turn too, she was always there for me.. When I got home Nomfundo was at the kitchen alone..

Her: Hello

Me: Hi

Her: knocked off already?

Me: Something like that.. You?

Her: Yes

Me: Where is everyone?

Her: The house was quiet when I got in, I tried calling Jojo but he is not picking up. I even took an Uber

Me: You not scared? I heard those things aren't safe anymore

Her: What was I supposed to do when Jojo is not picking up my callsMe:

Maybe he is busy

Her: I know he is.. With someone else

Me: With someone else?

Her: It's nothing

Me: Is he cheating on you? That doesn't sound like him

Her: You don't know Jojo, he's not the sweet and innocent Brother you think he isMe:

That's.. That's so unlike him

Her: There's a lot of things you don't know about that guy

Me: I suppose so.. Anyway let me go and lie down a bit, Later on I am going out with my fiancé

Her: That's nice.. You engaged?

Me: Yes engaged to be married

Her: Did he pay Lobola?

Me: Yes he did

Her: And you still living here?

Me: It's a complicated story

Her: I'm sure he had to pay a lot of money, marrying the daughter of a deputy president sounds costly

Me: Well my Parents didn't actually use the money on themselves so I bought a car with it, of course my Dad added a bit

Her: Wow you very blessed hey.. What car did you get?Me:

Nothing fancy just a Mercedes Benz C180

Her: A Benz wow! I don't even think I can afford that anytime soonMe:

You will someday

Her: Ya.. Maybe

Me: Let me go and nap a bit.. I will see you laterHer:

Okay girl

—

ARMAN

I

It was difficult getting here, not that I got lost the taxi driver helped me a lot but I am not used to such independency. I can say that I've been Ndarha's prisoner for far too long now, and being here on my own was very scary. The noise and people constantly starring at me made me a bit dizzy and in the process it also gave me a headache.

Khethi's beach hat couldn't even fully hide my bruises.. I dragged my legs to hungry lion, it was a bit full and most eyes were on me when I walked in which made me very uncomfortable. If it was up to me, I would have my eyes glued on the floor and avoid eyecontact but I couldn't, I had to find Gabi's Nephew. Those looks that they gave me were piercing through my skin, deep down they were probably asking themselves "What happened" some were even signaling to their aquitances to look at me. I ran my eyes around and I couldn't spot him, I couldn't see anyone wearing a red soccer t-shirt. I didn't know what to do so I started panicking. I suddenly felt hot and I struggled to breath a little, maybe I shouldn't have done this. What am I going to do now?.. I felt a hand on my shoulder, I jumped in terror. I turned around and I think it was him, no it was definitely him with the t-shirt and the cap..

Him: Armani?

I nodded..

Him: I didn't mean to scare you.. I'm Master, Gabi's Nephew I let
out a sigh of relief..

Him: Did you have any problems finding the place?Me:

Uhm.. Not really

Him: That's good.. Would you like something to eat or should we head straight home?

Me: I think we should head straight home

Him: Okay asambe (let's go)

He was very well spoken and seemed very friendly. He seemed a bit young, younger than I thought..

—

JOJO

I called the only Person that I trust, the only Person who has my back at all times no matter how difficult the situation is. I called Tash. She didn't waste any time, she came as quickly as she could and I didn't explain what happened, I didn't want her to get distracted while driving.. She almost fell on her head when she saw what we were faced with. I don't understand how Bonza could just die like that, I mean I thought he was only going to be badly injured..

Tash: Ohh my word Jojo!! You have done some pretty messed up shit before but this? What happened here?

Tiger: Jojo punched him a few times, I didn't expect him to die like that Tash crouched and looked at Bonza, she turned his head a little..

Her: How did you guys not see that he was bleeding from the back of his head? That might have resulted from his fall...

Tiger: We were too overwhelmed with fear and nothing has changed Tash: I can't believe this! I seriously cannot believe this!

She looked at me..

Her: What were you thinking Jojo? And then you call me? You making me an Accomplice?

Me: Tash..

Her: I can't help you with this.. This is big I cannot help you cover up a murder!!!!(shouting)

Tiger: Yes Please shout so the whole neighborhood can hear

I walked up to her and put my hands on her cheeks..

Me: You know that you the only person who can help me with this.. It's a mess that needs to be fixed, I cannot go down for my murder. My Sister cannot go down for beingan Accessory to murder, Please Tash. We cannot lose what I have worked hard for, youhave to help us.. Please baby girl

She didn't say anything for a while..

Her: Fine let me think for a second

Me: Thank you

I kissed her.. Me:

Thank you

I could see that Tiger was a bit confused by the moment..

—

ARMAN

I

Master was driving a Toyota Run x, even in the car I was still Paranoid. I kept on checking if no suspicious car has been following us, at this point I have come to realizehow scared I am of Ndarha..

Master: Are you okay?

Me: I'm okay

(Silence)

Me: Thank you very much for fetching Me

Him: You welcome

The conversation ended there and he tried to resurrect it..

Him: You very lucky because I am off for 7 days and decided to spend my mini leave atmy Aunt's place

Me: You working?

Him: Yes.. At a mine, eWitbank

Me: Okay

Him: You seem surprised at that statementMe: I

am.. I mean you look a bit young

Him: I'm 23

Me: Ohw.. You still a bit young

Him: So you say

I was trying very hard to shift my focus and actually focus on the road and the conversation that we were having..

Him: We almost there

I pray to God that this won't put Mam'Gabi and her family in danger..

—

JOJO

Tiger walked up to me..

Him: You good?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I guess so

She cleared her throat..

Her: I have a feeling that You and Armani might just work things out when all of this is over

Me: Right now I just wanna find her

Her: We will find her

Me: Yeah I hope so

Her: Though I'm a bit concerned

Me: About?

Her: All these other women surrounding you. Nomfundo and this white girl, what's going

with them should You and Armani.. You know I

looked at her..

Her: You guys had a moment there, I saw it.. There's a connection Taschi

walked in..

Her: Guys I have a plan.. I have finally thought of something We

got closer to her..

Her: Okay.. We going to stage this as if like he was hijacked. Hijacking gone wrong Tiger:

Enlighten us

Her: Okay here's what's going to happen.. Later when it's dark we going to roll his body in a duvet and put him inside the trunk of his car, we lucky that security doesn't

necessarily check the trunk when it's late. They get lazy Me:

And?

Her: And then You.. Uhm...

Tiger: Tiger

Her: You Tiger, you going to drive his car out

Tiger: Won't the security notice?

Her: No.. When a car comes in they usually register the number plates and give you a chip of the house number that you going to, if you drive out very late at night they will only need the chip back and they will mark your number plates off their register they don't really focus much on who goes out, they only focus on who goes in

Me: Plus they change shifts at night, they won't really know that you not the owner of the car

Her: All we got to do is to have his car drive out

Tiger: And then?

Her: You will drive to a certain place that I will tell you about, and then Jojo and I we going to drive out at least after an hour to avoid any suspicions when investigations are carried out

Tiger: Can't Jojo drive Bonza's car out?

Me: No.. They would easily recognize me but you have never been here before so you won't be recognized

Tash: Just avoid looking at them, open the window a little and wave the chip out

Jojo: Then there's a problem of my surveillance camera outside that's facing my driveway, the footage of who drives in and drives out is viewed by the security company who installed it

Tash: We almost had a good plan, there's no way we going to sneak out his body without being on the surveillance camera

We hit a dead end..

After a few seconds of thinking, Tiger finally spoke up.. Tiger:

I can mess around with it

Me: How?

Her: I can retain the current image until we get the body in the trunk, I will set a timer and then after that we come back inside. When the time is up it will start functioning well again so they can see me walking to his car

Tash: It won't work.. Your locks they will wonder why now a different person is getting inside his car

Me: What if we make it a point that when it goes back to normal, Tiger is already inside the car. They will just see me standing at the door of the driver's side and bidding you farwell

Tiger: So how are we going to make sure they get the footage of "Bonza" getting inside his car

Me: They won't, let it be distorted a bit when you walk to the car. They will think it was a glitch

Tash: That's actually a good idea then after an hour of Tiger leaving you walk me out to the driveway too, you see me out and then walk back to the house. While they think you still in the house you sneak out and meet me at the gate, make sure to avoid the surveillance camera

Tiger: That's very good

Me: Then we meet up at the designated area to stage the hijack

Tash: We only have one chance to pull off the perfect crime, we fuck this up.. We going to jail!!

22

ARMANI

Life is very difficult for our generation but life is more difficult when you don't have Parents or trusted Family members. My Mother never really went to the depths of my Paternal family, what I know about my Father is only what she told me and nothing more.. I am blessed to have someone like Mam'Gabi, even when life is sinking you deeper into its deepest core, there's always an Angel that God sends to help you.. When she got back from work we hugged each other for a very long time, the longest hug anyone has ever given me..

Her: I am so happy to see you

Me: I'm happy to see you too

We broke the hug..

Her: Did you eat? Did Master- Me:

He was very nice, I cooked..Her:

You didn't have too

Me: It was nothingIt

was 21:00..

Me: I didn't know that you knock off this late?

Her: Ungasho (don't even mention it)

We sat down at the table..

Her: Since you've been gone the house nje is falling apart. There's no one to supervise everyone is not doing their work up to standard nami ngizithulele (nami I'm just quiet)

Me: How is everyone?

Her: uNontsikelo you know ulala nge whiskey avuke ngayo, now her drinking is getting worse and uXolelwa is just being uXolelwa. Nagging and being a cry baby

(Silence)

Her: What happened?

Me: He found out about my private account.. Beat me up, then he saw that he wasn't going to explain the beatings so he stated a kidnap

She shook her head..

Her: Loya bhuti ukhohlakele (That man is evil)

Me: He doesn't have to know where I am or else you and your family are going to be indanger

Her: I know Armani

We let another moment pass by without saying anything..Her: I

have some news

Me: What news?

Her: Jojo is back

I felt my heart beating very fast..

Her: He came at the house with XoliswaMe:

Xoliswa?

She nodded..

Her: They came after Xolelwa called Jojo that you got kidnappedI

didn't know what to say..

Her: despite what you going through there's always going to be People who care about you, I mean he left everything and came to look for you

Somehow my heart melted if that's even possible, my chest had this hot feeling..Me: I don't

know what to say

Her: He really cares about you Armani, Jojo would never come home for anything but he

came for you. You brought him back homeMe:

Nontsikelelo must be happy

Her: Hayi that one.. Leave me alone with that oneShe

stood up as I laughed..

Her: You should rest

Me: I'll take a bath and rest.. Thank you Mam'GabiHer:

Don't mention it

—

JOJO

I looked at the camera and then I looked at Tiger..Her:

It's operating

Me: You good?

Her: I'm good

Tiger did mess with the system up until we got the body in the trunk and her in the car..Me: Sorry
that I got you into this mess man

Her: Just make sure that after this, you don't screw your chances with Armani or else..I nodded..

Me: Yeah I know

Her: Let me go

Me: We will be there in an hour's time or so

Her: Cool

I stepped away as she drove away.. I made my back into the house..Tash: Is she
gone?

Me: Yeah she's gone

She was cleaning up the blood..

Her: This is going to be useless if luminol can detect itMe: So

long we pull this off.. That won't happen

She got up..

Her: I'm done.. Is she wearing the gloves?I

had given her my nikey gloves..

Me: She is

Her: I am done here

She took off the cleaning rubber gloves, and went to wash her hands in the sink..Me: Tash I

don't even know what to say..

Her: It's okay, I always have your back let's just make sure that we pull this off andtomorrow we do the interview and get on with our lives

I nodded..

Her: Why did you attack Bonza?

Me: He betrayed me.. He was working for me and my Father at the same time, it's no coincidence

Her: What?

Me: Yeah I know

Her: I didn't take him for a traitor

Me: No one did

She looked at the time..

Her: We still have some time

I folded my arms and leaned against the fridge as she made her way to me. She kissedme and then unbuckled my belt..

—

XOLELWA

Lukhele and I we were out having dinner, we always go out at least twice a week..Him: I'm sorry, she had no business saying such to you

Me: It wasn't nice

Him: Ever since Me and her Mother divorced she hasn't been herselfMe:

That's no excuse for her to do what she did

Him: I know and I'm sorry

Lukhele seems like a good man. Less controlling and very humble, I'm using my marriage to him as means to get away from my depressing home and my Father..

—

TASH

Jojo and I we have known each other for a very long time and maybe the nature of our relationship is a bit confusing, but I care a lot about him. Maybe now I care more than I should.. We were having one of our moments and it's funny because it was happening right in the kitchen, were a dead body was laying there a few minutes ago. Planning a perfect murder is no child's play and right now I think we both needed a distraction.. He placed me on top of the counter, and then lowered my bra. I was only only left with my bra and underwear, he was left with his briefs.. He leaned over kissing me from my neckall the way down to my chest. He cupped my breasts and... [REMOVED]

—

NDARH

A

I tried him again and he's phone was off. Dammit! How can Bonza go silent on me at a time likes this? I'll be leaving the country in a few days and I want Armani to have been found by then..

Nonts: How is it going with finding Armani? Is there any progress?I turned around looking at her..

Me: The only contact I had is no longer communicating with meHer:

It's been long now.. You must be devastated

Me: I don't have time for this nonsense I

walked to the door..

Her: Why? Where did I go wrong I

stopped..

Her: Before we came here we were.. I don't believe in anything being perfect but our relationship was perfect, everything was perfect

I didn't say anything..

Her: What changed? How did you end up loving Armani? Someone that we raised as if like she was our child?

She looked at me hoping for an answer that might be satisfying to her.. Me:

Good night Nontsikelelo

—

JOJO

We drove out to go and meet Tiger exactly where we said we were going to meet her. After our sexual heated moment there was no communication from me to Tash, I was lost deep in my thoughts.. We spotted Tiger, after all she was alone in that road.. She waved at us, Tash parked not far from her..

We got out and made our way to her. It was a very dark road, with trees on the sides and the weather had changed. It was a bit cold now..

Tiger: What now?

Tash: Since you the only one with the gloves you will get him out We had carefully rolled him up so that he doesn't bleed in the car..

Tash: We toss him at the side of the road, drive his car to the trees make it as if like the people who hijacked him didn't really know how to drive

Me: Or we can just leave him inside the car at the driver's seat. Make it look like a robbery that went wrong

Tash: That could work plus he's messed up

Tiger: We do this and then we speak no word of it.. We die with this secret
Tash: We die with this secret

Me: We die with this secret²³

TASH

Jojo has done some pretty messed up things in his life, murdering someone in cold blood has never been one of them until yesterday. I'm a very brave Person and I've also been told that my level of being smart is a bit cunning. It hasn't sunk deep inside of me that I helped him cover up a murder, I could've easily said No or turned him in but I couldn't. I couldn't let him go down..

Last night on my way home I had stopped at some pharmacy to get an Emergency pill, I never drank it though this and this morning I'm still in my bathroom looking at it. I took a deep breath and opened the package, I then threw it down the toilet and flushed it..

I grabbed my eyebrow pencil and circled yesterday's date on my personal calendar. Today's weather was a bit intense, it has been raining cats and dogs.. A knock made me jump a little..

Her: Tash??

That's my best friend Tebogo, I found her at my door step last night..
Her: You have been in there for quite a while now, are you alright?

I looked at myself in the mirror one last time and then I walked out of the bathroom..
Her: Are you okay?

Me: I'm okay

Her: I made hot chocolate, with marshmallows. I know it's your favorite
Me:

Thank you Tebz

We walked to the kitchen..

Her: You going out in such a weather?

Me: Some of us aren't rich housewives, we have to work

Her: It's not my fault you couldn't score yourself a rich man
Me: I enjoy being an independent woman

Her: here you go

Me: Thank you... Did he call?

Her: Not yet

Me: For someone who messed up I thought he would be blowing up your phone

Her: That's the problem with being a dependant housewife. He is going to cheat and then call you at his own time

Me: For all it's worth, there's no love there.. She was just a weekend entertainment
She shrugged her shoulders..

Her: The cheating is getting tiring now

Me: He loves you, he just has a lot of growing up to do (Silence)

Her: How's Jamie?

Me: He's good.. He's in Mozambique

Her: He travels a lot

Me: He's a journalist

Her: When are you guys getting married?
I started coughing..

Her: Did I hit a nerve?

Me: Exactly when are you leaving again? Go stay at a hotel
Her: So

I did hit a nerve

I exhaled..

Her: Talk to me

She took my mug..

Me: I was still drinking that

Her: You done now.. So what's happening?Me:

It's nothing

Her: I am a married black woman, I am married to a very successful man and you a confused white woman. You a disappointment to your kind. You supposed to be on this side, a housewife and I'm supposed to be on that side. An independent woman

Me: Are you saying that white women are dependent housewives? And black women are independent?

Her: You said it not meI

chuckled..

Her: Talk to me

Me: I am in love with someone else

Her eyes widened..

Her: Okay.. That's.. That was unexpectedMe:

It's uhm..

I cleared my throat..

Me: It's Jojo

She drew in air with her eyes still wide open..Her:

Didn't you guys try and it didn't work out?

Me: That was a long time ago, I think things will be different nowHer:

Different how? Jojo is a jerk!

Me: He's misunderstood

Her: He has a lot of growing up to do

Me: He is misunderstood

Her: Does he know?

Me: No

Her: Are you going to tell him?

Me: No

Her: So you secretly going to be in love with him?

Me: Things are going to workout on their own between us.. You'll seeHer: I

need a drink.. Do you still keep the wine in the same place?

Me: Tebz it's 7am

Her: Knowing that I'll be dealing with Jojo soon.. Be thankful I'm not on drugsI

laughed while shaking my head..

—

JOJO

I couldn't get the picture of Bonza laying on the kitchen floor dead in his own pool of blood out of my head. I kept on dating back on the events of last night. How we left his cold body in the middle of nowhere, hoping to get away with the perfect murder..

Tiger: Morning Man

I didn't even hear her coming in..

Me: You look like shit

Her: Do you blame me? I hardly slept last night

Me: Tiger listen.. I shouldn't have dragged you into my mess, I apologize Her: I

wanted to be dragged in the mess, after all that's what family is forMe: Speaking

of Family

I saw Xolelwa coming down the stairs, Tiger turned and looked at her.. Xolelwa stoppedas if like she wanted to turn back..

Tiger: Here we go again

Me: What's going on between you two?

Tiger: I also don't know

Xolelwa finally gained the strength to continue with her journey, we kept quiet as she walked in..

Xolelwa: Morning Jojo

She headed straight to the door..Me:

Xoks

She looked at Me..

Me: That was rude

She looked at Xoliswa..

Her: Morning

Tiger: What's up?

Me: Remember how you reminded me with every phone call that I shouldn't forget the promise I made to you? I kept my promise but now you being very unfair

She kept quiet...

Me: I know how you feel, you feel as if like Xoliswa left you and never looked back. You tried to search for her but you couldn't find her because she had changed her identity, so that she couldn't be found. You hoped that one day she would come back or at least call but she never did. You had to adjust to life without her, and when you finally did she resurfaced and now you confused because you no longer used to her being around. You angry, you hurt, you confused but don't you think that maybe she had her reasons?

Maybe you should listen to her and her side of the story then decide then if you still feel the same or not. You guys have been separated for a long time now, You bound to feel how you feel

She wiped her tears.. Her:

I have to go to work She

walked out..

Me: She's going to come around

Tiger: How did you?.. I never thought of it that way but now that you mentioned it I understand her attitude towards me, how did you know?

Me: Because I know Armani feels the same way about me, and maybe more Mam'Gabi walked in..

Her: Good morning We greeted her back..

Her: Jojo ng'cela sikhulume (can we please talk) Me:

Okay

Her: This way

I hit Tiger on the shoulder a little..

Me: I'm coming

I followed her to a more private place..

Her: I don't want your Parents to see us talking, they will suspect something Me: Is everything okay?

Her: I have found uArmani

Me: Sorry?

Her: She showed up at my house after she escaped were she was held captive I sighed in relief..

Me: Is she okay?

Her: She's.. She has bruises, Ndarha beat her up and he knew that he wasn't going to explain herself so he staged the kidnapping after finding out that Armani wanted to runaway

She lowered her voice..

Her: Armani thinks that she can do this on her own but I don't think she can. Jojo she's going to be running away from him her whole life, what kind of life is she going to have? Because that man is always going to look for her and egcineni uzogcina ambulalile (at

the end he will kill her)

She had a point..

Her: She's an amazing Person and she deserves to be happy. She deserves a different future from the one that Ndarha is trying to give her.. All I know is that she needs help, she needs someone who is at Ndarha's level to help her take him down. I don't see anyone else but you, I don't know how you feel about her no-

Me: I love Armani more than I have ever loved any of the women I've been with before
Her: I was hoping you would say that

Me: Can I see her?

Her: I'll have to talk to her first

Me: Yaa I understand

Her: You look good.. Where are you going?

Me: I have an interview today

Her: Well then good luck

Me: You should give me your number so I can call you later and maybe I can talk to her over the phone

Her: That's a good idea.. I'll give you my number

—

ARMAN

I

I still couldn't believe what u Mam'Gabi told me last night, uJojo came to the house for me or after he heard that I was kidnapped. Jojo swore never ever to step foot at that house, Xolelwa and I were not even sure that he was going to even come to her wedding. It really does feel like I'm dreaming, after all these years I thought that.. I really thought that we were never going to see each other ever again..

Master: Armani..I

looked at him..

Him: You flooding the kitchen

I looked at the sink, the water was ready to spill over. I quickly closed the tap and drained them..

Me: Sorry I.. I was lost in my thoughts

Him: Whatever it is that you thinking about seems like it's making you happyMe: Why you say that?

Him: For the first time you didn't get scared when I called your nameMe: It's really nothing

Him: If you say so

Me: would you like something to eat?

Him: Yes and I can make myself something to eat.. Thank you, I don't wanna burden youMe: I wouldn't mind

Him: I would mind

He walked to the fridge..

Him: At what time did you wake up? The house is cleanMe:

I'm used to waking up very early

Him: I can tell

Me: Hey can I borrow your phone?

Him: Yeah sure

He unlocked and handed it to me..Me:

Thank you

I went straight to Chrome and checked Jojo's pictures out.. I still can't come into terms at how grown he is, the last time I saw him when he left to go to the Transkei he was very skinny and I remember how scared he was of his Father. Jojo always lived in fear of him

Master: Ahh come on Armani! Not you tooI

looked at him..

Him: What's with you girls and this dude kanti??I

gave him back his phone..

Me: Thank you

Him: You know what.. We should go out tonight

Me: Thank you but I don't go out, plus I don't drink alcoholHim:

You can always have a cool drink

Me: Nope thank you

Him: Uyakhinya nje straight (You boring)

I laughed. I think I like Master but as a friend, he's a very nice person..24

NDARHA

"A body was found in an abandoned car just outside of Johannesburg. Police were able to make an identification of the man, as he's wallet was found not too far away from the car. The deceased is Bonza Nyathi, One of the successful criminal lawyers in South Africa. It is believed that it was a hijacking that had gone wrong, and no arrests had been made just as yet. Police are pleading with the public that if you have any information please come forward"..

I took the remote and changed the channel, it was very shocking to hear such news about Bonza. Who would've done something like this to him? A Hijacking that went wrong? That shit makes no sense! There's a lot of loop holes around this story.. I took a deep breath and then exhaled, what the hell is happening? Tomorrow morning I'll be flying to Kenya and on the other hand I haven't even found Armani yet! I laid back on the couch, for the first time I felt very hopeless. I need to check a few of the contacts that I have and see if they can't help, though none of them will come close to Bonza. He was the best..

—

TASH

I unbuttoned his shirt at the top..Me:

Is that better?

He took my hand and kissed it..

Him: It is better

Me: Do you wanna go through the questions?Him:

No I'll be fine

He gave me a side smile..

Him: How are you feeling?

Me: Do you really wanna talk about that here?

Him: It's just the two of us

Me: You don't know.. There could be hidden cameras somewhere, these People aresleek

Him: Yeah probably.. I thought I was having an interview with the Voice?Me:

That bitch went online to bash you, so I had to cancel her

He raised his eyebrows..

Him: "That bitch" who are you?

Me: don't say anything

I fixed his jacket.. He held both my hands, and put them against his chest..Him: I'm

fine

It was hard for me to stand this much close to him and pretend as if like everything isokay, while deep down I know that I am very much inlove with him..

Him: I'm going to break things off with NomfundoMe:

What?

Him: It's not right for me to keep on wasting her time like this knowing that she's not myfuture

Me: She's not your future?

Him: No.. Honestly speaking I was never in love with her I just wanted to be in arelationship for the sake of being in a relationship

Me: Wow that's brutal

Him: Ya.. The truth is, I am in love with someone else, someone who was there for me before I became this big shot that I am today

I felt something deep inside of me moving, I didn't expect him to feel the same way about me..

Me: So this cold heart does have love somewhere inside of it? He

chuckled..

Me: Tell me more about her

Him: There's nothing more to tell other than that she's very beautiful, has a warm heart, I always look at her pictures before I sleep. Her smile is the first thing that I fell in love with, not forgetting her soft voice. She is my heart, even though certain circumstances had a hand in our relationship but.. I never stopped loving her, maybe that's why I was never able to fall in love with someone else

Me: Wow.. You going to make me cry, that's.. That's.. I don't even know what to say We

heard a knock at the door.. I kissed him on his cheek..

Me: I'll get it

I went and opened.. It was the camera man.. Him:

We going live soon

Me: Thank you.. We'll be right there

He nodded and walked away.. I turned and looked at Jojo.. Me: We

have to go

He looked at himself in the mirror one last time.. Him:

Let's do this

Me: I'll be standing with the crew until you done

Him: Thank you Babe

Me: Be yourself

Him: I'll be myself

Me: Okay.. Let's go

I walked out first and he followed..

–

ARMAN

I

Master didn't mind driving me to East rand mall so that I could get some clothes, Mam'Gabi had borrowed me some money I will pay her back as soon as I get my bankcard.. It was still raining, I'm even

surprised that we made it through the rain.

Master: Yazi skeem you owe me big time Me:

I'll pay for petrol

Master: Ngani? Ngoba nje lakuwe sisokola sonke (With what? because you are broke)I

laughed..

Him: Samsokolo straight

Me: Don't say such things hau

People were a bit taken by me wearing a big hat while it was not even hot, my bruises they haven't healed that well so I wasn't that brave to go out without the hat. It was a bituncomfortable with them starring at me and whispering or laughing.. Master held my hand..

Him: Hai aboyindaba zabantuI

chuckled..

Him: Uzaze uwe Sisi (You will fall) Now

I couldn't hold back my laughter..Me: You

going to get us beat up

Him: I'm going to get beat up and you will be laughingMe:

You right about that (Laughing)

Him: Do you always laugh at everything?

Me: Pretty much

Him: Hai esinye iStory ke lesa (that's another situation)

We continued walking and he continued dissing people who were stealing glances at us..

Him: Feder ngishaye enye boxing enzima, hambani niyoyixoxa elokshin (I did beat her up,now go and discuss it in the hood)

I let go off of his hand and continued laughing that he also started laughing..Him:

Asambe tuu.. Usifakela amehlo (let's go.. You embarrassing us)

Me: Seriously I can't deal with you (Laughing)

Him: Maan Eish.. Let's go (laughing)

—

XOLELW

A

I didn't even drive straight to work, I had parked my car on the side of the road and had a moment to myself. Everything that Jojo said was partially true but what kills me more is that, if it wasn't for Armani getting kidnapped Xoliswa wouldn't have come. I guess I don't mean that much to her.. I drove back in, so that I could finally have a one on one with her. I need her to know how I feel.. Life was very boring without Armani around, wherever she is I hope that she is fine. I spotted my Father standing at the balcony, I walked up to him first..

Me: Tata (Dad)

He turned and looked at me..

Him: I thought that you would be at work

Me: I'm not feeling well, I'll go to the Dr later onHim:

What's wrong?

Me: It's nothing serious

Him: If it wasn't serious then you wouldn't be missing workMe: I..

I cleared my throat.. Me:

It's woman's thingHim: I

understand

Me: I'm just gonna go upstairs and lie down a bit then later I'll goHim: Very

well.. I'll tell Gabi to bring you something

Me: Thank you

I left him there and made my way upstairs. I don't know how the conversation is going to turn out but I pray that I'll somehow understand her side of the story. I knocked at herdoor, I didn't get a reply. I knocked again and still nothing. I slowly opened..

Me: Xols?

She was laying on her bed facing up with earphones on, she was deep in her sleep. Iwalked up to her..

Me: Xols?

I thought of waking her up but she was sleeping peacefully.. I made my way to the door but I stopped halfway, I went back to her and took off my shoes. I got in and laid my head on her chest just like how it was back when we were young. I used to be scared ofthe dark so much that she would lay next to me every night until I fell asleep.. I didn't think that she was going to wake up..

Her: You wanna talk?I

shook my head no..

Me: Maybe not now

Her: Okay

She wrapped her arms around Me..

—

JOJO

Kholeka: My guest today is both hated and loved but many. He is no stranger to scandals and he is known to the media for easily losing his temper..We don't know why

he hasn't gone for anger management as yet. I

laughed..

Her: Despite his never ending drama, most of you will agree with me when I say he's work has had us glued to our screens for a while now and we cannot wait to see how our favourite drama is going to end. Please help me welcome, Jojo Ndarha

We had no audience, was just us in the studio.. Her:

Jojo welcome to the show

Me: Thank you for having Me

Her: Before anything else, I wanna say I'm one of those who are saddened about the last season of Usapho

Me: Ya I know.. It has been a journey

Her: It has been a journey indeed

She was directed on which camera to look at

Her: Don't forget to tweet us, WhatsApp us, and also check us on Instagram. Jojo has agreed to be transparent so any questions you have, please bring them forward

She then looked at Me..

Her: I am actually more nervous than you are right now because I never thought that you could come to my show I mean.. I didn't think we were at your level and I mean that with no offense

I chuckled..

Me: Between you and I, I've always wanted to come Her:

And he lies

We both laughed...

—

ARMAN

I

Master: Armani

He whistled at me..

Him: Look

I looked at the Screen and Jojo was live..

We had decided to get something to eat first before starting with the shopping.. Though the volume was a bit low, I could still hear a few things..

Kholeka: Don't go anywhere there's still a lot that we have coming your way, including some drug abuse allegations. As I've said before Jojo is here to tell the truth, nothing but the truth.. We will be right back

They went to an ad break..

Master: Haaaaa! Ngazile (I knew it)

Me: Wazi ini? (Knew what)

Master: I'm sure he's on steroids too Me:

Jojo is not on drugs

Him: Wazi kanjani ke wena Sisi wam' (How do you know my sister) Me: I don't believe he's on drugs

They came back from the ad break while we were still arguing..

Kholeka: We are back and if you missed it, we have Jojo Ndarha in studio with us this morning. Our lines are open, you can also tweet us or send us a Voice note on WhatsApp as the interview goes along. We have a lot to discuss including an alleged drug scandal.. Yes you've heard that right..

Me: She's crazy

Him: Is she?

Me: She is

Him: There's only one way to find out He took out his phone..

Me: What are you doing?

He dialed the numbers on screen and put it on his ear..Me:

Master you can't do that

Him: It's ringing

There's no way that he was going to get through, I'm sure they were receiving a lot of calls by now..

Kholeka: So Jojo Pl-.. Ohw wait a minute..She

put her finger on her ear..

Her: We actually have a caller on the line.. That was quick..

Kholeka: Hello Caller you live on the Kholeka show

It was silent...

Her: Hello?

Master: Eita

I didn't expect this..

Me: Hang up (Whispering)

Kholeka: What is your Name Sir?

Him: My name is..

Me: Master no

Kholeka: Hello?

Him: Sorry a friend of mine is..I

got up and went to him..

Me: Hang up!

Kholeka: Okay seems like our caller has a bad connection or something.. SoMe: Hang up!!

Master: Armani ima kancane!! (Armani wait a minute)

Kholeka: Unfortunately we going to cu-Jojo:

Wait what did you say?

I stepped back with my hand covering my mouth..Jojo:

Did the caller say Armani?

He stood up..

Jojo: Hello? Who are you?

Master hung up..

Kholeka: The line just went dead

Jojo: We need to get him back on the line

Kholeka: I'm pretty sure that..

I heard someone whispering from the background..Voice: ad

break.. Ad break

Jojo: Get whoever it was back on the line I'm not playing with you! I saw some white lady making her way to him..

Her: Jojo calm down

Kholeka: We.. Let's go to an ad break

They quickly went to an ad break. Master looked at Me..Him:

Armani what's going on?

Me: I..

He's phone started ringing..

Him: What do I do now? Should I pick up?

I immediately felt dizzy, the whole room started spinning..25

JOJO

I think I did act a bit impulsive but I was very confused. Mam'G said Armani is safe at her house and now a Male companion is calling the show with Armani in his presence, I don't know what's happening but Armani wouldn't put herself in danger like that. There's something a bit confusing here so Mam'G will have to explain what that was all about..Tash walked in..

Her: What happened?

Me: It was just a misunderstandingHer:

A misunderstanding?

Me: I thought that call was a blast from my past but.. I was just imagining thingsShe came and fixed my shirt again..

Her: Kholeka wants to know if you still going to continue with the interviewMe: Yes

Her: We should go then, can't keep the viewers waitingMe:

Let's go

She led the way and I followed her..

—

ARMAN

I

We had to drive back home immediately, Master doesn't really know what's going on so I can't really blame him but myself. I acted very stupid, but what if he mentioned his name and my name too.? Ndarha would've been able to track me down..

He pulled over..

Me: What are you doing?

Him: We not leaving until you tell me what's going on

I turned and checked if there was no car following us, or parked behind us..Him: Kahle

kahle k'hambani? (what's going on)

I need to tell him the truth, maybe if I tell him what's happening he will understand and stop putting my life in danger like that..

Me: Can I trust you?

Him: Yes

Me: Okay.. Uhm I am running away from someone

Him: That is obvious

Me: Someone very powerful

Him: Jojo? Because from what I saw it seems like he knows you

Me: No.. Not Jojo, It's someone else.. The same Person who did this to me. If you had mentioned your name and mine, he was giving to track you down. If he finds you then he finds Me

Him: Who is he? Me:

I can't really say He

kept quiet..

Him: Ithi ngik'buze something (let me ask you something) Me: Ask

Him: So uyombaleka impilo yakho yonke? (you going to run away from him for the rest of your life)

Me: You don't understand

Him: Maybe I don't understand but what I know is that you can't keep on running forever. That's not a life. Let's say you run away now to somewhere else, then he finds you what's going to happen next? You going to run away again? No Skeem that's not on

Me: What you suggest I do? Stay? Let him find me and kill me? Him:

No you stay and we going to fight him

Me: Master..

Him: I don't care how powerful he is, at the end of the day he is a human being and he has cracks! You not going anywhere, we going to fight. The best way to break him is to show him that you not scared anymore. Abusers feed off your fear, plus if he was that powerful why hasn't he found you yet? Ungazodlala wena (don't play like that)

He looked at me..

Him: We going back to the mall, soshaya leya shopping. If uyeza mak'yinwa akunyesaan' (We going to do shopping, if he comes then let shit hit the fan)

He wasn't bluffing, he drove straight to the mall again..

–

XOLELW

A

I woke up with Xoliswa not laying next to me. I looked around and it was quiet in the bedroom..

Me: Xols?

I got out of bed when the door opened, she walked in..Her:

You awake

Me: Yeah I suddenly felt a bit cold

Her: It is starting to get cold now

There was a bit of an awkward moment between us..Her:

Can we talk?

I sat down on the bed and she also sat down opposite me, we faced each other..Her: Talk to me

Me: That time when you left, it was very difficult for me. Dad said you going to come back soon and when you come back you would've changed, he was very sure that the military was going to change you. I invested my hope in that statement, whatever happened to me I held on because I knew that you were going to come back when the military had fixed you..

I sighed..

Me: Years passed and you never came back I

shook my head with tears in my eyes..

Me: We searched for you without any success, it's like you had disappeared from the face of the Earth.

I wiped my tears..

Me: I'm sorry..

Her: No it's okay.. Can I hold your hand?I

nodded..

Me: I was forced to play the good Daughter because I was alone. I had no one in my corner, you and Jojo were out there living your lives. At least Jojo would call and checkup on me but you never did. I was looking forward to seeing you again probably at my wedding but.. When you showed up for Armani I.. That's what hurt me a lot. If it wasn't for Armani you wouldn't be here right now, you totally forgot about me Xols

She kissed my hand..

Her: I'm so sorry, and I'm not going to sit here and try to justify myself. I should've contacted you, despite what was happening between Me and Dad I should've contacted you. I'm truly sorry, I don't even know what to say or do to make it better.. I'm really sorry

I wiped my tears..

Her: Come here

I moved closer and she hugged Me..

Her: I'm sorry

—

NDARH

A

I was having lunch with the President at his house this time around, he wanted to meetup with me before my trip tomorrow. He knows my scandals and I know his, quite frankly he is the one who suggested Bonza to Me.. While we were eating I told him everything about Armani and the kidnapping, he knows about Me and Armani..

Him: I thought Bonza long helped you with the Armani situationMe:

He was helping me before he was killed

Him: Look Ndarha, if you not going to treat her right she will never stay. You two are going to play this cat and mice game forever if you don't change your abusive ways . I'mnot saying don't enforce discipline here and there but how you doing it, it's brutal. Howyou going to make her stay and love you if she's scared of you? Don't forget we old now,

if we get these young girls we need to be on top of the game with everything so they don't run away to find guys their age. Plus you have an added advantage. You the only man she has known, can't count Jojo because it was a long time ago

I thought about what he was saying..

Him: And don't kill your wife for Armani. Make Armani your second wife. It's not wrong I have 3 wives. My first wife you know we've been together for years, my other 2 wives I got them recently. My last wife is the youngest she's 29 and I make sure that I please her in anyway. Financially, Emotionally, and sexually.. The last one we still working on it

Me: We good on that one

Him: That might make her to remember you, look go to Kenya and handle the business then come back and we will look for Armani. Just know that I won't help you to bring her back home kicking and screaming, she's going to get a lot of nonsense from Nontsikelelo she doesn't need nonsense from you too

Me: I don't know how we going to make it. Jojo is back, and Mongz seems like he also likes her

Him: Have you ever heard of Stockholm syndrome? Whatever the situation, she is always going to be tied to you

(Silence)

Me: Okay then we going to try it your way

Him: Trust me old friend.. Just trust me

I raised my glass and drank from it.²⁶

ARMANI

TWO WEEKS LATER

I walked in on Master having a fascinating yet heated conversation over the phone. A week back he was stabbed, when he had gone out drinking with his friends. I am not very sure about the full details of the incident but he said some guy long had it for him, ever since he arrived there. This is why I don't like alcohol what is supposed to be a moment of fun can turn into a deadly physical altercation, Most people who are drunk tend to be violent..

Master: Vele asiyiyeki le ndaba, entlek masengi grand sobagcwalisela (We not letting it go, when I get better we going to go after them)

I have noticed that he is a very stubborn Person, if he is determined about doing something, you won't stop him. No matter how dangerous it is. He has a mind of his own.. I went and sat next to him on the couch, I waited for him to finish..

Him: Yizo nja yam'.. Gcwala

He hung up..

Me: Going after those guys who stabbed you is a bad idea, you should be focusing on getting better so that you can go back to work

Him: Asizifundise ukungazingeni izindaba zam' yabo? (let's learn not to interfere in my business)

Me: I'm just a concerned friend

He squeezed my cheek..

Him: Uncorncen yourself

I chuckled..

Me: Anyway I wanted to talk to you about something

Him: Ng'lalele (I'm listening)

Me: Remember how we were talking about I can't run away forever?

Him: If I remember correctly I was talking about you not running away, and you still wanted to run away

Me: Whatever.. I just wanted to say you were right

He put his hand on his chest..

Him: I was right?

Me: Quit playing

Him: I'm surprised.. Phela with you Women a guy is never right

Me: You wanna hear this or not?

He kept quiet..

Me: I'm going back

He didn't say anything for a while..

Him: Okay.. Let's not be stupid about this, I said don't run away I didn't say go back to him

Me: I'm not going back to him, plus he's not around. Your Aunt told me that he went to Kenya, he was supposed to be back next week but he extended his trip. He might be there for a month or longer

Him: Okay..

Me: I had a life there, I had People who cared for me and I wanna close that chapter in good terms with those People if I wanna move on. Most of all I wanna see if there's anything left for Me and Jojo. I know Ndarha would never hurt me if Jojo is there, I don't think he would wanna go down that road with him. Jojo is no longer that vulnerable young boy, he is a man now. One that can take Ndarha down. If I'm going to fight him, I'm going to need help

Him: Hau ngoba mina bengithi ngikhona? (I thought I was here)Me:

You know what I mean

Him: What were you thinking?I

sighed..

Me: I want Ndarha behind bars for a long time, I want him to realise that he is not God after all. He is a human being, and as long as you a human being you bound to pay for your sins one day

Him: That's the spirit

Me: I'm leaving today.. I would like you to drive me, maybe see my world?Him:

Will I even be allowed in?

Me: Yes Ndarha is not aroundHe

gave me a high five..

Him: Yizo skeem (that's the way to go)

Me: How are you feeling?

Him: Ak'fani kona kuyancengeka(It's not the same as when I got stabbed)

I nodded. It felt good, it felt very good being in control of my life. Though the fear is still there, adapting to a new life is also not that easy but I believe I'll get there. I'm going to take it one day at a time..

—

JOJO

I yawned again..

Me: That was good Hlehle just try not to scream that loudHer:

Okay

Me: Let's do it againI

rubbed my eyes..

Hlehle: Why don't you go home and rest boss?Me:

No I'm fine

Her: That's what you said two days ago

Me: I'll just get an energy drink then I'll be fine.. Keep rolling

I got up from the chair and walked out. For the past few days I haven't been myself, I do get a good night sleep almost everyday but I always wake up tired then the rest of the day becomes a drag. I don't know why this is happening and it's happening at a very wrong time. There's a few episodes left of Usapho and I need to nail the script of the episodes that are left, I can't lose focus now. Tash was not around, it's her day off today that's why it's a bit difficult for me to function cause I have to do some things on my own.

On my way to getting myself an energy drink I passed by at the makeup room, Nomfundo was sorting a few things out. As I've said before that I was going to break things off with her, I did just that about a week ago..

I stood at the door..

Me: Hey

She looked at Me..

Her: Hey

Me: You good?

Her: Ya.. I'm okay, you?

Me: I'm good

She looked at Me..

Her: You look tired

Me: I'm actually very sleepy.. These days I'm always sleepy and tired
Her: You not getting enough sleep?

Me: That's the weird thing.. I do get enough sleep at home
Her: Did you go to the Dr?

Me: No.. Not really

Her: You should

Me: I will

(Silence)

Her: I need to get back on set

Me: Of course.. Sorry

She took her make-up kit..

Her: It's okay

I stepped out of her way as she made her way out..

—

TASH

I took a deep breath and then stretched my hand to get the pregnancy test, I took another deep breath with my eyes closed this time around before looking at it. I had bought clearblue, it makes things a bit simple. I checked the results and it was written

"Pregnant", underneath that word it was written "1-2 weeks pregnant". I must've miscalculated my Ovulation date. I am even lucky to have fallen pregnant, I did good by having unprotected sex with him again after that day of his interview, we had driven to have lunch and then later on went back to his place.. I closed my eyes a bit relieved, It happened. I am Pregnant.. Now things are going to be a whole lot easier since he broke up with Nomfundo.. I heard a knock at the door..

Jamie: Love.. Are you okay?

Me: Uhm Yes.. I'm coming

I hid the pregnancy test under that pile of dirty towels..Me: I'll

be out now now

Now the most difficult part is to break up with my boyfriend, Jamie..I

flushed the toilet and washed my hands, then I made my way out.. Him:

You okay?

Me: Yes just an upset stomach

Him: We don't have to go out, I can prepare breakfast for usMe:

Are you sure?

Him: Yes.. Anything for youI

faked a smile..

Him: I'll get started

He kissed me on my forehead. We haven't been intimate ever since he got back, I have been making up excuses. I didn't wanna be sexual with him up until I was sure that I was pregnant, now that I am.. I seriously don't think Jamie and I we have a future together.

My future will be with Jojo now, and our baby

—

XOLELW

A

I had taken leave so that I could spend more time with Xoliswa and so far I can say that I enjoy spending time with her. We have reconnected so well that one would never believe the last time we saw each other was when we were 15 about to turn 16.. Today

we were at her workplace, later on we going to fetch her girlfriend from school. Since it's Friday she will be spending the weekend with us, I can't wait to meet her. Things have been a bit better at home since my Dad took that trip to Kenya, Xols and Jojo are even trying to get along with our Mother. Even though things were starting to look up for the Ndarha clan, Armani was still missing and the void of not having her around was getting more bigger and bigger.

Xols: Don't touch that

I let it go. I walked over to the small table..

Her: Don't touch that either

I exhaled in frustration..I

tried touching again..

Her: Xoks I'm not going to tell you the same thing over and over againMe:

What am I supposed to do I'm bored?

Her: How is that any of my Problem? You wanted to tag along just keep your hands to yourself..
Geez!

I rolled my eyes..

Her: I saw that tooI

looked at her..

Me: When are you going to be done? When are we going back home?

Her: This is my bread and butter okay? Not all of us are financially dependent on yourFather

Me: And that's my fault because?

Her: Excuse you?

I kept quiet. After a few seconds I walked up to her, I stood behind her..Me:

What are you doing?

Her: Geez!

She put the pencil down and turned her chair around..

Her: Can't you chat on WhatsApp with your friends or something?
Me: I don't have any friends remember?

I sat on top of her..

Me: I know I wanted to come here but.. It's really boring
Her:

So what do you want me to do?

I put my hands around her neck..

Me: We can go out to eat and spend the rest of the day exploring, I wanna explore Pretoria a bit. It seems beautiful

Her: Xoks..

Me: Please..

Her: Don't do that

The door opened and some girl walked in..
Her:

Tiger sorry that I'm-

She literally screamed when she saw us..

Xols: There we go

Her: There's.. There's two of you
I

never told her about Xolelwa..

Her: I don't know what's more frightening, you having a twin or the incest, this picture looks like you guys were about to kiss

Xols: It started and ended in my Mother's tummy
I

looked at her..

Me: It did?

Xols: Yeah Mom never told you? We used to kiss a lot in her tummy
Me:

Euuuww

I got off her..

She laughed..

Xols: Kitty this is my twin sister Xolelwa, and Xolelwa this is my assistant KittyKitty:

Hi

Me: Hi

Kitty: So this is how Tiger would look like if she was a girlXols: I
am a girl

Kitty: You know what I mean.. Why you never told me you had a twin Sister?Xols:
You never asked

Kitty: You very pretty

Me: Thank you.. You pretty too

Her: Wow.. Let me go put my things at the back there's a lot to askI
walked up to Xols..

Me: Are you serious?

Her: Serious?

Me: That we.. You know

Her: Used to kiss?

I nodded..

Her: We were occupying a very small space Xolelwa yes there was a lot of kissing andtouching

Me: This is just sickening, don't ever touch meShe
laughed..

Me: It's very sickening

27

ARMANI

Mam'G: "Sicela kuwe Nkosi, uze umvikele uArmani lapho ayakhona. Umakungeyakho Intando mayenzeke, kodwa uma kungeyona eyakho mayingayenzeki. Umuphe amandla, Umkhanyisele ukuze alufeze uhambo lwakhe. Sicela egameni lendondana yakho uKrestu.. Amen"(Praying)

Me: Amen

It was a Saturday Morning and I was going back to the Ndarha household. Mam'Gabi saw fit that we should pray first, even last night we had a whole night prayer. I was a bit nervous, not because I was going back but because I was going to see Jojo for the first time in a very long time.

Mam'Gabi says that he is still there, I don't know how everything is going to turn out but I am hoping that this journey will at least come with a lesson if it doesn't bear good fruits..

Me: Ndiyabulela Mam'Gabi, andazi bendizathini xa ubungekho (Thank you Mam'Gabi, I don't know what I would've done if you were not around)

We got up and sat on her bed..

Her: Mangabe akuhambi kahle ngifuna ubuye, kodwa uJojo ngimthebile. Uyakuthanda Armani (If it doesn't go well I want you to come back, but I trust Jojo. He loves you Armani)

Me: That's the main reason why I'm going back, I want to see if there's anything left for us. Plus the last time I checked he had a girlfriend

She chuckled..

Her: Ngeke ngikusole ngoba nePhone awunayo (I am not surprised because you don't even have a phone)

Me: Is there something that you not telling me? She

raised both her hands up..

Her: Angizingeni (I am not interfering)

We heard a knock at the door..

Mam'G: Come in

The door opened and Master walked in..

Him: Mamzo

Mam'G: Master

Master: Skeem are you ready to go?Me:

Yes I'm ready to go

His phone rang, he took it out and looked at it. Then he clicked his tongue..Mam'G:

Manje yini? (What's wrong)

Him: It's that woman again

Her: She still calls you?

Him: Every now and then

Her: Still the same thing?

Him: I don't know why she wants me to be a part of her family, she wants to kill me justlike she killed my Mother

I was confused, luckily Mam'Gabi quickly cleared my confusion..

Her: My Sister had an affair with a married man and she fell pregnant, he was ready toleave his wife for her but.. Things didn't work out. When the wife found out, she visited my Sister to confront her about this then my Sister never woke up the next day

Me: That's extreme

Her: I think her husband told her about Master before he died, she has been trying to getto know him.. Wants him to know his Brother and Sister too

Master: I don't want nothing to do with them She has a hand in my Mother's deathMam'G: We don't know that for sure

Master: I know.. My Mom was fine, she wasn't sick or anything. This woman visited herthat day and at night my Mom went to sleep then never woke up. Plus she's Nigerian orZimbabwean.. Angimuthembi (I don't trust her)

Mam'G: I once met up with her and spoke to her, I'm not dead. She just wants to give you what rightfully belongs to you, a share of your inheritance from your father. She alsowants you to meet your half Brother and Sister. She's a very humble woman

Master: Do you even know her name?

Mam'G: No but she told me to call her "Mamezala" said people call her that since her name is a bit difficult to pronounce

Me: Yazi skeem I've never taken you for someone who would hate another person
Master: I don't hate her, just that angifuni ukudineka (I don't want to be annoyed) He looked at the time..

Him: As'gcwale isganga (let's go)

I looked at Mam'Gabi and then went to hug her..Her:

Call me when you get there

Me: I will

—

XOLELW

A

Me: Xa bendino mama, Besendine qhiy'ebotshwe ngaphambili, Okwenene ndiyahamba..Okwenene ndibhek'eGoli sana lwam'

My Mother joined in..

Her: Ndiyagodola, Ndiyagodol' incinci naleRagi mnta kaMamam'.. IYhu ndiyahambaIYhu!

Ndibhek'eGoli sana lwam

I guess we both woke up missing Armani, we all used to sing the song almost every morning when we gathered around the table having breakfast. Those were the days

Mom: I don't know how many times I've been praying, Can God bring her home to us now

She was really taking this hard, Armani was like a Daughter to her. Armani means the world to us, life without her is very difficult..

Mom: Shift that bowl there and put it here

My Mom was the one who woke up this morning and made us breakfast..

Xoliswa came down. Yesterday we were supposed to come back with her girlfriend but she couldn't make it, so we going to be fetching her this morning..

Xols: Morning Family

She kissed me on my cheek, I pushed her..Me:

Stop it..

Her: Whats wrong with you?

Me: I told you not to touch me anymore

Her: Because of Kitty's theory?

Me: It's just not right, keep your distance

Her: Come on.. You can't possibly believe that we had lesbian sex inside Nonts WombMom: Hai

Xoliswa ndizak'betha! (Xoliswa I'll beat you up)

Xoliswa laughed..

Mom: Don't say such things

Me: Mom is it true that we used to kiss when we were in your tummy?Mom:

uyakuqhatha uTiger (Tiger is playing with you)

We both looked at her shocked..

Mom: Yintoni? (What)

Xols: You called me Tiger

Mom: Ke ngoku? (so what)

Xols smiled a little..

Xols: Nothing

Mom: Did Jojo go out?

Xols: I think he is still sleeping

Mom: Sleeping? What time is it now?

Me: 8:30

Mom: That's unlike him.. I'll go and check on him, and don't kill each other

She walked away..

Me: Ever since Dad left, her mood has changedXols:

If her drinking can change too

Me: Ya.. She will get there

She pulled the chair and sat down..

Me: You can go ahead and fetch your girlfriend, You can use my carHer:

Thought you were coming with

Me: I wanna spend time with Mom, thought we could go out shoppingHer:

Okay.. That's good

(Silence)

Her: When am I meeting your fiancé?

Me: You will

I pulled the chair and sat down..

Her: I know I will.. I just wanna know when?I

exhaled..

Me: Let's eat

—

TASH

Today I woke up and went to the Dr, I wanted concrete evidence that I'm pregnant..Dr: I

will send this to the lab

Me: Thank you

Dr: I will call you as soon as the results come backMe:

Thank you very much

Dr: How do you feel?

Me: I am fine.. I don't feel anything other than a bit of cramps in my womb, not periodpains like though

Dr: Okay.. Any spotting?

Me: No

Dr: Do you have fatigue? Dizzy spells?

Me: Uhm.. No, my breasts feel a bit swollen and my nipples get sore at times. I urinate more frequently than I used too

She nodded while noting everything down..Her:

Nausea and vomiting?

Me: No.. Nothing like that

Her: Okay

Me: Is everything okay?

Her: You alright.. We just need to wait for the tests to come back so we can take it from there. Pregnancy at 2 weeks is very critical, most of the time the pregnancy test pick upon the change of hormones, cervical mucus and sometimes it gives you a misconception that you pregnant

That sounded a bit disappointing..

Her: If you are pregnant then you very vulnerable to having a miscarriage so avoid stress, and watch what you eat. No rough sex since there's a high chance of implantation, and then do wait for my call

Me: Okay

Her: Is there anything else?

Me: No.. That's all

She smiled..

Her: Okay then.. I guess we done

—

JOJO

I felt someone waking me up, it was my Mother..

Her: Yintoni Bhabha awuphilanga? (What's wrong, you don't feel well)

I rubbed my eyes and got up from my pillow as she went to open the curtains..Her: Are you feeling sick? You haven't been yourself lately

Me: I just feel very tired most of the time

Her: Are you getting enough sleep? Maybe you working way too hardMe: I am getting enough sleep.. I even went to bed early last night She came and sat on my bed, she felt my temperature..

Her: Maybe you should go to the Dr, or stay indoors today and get enough restMe: I can't stay indoors.. I'm shooting an ad today for some beard oil

Her: Okay.. Please promise me that if Monday comes and you still feel the same, you will go to the Dr

Me: I promise

She smiled..

Her: Why don't you join us for breakfast before you leaveMe:

I'll be right there

She stood and then walked out, I laid back on my pillow again..28

JOJO

Charice: This one is good, better than what we had 5min ago. We can redo the last part and then we'll edit here and there.. What do you think?

Me: If you happy with it, then I'm good after all you the one signing the chequeShe laughed..

Her: I really like it.. Let's redo the last part and then we'll be done, do bring that charmMe: I'll do so

I looked around, Tash is supposed to be next to me checking if the clip is good or not. She has been acting somewhat weird this morning, ever since we got here..

Me: Can I get a minute or so

Charice: Of course you can

Me: Thank you

I walked out and bumped to the floor manager..

Me: Hey did you see my assistant? The white girl that I came with? Him:

She said when you done, you will find her in the makeup room
Me: Thank you very much

I made my way to the makeup room.. I knocked first before going in, she was sitting on the chair and crying. That was a bit surprising, Tash doesn't break down easily..

Me: Tash

She quickly wiped her tears..

Her: You done?

I made my way to her..

Me: Not yet

I crouched in front of her..

Me: What's wrong?

Her: It's nothing I

held her hand..

Me: Hey.. Look at me

She looked at me..

Me: Talk to me what's wrong?

Her: Seriously it's nothing

Me: No don't give me that.. We a team remember?

She thought for a few seconds..Me:

What is it?

Her: Jamie and I we.. We having problemsMe:

Ohw.. I'm sorry to hear that

Her: I've been trying but.. Things aren't working out anymoreMe:

What happened?

Her: Our relationship is no longer the same, the constant traveling and.. I am not an insecure woman but, he is away 90% of the time only the heavens know what he gets upto in these constant trips of his

Him: You seemed okay with his career, why is it an issue now?

Me: He is a man Jojo, he is never home. Obviously wherever he goes he is gonna want to have a piece of someone

I exhaled..

Me: It is a bit difficult

Her: I feel like we forcing things. The chemistry between us has long been dead plus we haven't had sex since he came back

Me: You guys can work through it

She shook her head..

Her: It's done.. We done

This was a difficult situation..

Her: You should go back and finish shootingMe:

Are you sure that you going to be okay? Her: I'll

be fine

I kissed her hand..

Me: I'll be back

I got up..

Her: Okay

Me: And stop crying, it doesn't sit well with meShe
giggled..

Her: I'll try not tooI
walked out..

–

ARMAN

I

Master stopped the car in front of the gate..He
whistled..

Him: This is how Politicians roll?

One of the security guards, uBab'Sthole opened the gate and made his way to us. He went to
Master's side and Master rolled down the window..

Him: Sani-

His eyes landed on me..

Him: Armani??

Me: Bab'Sthole

Him: Yeyeni khuzani bo! Ngiboniswa ini? Armani wuwe lo? (Armani is it really you)I
nodded..

Me: Ndim Tata (it's really Me)

Him: Awww indlu yonke Iphatsi phezulu ifuna wena, ithemba laze lalahleka. Kodwa ngasho
ngathi abakini bazoba nawe (Everyone was up and down looking for you so much that they
lost hope. I did say that your ancestors will be with you)

Me: Ndiyabulela Tata (Thank you)

He looked at Master..

Me: This is Mam'Gabi's Nephew Tata, he is the one who played a role in rescuing Me

Him: Hai siyabonga Ndodana (Thank you Son)

Master: Kubonga Mina Baba (I am the one who is thankful)

Him: Ithi nginivulele bantwa bami (let me open for you my children)He went back in..

Him: Mnaka vula balethe u Armani!! (Open they have brought back Armani)We didn't wait that long and the gate was opened..

Master: Seems like you get along well with everyone hereMe: Yes

I do.. The workers are nice People

As we drove in I spotted Nonts car parked very close to the door, that means she's out..I took a deep breath and then exhaled..

Me: This is it

Master: Aii No skeem, abantu bayaphila langaphandle (People are living large out there)He found a spot and then parked his car..

—

TASH

The Doctor's visit was very disappointing, I know that she didn't really say I'm not pregnant but her words were very discouraging. I really wanted this, I truly want a baby. I know very well that a baby is going to initiate a relationship between Me and Jojo..I looked at myself in the mirror and wiped my tears.

I wasn't fronting when I told Jojo that things between Me and Jamie are not good anymore, truthfully speaking our relationship is dead. It has been dead for a very long time now. I think his constant traveling is what drove us apart, and then spending more time with Jojo sort of ignited those old feelings that I thought were buried.. I looked at the time, I'm sure Jojo is done by now. Speaking of the Devil he made his way in..

Me: You done? Him:

Yeah I'm doneHe

looked at Me..

Him: You good?

Me: Yes I'm okay

Him: Maybe we should go out you know, spend a night at some hotel.. What do you think?

Me: I think it's a great idea

Him: Is Jamie at your place?

Me: No.. He to his place

Him: We'll stop by at my place first, I wanna get a few things Me:

Okay

Him: Shall we? I

nodded..

Him: After you

I'm glad he proposed that, maybe we can try again tonight..

—

ARMAN

I

I opened the door and walked in, Master followed Me. I looked around and it was quiet. Usually the helpers are around going up and down, busy with something..

Me: It's very quiet

Master: Yeses!! This house is beautiful

I walked around with Master still following Me..

Master: Lo Ndarha wenu une Mali moss neh? (This Ndarha of yours has money)

Xolelwa walked in, she didn't notice us at first as she was glued to her phone. When hereyes finally moved from the screen and landed on Me, she screamed and dropped her phone..

Her: Ar... Armani

Me: Hey Xoks..

Her: I can't..

She covered her mouth in shock..Me:

It's really Me

She didn't know what to say..

Nonts: Xolelwa Yint-

She also couldn't believe her eyes..

Her: Armani??

I started to get a bit Emotional, Nonts put both her hands on her head..Her:

uThixo undivile (The Lord heard Me)

I wiped my tears..

Xolelwa was the first one who came and hugged Me..Her: I

thought I was never going to see you again

Me: I'm back.. It's Me

We broke the hug as Nonts made her way to Me.. She also gave Me a tight hug..Her: I am

so sorry Armani

Me: It's okay

She broke the hug and looked at me with her hands on my cheeks..Her: Let

me look at you.. They didn't hurt you?

I slowly nodded..

Her: I failed you ArmaniI

shook my head No..

Me: Don't say that.. You didn't fail me

Master cleared his throat..

Me: Sorry Skeem

I moved away from Nonts and went back to Master..

Me: This is Master, he is my hero. He played a role in my escape. He helped in hiding me, he is Mam'Gabi's Nephew.. They really helped

I looked at him..

Me: This is uMam'Nontsikelelo

She shook his hand..

Nonts: Thank you so much.. I don't know how we can repay you
Me: And that is Xolelwa, She is Mam'Nontsikelelo's Daughter Master extended his hand to Xolelwa..

Master: Kunjani Xolelwa? (How are you Xolelwa)

Xoks: Ndiyaphila wena? (I am well and You)

Master: Ngi ngrand

Their handshake lasted a bit longer..

Nonts: We were actually going out shopping, I had forgotten my Purse.. That's why you were able to find us

Their handshake seized..

Me: I'm glad I did

Nonts: I am going to cook a nice dinner, this is a very special day. God brought you back to us

Xolelwa: I agree

Nonts: With that being said, I also want you to temporarily move into the house with us until we can install a better security system at the Servant's quarters. After what happened I'm not letting you go back in there until I'm sure that you are safe

I nodded..

Me: Okay

Nonts: Xolelwa you will have to go and get a few things that we are going to need, I'll make

a list.. You will go alone, I'm no longer coming with you. I need to help Armani get settled in

Master: I can drive her

Nonts: Ohw

Master: We can use my car.. That's if you okay with it

Nonts looked at Me and I nodded..

Nonts: I guess you can drive her then

Master looked at Xolelwa..

Me: It's okay Xoks, you can trust him

She slightly nodded..

Xoks: I'll go and get my bag

–

XOLISWA (TIGER)

Loli and I stopped by at Wimpy to get something to eat first before heading home..Me: How is school going?

Her: School is going fine.. How is work?

Me: Not bad

We continued..

Her: Can't believe that I'm finally going to meet your familyMe: I should've done it a lot sooner

Her: It's okay.. You had your reasonsShe took my milkshake..

Me: And then?

Her: I just wanna taste

Me: Why didn't you just get a chocolate milkshake?

Her: Stop being stingy.. It's not like I'm going to drink the whole thing.. I just wanna tasteShe tasted it..

Her: See.. I didn't finish it

Me: What's next? You wanna taste my food too?

Her: Don't be like that

(Silence)

Her: Do you think your family is going to like me?Me:

Why do you ask?

Her: Well it turns out that I'm not dating an ordinary Person, you come from a very powerful family

Me: I'm still the same Person

Her: Promise me one thing Me:

Yeah?

Her: Promise me that nothing is going to change between us, and that you won't find someone better than Me?

Me: Don't be crazy.. Nothing is going to change between us.. I love you, I'll always love you

She smiled..

Me: Finish her food so that we can get out of here, I'm sure my twin sister is waiting at the door. She can't wait to meet you

Her: Can't wait to meet her too

—

ARMAN

I

I was back at my quarters, I kept on staring at the spot where I laid the whole night crying and bleeding after Ndarha had beat me up. It was clean and the sheets were changed.

Nonts scared me when she walked in.. Her: It's

just Me.. I didn't mean to scare you

This place hides both good and bad memories. Good memories that I created with myMother and bad memories that Ndarha created for Me, all of a sudden I had this fear and I couldn't get everything that he did to me out of my head..

Nonts: Gabi cleaned and washed the sheetsI

looked around..

Her: You don't have to stay here anymore, you can stay with us in the house for as longas you want

Me: Thank you

Her: I just called Mongz, he has connections he said he will get us someone who caninstall a better security system

Me: Thank you Nonts..

Her: Let's get your clothes so we can go back to the house, I don't want you hereanymore. This place is just going to remind you of what happened

I went and took all my teddy bears from the bed and put them in a box..Me: I'll

take them inside first

Her: Okay.. I'll get everything from the wardrobe to the suitcaseMe:

Okay

I took the box and walked out, when I was outside I could finally breath. Nonts is right, I cannot be living there anymore..

I made my way in back to the house, I used the sliding door that led to the Servant's quarters, from the living room.. On my way in I heard a bit of whispering and gigglingcoming from the kitchen, that was weird. Xoks and Master left a few minutes ago.

I carefully made my way to the kitchen, and I saw Jojo with some white lady but theydidn't see me..

Her: Stop it what if someone walks in

Him: There's no around, everyone had plans

They were in a compromising position, she was on top of the kitchen counter and he was in between her legs. She had her arms wrapped around his neck and he had his around her waist. They weren't naked but still.. She looked a bit familiar, I've seen hersomewhere..

Her: Shouldn't you be getting whatever it is you getting so we can go?Him: We will go

He kissed her on her neck, she enjoyed it judging from how she closed her eyes with herhand moving up to the back of his head. He moved from her neck and kissed her on her lips. She ran her hands down to his belt as his went up to squeeze her breasts, I don't know what happened but I dropped the box that I was holding. They stopped and lookedat Me..

Her: Ohh my.. I thought you said there's no one

Jojo was beyond the word "Shocked", he kept his eyes on me and I kept mine on him.Nonts walked in..

Nonts: Mani I..

She looked at them..

Nonts: Jojo!!!

I broke they eye contact and picked up the box, I then turned and made my way upstairs

Nonts: Rhaaaaaaa Jojo wenza ntoni? wenza ntoni kwi kitchen unit yam' (What are youdoing on my kitchen unit)

I walked up those stairs as quickly as my I could without even looking back..29

XOLELWA

I glanced down at my finger, today I didn't have my engagement ring on. It's probably thesecond time I have forgotten to put it which was weird because I never forget to put myring on. I even have a bit of some discolouration on that area to prove that my ring is always on my finger..

The ride to the mall was a new experience for Me, I have never been in the same car with a stranger. A stranger that happens to be a male.. I kept on stealing glances at him. He was eye catching if I could put it like that, his looks weren't disappointing at all. For someone who seemed to be a bit of a chatter while we were at my house, he was very reserved in the car and that in turn made me nervous...

Master was fully concentrating on the road while occasionally singing along to the song that was playing, I wasn't familiar with it but it sounded a bit nice..

Him: "Nice life ya Tembisa.. Chasing ama Meter.. No cheese no Pizza, I can tell how your beauty is still hidden eGibhitha.. "

He looked at me when he said that last line, I turned my head and stared out of the window trying to avoid eye contact..

Him: "Isina muva liyabukwa, akasekho obheke emuva shona phantsi (okay, okay) Jivanawe moova, wena uzel'groova shona phantsi"

He was even doing a bit of some dance to along with the song, I couldn't wait to get to the mall, he was putting me in a very difficult position..

—

ARMAN

I

I had no reason to come back here but I did because a part of me had hope that there might be something left for me and Jojo to work on, I really thought that we might work things out or something like that. Guess I was way too naive, after all it has been a very long time how can I expect him to still have feelings for me. He has changed, he is no longer that old Jojo, I should've long picked it up from when I was stalking him on social media that there's nothing left for us. He has moved on to other women..

I have been in the guest room for almost an hour now, hoping that he was going to walk in. He never did walk in, Instead Nonts kept on walking in and out busy venting about her "Kitchen unit" and how Jojo was about to fuck a white girl in her house. She didn't really say the word "Fuck" though that was a bit of my exaggeration..

I closed my eyes and played my favourite song in my head, it has helped me over the years to forget about Jojo and finally move on from ever finding love..

"I've lost the use of my heart But I'm still alive, Still looking for the life.. The endless pool on the other side.. It's a wild wild west I'm doing my best.. I'm at the borderline of my faith, I'm at the hinterland of my devotion In the frontline of this battle of mine But I'm

still alive.."

As I was busy playing Soldier of Love in my head by Sade, I heard a knock at the door. I quickly opened my eyes. I know it's not Nonts, she wouldn't knock whilst Xolelwa would only knock once and make her way in since the door was open. What if? What if Jojo has finally decided to come? I felt my heart doing beats of it's own, I wiped my tears and swallowed...

I turned around and to my surprise it was Mongz..Me:

Mongz

Him: May I?

I nodded with a smile..

Him: Nonts called Me about a security system, in the plea she mentioned that you back Me: I am back

He looked at me for a while, the bruises on my face haven't completely healed but they were getting there..

Him: Are you okay?

Me: I'm fine

Him: Can I hug you? I chuckled..

Me: I guess soo

He came closer and hugged me. It wasn't your usual hug, he laid my head on his chest and wrapped his arms around my waist..

Him: I'm sorry you had to go through that

I don't know if it was his cologne or the sound of his heartbeat that made me lose myself in the moment..

Him: I tried looking for you but..

Me: It's okay, thank you for trying

He laid his cheek on my head and ran his hand on my back, that made me feel safe..

—

TASH

Jojo drove me to my place without any explanation, even in the car when I started a conversation or asked questions he remained quiet.. I don't know what was happening, either his Mom's yelling got to him or that lady got to him. I bet my money on that lady who dropped the box that had teddy bears in it, Jojo's reaction to her was one that I have never seen before. I have never seen him look at any woman like that, and now she got him all worked up. His hands weren't even stable while he was driving, he was just lost in a world that only existed to him.. He dropped me off without saying anything, as soon as I got out he took off. It was very unusual..

Jamie had gone back to his place, Tebza was still to spend time at my place. She wasn't around for almost two weeks, she had gone to visit home. I think that was just her way of giving Jamie and I a bit of space..

She looked at Me..

Her: It says Negative

Me: We going to do another one

Her: How many of these did you buy?

Me: 5

Her: 5?? (shocked)

She put it on the bathroom sink..

Her: Tash they all going to say negative Me:

The first one that I took said Positive

I looked for it in that pile of towels and gave it to her..Me:

Here

She took it and looked at it.. Her:

Tash it says not pregnant Me:

What?

I took it and looked at it..

Me: No it can't be.. It said pregnant and under the word it wrote "1-2 weeks"Her: Tash..

Me: Tebz please...

Her: Babe I know that.. Tash have you forgotten? You can't conceive, remember the illegal abortion you did back in high school? It ruined your womb. Even if you can fall pregnant, your womb is not strong enough to hold a baby full term. A month into your pregnancy you will miscarry, you miscarried last year remember? With Jamie's child

I looked at the pregnancy test.. Me: I

was pregnant.. I am pregnantHer:

Tash..

Me: You don't understand Tebza, if I don't fall pregnant I won't be able to keep JojoI shook my head with tears in my eyes..

Me: I need to fall pregnant

She came and hugged me..

Me: I love him Tebza and I know if I fall pregnant that will ground him, he will consider a relationship

—

JOJO

"I got a little bit of money feelin' my pockets. Roll around like I run this shit, I got a system filled up with toxins(cocaine), I been broken hearted and I was fuck that bitch Getting high to deal with my problems.. Fucking bitches and getting drunk as shit, But these bitches getting obnoxious, They nothin' to me though I love this shit Go long days, longer nights Talk too much, the wrong advice All the lights, and call my life Doctor, doctor, will you help me Keep me healthy, keep it lowest you can help me Ain't shit you can tell me now.. "

I sniffed another line as the song kept on playing, I laid back on my office chair and stared at the ceiling.. After dropping off Tash I drove straight to my house to " think", I really didn't expect to meet Armani like that. I closed my eyes as I pictured her standing

there looking all confused, I must admit though she has grown to be a beautiful woman despite those bruises on her face.. I don't even know I'm going to face her, how will I even explain my way out of this situation? Tash and I were fucken kissing! the moment was self explanatory..

–

NOMFUND

O

My Sister knocked again..

Her: Nomfundo?

I vomited..

Her: That's it I'm coming in

She opened the door and walked in..Me:

Don't look

My head was buried almost inside the toilet..

Her: I don't understand, how did you not know that you were pregnant?I

wrenched..

Her: You didn't feel anything?I

shook my head no..

I closed the toilet seat and flushed, I wiped my tears that fell while I was vomiting, and then I leaned my back against the wall while still sitting down..

Her: How are you feeling now?

Me: Not good

Her: For someone who has always been obsessed with having a flat tummy, didn't you ask yourself why you suddenly developing a bump?

I shook my head No, with my eyes closed..

Me: I thought It was food, I tried sit ups but stillHer:

You did what?

Me: I didn't know

Her: Monday we should go to the Dr to check if the baby is okayMe:

Are you sure I'm pregnant?

Her: The two lines on the pregnancy test don't lie, the sudden small bump, morning sickness.. I'm suspecting you a few months maybe 2 or 3 months , you lucky you didn'tharm the baby from Jojo's rough sex game

I started laughing..

Her: It's not funny

Me: It's not that.. Her:

Then what is it?

Me: I thought I was finally done with Jojo but here we are again Her: You

don't have to get back with him just because you pregnantMe: I don't even

want him finding out that I'm pregnant

Her: Now you crazy

Me: I want to be done with Jojo, I don't want anything to do with him30

XOLELWA

We drove to a certain hood, when he took a different route I thought that maybe he knew a short cut to the mall after all he does look like he has been around.. He parkedopposite what looked like a hood restaurant where People gather to eat and drink. I aman introvert and besides that I have never been into a place like this, I felt very uneasy..

Me: I thought we were going to the mall

Him: Ya I have to meet someone here, then get something to eat bese sigcwala isganga

I looked at the time and it's been a while since we left home, we haven't even got to themall to buy the things that we were sent to buy...

Me: I am not comfortable with this whole thing, we were supposed to be on our wayback now from the mall

Him: Xolelwa awungehle tuu (don't annoy me)He

said that while unbuckling his seatbelt..

Him: It's either you come in with me or you wait for me hereHe

leaned on the steering wheel looked at me..

Him: Manje uyenza kanjani le ndaba? (what are you deciding)It

looked like I had no choice but to walk in with him..

I unbuckled my seatbelt too, he smiled a little as we got out of the car. I looked around and saw some People going in, I then saw a drunk woman stumbling her way around the street with a bottle of beer in her hand..

She noticed that I was looking at her..

Her: Ung'bhekeni? Fusek!! (what do are you looking at)I

looked at Master and he winked at Me..

Him: Zoba grand yezwa? (You going to be okay)

–

ARMAN

I

Mongz was laying back on the bed and I was laying next to him, with my head on his chest. His arms were around Me and we were playing some game on his phone..

Him: No you move that thereI

moved it..

Me: And this one?

Him: That one is easy.. Come on I showed you how to move that one earlier, that means you were not paying attention

I yawned..

Me: I forgot

Him: Too bad because I think you should get some rest now and I should be on my wayMe: You leaving now?

Him: Yes so that you can sleep

Me: Can you wait until I fall asleep and then you can leave?Him:

Okay.. I can do that

He put his phone away and held me tight..

Him: So how are we going to do this? Should I tell you a bed time story?I

laughed..

Me: I'm not 3 years old

Him: Was helping you to fall asleep quicker

Me: I'll fall asleep without a bedtime story

Him: Okay if you say so Nkosazana

I really like it when he calls me that..He

kissed me on my forehead.

—

TASH

She brought the mug to me..

Her: Here you go Babe

I took it from her..

Me: Thank you

She sat next to me and rubbed me on my arm..Her:

How are you feeling now?

I shrugged my shoulders..

(Silence)

Me: How could I forget?

She sighed..

Her: After finding out that you can't conceive, it killed you emotionally. I think you pushed it back far so that you can forget about it because it was breaking you. I have heard that sometimes you can forget a painful experience just so you can function normally

Me: One stupid mistake and I have ruined my futureHer:

Don't say that

(Silence)

Her: You can still get Jojo without falling pregnantI

chuckled...

Me: Jojo would never commit to a relationship, that's why I wanted to fall pregnant that was going to ground him

Her: Look Tash, you and Jojo come very far. You guys have been through a lot, I do believe that he does feel something for you the same way that you feel something for him

Me: You think so?

Her: I know so.. You will get your man without the help of a babyI

thought about that for a while..

Her: Come on drink up, it'll make you feel better

—

XOLELW

A

Inside it wasn't that bad, it actually looked nicer than what I had in mind. I had read the words and it was a pub&grill.. It had more Men than Women, maybe it's because of the soccer match that was playing on all the screens, with music playing softly. Master had put me at the bar while he went and spoke to some two guys, they weren't standing far from me but I also couldn't hear what they were saying.. I had gotten myself a cool drink. My eyes were glued on him most of the time, then I would also move them around when I heard the Men cheering up their teams. Judging from his body language he seemed a bit upset, I don't know what conversation they were having but it was angering him. I checked my phone and I didn't have any missed calls, I kept myself busy by going on Twitter and Instagram until he made his way back. He put his hand on his left side, just

a bit lower from his ribs as he slowly sat down..Me:

Are you okay?

Him: I got stabbed a while back, but I'm okayI

slightly nodded..

Him: Do you want something to eat?I

shook my head..

Me: Not thanks.. I just want to go home

Him: Don't be like that

I kept quiet..

Him: Let's chill here for at least 5min, and then let's see if you still going to feel the same way

Me: Okay

I went back on my phone..

Him: Masingajwayelani tuu (let's not step on each other's toes)I

looked at him and he looked at my phone..

Him: You can't be on your phone while we sitting together it's rudeI put it

away..

Me: I'm sorry

Him: I'll get us something to eat

He got up from his chair and walked away. I glanced down at my middle finger, I am someone's wife. I shouldn't even be doing this..

—

JOJO

I drove back home when I felt that the drugs were wearing off a bit, I was lucky to have made it safe and without running into any traffick cops.. When I arrived, the house was awkwardly quiet, there was no sign of anyone anywhere. I dragged my feet and made

my way upstairs to my bedroom, I looked at the guest room from a distance. The door was open, My Mother had mentioned it to me that Armani would be staying with us until further notice after she had yelled at me. I opened the door of my bedroom but forfeited to go in, maybe I should go up to her. It'll be a good time to talk before everyone gets back and the house starts being crazy and loud. The walk to the guest room was the longest walk of my life, or maybe I was too nervous. I was about to knock when I witnessed a moment that pierced through my heart. Mongz and Armani had passed out on the bed, she was safely sleeping on his chest and in his arms

I looked at them for a few seconds, and my first mind told me to grab Mongz and beat the shit out of him. I thought nothing was happening between them, I guess I was wrong. I wonder if she felt the same way that I'm feeling now when she walked in on Me and Tash, but this moment is the most crippling. She was fucken laying comfortably and peacefully in his arm.. I turned and made my way downstairs while clicking my tongue, I can't lose my girl again to the Son of a fucken minister.. On my way downstairs I spotted Xols with her girlfriend at the kitchen.. I made my way to them..

Xols: Hey Man

Me: Hey

Xols: I thought you had plans today

Me: Yeah I did but I finished early

I turned to her girlfriend..

Me: Hi

Her: Hi

Xols: Is everything okay?

Me: Armani is back

Her eyes widened..

Her: She's what?

Me: When I got back I found her here

Xols: Wow.. Where is she? Who brought her home?

Me: I don't know who brought her home I didn't get a chance to ask her anything

Her: So where is she?

Me: She's upstairs sleeping on another Man's chest

Her:

Huh?

Me: Yeah it's pretty fucked up

She cleared her throat..

Her: I don't understand w-

Me: What I don't understand is that it's not even weeks since she got back, she should be dealing with what happened to her not whoring around

Her: Okay let's calm down a bit, I'm sure there's an explanation behind what you saw

Me: There's no explanation Armani has changed and I don't think I like her version of "Change" because it's making her loose, she should be seeking counseling not jumping from Ndarha's dick to another!

Xols: You can't say such things to her

Me: I'll say whatever I wanna say

Her: You making my girlfriend very uncomfortable so we gonna head upstairs, do me a favour and calm down. Don't be approaching her with that Ndarha shit, It might be a sensitive matter to her

Me: Clearly not sensitive enough

She shook her head and turned to her girlfriend..

Her: let's go upstairs

Me: She held her hand and they made their way to the stairs.31

NOMFUNDO

My Sister had decided to sleep over, she will go back to her place tomorrow. It was good having her around especially since we found out that I am pregnant..

Here: Be careful it's hot

Me: Thank you

It was a bowl of chicken noodles..

Her: How are you feeling now?

Me: The nausea is bad, I thought it would be gone by nowHer:

You will be fine, I guess it comes with the pregnancy Me: I
hope I don't vomit after eating this

Her: I don't know what to tell you because I have never been in this situationI started
eating..

Her: I can't believe you fell pregnant before meMe:

Dad is going to flip

Her: Have you decided on what you going to do?I
shook my head no..

Me: Ngididekile nje (I'm confused)

Her: You will start showing soon, so you need to figure out what you going to do. Koko is
definitely going to see through you

Me: Don't remind me

My Grandmother can see and tell when a Person is pregnant, I don't know how but you know old
people..

Her: Plus this coming weekend they doing a ceremony at home so, I think you should come clean
to uMa

Me: All I need to do is avoid uKoko, Plus it's not big I'll wear a dress that's not too tightHer: Okay
then

Me: Out of all the guys in the world I had to fall pregnant by Jojo NdarhaHer: You
make it sound so terrible

Me: It is.. I don't even think his Mother likes me

Her: What do you mean?

Me: The last time I was there, she had no interest in knowing who I was. She hardly said 3 words to me nje she didn't care. That family is very dysfunctional and broken, abazi noma bayangena or bayaphuma (they don't even know if they going in, or going out)

I closes my eyes and sighed..

Me: That's why I feel like raising my baby alone, I don't want stress

Her: He has to know Fufu, then he can decide if he wants to be a part of the baby or not. Don't forget babies don't come cheap, rent is costly, your car installment is also a bit steep, your bills.. You will need help

Me: Ya I guess so

Her: At least You didn't get pregnant by a broke guy then life would be hard
Me: I really don't want Jojo in my life, I thought I was done with him

Her: It's not like you have a choice, it's his baby too
Me:

I know.. I know..

Her: Finish up so we can watch the movie, unfortunately no wine for you
Me:

Ohhh please kill me now

She laughed..

—

ARMAN

I

When I woke up, Mongz was not laying next to me. I must've slept for a long time because it was even dark outside. I got out of bed and went to close the curtain, this was the most peaceful sleep I have ever had in a long time. I went and sat on the bed together my thoughts when I heard a knock at the door, it was Jojo. He made his way before I could even say come in, I stood up.

Me: Jojo

Him: I came earlier to check up on you but you were sleeping
Me: I was.. Guess I was tired

Those pictures in the internet aren't lies, he is very handsome even in Person..Him: You weren't sleeping alone

He sniffed and rubbed his nose.. Him:

Mongz was sleeping next to you

Me: Ohw Ya.. I had asked for him to stay until I fell asleepHe put his hands in his pockets..

Him: Help me understand something. You were kidnapped and it hasn't even been 24 hours since you got back, you look like shit with all those bruises which proves that you went through hell

I remained quiet because this behaviour was new to me..

Him: I've also heard that you have suffered in this house. There's allegations that my Fa..I mean there's allegations that Ndarha has been somewhat sexual and physically abusive to you

I think my heart stopped beating for a while..

Him: I don't know but a normal woman would be traumatized and crazy depressed. You would be hating Men right now not jumping to another one. Either his dick turned you into a whore or...

He sniffed again..

Him: let's stop beating around the bush.. Ulihule Armani (you're a loose woman)I

couldn't believe that Jojo was standing there saying such to me..

Me: I'm not going to do this with you

I walked away but he roughly grabbed my arm..

Him: Not today, you not going to walk away from an argument like how you used to do when we first started dating

He was holding my arm very tight..

Me: Jojo you hurting me

Him: I wasn't even going to come but when I heard you got kidnapped I came!! I came

for you!!!

He was yelling in my face and that set me back..

Him: I came back for you and then the next thing you laying comfortably on another Man's chest under my Parents roof are you fucken kidding Me??

He threw me down, I hit the corner of the bed with my shoulder.. I looked at him and at that instant, I just saw Ndarha. He was his Father's son, or should I say his step father's son..

Him: Do you even know what you've done to Me? All these years Armani and I still can't love another woman, I can't commit myself in any relationship.. I..

He clenched his Jaws, I slowly got up..

Him: You have no idea how much I love you and when I finally wanna talk to you, hold you, tell you that I'm here and life for you is going to be different now. I fucken come home to you in another Man's arms!!!!

Me: The same way I walked in on you in between another woman's legs He came closer and I moved back..

Him: So you wanna be me???

We starred deep in each other's eyes and that's when I realized he wasn't my Jojo anymore, I lost him the day he moved out and went to the Transkei..

Me: What has happened to you?

I said that with tears streaming down..

Me: You not the same anymore, you not my Jojo

Him: After all these years you cannot possibly think that I'll be the same Person. I grew up, I'm not 19 years old anymore baby girl

He stretched his hand and wiped my tears..

Me: I can see that because my Jojo would never say such hurtful things to me I got his hand off me..

Me: I guess it's a lie when they say an old flame can rekindle again

I walked away again..

Him: Armani I'm still talking to you!!I

opened the door and walked out..Him:

Armani!!! (shouting)

I closed the door and quickly made my way downstairs while trying to fight back tears..

—

XOLELW

A

"Indlela ohamba ngayo, O thetha ngayo, O hleka ngayo.. Mmm, uncumo lwakhoHe's my

African man.. Nob' unobeka idayimane phambi kwami uth'angikhethe Ndihamba nawe oh

ndihamba nawe

Kwaze kwal'lula ukukuthanda, you're so easy to love.."

Master had suggested that I loosened up a bit, and his way of me loosening up was to drink a bit.

At first I wasn't very keen with the idea, but after tasting the cocktail it was good and before I knew it I had finished the whole thing. It was my very first time drinking..

I felt weird in a good way, I felt free and happy so much that I even started dancing. The song that was playing swept me off my feet, Master would occasionally shake his head and laugh. I am not a very good dancer..

I stopped dancing when I started feeling a bit oozy, Master came to Me.. He put his arm around my waist and whispered in my ear..

Him: Are you okay?

Me: I feel like vomiting

Him: Let's go

He held my hand and we walked to the bathroom, there was a queue there he ended up taking me outside at the back where I knelt down and vomited on the grass. He knelt next to me on one knee and gently pulled my weave back as I continued vomiting. When I was done I wiped my lips..

Him: You okay now?I

nodded..

Me: I'm okay

I got comfortable and sat down on the grass.He

went and held my foot..

Him: Where are your shoes?

Me: I don't really know

He dusted my foot..

Him: I shouldn't have let you drink

Me: Why not?? I feel so good.. I feel happyHe

looked at Me...

Him: You do?

I smiled..

Me: Very much

He got up..

Him: Come.. I have to take you home before they start a search party for youMe: Why?

I'm still having fun

Him: Yeah I know

He helped me to get up and we faced each other..Him:

Are you sure that you okay?

He fixed my weave..

Me: I'm good.. And you're are very cuteI

ran my index finger on his lower lip.. Me:

Very.. Very cute

I don't know what came over me but I kissed him, he didn't put himself down he kissed me back with his hands around my waist squeezing me closer to him. We broke the kiss after a while, standing that much close to him I could feel that he was getting a boner and I felt some hotness too in my cookie..I glanced down at his lawyer lip while biting mine..

Me: I don't wanna go

His hands were running in circles on my butt..

Him: Abakini bazohlupha (Your family is going to trouble me)Me: My

Father is away on business

Him: You sure you don't wanna go?I

nodded..

Him: Okay let's go back inI

smiled..

Me: Okay

He kissed me one last time before we went back in..

—

ARMAN

I

After crying for a while I went to Nonts bedroom, she was sleeping with a bottle of whiskey on the dressing table. As always she had one too many glasses..

I looked around and her phone was on the bed next to her, I took it. I went through it and thank goodness it didn't require a password, I went through her call log as I made my way out of her bedroom. I finally stumbled on the name "Mongz" I called him right away..

Me: Please pick up.. Please pick up (whispering)

Mongz: Nonts??

That was a relief..

Him: Hello?

Me: It's Me.. It's Armani

Him: I thought that you'd still be sleeping, when I left you.. You were-I started crying..

Him: Whats wrong?I

kept on crying..

Him: Armani what's wrong?

Me: I wanna get out of here

Him: You at the house?

Me: Yes..

Him: Okay I'm on my wayI

sat next to the door..

Him: I'm on my way don't cry

Me: Okay

Him: I'll call you when I'm at the gate

Me: Okay

I hung up..

I just wanted to be out of this house for a while..32

ARMANI

Mongz did come to fetch me I was eternally grateful. I couldn't think of anyone else to call other than him. When we drove to his place I was very quiet, I think a part of me was still trying to accept what had transpired at the house. Jojo was the last Person I thought could hurt me like this both physically and verbally, what I saw back there wasn't my Jojo, he has changed. The media was right about him with regards to his temper, if he continues like this he is going to find himself in jail.. Mongz house was also beautiful, these bastards in politics are living a very fancy life it's all about what they could only benefit. Fuck the needs of their People..

Me: Your house is beautiful

Him: Thank you

I couldn't stop looking around..

Him: Armani?

I turned and looked at him..

Him: What happened? You sounded very distressed on the phone and I didn't like it,heard you crying like that really got to me

Mongz and his family have been good friends of the Ndarha family for a long time now,if I tell him the truth I might be the one who will get burned at the end..

Him: Talk to me pleaseI

still remained quiet..

Him: Armani I want you trust me, the same way you trusted me when you called me to come and fetch you. What's wrong?

Me: I..

I wiped my tears..

Him: Come here

He gently pulled me to him and when he was about to hug me, he accidentally touched me on my shoulder and I flinched..

Him: What is it?

Me: It's nothing

Him: Let me see

Me: Really Mongz it's..

Him: Armani let me see

I lowered my t-shirt a bit so it could reveal my shoulder.. He poked around that area..Him: Who did this to you?

I fixed my t-shirt..

Me: Jojo and I.. We got to it and he threw me down

Him: Ndarha's son?I

nodded..

I saw his chest moving up and down..

Mongz: Ma!!!

After a while some woman walked in..

Mongz: Ma this is a friend of mine Armani, and Armani this our live in helperuMam'Maria

She greeted me..

Mongz: Ma please make Armani comfortable, she will be sleeping overThen

he looked at me..

Him: I'll be right back

Me: Where you going?

Him: Ngiyabuya (I'm coming)

He walked to the door..

Me: Mong-

Maria: Asambe Sisi ngiyokulungisela indawo yokulala (Let's go so I can prepare the guest room for you)

—

MASTE

R

I carried Xolelwa from the car to the house, she was totally out of it. I had put her over my shoulder.. I thought my Aunt would be sleeping by now, but she was in the living room reading her Bible..

Her: Master?

Me: Shit (whispering)

She followed me to the bedroom, I opened and then laid Xolelwa on the bed..Her: Who is that now?

Me: It's.. It's just a friend

She came closer..

Me: It's just a friend Mamzo

Her eyes widened when she had taken a good look at her..Her: Is that Xolelwa?

I kept quiet..

Her: Weeeh Master!! Ngu Xolelwa lo angithi? (this is Xolelwa isn't it)I walked out of the bedroom and she did too, I closed the door..

Her: Ufunani u Xolelwa la ekhaya? (What is Xolelwa doing here)

Me: Ahhh Mamzo akusiyindaba etheni (Mamzo it's not a serious matter)

Her: uphume la endlini uphelezela uArmani, usubuya no Xolelwa? (You left here accompanying Armani, usubuya noXolelwa)

Me: Eish Mamzo..

Her: uyiphuzisile yini ingane yabantu? (did you make her drink alcohol)I kept quiet and she hit me on my chest with the Bible..

Her: Kodwa kugcweleni la ekhanda lakho? (what's in your head)She was mad..

Her: Uyazi ukuthi uNdarha uzok'bulala nge ngane yakhe? (Do you know that Ndarha is going to kill you with his Daughter)

Me: Mara Mamzo..

Her: Thula maan!! (keep quiet) Xolelwa is engaged to be married, she's not supposed to be galavanting. Let alone sleep outside! She is someone's wife

Me: Huh?

Her: She is said to get married soon to the minister of sports what what uLukhele

Me: Ithi uyadlala Mamzo, uXolelwa uyoshada nalela khehla elingaka? (Tell me you joking, Xolelwa is going to marry that old man)

Her: I hope you didn't sleep with her and you not planning to sleep with her, she's a virgin hence why her Father didn't want her to move in no Lukhele until their married because she didn't want uXolelwa to lose her virginity before marriage

I whistled..

Me: Kanti lo Ndarha wenu unjani? Angashadisa kanjani umntwana neKhehla elingaka (How is this Ndarha, how can he marry off his Daughter to such an old man)

Her: Ksasa ekseni Master, lithi liphuma ube usiyi hambisile lengane yabantu (tomorrow very early in the morning take her home)

She hit me..

Her: Awuzwa yazi!! (You don't listen)

She hit me again..

Me: Eish Mamzo ima kancane (Ma wait a minute)

Her: Uzok'bulala uNdarha wena! (Ndarha is going to kill you)

She clicked her tongue and walked away. I walked into the bedroom again and she was peacefully sleeping. I walked up to the bed and sat next to her. This Ndarha of a person is a sick bastard! I took her left hand and checked her middle finger, it did have a mark of a ring. Which Father would marry off his Daughter to an old Person? It's not like they need money. They very well off..

—

TASH

I Saw him, I saw him laying on the kitchen floor in his own pool of blood. His head was tilted to the side and his eyes together with his mouth were a bit open. Somehow the look on his eyes is something that's going to haunt me forever.

I woke up screaming and breathing heavy, I looked around and the room was dark. Tebza woke up too, we were sharing the same bed

Her: Are you okay?

Me: I'm okay

Her: You woke up screaming

Me: it was just a terrible nightmare

Her: Wanna talk about it?

Me: No it's okay.. Sorry for waking you up

Her: Are you sure that you okay?

Me: Yes.. I'm sorry for waking you up

She went back to sleep as I looked at the time, it was 23:00

—

JOJO

I made my way downstairs, I spotted Xols and her girlfriend sitting on the couch watching tv, I made my way to them. I was now sober from the drugs and I was able to think straight..

Me: Hey

They looked at Me..

I looked at the girlfriend..

Me: Can I steal her?

She nodded..

Me: Let me talk to you

She kissed her girlfriend on the cheek..

Xols: I'll be right back

Her: Okay

He got up from the couch and we moved a distance from the girlfriend..Her:

What's wrong?

Me: Have you seen Armani?

Her: No.. Isn't she sleeping?

Me: No I went to the guest room, she's not there

Her: Servant's quarters?

Me: I started there.. She's not aroundHer:

That's weird

I wiped my face with my hands..

Me: I messed up

Her: What did you do?

Me: I said some things to her

Her: You went ahead with calling her a whore?Me:

Yeah an-

My Mom walked downstairs.. Mom:

Have you two seen Armani?Xols:

How can you do that?

Me: I know it's fucked up!

I heard someone yelling my name, it sounded like Mongz..Him:

Jojo!!!!!! (yelling)

He came through, and spotted me standing with Xols..Him:

You son of a bastard!!!

Me: Xols move

Her: What?

I pushed her a bit as Mongz charged at me..

Mongz: Ucabanga ukuthi uwubani?? (who do you think you're)Me: Eyy

I don't wanna fig-

He punched me twice and I took a few steps backwards..My

Mom started screaming..

Mongz: If you ever touch her again, I'm going to kill you! Ngizok'bulala yezwa?

I charged at him and started punching him, he tackled me and I took him down with me..My Mom continued screaming..

We kept on punching each other, Mongz is probably the toughest opponent I had to fight with physically. He looks like someone who is not scared of the gym too..

Xols tried by all means to separate us..

Mom: I'm calling security!!!

We finally separated from each other..

Mongz: If you touch her again, I swear on my Mother's grave I'm going to kill youMe:

Where the fuck is my girl? If you sleep with her I'm going to kill you!!

He walked up to me and Xols got in between us..Xols:

Dude leave

Mongz: Wena angikaqedi ngawe (I'm not done with you)Me:

Looking forward to our next meeting

He made his way out but stopped and looked at my Mom while shaking his head..Mongz: Your family is sick!!

He clicked his tongue and walked away..

Everyone remained quiet for a while..

Xols: You okay man?

Me: he has just declared war, battle lines have drawn between me and himI made my way to the stairs..

33

XOLELWA

The way that I felt when I woke up was not so good. I have never had this type of sickness before in my life, I felt like I was going to die. Not only did the sickness get to

me but I woke up in a room that I didn't even recognize, I didn't even have any memory of how I got here. The words "Freaked out" was an understatement, what did I get myself into last night and how did I end up here?..

I couldn't find my shoes when I got out of bed, I couldn't find my phone either. I tried to exercise my mind into dating back to the events of last night but I came back with nothing much, I only remember having a cocktail and then dancing. Everything else is a blur, it was like I had amnesia.. I walked around until I got to the kitchen, Master was making coffee and whistling. I somehow had this pounding headache, I felt dehydrated, I felt like I wanted to vomit and a part of me still felt a bit drunk. I was a mess..

Me: Master

He turned and looked at me..

Him: Good morning

Me: What happened?

Him: What happened when?

Me: You know.. Did we..

Him: Did we what?

Me: You know

He shook his head no..

Him: Ang'cavi nex (I don't know)

Me: Did we sleep together?

Him: Kuzomele ugene kuma details Nana (You will need to explain more)Me:

Did we have sex?

He choked a bit on his coffee..

Me: Did we?

He put the mug on the counter..

Him: If we had sex you would know trust me, and you would feel it That was a relief..

Me: Can you please take me home before they start worrying about meHim:

They going to start worrying today? You slept out

Me: I am not a disobedient child so they wouldn't think that of meHim:

Okay obidient child.. I'll take you home

Me: What happened last night?

Him: Let me see... You kissed me last night, kissed me right after you vomitedI
laughed..

Me: Yeah right

Him: Angik'shisi (I'm not kidding)

Me: And you allowed?

Him: I'll probably be dealing with a lot of that soon so.. I'll love you at your worst tooI lost
my breath a little when he said that..

Me: Have you.. Have you seen my phone?

Him: It's in the car

Me: Please take me home

Him: Okay.. You lost your shoesI
glanced down at my feet..

Me: Really?

Him: Yeah.. Let me get my keys

Me: Okay

I'm just thankful my Father is not around or else shit was going to hit the fan..

—

JOJO

I was lost deep in my thoughts as I was having breakfast alone at the dining table. My

actions last night pushed Armani into the hands of another man. I have been like that with a few women in my life I never really thought that I could go down that road with Armani too, I never thought that I could hurt her like that.. I heard something dropping on the table, it was my Mom dropping her Bible on the table. Here comes drama..

Her: Kwenzeke ntoni phezolo Jojo? (what happened last night)Me:

Nothing

Her: Wena no Mongz nibethene ngamanqidi so give me something more than just "Nothing"

I kept quiet..

Her: Why was he that Angry? Where is Armani?

Me: Nonts not now.. You going to church, you shouldn't be madXols came down..

Nonts: We not done here

She took her Bible..

Xols: Good morning

Nonts: Good morning Bhabha

Me: Morning

Xols: Off to church?

Nonts: Ewe.. You can join me if you want

Xols: No thanks.. I don't want to be told that I have demons Me:

Since Ndarha is not around who is going to be preaching?Nonts:

There's a Bishop that's coming

She looked at the time..

Nonts: uXolelwa is not going to church today? It's not like her to be late.. Let me go and check up on her

Xols: She's not feeling well

Nonts: Kutheni? (What's the matter)

Xols: It's that time of the month Nonts:

Ohh uXolelwa wam' Khan-

Xols: Rather let her rest Ma.. You will check up on her later when you get backNonts:

Okay and I wanna see your girlfriend too

Xols: You will

Her: Okay I will see you two later.. Jojo please behaveMe: I

will

She walked out..

Xols: Xolelwa didn't sleep here last night, I checked up on her and she wasn't in her room. I checked at least every hour or so

Me: Isn't she with the fiancé?

Xols: She would've told us, she would've told Nonts. You know Xoks wouldn't just leave I laid back on the chair..

Xols: I'm starting to get worried.. Her phone is offMe:

Don't tell me she got kidnapped too

Xols: I'll try her again

—

ARMAN

I

I didn't get much sleep last night, especially after Mongz had left like that. I know very well that he went to confront Jojo, why does my life have to be this difficult???. I got out of bed and wore my clothes, I had slept only in my underwear seeing that I didn't come with any Pjs.. I walked out to the bathroom, to rinse my mouth and wash my face when I heard someone playing the piano and singing. I followed the sound of the voice, it led me to one of the bedrooms. The door was slightly open..

Voice: Now, if I wrote you a love note and made you smile with every word I wrote (What would you do?).. Would that make you want to change your scene And wanna be on my

team.. See, what's the point of waiting anymore? Cause girl I've never been more sure (that baby it's you).. This ring here represents my heart And everything that you've been waiting for..

Listening very carefully I noticed that it was Mongz, I was taken. I couldn't believe that he had such an amazing voice. I knocked twice and then made my way in, he was sitting almost at the corner of the room with a white piano in front of him.. He stopped playing right away and looked at me..

Him: Good morning

Me: Morning

Him: I hope I didn't wake you up

Me: No I.. Wow I didn't know that you could sing and play the piano Him:

Guess you don't know much about me

Me: Ya I guess so

Him: I can play something for you

Me: Okay

I went and sat on his bed and looked at him as he started playing.. Him: This

is actually one of my favourite songs

Me: Let's hear it

He looked at me while hitting a few keys..

Him: Yeah ladies I know you tired of the same old thing, Things have become so mundane.. I mean your bedroom is just so cold, so cold but I'm here to tell you

I got a strategy we bout to heat it up.. Listen to this.. He started singing..

Him: Girl get comfortable we 'bout to do something you've never done before

Baby not the usual tonight we getting unpredictable.. So tryyy to roll with it baby... baby, Ima make you feel like you neva felt,

Girl all because you let me get unpredictable.

He would occasionally wink at me, bite his lower and give me his charm, making me blush a little. I was smiling like a retard, My cheeks were even starting to hurt..

Him: Baby 1 plus 1 ain't 2 when you with "him".. 'C' ain't after 'A' and 'B' when you with "him".. It don't make sense right now but it will, Later on when you see how I make you feel..

I took the pillow and buried my face in it as he continued..Him:

Regular ain't in my vocabulary

When it comes to love makin neither is missionary.. Positions girl, pick one, better yet some never mind that, we tryin all the fun..

You know the song went together so perfectly because he was shirtless, not forgetting his side smile that made my heart melt.. He was very charming and I wondered why he was single, well I'm assuming that he is single because I haven't heard of him being in a relationship..

—

XOLELW

A

Master: We here.. Should I hold your hand and walk you in?Me: I'll

be fine.. Thanks

Him: I would like to do this sometime

Me: I don't know Master I mean..

He leaned over and kissed me, at least this time around I had brushed my teeth. We were lucky that there was an extra toothbrush somewhere in his luggage bag..

He broke the kiss..

Him: I would like to do this sometime, before I go back to Mpumalanga

He ran his tongue on my lower lip, and then he used his thumb to wipe my lips..Him: Eyy

hamba bazaze bak'shaye (you can go before they beat you up)

Me: Thank you again

Him: Sharp

I opened the door and got out, then I watched him take off.. I was a bit saddened to see him leave, honestly speaking I had a good time with him yesterday though I can't remember half of what happened..

–

ARMAN

I

After he had finished singing there was silence..

Him: Kusho ukuthi vele nje bekukubi ngaleyo ndlela? (was it that bad) I put the pillow away..

Me: It was actually nice.. Very nice

He got up and walked up to me in his sweatpants. He sat next to me.. I couldn't even look at him straight in the eye after that..

Me: It was..

He put his hand on my chin and turned my face so I could look at him.. Me: It

wa-

His face was a bit swollen, his right side to be more exact. I put my hand on that area Me: What happened?

He held my hand and kissed it..

Him: I think you know

Me: I shouldn't have called you.. I don't wanna cause trouble He smiled a little..

Him: Don't worry about it.. I've never really liked Ndarha anyway, throwing a few punches at his son was easy.. I don't know how you work for these People, Ndarha is the most evil and ruthless piece of shit that I've ever known

My eyes widened..

Me: Haibo Mongz!! That's cold (laughing)

Him: It's the truth

We heard a knock at the door..

Mongz: Come in

The door opened and Mam'Maria walked in..Her:

Ohh ngiyaxolisa (sorry)

Mongz: It's okay

Her: Mongz your father is asking for you, they having breakfastMongz:

"They"

Her: We have a special guest

Mongz: Who?

Her: The president

My heart skipped a bit..

Mongz turned to me..

Him: It's your lucky day.. You going to meet the President NkosazanaHe
squeezed my cheek while I faked a smile.

34

ARMANI

The President is Ndarha's closest friend, they have known each other for a very longtime and I am certain that he knows everything about me and Ndarha. Going downstairs to have breakfast with them is going to be suicidal. I looked at Mongz..

Me: I can't go downstairs to eat breakfast with the PresidentHe
gave me a weird look..

Him: Most people would jump at this opportunityMe:

I know but..

Him: What's really going on Armani?

I am not a very good liar plus I think now it's time I tell him the truth..

Me: I'll tell you everything I promise but now the President cannot know that I'm hereHe looked at me for a while..

Him: Okay.. We will go out for breakfast and then you can tell me everything.. Deal?Me: Deal
We heard a knock at the door..

Mongz: It's probably Maria coming to tell me that they're waiting.. Come in

The door opened and his Father walked in, I got scared.. I think he was also surprised to see Me..

Him: Armani right?

Me: Yes Sir

He looked at Mongz..

Him: Now I know what's been delaying you

Mongz cleared his throat..

Mongz: I can't come down for breakfast

Him: Why?

Mongz: Armani and I had planned on eating out

Him: You know it's tradition to have breakfast and dinner together as a familyMongz: I

know and I'm sorry to break the tradition

He looked at me..

Him: You must mean a lot to him, we have never broken this tradition before unless it's an emergency

I didn't know what to say..

Him: Well then.. The President will be disappointed, he wanted to run something by youMe: We can meet another time

Him: I will see you later I guess

He walked up to the door..

Mongz: Baba (Dad)

He stopped and turned around..

Mongz: Can you please not mention to the President that Armani is aroundHis Father
paused for a moment..

Him: I don't think it's his business

Mongz: Thank you (Smiling)

Him: Armani you should join us for dinnerI

looked at Mongz and he slightly nodded..Me:

I'd love too.. Thank you

Him: Maybe you can cook us that meal againMe:

Maybe

He opened the door and walked out..Me:

That wasn't bad

Him: I guess not

Me: I'll have to go home and change my clothes thoughHim:

Let me bath first and I'll drive you home

Me: Can I keep myself occupied with the piano?Him:

Go ahead

Me: Thank you

—

XOLELW

A

I was lucky that the house was quiet, seems like no one was around. I know my Mom went to church, Jojo and Xoliswa are probably out too. I wonder if my Mom checked upon me in the morning, but I can easily explain myself out of that one.. I opened the door

to my bedroom and walked in, I closed it with a sense of relief that I made it in safe and my cover wasn't blown.. When I turned around, I realized that I have spoken too soon.

Jojo and Xoliswa were in my room, now my cover has been blown..Jojo: Good

morning

Me: Morning

Xoliswa: Where are you coming from?

Lying to them won't help..

Me: Yesterday I went out with a friend and I spent a night at her placeJojo: The

last time I checked you didn't have any friends

Xoliswa: Where have you been Xoks?

Me: I am 21.. I can go out whenever I want tooJojo:

Not when you engaged to be married

Xoliswa: Whats going on? Does it involve another guy?I

kept quiet..

Jojo: Someone you probably met at work?

Xoliswa: Do you like him?

I looked at them..

Me: I don't know.. Maybe

Xoliswa: So there is another guy involved?Me:

May it stay between us?

Xoliswa: You playing with fire Sis but.. I'm happy to see that you loosening upJojo: So

what's going to happen with Lukhele?

Me: I don't know, I haven't thought of that

Xoliswa: Maybe Mongz was right.. We are a sick familyMe:

Mongz called us a sick family?

Xoliswa: Not only that but he fought physically with JojoMe:

What? Why?

Jojo: I need to make a few calls.. I'll see you guys laterHe
walked out..

Me: What happened?

Xoliswa: Jojo still has it for Armani, and Armani might have a thing with Mongz.. It'scomplicated

Me: Armani and Mongz? When did that happen?

Xoliswa: I have no idea.. Anyway Lolitha can't wait to meet you and I am looking forwardto you
telling me about your mystery guy, let's go downstairs and have breakfast

Me: I wanna bath and sleep, I don't feel good

Xoliswa: We won't take much of your time plus I will be going back to my placesometime next
week. I don't want to go while you haven't met my girlfriend

Me: You going again?

Her: This time it will be different, we will call each other and you can come and visit me.Or I'll
visit you

Me: Promise?Her:

I Promise

Me: Okay let me bath then.. I still can't believe Mongz called us a sick family, who doeshe think
he is?

Me: That's why I'm vouching for Armani to be with Jojo, I won't be able to stand thisMongz of a
Person. He looks like he is full of himself

Me: Armani and Jojo they come very far, he can't break that bondHer: I
guess not

I went and charged my phone..

Me: I'll be down there

Her: I'll make you a cure for a hangover

Me: How did you know that I have a hangover?

Her: Are you serious?

Me: I'm going to bath

Her: I don't think I'll be happy with him making you drink

Me: It was a few cocktails, and I really had fun. For the very first time in my life plus he is young, probably 24 or so

She nodded..

Her: Can't wait to meet him

—

MASTE

R

After dropping Xolelwa off at her house I called up my friend SK to come over so we can chill and have a mini braai at my house.

Sk: Umamzo uphi? Uyazi uzosingenela ngama beer Sunday (Where is your Aunt, you know she's going to come for our lives with alcohol on a Sunday)

Me: use mchurch (she's at church)

Him: ubuyela nini eWitbank? (when are you going back to Witbank) Me: In a few days time

We were also playing a bit of music..

Me: Bra yam' awungicavise something (My friend, advice me on something) Him:

Zishaphi? (what is it)

Me: I hear a lot about this thing of girls trapping guys with babies, can it be the other way around?

Him: Other way around?

Me: Sengisho ukuthi uyazi us'beke (I mean impregnating a girl) Him:

ukumhlalisa phantsi? (to ground her)

Me: More in a situation of impregnating her to ruin her marriageHe
laughed..

Him: Kodwa uyawukhuluma udoti (You can speak trash at times)He
looked at me..

Him: Entlek k'hambani? Ufuna ukusbeka? (What's going on? Do you wanna impregnatesomeone)

Me: Something like that.. I heard ubabakhe isgora ng'funa ukumgcwalisela emaphapheni (Her
Father is said to be untouchable, I wanna give him chest pains)

Him: Ntwana incosi akusilenyama esishayayo la (A baby is not like the meat that webraaing here)
I took my glass and drank from it..

Me: Ngiyacava (I know)

Him: Ayahlupha lama baby Mama Ntwana bazokfuna imali ebengakaze bayisebenzela, ng'tshele
R3000 a month yerrr (Baby Mamas are problematic, they will want money thatthey never worked
for. R3000 a month)

Me: Imali ayina stress (money is not a problem)

Him: Konje wena vele uz'mele, Umamzo uyasebenza she doesn't need any money from you (You
independent, and your Aunt is also independent she doesn't need money fromyou)

Me: ak'gcono ngisibeke once (let me just impregnate her once)Him:

Ngiyabona usudakiwe (I see you drunk)

Voice: Master no SK

Sk: Ahh nawoke (Here we go)

She opened the gate and made her way in..

Sk: Sekayosibizela yonke iTembisa (she will call the whole Tembisa)

Fikile: Senishaya ibraai anisasibizi (You having a braai and you don't even call us)Me:

Angisho akusi yiBraai yomhlaba (It's not a braai for the whole world)

She went over to the big bowl and took a piece of wors.. Sk:

Ugezile nezandla nje? (did you even wash your hands)

Fikile: Awume ukuba nomona ngokudla (stop being greedy with food)She sat on the chair..

Sk: Sowuzimemile vele? (you have already invited yourself)

I shook my head.. Fikile is another typical hood rat that lives a few houses away from mine. She's been trying to get with me now and any other financial stable guy around the hood, I'm glad I moved away to another place

—

ARMAN

I

The ride home was very enjoyable, we sang in the car until we arrived. It was easy to sneak out of his house because they were having breakfast in the garden, so the President didn't see me.. When I walked into the house I was surprised to see Xoliswa, the last time I saw her was when she was leaving to go to the military..

Me: Xols???

Her: Mani??

She looked soo different, very different in a good way though..Me:

Ohhh my word

We met each other halfway for a hug, she even picked me up a bit..

Me: Look at you.. You look great and you look like you have been training I touched her arm

Me: Wow I almost didn't even recognize you with all those tattoosHer:

You look good too.. No longer that skinny Armani I once knewShe ran her hands on my hips..

Her: Even put on some weight

Me: Stop it..(Laughing)

It was really good seeing her..

Me: You still a nuisance I see

Her: What can I say

Xolelwa walked in with some girl..

Xols: I want you to meet someoneShe

moved from me to the lady..

Xols: This is my girlfriend Lolitha..Loli meet Armani, the woman you need to always get along with to make me happy

Loli: It's nice to meet you

Me: Nice to meet you too

We hugged..

Xols: You should join us for breakfast

Me: I'd love too but..

I looked at Mongz..

Me: I already have plans

Xols: That's sad

Me: uhm.. This is Mongz, and Mongz this is Xoliswa.. She is Xolelwa's twin

Xols: We met last night, when he burst in here like a mad man and threw a few punches at Jojo

Xolelwa: Then he called us a sick family.. Really Mongz? We a sick family now? I bet we weren't a sick family when my Father made your father a Minister

I could see that Mongz was getting a bit irritated by this..Mongz:

I'll be in the car

He walked to the door.. I looked at the twins..Me:

That wasn't cool

Xols: Wasn't cool when he called us a sick family too!

rolled my eyes and made my way to the stairs..

Xolelwa: Loyalty Armani, either the Ndarha's or the Mabuza's

Me: Whatever Xolelwa.. Now that Xols is here all of a sudden you have a voice

I forgot about the Ndarha clan, that they always stand up for each other no matter what. They could murder someone right now and we will never know, they will die with the secret. It's something that they've always done when they were still young until they were all separated.. I got to bedroom and something on the bed caught my attention. It was an old picture of Me and Jojo, when he left those years ago he took it with and I also had one for myself. It was something that we promised each other to hold on too until we meet again, something that was meant to always remind us of the love we had for each other. I picked it up and looked at it, we were so young and very much in love. I turned it around and it was written "Jojo and Armani" those words were jotted inside a heart, I chuckled. That was a very long time ago indeed..

Him: I've always had it with me, I hope you still have yours too!

looked at him as he made his way in..

Me: You know I had no business coming back here again, I could've just stayed in Tembisa and figured out what to do next but I came. I came back to this hell house because I thought that.. I thought there could still be something between you and me

Him: There is something.. Armani I'm-

He tried to touch me and I stepped back..

Me: You had no right to say those things to me because you don't even know what I've been through. I have been sexually, emotionally, and physically abused by your Father for a very long time now. Even though he killed me emotionally but I kept going because you had made a promise and that promise kept me going

Tears were nearing..

Me: I waited for you to come and you never did! Even when you became this big shot that you are today I still waited for you Jojo, and you never came

I shook my head..

Me: I'm happy that you became successful at the end, I'm happy that you got away from

the abuse but I waited for you.. You know I

wiped my tears..

Me: Do you know how difficult it is for me or was for me to accept my reality? I became Ndarha's sex slave someone that I had looked at as my Father all these years. While you were enjoying life I was being broken down everyday. I have thought of turning him in but we talking about Ndarha here, he is close friends with the President of South Africa my case wasn't even going to go anywhere. I thought of running away but Ndarha was always one step ahead of me, so don't stand there and call me a whore when you don't know what I have been through.. Look at my face, he did this to me! Nontsikelelo knows and she's just turning a blind eye to everything, I.. You don't know how broken I am, that Armani you once knew she's dead.. Ndarha long killed her!

I saw tears forming in his eyes..

Me: What we had is done, there can never be us anymore.. For your own information I have never slept with Mongz, he just became the friend that I needed. I have always needed saving from Ndarha, I never knew that one day I'll need saving from you too.. Please stay away from me, I'm trying to get my life back and I don't need confusion from any man especially a Ndarha.. I am done with you all!

35

ARMANI

A WEEK LATER

That Sunday morning when Mongz and I went out for breakfast I told him everything, and I mean everything. Unfortunately since from then, I haven't heard anything from him. I should've kept quiet, I shouldn't have told him anything cause now he probably thinks otherwise of me. I like Mongz a lot and I didn't think that telling him about my abuse would drift us apart.. Initiating a plan on moving out and starting afresh on my own is not an easy situation, we need to take into consideration that Ndarha will hunt me down. I believe this time around he won't hesitate to kill me, an escape plan won't be so easy. Yes time might pass but eventually he will find me, and he will kill me.. Skipping the country seems like a good idea, but where too? My friend Nsovo kind of like helped me with the different currencies and my savings to a pound won't take me far, and overseas they seem very strict, and it seems like it's going to be a long and dragging process. My best bet now is to bring Ndarha down, that's the only option I have..

Things between Me and Jojo are still a bit rocky, he is still around and we trying to avoid

each other as best as we can. He goes to work very early and comes back late, by that time when he comes back I'm in my room. Thank goodness I have a TV now in the guest room so I lock myself in there most of the time when I'm done with the chores around here.. It was a Monday morning and as always I was hands on around the house with supervising and monitoring the other maids. I have bought myself a phone and I am in contact with a few People, including the girl that helped me escape "Khethi". I held on to her number for dear life. She was happy when I had called her and told her that I was safe, she told me she had been waiting for my call to hear that I was safe, I will forever be thankful... Something that has come to my attention is Master and Xolelwa, they have both been vocal to me about their feelings for each other. Apparently they calleach other very often if not everyday and Xolelwa is set to drive to Witbank this coming weekend to go and visit him. It is nice to see that she has fallen for someone who is almost her age, but then Ndarha will never approve. Their relationship is doomed before it even began, worse Xolelwa is a pushover. She doesn't have a backbone and she cannot stand up for herself. So I'm really looking forward to seeing how all of this is going to workout.

Mam'Gabi: I am disappointed in Jojo, but at the same time I seem to understand his behaviour and the person that he is now. Jojo is another one who suffered in the handsof Ndarha, though it doesn't make it right for him to treat others harshly but with boys it's different. Most of them if they have had a traumatic childhood they tend to express their emotions by being aggressive. I think it comes from the statement "Men don't cry"too much emotions held deep inside can turn one into a very bitter person

She handed me the dish..

Me: He has changed, a change that is not goodHer:

Do you feel strongly about Mongezi?

Me: He is a good guy, he hasn't given me any reason not to trust him

Her: You way too trusting Armani. You see Jojo is an open book, what you see is whatyou get. Mongezi is a closed book, how much do you know about him? To me he sounds too perfect which is not normal

I exhaled..

Me: Maybe he's just a nice guy Mam'Gabi, even though there's a lot of bad guys in theworld but there's still a few goog guys and I believe Mongz is one of them

Her: I hope so

Me: You know I'm just tired.. I'm 27 Mam'Gabi I should be living my life. I should have a permanent job, a place to stay, maybe be in a stable relationship if not married. I should be thinking about starting a family or I should be having my first born now. You know, someone to live for. I wonder if that is still going to happen

Her: Ndarha is not God and I'm proud of you that you wanna stand up to him, I will support you but you need to be careful. He is very powerful and it won't be easy

Me: I will die trying.. All I know is that I cannot live in fear anymore. If I run away I will be living in fear of him finding me. I have lived in fear of him for a very long time now, it has to stop. Something has to give

Her: Things will eventually turn up.. I promise you, this is not going to be your life forever
Me: I truly hope so

—

MONG

Z

Armani was brutally honest with me about her life and what has been happening to her in the Ndarha household. I have been trying very hard to come into terms with everything that she has told me, how can a human being be this evil as to abuse a girl that he was supposed to be Fathering. Is he taking advantage because Armani has no one? I can't understand why he is doing this. I haven't spoken to Armani ever since she told me about that incident because I feel helpless, I don't know how to help her. We need to put into consideration the fact that Ndarha is not just anyone, he has the President in his corner, he has a lot of contacts and bringing him down won't be easy. I'll be putting my life and my Family's life in danger. At the same time I care a lot about Armani and when you care about someone, you always wanna see the person happy no matter what. I think she was honest with me because she somehow wanted me to help her, but currently I am blank. I don't have any idea on how I can help her bring Ndarha down. Running away is not an option, he will find her and possibly kill her. He is that evil.. I was at the office, we in logistics and it's a family business that is solemnly ran by me while my Father carries out his responsibilities as a minister..

I looked at my medication on the table busy debating with myself if I should drink or not, I feel better, I'm doing better, I don't see the reason to keep on taking the damn pills..

Dad: having problems with taking your pills? I

looked at him, he was standing at the door.

He walked in and went to the small table to pour me a glass of water, he then brought it to me..

Me: Thank you

He sat on the chair opposite me..

Him: How are you doing?

Me: I'm doing fine

Him: How is Armani?

I shrugged my shoulders..

I had told him everything that Armani told me

Him: You my Son and I love you.. It was difficult when we lost your Mom, I don't wanna lose you too. Now I know Ndarha and I've known him for a very long time now, he is a dangerous man and I don't want you going against him. I don't have a problem with this girl but she's not worth me losing my son

I opened the bottle of pills..

Me: I care a lot about her

Him: I think the most important question on the table is "Do you love her?" I

paused..

Him: Will she love you when she finds out about.. You know Me: I

wasn't planning on telling her

Him: Let's say somehow things work in your favour, You and Armani end up together. How are you going to hide it from her? You cannot drink pills secretly everyday one day she will find out, nothing stays hidden forever

Me: That's the least of my worries now, that can be fixed

Him: Can it? If she has come clean to you, maybe you should come clean to her too

—

JOJO

Ever since Armani became honest with me about how she feels I have tried my best to stay out of her way, I'm giving her some space because being in her face constantly will just upset her more and more. I bury myself in a lot of work just so I can be distracted, and keep my mind from wandering a lot. I come in early at the studio and I leave late, it's working for me a little..

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

The door opened and Nomfundo walked in..Her:

Hey.. You wanted to see me?

Me: Yeah I wanted to see you

She closed the door..

Her: What is it?

I looked at her and she looked a bit different, even how she was wearing it was very different from her usual style..

Me: Are you okay?

Her: I'm good

I've noticed lately too that she doesn't do makeup anymore, even with the bit of rash on her face she had this glow that I can't really explain..

Me: You look different

Her: Uhm.. I am not sure if that's a compliment or an insult
Me: It's a compliment

Her: Thank you

Me: And you dress different too. Are you starting a dress convention or something?
Her: What can I help you with Jojo?

Me: I'm going to have someone come in and teach you a few things in the makeup department

Her: Why? Is my work no longer good enough? Are you firing me?

Me: No I'm not firing you.. We expanding, I need you to learn a few things too. I thought you would like the opportunity other than me hiring someone else and it will be an extrapay

Her: Okay

She was acting weird..

Her: Is that all?

Me: Why are you so grumpy?

Her: What do you want from me?? I am not in the mood!!!

Me: Nomfundo I know that things between us didn't end well but if you wanna talk I'mhere

Her: I don't wanna talk to you! Can't you see Jojo I really cannot stand you! Being in yourpresence right now it's suffocating me, it's tiring me, and I..

Out of the blue she started crying..

Her: I can't do this.. I'm tired alreadyI

went and pulled a chair..

Me: Sit down

She sat down..

Me: I'll get you a glass of water

I went to get her a glass of water and Tash came in..Tash: Jojo

I..

Sha looked at Nomfundo..

Tash: Ohw.. I didn't think that you were busy, I'm sorry

Nomfundo: It's okay I was just leaving

She got up and wiped her tears..Me:

If you still wanna ta-

Her: Just leave me alone okay? Please!

She purposely pushed Tash out of the way as she walked out..Tash:

Oookay what was that all about?

Me: I have no idea.. She, I have never seen her acting like this before

Tash: Maybe she's on her periods.. We tend to get a bit cranky when it's that time of the month or if I didn't know better I'd say she's pregnant (laughing)

I dropped the glass on the floor, she looked at me..Her:

That was supposed to be a joke

I kept quiet..

Her: Don't tell me that you.. Is she pregnant? I

crouched and collected the broken pieces.. Her:

Did you knock her up?

36

NOMFUNDO

Me: Here we go

She looked at herself in the mirror..

Her: Wow Fufu you really good at this makeup thingMe:

Thank you

Her: You should teach me how to do my eyebrows

Me: A big shot star like you doesn't know how to do eyebrows?Her:

They not as easy as how you guys make them out to be

Me: I can imagine the headlines "Usapho's female leading character with skewed eyebrows"

We both laughed..

Her: Don't say such things

Me: Why don't you hire a makeup artist?

Her: I don't have money to waste, why should I hire when I can do it myself
Me: But you failing to do it

My phone vibrated on the table, I went a checked. It was a message from my sister: "Happy 4months pregnant Mommy"

I rolled my eyes. We had gone to the Dr a while back and he did a few tests which confirmed that I'm pregnant.. I was 4 months pregnant now and the second trimester was already taking a toll on me, or I'm just a cry baby..

We heard a knock at the door..

Hlehle: Maybe I'm up

Me: You still have 2 more minutes

The Person knocked again..

Me: Come in

The door opened and Jojo walked in, he had a plastic with him..Jojo:

Ladies

I am not really sure what's happening to me but.. At times I would find myself missing Jojo a lot, then at times I would be annoyed by him to a point were I just wanna stranglehim..

Hlehle: Let me go get changed for my next scene

Jojo: Shouldn't you have changed first before the makeup?Hlehle

looked at me..

Me: It's okay we'll do touch ups

Hlehle: Thank you

She walked out. I folded my arms and looked at Jojo..Him: I

come in peace and bearing food

He put the plastic on the table. I looked at him and a part of me fell madly in love withhim all over again, but another part of me remembered how much of a jerk and a

bastard he is. He leaned against the makeup counter with his arms folded. I looked at his biceps all the way down to his crotch. I haven't been sexual in a very long time, and having him standing there wasn't making things any easier for me. I know his sex game is a bit rough but then he can be gentle when he wants too, I didn't care how he was offering it because my clit was already trying to get attention..

Him: I got you a chicken salad and a juice, I'm sure it will do a bit of justice until lunchtime comes

Me: It was unnecessary but thank you I

pulled the chair and sat down..

Me: What do you want Jojo?

He looked at me and his look made me uncomfortable..

Him: I'm going to ask you something and please be honest with me Me:

Okay

Him: Are you pregnant? I

froze..

Him: Are you?

I can lie to him but that won't help, you can't hide a pregnancy forever. Soon my tummy will be protruding for the whole world to see..

Me: How did you find out?

He raised one of his eyebrows..

Him: So you are pregnant?

I have been very careful in hiding it, how did he find out?? Me:

Yes I'm pregnant

Him: How far along are you?

Me: 4 months.. I went to the Dr, he did some tests and confirmed I'll bring you the results

He nodded..

Him: When were you going to tell me?

Me: I wasn't planning on telling you He
nodded again..

Him: You were planning to be a single parent?Me:

Yes

He laughed..

Him: Yaa whatever.. When is your next visit to the Dr?Me:

I don't know

Him: You don't know?I

stood up..

Me: Jojo normal guys would ask questions like Is the baby mine? Are you planning on keeping it?
They would be shocked, they would deny.. Can't you be normal?

Him: Is the Baby mine?

Me: For real?

Him: You wanted me to ask

Me: You know what I'm tired, I'm nauseated, I'm a mess and I don't wanna fightHim: I'm
not fighting, you the one who's fighting me

I kept quiet..

Him: Are you seeing anyone?

Me: Not yet

Him: Well as long as you carrying my baby you not going to see anyoneMe: If

I remember correctly You-

Him: I don't care if you remember correctly or incorrectly Nomfundo I don't want another dick up
in you with my baby in there

I laughed in disbelief..

Me: Go to hell Jojo

Him: I'm serious

He did look serious..

Me: And if I do get myself a boyfriend?He

stroked his beard..

Him: I'm going to fuck him up, and then I'm going to fuck you upMe: I

am pregnant.. Not sick, I'm going to need sex in my life Him: We can

take care of that

Me: No thank you

Him: I'm serious NomfundoI

folded my arms..

Him: WhatsApp me the date for your next appointmentHe

headed to the door..

Me: I blocked you

Him: Unblock me

He stopped..

Him: I'm also going to need your full details so I can include you in my medical aid, and I'll be taking care of your rent, car installment, groceries, anything that you going to need

Me: I don't need your money

Him: I'm not doing it for you.. I'm doing it for my baby, I don't want you stressing himI rolled my eyes..

Me: It could be a she

Him: Eat your salad woman you grumpy as hellHe

walked out..

I sat on the chair again, this is going to be the longest pregnancy ever..

—

ARMAN

I

Me: I can't see you

Him: Can you see me now?

Me: Yaa

We were on a video call..

Him: Skeem

Me: Skeem

Him: Eish Ntwana I was underground

Me: It's okay I understand

Him: K'hambani (What's happening)

Me: Ahhh you know.. Kwa life it's difficult (you know life is difficult) Him:

Ang'thandi mowuringa so (I don't like it when you talking like that)Me: Are

you going home now?

Him: Not yet

Me: I hope I'm not disturbing you

Him: Ahhh nex kanjani (It's nothing)

Me: I just wanted to see you, I wish you were closer.. There's life when you aroundHim: Kanti

ziphi lezi ezakho? (Where is your boyfriend)

Me: Aii wena relationships are not for me

Him: Ahh hade skeem (Sorry)

Me: It's alright

Him: Ziphi lezi ezam'? (where is my one and only)

I laughed..

Me: You playing with fire Master, do you know Xolelwa's Father?

Him: Phela mina ang'thuswa wuskhotheni we suit ye R12 000 (I don't get intimidated by a thug in a suit)

I burst out in laughter..

Me: You trust yourself I'll give you that

Him: Too much.. Bheka skeem, I have to go

Me: okay it was nice talking to you

Him: Yizo Ntwana

Me: Sharp

Him: Ta

Master is a ball of energy, no matter how mad or sad you're, he is going to put you in a good mood.. Someone covered my eyes, I wondered who it was cause everyone was out except for Nonts. I then felt cold lips on my cheek.. I removed the Person's hands and checked who it was, it was Xoliswa..

She came from behind me to sit on the chair next to me, but she turned it so that we could face each other. Before sitting she turned it around leaned on the body rest of the chair..

Her: Are you okay? I

kept quiet..

Her: You mad?

I still ignored her.. She also kept quiet while starring at me..

Me: Stop it.. You I get uncomfortable when someone stares at me (Silence)

Her: I'm sorry.. I didn't mean to upset you, I'll also talk to Xoks

Me: It's okay

I exhaled..

Me: It's not like Mongz and I were in a relationship anywayHer:

Did something happen?

Me: I don't think he was into me as much as I thoughtHer:

He is a fool then and it's his loss

I smiled..

Me: It's okay

She looked at the time..

Her: Come let's go somewhere

Me: Where too?

Her: You will see.. I'm going to introduce you to my worldMe:

I don't know Xols

Her: I will be leaving soon, I don't wanna leave without spending time with youMe:

Where are we even going?

Her: It's a surprise.. Is Mom upstairs?Me:

I think so

Her: I'll go steal her car keys.. I'm the only Ndarha that's struggling financiallyI

chuckled..

Me: I'll wait for you here.. Hurry

She made her way upstairs..

—

MONG

Z

I heard a familiar voice calling out..

Voice: Mongz

I was busy going through a few documents..

Voice: Mongz

I looked over and it was my Mother..

Me: Ma??

She gave me her beautiful smile..

Her: Hello baby

Me: Am I dreaming?

Her: You not dreaming

She made her way to me, she was wearing her favourite dress..Her:

How are you?

Me: I'm good I guess

Her: Mongz.. You promised, remember the last time we saw each other? You promised that you were always going to take your pills

Me: I know.. Just that.. I miss you a lot, I'm going through something with this girl who means a lot to me and I don't know how to handle everything, if you were here then things would be different

Her: I know baby and I'm sorry but..

Me: The pills make you disappear

Her: The pills help you a lot.. Remember your old friend? The pills make him disappear too isn't that better? Living life without him?

Me: It is but they make you disappear tooShe
smiled at me..

Her: Promise me that you will always drink your pills?I
exhaled..

Me: I promise

Bridget: Mongz.. Mongz

I snapped out of it. She was standing at the table with her hand stretched out to me..Her: Are you okay?

I took the file from her..

Me: I'm good

Her: When I walked in you were talking alone

I looked around and my Mom wasn't in the room anymore..Me:

Was I?

Her: Yes you were

Me: I tend to do that a lot, sorry if it scared youHer:

It's okay I guess

I cleared my throat..

Me: Is that all?

Her: Yes

Me: Okay thank you.. I'll call you if I need anything

Her: I'll be at the reception

She walked out while occasionally turning her head to make sure that I was okay. I got my pills from the drawer and then went to get water from the small table..

—

NOMFUND

O

I had finished a bit early today so I decided to go home, you know rest a bit.. While I was still searching for my car keys in my bag I saw my car being towed. I quickly made my way to the towing truck..

Me: Excuse me Sir.. Excuse me!

He looked at me..

Me: What are you doing?

He ignored me..

Me: Sorry.. That's my car

Him: I know

Me: Why are you towing it? I am parked on my usual spot
Him: I'm just following orders

Me: Orders? Orders from?

He pointed and I moved my eyes to where he was pointing, I saw Jojo coming to us..
Me: You got to be kidding me!!

Jojo was getting on my nerves now..
Me:

Jojo what is this now?

Him: This car will be good for my Sister Xoliswa
Me:

It's my car

Him: You can have my Toyota CH-R

Me: I don't want the Toyota

Him: The Mercedes Benz ML 500?

Me: Jojo I don't want any of your cars okay? I'm comfortable with my car
I looked at the guy..

Me: Sir please put my car down

He looked at Jojo and Jojo shook his head no..
Me:

Are you kidding me?

I went up to him and started hitting him with my bag and he thought this whole thing was funny, he started laughing and that made me more mad..

Me: You think this is funny?

My bag fell and everything that was inside of it was scattered on the ground, I crouched to pick everything up but I felt defeated that I sat on the ground and started crying..

Jojo: No.. Don't do that, now you making me feel badMe: I

can't do this with you right now (crying)

He came and crouched in front of me busy picking up my things..Him: I'm

sorry I didn't mean to upset you

I couldn't stop crying, he wiped my tears..

Him: I'm sorry I didn't mean to upset you guys I thought I was doing something nice foryou.. I'm truly sorry please don't cry

He kissed me on my cheek with his hand on my tummy..Him: I'm

sorry okay?

—

TASH

I walked out of the building to look for Jojo since we were about to shoot the last scene,the receptionist said that he went out..

I spotted him on the pavement just close to the parking lot with Nomfundo. She lookedlike she was crying and he was comforting her, I noticed something that made my chestto go up and down faster than my heart beat. He had his hand on her tummy and she had hers on his, I don't know what he said but they both started laughing while he wipedher tears with his other hand. I felt like a knife was being pressed inside my chest..

I didn't even notice that Hlehle was standing next to me until she started talking..Her: Wow..

He helped her to get up and began to dust off the dirt from her dress, his hands movedto her butt that's when she stopped him..

Hlehle: I wonder why they broke up because they still look good together

He put both his hands on her cheeks and gave her a baby kiss.. I lost my breath at thatinstant, I don't know what happened but I started to hyperventilate..

Hlehle: Hey Tash are you okay?

Me: I'm good

I made my way back in while tears burned my eyes and my chest felt very hot.. She can't be pregnant!

37

ARMANI

Unfortunately for us we didn't go out because we didn't have a car. Apparently Nonts went out, she didn't even tell us and I didn't even see her going out. Maybe it's when I was busy with Mam'Gabi. We didn't let that discourage us, we decided to download movies from Xols laptop using wifi and then we connected the laptop to the plasma Tv so that we can get a better view. We were now watching her favourite movie "8 Mile". I never really understood it, the language is way too offensive and the movie revolves around rap which is not my cup of tea. She was sitting sitting close to me on the couch, I had my legs on top of her. Her hand moved from my foot all the way to my thigh..

Me: Stop it

I don't know how to describe Xols but she's very touchy and way too playful. I don't know if she's like this with most girls and I wonder how her girlfriend feels about it, I know I would be very offended if I was her girlfriend and she was touchy with other girls.. Her: It's

20:00.. I wonder where Xolelwa is because that guy of hers is not around

Me: maybe she's with Lukhele

Her: She would've called

She took her phone.. Me:

What are you doing? Her:

I'm calling her

I snatched her phone from her..

Me: Leave her Xols.. Let her enjoy her freedom before Ndarha comes back Her: I

don't want her being involved with a lot of guys

Me: She is not like that

Her: Give me back my phone

Me: Don't call her

We heard someone ringing the door bell..Me:

I'll get it

I gave her back her phone..

Me: Don't call her

I got up and went to the kitchen to open the door, we don't usually get visitors this late at night. To my surprise when I opened the door, it was Mr Mabuza. Mongezi's Father..

I tied my robe..

Me: Mr Mabuza.. Please come in

That was an unexpected surprise..

I closed the door and then turned to him still fixing my robe..Him: I

hope I didn't come at a bad time

I bowed a little..

Me: No Sir you didn't..

Why is he here??

Me: Can I make you something to drink? Him:

No.. Unfortunately I'm not here to sayI waited

for him to proceed..

Him: When last did you hear from Mongezi?

Me: It's been a while Sir.. I tried calling him but his phone is offHe

slightly nodded..

Him: Mongz is in hospital. That Sunday after you guys went out for breakfast, on his way back he was involved in a car accident. He was trying to overtake a taxi and then he collided with a Toyota corolla, it was a head on collision.. At least that's what they told me

My heart sank..

Him: He is in ICU Armani

Me: Oohh no

Him: Did anything happen between you guys that day that might've angered him? I'm pretty sure he was distracted while driving

I thought about what I had told him..

Me: No Sir.. Everything was.. Everything was fine. After we had breakfast he drove me home and then left

He let out a sigh of frustration..

Him: After the death of his Mother, things changed. He was severely depressed and it didn't take him long to have a nervous breakdown, he had to take antidepressants but still he did not get better. A psychiatrist put him on psychotic drugs after a psychiatric evaluation was conducted and he was diagnosed with Psychotic depression. Psychotic depression results from major depression where some form of psychosis is involved. He has had hallucinations, delusions, and he was very paranoid. Later on he suffered from Anxiety attacks, it was hell watching all of that happen to my son. Seeing him losing touch with reality like that. Mongz thought that his mom died from a car accident, that's what I made him believe but in all honesty his Mom was brutally killed in front of him.

He was made to watch and I think that affected him a great deal. I turned the story around to make him believe that she died from a car accident just so he could be able to function normally. As he grew up he started getting better, his medication helped a lot with a few other self therapy techniques such as Music. He made something of himself, he went to school and today he has a successful company of which he made it a family company. I am telling you this because I believe you can help in getting him back.

Doctors say there's signs of brain activity, they say he can hear when you talk to him. Maybe our beliefs might differ but I consulted a spiritual healer who is also able to communicate with ancestors and he told me that Mongz is stuck in between the world of the living and the world of those who are no more. If he makes contact with his Mother he might give up the world of the living. Mongz loved his Mother more than anything, he is a gentleman today because I told him that he should never put through another woman what he wouldn't want his Mother to go through.. I am standing here asking for your help, I feel.. No I believe he can listen to you more than he can listen to anyone else. He is very fond of you and I need you to try and communicate with him, if you agree tomorrow morning we can go to the hospital

That was a lot to take in.. Xols walked in..

Xols: I was wondering why you were taking so long

Mr Mabuza glanced at her and then he looked at me..

Him: I'm sorry to put all of this on you.. Tomorrow morning I'll stop by and if you don't wanna come with it's okay, I'll understand

My heart just broke into a million pieces..

Him: I'll be on my way.. Good night

He made his way to the door..

Xols: Who was that?

Tears fell..

Xols: What's going on?

Lately when I get hurt the pain becomes over exaggerated so much that I get weak, Xolsrushed to me and held me as my knees got weak..

Xols: It's okay I got you

Me: I don't know why all the evils of this world fall on my shouldersI laid my head on her chest..

Me: When will I ever find peace and happiness? (crying)Her:

It's okay..

She ran her hand on my back trying to calm me down..

—

NOMFUND

O

I heard someone knocking, I was laying on the couch so comfortably that I didn't wannaget up. I was even starting to fall asleep..

The person knocked again..

Me: I'm coming

I got up and made my way to the door, I opened and it was Jojo. He leaned against thedoor frame..

Him: I came to check if you okay.. You know after that incident

Me: You wanna come in?

Him: It's your place..

I opened the door wider and he made his way in.. I closed the door..He looked at me with his hands buried deep inside his pockets..

Him: I'm sorry again about earlier I didn't mean to upset youMe:

It's okay... Can I ask you something?

Him: You can ask me anything

Me: Why you so sure that the baby is yours?He took time before answering..

Him: I know that you loved me more than I loved you, and I know that you were faithfulMe: You right about that.. I did love you and I was faithful

Him: You no longer love me?

Me: Not anymore

He laughed..

Him: Look I just want to make the whole pregnancy easier for you. Most women suffer during this time because they go through the whole 9 months alone, and I don't want you to experience that. I want you to look back at this moment and be happy about it that you enjoyed your pregnancy. I know things aren't good between us but I don't want our breakup to create hate, I want us to have a healthy relationship for the sake of our baby. I want him to grow up with better Parents than I did, and I want to be a better father than what my step father was to me

Me: Where is your biological father?

Him: He passed on when I was young, so my Mom told me.. Maybe if he was around I would've had a different life

Me: Then this moment wouldn't exist, and I doubt you would be this big shot producer that you are
He smiled a little..

Him: Yeah maybe

He made his way to me..

Him: And what did the Dr say about sex and pregnancy?Me: I

don't know, because I didn't ask

He pulled me closer to him..

Me: Are we really doing this?

Him: Yes.. Up until my love gives in

Me: Your love?

Him: I'll tell you all about her some other timeMe:

I hope she's not crazy like Tash

He laughed..

Him: You think Tash is crazy?

I wrapped my arms around his neck..

Me: Very much.. We should buy the baby a puppy and name it TashWe

both laughed..

Me: Be like "get them Tash!! Get them!!!"

Him: You crazy (laughing)

He picked me up..

Him: Let's see how horny you're Me:

Then we will have to be gentleHim: I

can do gentle

Me: We will see

—

XOLELW

A

Lukhele ambushed me at work, he stopped by right when I was about to knock off so that we can go out and have dinner..

For the very first time, things were awkward between us. Even the conversation that we were having lacked something..

Him: How are the wedding preparations coming along?Me:

They coming along well

Him: Have you decided on a date yet?

Me: uhm no.. Can I please be excused? I have to call my mother or sister and inform them that I'll be late

Him: No problem

I got up and walked away, I made my way out of the restaurant to get some fresh air..

I stood against the wall next to the door and took a deep breath with my eyes closed, then I exhaled and called Master.. We talk a lot on the phone almost everyday, it all depends on his schedule..

Him: Twana

Me: I hope I didn't catch you at a bad time

Him: Not really I just got home

Me: You were doing a day shift?

Him: Ya

Me: And it's only now that you getting home?

Him: Yes

Me: Weird

Him: Yazi beng'cavi ukuthi sishadile (I didn't know that we married)Me: I

was just asking, I didn't say we married

Him: Angik'thandi mowune attitude (I don't like it when you have attitude)Me: I

just can't wait to come there this weekend

Him: I can't wait to see you too

Me: I have to go.. I wanted to hear your voice

Him: That was a very short phone call, which is unlike usMe:

I'm a bit busy

Him: Aww kanti kuso emhlabeni (It's like this now) I can't get home late but you can cutour phone call because you busy at this time of the night

Me: Ahhh

Him: Ku grand.. Ak'na stress Xolelwa sharp (it's alright)Me:

you mad?

Him: Sharp

He hung up.. I sighed and looked at my ring

—

NOMFUND

O

I held on tightly to the pillow with my eyes closed while biting my lower lip. We had another pillow under me, so that I don't get back pains. My legs were wide open and histongue ran in circles around my already throbbing clit..

[REMOVE

D]38

ARMANI

Tiger was laying down on the bed with me. I was an emotional wreck. I can't believe that Mongz was involved in a car accident that almost took his life, possibly because of whatI shared with him. Why couldn't I just keep my mouth shut? Now he is in ICU because of Me..

Me: I told him something that Sunday morning, I think what I told him upset him a lotWe were facing each other..

Her: What did you tell him?

I shook my head..

Her: look.. I don't think his accident had anything to do with you or what you told him,don't beat yourself up about it. These things happen

Me: A lot is happening and..

I closed my eyes and exhaled..

Me: I don't know Xols, my life is just messed upShe
got a bit closer..

Her: Everything is going to be alright. I promiseI
looked at her and hoped that she was right..

Her: You have always been a strong Person and that's what I admire about you, nothingbreaks you
down

Me: You think?

She slightly nodded..

I don't know what came over me I moved closer to her pillow and kissed her, I thenquickly pulled
back..

Me: I'm sorry I didn't mea-

She kissed me again with her hand sneaking it's way under my dress all the way up tomy thigh. I
got on top of her and we continued kissing.. [REMOVED]

—

NOMFUND

O

He pulled out and splashed his semen on my tummy, this time around he took longer tocome than
he did with the first round and I was dead tired. This was our 3rd and last round.. He passed me
the towel and I wiped myself..

Him: Tell me again, why am I not coming inside of you?Me:

What if the sperms harm the baby in anyway?

Him: You didn't talk to the Dr about that?

Me: It didn't come to mind that I should ask about that, seeing that I'm singleHe laid next to me as I put the towel over me, to cover my lower body..

Him: Too bad thenI yawned..

Him: You should get some rest

Me: And you should leave

Him: I'll go when you have fallen asleepI closed my eyes..

Me: Okay.. Just don't spend a night here, I don't want you getting any ideas that we backtogether He chuckled..

Him: You hate me that much?

Me: You have no idea

He kissed me on my forehead..

Him: I'll be long gone when you wake up in the morningMe: I hope so

He rubbed my tummy as I slowly fell asleep..

–

ARMAN

I

I can't believe that Xols and I we.. It was even my first time getting it with a girl like that..Me: No one should ever find out about this

I said that while getting dressed..

Her: I agree.. It should end up between usShe walked up to me..

Her: Let me fix that

She fixed my bra and the awkward moment got to us once more, then we got disturbed by someone knocking.. That's when we snapped out of it, Tiger picked up my dress on the floor and tossed it at me..

Me: Who is it?

Xolelwa: It's me

Me: Just a minute

I put on my dress and brushed my hair back, I looked at Xols and she nodded while fixing her sweat pants.. I walked up to the door and opened..

Me: Hey

Her: Hey.. Can I talk to you?

Me: Uhm.. Yes come in

She made her way in and was stunned by Xoliswa sitting on my bed..Xolelwa:

Okay.. Did I interrupt something?

My heart started beating fast..Me:

Uhm..

Xols: Yes you did

Xolelwa looked at me and then she looked at her Sister..

Xols: Mani just told me that Mongz is in hospital, he was involved in a car accident

Xolelwa: That's terrible.. I mean I know that we having issues with the guy but.. That's really terrible. I'm sorry Mani

Me: Thank you

Xolelwa: Will you be able to talk?

Me: Yes we can talk

She looked at Xols..

Xols: Talk

Xolelwa: I'm sorry but are you Armani?

Xols: I'll be in my room

She put on her sleepers and then made her way to me.. I held the door for her..Her:

Good night

Me: Night

She walked out and I closed the door..I

turned and I looked at Xolelwa..

Her: Master is mad at me

I went and sat down next to her..

Me: What happened?

Her: Usually we call each other at night unless he has to do a nightshift. So I called him while I was out with Lukhele and I had to cut the call.. So

Me: When are you going to tell him about Lukhele?

Her: It's not that simple Mani.. I am really into Master and, he won't understand this whole situation with Lukhele

Me: He has to know Xoks

Her: I know.. I know

(Silence)

Me: Maybe Mongz was right.. We really are a sick familyShe
laughed..

Her: I guess so

Me: Any word from Ndarha?

She shook her head no..

Her: No

Me: I wonder what's going to happen when he comes back

Her: I don't even wanna think about that.. It's going to be a messed up situation, especially for me with the whole Lukhele and Master thing

Me: At least Jojo and Xols are here to protect youHer:

Ya.. We will see

Me: I just want Mongz to get better before Ndarha gets back so I can see what the future holds for us

Her: You really like the guy don't you?

Me: I think I do

Her: I hope things do workout for the best, for all of usMe: Me

too

—

TASH

I parked my car next to the main gate and bit my lower lip with my eyes closed, I could still see them all cozy on that pavement. I opened my eyes and saw a police van driving out

I exhaled..

Me: Tash what are you doing???

I took my phone and got out of the car, I made my way in.. It was a bit empty when I made my way to the reception, I stood in the middle of the room busy looking around. One officer was talking to a civilian and another one was free. I made my way to the one who was free..

Me: Goo..

I cleared my throat..

Me: Evening

He looked at me..

Him: Evening Mam'I

kept quiet..

Him: May I help you?I

nodded..

Me: Yes

He looked at me waiting for me to proceed.. Me:

The case of that famous Lawyer.. BonzaHim:

Yes?

Me: I have some information.. I know who did it

Him: You know who did it?

I nodded repeatedly..

Me: Yes

Him: Okay please wait here for me

He went to his colleague and whispered something to him, and then he disappeared to the offices.
The Colleague had his eyes fixed on me..

—

ARMAN

I

THE NEXT MORNING

I decided to wake up very early and prepare breakfast for everyone, no make that I hardly slept last night with everything that happened. I kept on thinking about what happened between Me and Xols, it should've never happened. What is wrong with me??

They came down one by one to have breakfast, at exactly 7:30 everyone was sitting at the table.. It was really difficult for Me and Xols to even look at each other, we tried our best to avoid eye contact..

Jojo: I am glad that everyone is here because I have news to share with you guys We all looked at him..

Him: I'm sure some of you remember my ex girlfriend Nomfundo? It was quiet..

Nonts: I don't even know her

Xolelwa: Jojo came with her this other time

Nonts: I don't remember her because I was never introducedXols:

What's the news?

Jojo: I am emphasising that she is my ex girlfriend, we broke up a while back. Mayeveryone please take note of that

He said that while looking at me.. Him: I

don't want anyone getting conf-Me: Is she

pregnant?

All eyes were on me, Jojo got speechless.. I just picked it up from how he started hisstatement that the ex might be pregnant..

Jojo: Yeah she's pregnantNonts

exhaled..

Nonts: I don't even know this girl

Xolelwa: She's actually nice

Me: I have to go.. I'll be back laterI

got up..

Nonts: Where too?

Me: To see Mongz.. He was involved in a car accident, he is in ICUNonts:

Intoni? (what)

Me: His Father will pass by and pick me up, I'm sure he's on his wayNonts: I'm

coming with you

Me: I don't think that's a good idea.. I think we shouldn't crowd them.. I'll go get my bagupstairs and be on my way

Xolelwa: I also have to go to work.. I'll see everyone later

I walked upstairs to get my bag, I wasn't even aware that Jojo was following me until he made his way in..

Him: Are you okay?

I looked for my bag..

Me: I'm fine

Him: Mani

Me: Please.. I don't wanna fight, I'm tired of fighting Him: I

don't wanna fight too.. I just wanna talk to you Me: I'm

actually on my way out

Him: I won't be long.. I promise

Me: I'm only giving you 5min

Him: Thank you

I had no doubt that this whole conversation was going to be very awkward, considering how our last one went..

Him: The other day you poured your heart out and I listened to you, I would like to do the same too
I gave him my attention..

Me: I had no idea about the abuse, all along I thought that your life was content but that shouldn't be an excuse for me not keeping my promise. I didn't come back for you because I was scared of what I had become, you were right about what you said. I have changed. The honest truth is that I'm dealing with demons of my own too and they have turned me into someone that I never thought I would become, and though so much has changed but my love for you never changed. I love you Armani, come 10 years time I'll still love you more than I have loved any other woman that I've been with after you. I know that you hate me right now, you mad, and you don't want anything to do with me. I understand where you coming from, I understand why you don't want me anymore but..I'm here, despite everything I came back. Just like you I had no reason to come back here anymore but I did because of you, and I'm not going back until you give me a second chance..

I shook my head..

Him: No matter how much you tell yourself that you hate me, in all honesty a part of you is still in love with me. Not only that, I also know that you would never love him as much as you love me

I don't know what Jojo was trying to achieve, all I know is that he was confusing me a lot..

Him: give me another chance and then after we have tried again you can decide whether you still want to be with me or not, I just need one last chance. I deserve one last chance

He came closer..

Him: I promised you before I left that I'll give you the world one day, and I want to do that. You were supposed to be next to me when I built my empire, you were supposed to enjoy the benefits of it because you were always there while I was nothing. You were the only person who believed in me and my crazy dreams

He looked at me..

Him: Remember when I was telling you that one day I want to have my own production company? Remember how I laughed and said it's a far fetched dream

I nodded with tears building up in my eyes..

Him: What did you say?

I closed my eyes and tears fell..

Me: I said you will make it because my prayers go higher than a ceiling

Him: Your prayers were answered.. I made it Armani, I made it because you kept on having faith and believing in me

He knelt right in front of me and held my hand..

Him: I love you and I want you to be a part of my life until my dying day.. I lost you once, I don't want to lose you again. I don't want to lose you to Mongz, I don't want to lose you to that sick bastard Ndarha, hell dare I don't want to lose you to any guy..

I wiped my tears with my other hand..

Him: Marry Me.. Let's get married

XOLISWA (TIGER)

My Mother asked me to accompany her to the mall so that she can do some shopping, buy personal things that she needs and some clothes.. Shopping with my Mom has always been draining, she takes too long to make up her mind..

While she was busy checking out a few clothes I was on my phone checking out Loli's pictures and I kept on going back on what happened between Me and Armani last night. If Loli can find out she's definitely going to leave me, no questions asked..

Mom: This girl.. She means a lot to you doesn't she? Me: I thought you were busy checking out a few clothes I put my phone in my pocket..

Her: I was.. And you were lost in your thoughts Me:

Ya I did shut down for a moment

Her: I don't understand your lifestyle..

Me: Mom don't..

Her: Let me finish I

let her continue..

Her: I don't understand your lifestyle and I don't understand why you woke up one day and decided that you don't wanna be a girl anymore. This thing of dating girls and the way that you have changed it's confusing to me.. But at the end of the day you my Daughter and I would hate to see you live a lie.. As long as you happy then it's okay with me

Me: Thank you

Her: So how does it work? If you guys decide to get married one day, who is paying Lobola for who?

I chuckled..

Me: Yeah marriage is not happening

Her: Is that part of who you are too? You guys don't get married?Me:

No.. It's a personal choice

Her: Okay I see.. Does her family know about you?Me:

Yes they do

Her: They okay with it?

Me: Yes they are... They even better people than usHer:

What does that mean?

Me: We a broken family Nonts, so let's stop pretending like our family is the bestHer: Xol-

Me: I don't wanna talk about it yeah? Can you get what you want so we can go, neverwanted to come along in the first place

—

ARMAN

I

Jojo caught me off guard with the whole marriage proposal thing. To be honest, marriage is something that we shouldn't even be thinking about because a lot has happened, and a lot has changed between us. We not the same People that we used to be 11 years ago. Yes I did leave him hanging, I have a lot on my plate currently to evenbe giving a thought to his proposal.. Mr Mabuza did stop by to pick me up and we droveout to the hospital to see Mongz. I was nervous..

Upon arrival at the hospital I had to sign in since only family is allowed in ICU, aftersigning we made our way to see him....

No words can explain how I felt when I saw him laying in that hospital bed, he didn't have his t-shirt on and there was a bandage that went around his tummy. He had another around his forehead with a few bruises here and there. His eyes were tightlyshut and a bit swollen, it showed that he hasn't opened them in a while.. His Dr was around when we walked in, he was jotting down something on Mongz's chart..

Dr: Good morning

We greeted him back..

Mr Mabuza: How is he?

Dr: Still no change but there's still brain activity

Mr Mabuza: I brought in someone who means a lot to him.. Armani this is Dr-Dr: Dr

Van Tonder

Me: It's nice to meet you

Mr Mabuza: Since you said that there might be a possibility of him hearing us when we talking to him, I thought that Armani can talk try and talk to him. Maybe, just maybe he might wake up

Dr: There's no telling for sure but.. It's worth a try Me:

Is he in a deep sleep?

Dr: He is having near death experience I

looked at Mongz..

Dr: Studies have shown that in most cases such critical patients are in a state where they cannot clearly distinguish between what is real and what is not real. His subconscious mind is bringing up memories that keep on playing in his head

Me: Memories?

Dr: Most patients will divert to a certain memory in their life that made them happy, say riding a bicycle when they were young or reconnecting with a lost loved one. In other cases they can have memories of their current life, they will see themselves waking up in the morning, bathing, eating, and going to work as if like nothing is happening because their brain cannot clearly distinguish between what is and what is not

Mr Mabuza: I respect what you do and I also respect what you believe in, but if my Son is reliving a memory where his Mother was around.. He might not come back, that's why I need to do a little ceremony to plead with the ancestors so that they can free his soul wherever it's trapped

Dr: Mr Mabuza if your wife cannot take your Son's soul. If your Son is in a mind state where he is meeting or seeing his Mother it's just a memory we spoke about it the other day. He is reliving a memory that was in his subconscious mind. The memory might not be real, but you will find that he once thought about it and now his brain is making him to relive it as if like it's real.. He is in a world of his own

Me: I'm sorry.. I don't mean to be rude but can I please be allowed to say something?They both looked at me..

Me: If Mongz can hear us perhaps this conversation is not something that he wants to hear

They looked at each other and then Mr Mabuza looked at me..Mr

Mabuza: I think we should give them a moment alone

Dr: Very well

They both walked out..

I pulled the bench and sat down, I held his hand and looked at him..Me:

Hey.. It's me, it's Armani

He was still unmoved..

Me: If I knew that this was going to happen, I wouldn't have told youI sighed..

Me: When I was in the car I had time to think and truthfully speaking I am running out of time, Ndarha might come back any time

This was hard for me..

Me: If telling you about what he did to me can land you in ICU, then it's going to be worse when we have to fight him you will end up here again. I feel strongly about you but I think I need to be with a Person who is courageous to fight Ndarha with Me. Mongz you mean the world to your Father, after your Mom's death you and your brother are the only family that he has and he can't lose you because of me.. I'm really sorry but I'm going to have to let you go, I care a lot about you to see you hurt. I don't wanna put you and your family in danger, after all Ndarha is v-

Before I could even finish my speech, the machine started beeping and then the lines went from being zig zag to being flat straight

I didn't know what was happening but it didn't sound good..Me:

Mongz?? Mongz??

I got up and went to the door, then I screamed the word "help". I went back in and held his hand..

After a few seconds the Dr rushed in..Dr:

What happened?

Me: I don't know I was talking to him and then the next thing he..

Mr Mabuza got in with two Nurses, one Nurse was pushing some machine..Mr

Mabuza: What's happening?

Dr: Hurry we need to do a cardioversion or else we going to lose himMr

Mabuza: Card-.. What is happening?

Dr: Please get them out

The other nurse adjusted the bed and then she poured gel on his chest..Mr

Mabuza: What is happening Dr? What is happening to my son?

The second Nurse attended to us..

Her: Sir please.. You need to be out of the room and allow the Dr to do his jobMr

Mabuza: I am not going anywhere that's my son

Dr: Paddles

The nurse hurried and gave him what looked like two electrodes..

He rubbed them together against each other and then put them on Mongz..Dr: Clear

The Nurse pressed something and I saw his chest going up and then down, the Dr kept on looking at the machine. It was still a flat line..

Dr: Come on..

He rubbed the paddles together again and put them on Mongz..Dr:

Clear

Again the same thing happened and still the Dr wasn't getting any results..

Me: Mongz please (whispering)

Dr: Clear..

Mongz wasn't reacting to what the Dr was doing..

—

JOJO

Armani didn't give me an answer, she left me hanging. I don't blame her though, anyone would've reacted like that to a rushed marriage proposal..

I yawned..

Writer: It's that bad?

Me: It's actually good.. The script is well written I'm just a little tired Her:

You should rest

Me: There's no time for that, we only have a few episodes left before we finally say goodbye to Usapho

Her: Did you see the views and ratings? Me:

We have picked up

Her: South Africa is crazy about your work but then I don't blame them.. You really good boss

Me: Trying to soften me up for a raise I see, it won't work

My phone started ringing, I checked the number and I didn't recognize it. It was a landline number..

Her: Let me get back to work

Me: Keep up the good work

Her: Yes Sir

I answered the phone..

Me: Hello?

It was quiet on the other end..

Me: Hello?

Tash: Jojo

Me: Tash?

Her: Listen I don't have much time..

Me: Where are you?

Her: I'm at the police station

Me: Doing what?

Her: They kept me overnight busy grilling me with questionsMe:

Grilling you with questions? Tash what's going on?

Her: I confessed.. I told them that I'm the one who murdered BonzaMe:

You did what?

Her: Listen.. Don't get me a lawyer, don't do anything just let things be.. Let me go to jailMe: I'm coming down there

Her: No don't

I heard a voice at the background saying "Your time is up"Her: Just

don't do anything okay? Let things be

She hung up..

Me: Tash?? Tash?? Shit!!!

—

ARMAN

I

Mr Mabuza was broken and I felt very bad. I should've never gotten involved with Mongzin anyway, I don't want Mr Mabuza losing his son too

The Dr made his way to us as we stood up..Mr

Mabuza: How is my Son?

He looked at us..

Him: He is stable for now.. We almost lost him there I don't wanna lieHearing that he was stable was a relief..

Mr Mabuza: Thank you Dr

Dr: I suggest that maybe you guys can leave, I don't want him to be distressedMr

Mabuza: Yes of course.. I understand.. Thank you Dr

The Dr nodded and then walked away..

Mr Mabuza walked out first and I followed him..40

XOLELWA

ONE MONTH LATER

That weekend I was meant to go and visit Master but unfortunately it didn't happen. I got so busy with Lukhele's family affairs that I didn't get time to go to Witbank as previously planned, and Master wasn't very happy. Although it all seemed lost between, I eventually did decide to sacrifice this weekend to go and visit him. I didn't even go to work today it was a friday, I hope that we can still fix things when I get there..When I called him and told him that I was coming he didn't refuse, that is actually a good sign. I left a bit early since I didn't even know where I was headed, the GPS was of great help and so was Master when I communicated with him occasionally on the phone. He had provided me with an address of the house were he was renting and I must admit, the neighbourhood wasn't disappointing.. I parked my car and then got my phone, I looked at the time and it was 7:00am. It wasn't so quiet as school kids were walking up and down the street, some were standing at the gate probably waiting for their transports. Isaw some 3 girls walking pass my car in their school uniform, they were all chatting and laughing. Maybe they were talking about their boyfriends and the cute guys at school. Inever had such an experience, Xols and I had a chauffeur that drove us to school. We wouldn't even stand at the gate he would literally come inside and wait for us, even at school when we were done with our classes I never chit chatted with friends the chauffeur was always on time. He even had a timetable for my extramural activities, andafter netball practice he would be there waiting. He followed my father's orders precisely, if he slipped up then that would've been the end of his job.. Being here felt right and it also felt wrong at the same time, I am playing with fire and it's not even

funny..

I texted him that I was outside, it took him a bit longer to reply. His reply was "I'm coming"

I got out of the car when I saw him opening the gate, he wasn't wearing any t-shirt just his shorts and sleepers. I locked the car and made my way to him, he led the way as I followed him without saying anything to each other. I thought he was renting an outside room or something, but I was wrong. He made his way inside the house and closed the door behind me. The house was small, probably two bedrooms, a bathroom, kitchen and a lounge. Though it looked small from outside, the interior was very beautiful. The kitchen was very small though, I don't think 3 people can carry out any work together in it but nevertheless I fell in love with the design.. Master stood against the fridge and folded his arms while looking at me, that wasn't a warm welcome..

Me: Hey

Him: Exactly why are you here Xolelwa?

What kind of a question is that..

Me: Kodwa benditshilo ukuba ndiyeza, yintoni ingxaki ngoku? (But I did say that I was coming, what's the problem now)

Him: I knew that you were coming but the question is, why are you here? I didn't say anything..

Him: Kahle kahle vele senzani la? (What are we doing here)

I was out of words, I didn't know what to say so I decided to run my eyes around. He stretched his hand and held my chin, he stopped me from wandering my eyes around to looking at him..

Him: Sisi weeee.. Ngithi k'hambani between mina nawe (What's going between us) I thought about what Armani said and I owe it to him, to tell him the truth..

Me: I..

How do you begin to tell someone that you love about another man in your life?

Me: I am engaged to be married, or I'm practically married because he already paid my bride price

He went back to folding his arms..

Me: This weekend we were supposed to be going around searching for wedding venues, you know planning our wedding

Him: Why are you telling me all of this?

Me: I am answering your question.. I am here because I don't love him I saw him loosening up a bit..

Me: I think that I am in love you

Him: You think?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: Something is happening.. I definitely feel something for you He remained quiet..

Me: Please say something

Him: What do you want me to say? I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: Anything

Him: When you left home.. Where did you say you going? Me: I said I'm going to visit my twin sister

Him: They believed you?

Me: My Mom bought it.. My Dad is still not around He gave me a nod..

Him: Okay

(Silence)

Him: Then we can go get your bag from the car I smiled at him..

Me: I've missed you soo much

He came closer and put his hands around my waist..

Him: I've missed you too.. And shame nami ngiz'shayile ngawe (I am also in love withyou)

Me: Serious?

He winked at me..

Him: Blind

I wrapped my arms around his neck and kissed him..

—

ARMAN

I

I picked up his vest and his briefs from the follow while giving him a serious look..Him: I was going to pick that up

Me: You said the same thing yesterday

He put the small comb for his beard next to the basin.. He pulled me closer to himHim: You okay?

I didn't say yes to his marriage proposal but I did say yes to him. Things between me and him didn't end well 11 years ago, so I decided to give him another chance to provehimself to me. On the other hand I see Jojo more fitting to take Ndarha down, than Mongz would've..

Me: I don't like this therapy thing

Him: It takes a bit of time getting used too

Me: Is that the reason why we haven't been intimate? You disgusted with me aren't you?You disgusted that I.. That I made out with Xols?

In the name of honesty I did tell him about Me and Xoliswa, it was right after he washonest with me about his ex girlfriend and his assistant..

He kissed me on my nosebrigde and then my forehead while holding my hands..

Him: I am not disgusted by you.. Yes it's difficult for me to sleep next to you every night knowing that I wanna make love to you, but I can't

Me: Why can't you?

Him: Because.. You still traumatized from everything that happened to you that's why it was so easy for you to get it down like that with Xols. I don't want to feel like I'm also taking advantage of you, I don't want you to give yourself to me as if like it's something that you have to do. I want you to be emotionally invested in it, right now I promise you if we could do it the only thing you going to think about is Ndarha. You have known him for far too long and it's going to take a lot in you to enjoy being intimate with me. I want you to heal, I want you to be rid of him first. When we making love I want you to be enjoying me and not him, I don't want you thinking about him and your sexual experiences with him when we making love

I understand what he was saying, but this seems like something that's going to take forever.. He looked at the time..

Him: Quite frankly we should be leaving now

We were at his place, we usually go back and forth from his place to the Ndarha household

He pulled me closer and hugged me, I just love the smell of his cologne.. Him: I

love you so much

Me: I love you too

—

MONG

Z

Dr: How are you feeling today?

I looked at him and took off the oxygen mask Me:

When can I go home?

Dr: You just made it out of a coma, you not going home today or tomorrow He was

frustrating me..

Me: I feel fine

Him: You can't even breath on your own for at least 5min without putting your oxygenmask back on

I placed the mask over my mouth again..

Him: I must say that God or your Ancestors really love you because you lucky to be hereI lowered the mask..

Me: How many visitors did I have?

Him: Your Father came everyday, your little Brother wasn't here that often because ofschool, your father said they very strict at his boarding school

I put the mask back on when I felt like I was struggling to breath. Then I took it off tocontinue talking to him..

Dr: Although you did have one particular visitor this other time, it was a girl by the nameof Miranda or Maranda

Me: Armani?

Him: Yes.. Your Father was convinced that she was going to help wake you upMe:

How many times did she come?

Him: She only came once.. Can you even remember what she said to you?I slowly shook my head..

Me: No.. I don't remember

—

JOJO

After dropping Armani off at the therapist's office, I made my way to go and see Tash. Armani's sessions are usually 2 hours long and she sees the therapist 4 times a week.

She's not used to it yet, I just hope that with time she will get used to it.. Tash is anotherstory, I've been showing up at the prison everyday for the past two weeks to see her since she was denied bail, but each time she has refused to see me. The state is building a strong case against her, I wanna help her but first I need to know why she didit..

I was relieved to see her walking in through that door, though I didn't like the state that she was in but I'm happy she agreed to see me..

She sat down opposite Me..

Her: Hey

She gave me her warm smile. I looked at her not knowing what to say I mean Tash has always had my back but this.. This is too extreme..

Me: What happened to your lip and your eye?She

had a red eye and a cut on her lower lip. Her: I

didn't think Prison could be this intense

We needed to address the elephant in the room..Me:

Why did you do it Tash?

She looked around first and then her eyes came back to me..Her: It

doesn't matter anymore

Me: It matters to me

Her: Joj-

Me: Please..

Her: Nomfundo is pregnant right?

Me: Yeah she is

Her: I saw you guys that day on the pavement when she was crying and you were comforting her

Me: What's that got to do with anything?She

chuckled..

Her: You still don't get it do you?I

waited for her..

Her: Jojo I love you.. I know that when it came to a relationship we never worked but..

Me: What exactly are you trying to say Tash?She

shook her head..

Her: I did this so that I won't have to be outside there witnessing you in love with another woman, I wasn't going to take it seeing you and her playing a happy family knowing how I feel about you.. It was going to kill me

Me: I am not even with her like that

She shook her head..

Her: I saw you that day, I saw how you were with her.. Don't play me JojoShe
stood up..

Me: Tash wait

Her: Don't ever come back here againShe
looked at the guard..

I reached out and grabbed her arm..Me:

Tash don't do this

Guard: No touching!

She yanked my hand off her as the guard came to collect her...Me:

Tash..

Her: Goodbye Jojo

The guard let her out of the room..

Me: Tash!

They walked up to the door and I hit the table..Me:

Dammit!!

—

NDARH

A

"The ever so handsome and charming Jojo Ndarha graced us with his presence on the

red carpet of the feather awards. He wasn't with his assistant this time around but he was with a stunning woman of whom he referred too as his " Queen". Ladies put your gloves down and don't get your hopes up anymore he has been taken out of the market. We hope that he will reveal more to us about his "Queen" as time goes on"

They even had a picture of him and Armani..

Voice: Good morning Sir

I closed the newspaper and folded it, it was my driver..Him:

Are you ready to go home sir?

I got up and looked around, I was at the OR Tambo airport with my two bodyguards notwithstanding that far from me..

Me: Yes I'm ready.. It's good to be finally back at homeHe

took my luggage bag..

Him: This way Sir

I put the newspaper under my arm, and put on my sunglasses. I followed him with onehand buried inside my pocket

41

ARMANI

I was still struggling to get used to this whole therapy thing, I have been doing it for awhile now but still talking to a total stranger about my past pain wasn't easy.

Her: I thought we were going to have Jojo todayMe: I

didn't tell him about today's session

Her: Why not?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Her: Armani according to you do you think that these sessions are important?Me: I

really don't know

She gave me a nod..

Her: Why didn't you tell Jojo about today's session? I kept quiet..

Her: I know it's not easy to just open up to a stranger, especially if that stranger hasn't been in your shoes. You scared of being judged and also you scared that the person might not understand. I have dealt with a lot of clients who presented with different situations and different pain, the common goal is to not make you over but for you to know that someone is there to listen. We cannot have trust between us, if you not honest with me. Anything you say will not leave this room, I promise.. You have been silent for far too long now, it's time now that you be heard

(Silence)

Me: I didn't tell him about today's session because I didn't want him to know the full details of what happened to me

Her: Why not?

Me: Jojo and I we haven't been intimate ever since we got back together, I think he is disgusted by me and my past sexual relations with his step father

Her: did he literally say it to you?

Me: No..

Her: Is that the reason why you didn't want him here today? Me:

Yes

She looked at my file and then fixed her glasses..

Her: Each time when we talk about Isaac Ndarha, you mostly refer to him as if like he is a God. More like he is untouchable.. Is that how you see him?

Me: Ndarha is untouchable

Her: You don't believe that one day he will pay for his evil doings? I slowly shook my head..

Me: I don't think so. He is well connected and he has money, people with power tend to get away with everything

—

XOLELWA

Master and I drove up to some Mall, highveld mall to get a few groceries. He didn't have much at his house.. He refused that we should take my car, we drove to the mall in his car. The mall looked beautiful and fancy on the outside, on the inside it must be more beautiful. He got out first and I remained in the car, I am used to have my door opened for Me when I'm driving with Lukhele, Master wasn't having any of that because he just walked through. I rolled my eyes and let out a sigh, when he realized that I wasn't anywhere near him he walked back and I opened the door for myself..

Him: Don't tell me that you were waiting for me to open the door for you? Me: No

I wasn't, why would I do that

He locked the car when I was out.. Me:

Would it be a bad thing though?

Him: No it's not.. Just that if I do it constantly then it happens that one day we not in good terms and I don't do it, you'll get more mad

Me: Ohw

He held my hand..

Him: Ya so asiyeke ukubanga izinkinga (Let's not create problems) Me:

This mall is beautiful

Me: It is

(Silence)

Me: Tell me.. You renting that whole house?

Him: Yes I am

Me: Nice

He stopped and looked at me..

Me: What?

Him: That reply was.. What's the word again? Condescending Me: No it wasn't

Him: Where did you think I was staying? Maybe renting a small nyana room elokshinnext door to a tavern?

Me: That's not what I said and that's not what I was thinkingHe

shook his head and we continued walking..

Him: Even if I was renting a small room next door to a tarven in the slums of Witbankwould be a problem for you bun?

Me: Nope.. It wouldn't

He laughed...

Him: Yeah.. Right!

—

JOJO

I don't know what I was going to do with Tash's situation, all I know is that I have to get her the hell out of there. I won't function professionally without her, she's the best assistant that I've ever had.. After seeing her I went to see Xols, seeing that it wasn't busy at her workplace I asked her if we could go to the gym and have a session for just a few minutes. The gym that I go too has a boxing ring, it is used for boxing and also asa wrestling ring.. I threw the gloves at her..

Her: Couldn't we do this some other time?

After Armani told me that she got it down like that with Xols, I never had a chance toconfront Xols about it. Now this is my confrontation..

Me: It's just going to be for some few minutes

I put on the gloves too and looked at Champ, he manages the gym. He played music forus, going to be good motivation..

Champ got inside the ring to help us with the gloves..Champ: Head gear?

I looked at Xols.. She shook her head no..Me:

Naa we good

Champ: Okay.. I'll be over there when you guys need meMe:

Cool

He helped me take off my t-shirt, he then helped Xols too..Me:

USN?

Her: Testosterone replacement therapyMe:

Pills?

Her: Injections

Me: You know shit can cause cancer?

Her: Prostate cancer.. Lucky for me I don't have a prostateMe: I

see.. Even your voice is improving

Her: Yeah whatever man

Me: Okay let's do this

"Me and my niggas tryna get it, ya bish (Ya bish, ya bish) Hit this house lick tell me is you with it, ya bish (Ya bish, ya bish) Home invasion was persuasive (Was persuasive, was persuasive) From nine to five I know its vacant, ya bish (Ya bish, ya bish) Dreams of living life like rappers do (like rappers do, like rappers do) Back when condom wrappers wasn't cool (They wasn't cool, they wasn't cool) I fucked Sherane then went to tell my bros (Tell my bros, tell my bros Then Usher Raymond "Let it Burn" came on ("Let it Burn" came on, "Let it Burn" came on) Hot sauce all in our Top Ramen, ya bish (Ya bish, ya bish) Parked the car and then we start rhyiming, ya bish (Ya bish, ya bish)"

We went for it and I let her have the first blow, it didn't feel like it came from a girl..She

raised her eye brow up and looked at me

Her: You looking like a easy come-up, ya bish

A silver spoon I know you come from, ya bish And that's a lifestyle that I never knewI

chuckled while shaking my head..

Me: Okay

We went back again and I must admit that she was a worthy opponent, well that was

before I put a blow on her stomach and she fell backwards..

Her: Fuuuuck!! what the hell was that for? This is supposed to be a friendly match I looked at her..

Me: Armani told me

Her: So all this shit is about that?

Him: How can you take advantage of her like that? Armani is almost like family, she's like your big sister

Her: So it's right to date "family"

Me: What's happening between me and her is different Her:

Look it was a stupid act that will never happen again Me: I hope so.. You got a good girl, don't ruin it

She got up..

Her: Soo much for keeping it a secret

She untied the strings of her glove using her teeth.. Me: You ayt?

Her: I'm good

Me: We cool?

Her: Yeah we cool

Me: Tell me something.. Did any sexual abuse from your side happen at home when you were young, before you moved out?

Her: No

Me: You sure?

Her: I'm sure

Me: And Xolelwa?

Her: I don't think so.. Why you asking?

Me: I think that the sexual abuse at home broke ArmaniHer:

Why you say so?

Me: She uses sex to escape the reality of what happened to her, I think that's why shewas keen on getting it down with you

Her: I've heard that most sexual abuse victims can sometimes turn into sex addictsMe: She has started therapy, I hope it will help her

Her: Yeah me too

Me: Come I got you something

Her: What is it?

Me: You will see

—

NDARH

A

I didn't go straight home, I went to see the President. I was even lucky to find him athome, seeing that he is a busy man..

I threw the newspaper on the table infront of him, he was peeling a banana..

Me: I went to Kenya to handle your business, I thought you were handling mine tooHe looked at the paper..

Him: Bonza's killer has been found

That was an interesting way of changing the subject..Him: It was a white girl, she turned herself in

Me: A white girl? Doesn't make sense

Him: It makes sense if she was close to Jojo.. She is Jojo's assistantMe: She is what?

Him: My question is why would Jojo kill Bonza and pin it on her?

Me: If she turned herself in then he didn't pin it on her, the question you should be

asking is how did he convince her to take a fall for something that she didn't do
Me: I have no idea

Him: why would he even murder him?

Me: Maybe he found out that Bonza was double crossing him
Him: Can you see that Jojo is now dangerous?

Me: How did he pull it off without any help?

Him: What we should be doing is getting to the girl

Me: Yes let's do it and then explain later to the press why the President and the deputy president went to see a murderer in jail, a murderer who happened to have murdered our lawyer

Him: Any bright ideas then Ndarha?

Me: I'll think of something

He looked at the paper...

Him: This Armani issue

Me: Yeah what am I supposed to do with it?

Him: You do nothing.. Look if you wanna win her over we do it my way, and we play by my rules. This thing of you dragging her back into your life kicking and screaming it won't help, you need to change your strategy

I sat down opposite him..

Him: You know this other time when I got home my youngest wife was on the phone talking about you and your looks, and your body and how you dress

Me: She doesn't know me that well to do that

Him: It doesn't matter.. What matters is she is almost Armani's age and if she finds you attractive while she is not even that close to you, how much more with Armani who has known you for a very long time.. My friend after you take my advice Armani will be eating from the palm of your hand

I laid back on the chair..

Me: I'm listening..

42

NOMFUNDO

Pregnancy was not as easy as I thought it would be, I was now 5 months pregnant and it was taking a toll on me. Despite how pleasant it can get at times, I am grateful to have Jojo's full support.. I was cooking myself dinner when someone rang the bell, I closed the pot and made my way to the door. Just as I thought, it was Jojo. He is literally the only Person who can show up at my doorstep this late.. He kissed me on my cheek..

Him: Evening

Me: Hey

He made his way in and followed me as I made my way to the stove..Me:

Would you like something to eat?

Him: No thank you.. I can't show up at home with a full stomach, incase Armani is also preparing dinner

Me: So is she the one?

Him: She is the one

Me: Where does that leave us?

Him: I told her about you and she's okay with it, only because it happened before me and her got back together again

Me: Okay.. Now I guess no more having sexHe
cleared his throat..

Him: Well..

I shook my head..

Me: You will never change Jojo

Him: It's hardly cheating

Me: No matter how much you want to glorify it, it's cheating

Him: Look Armani won't find out

Me: It's not about her finding out, it's about me being uncomfortable with it
Him: You don't have to be

Me: I am

Him: It's just going to be for a few months, up until you give birth
Me:
Still..

Him: Okay what do you suggest? Do you wanna get yourself a boyfriend?
Me: I'm pregnant Jojo, I doubt any guy would want to date me

Him: Don't sell yourself short, you my ex
I gave him a weird look..

Him: Any guy would wanna date you just to say "I am dating Jojo's ex"
I laughed..

Me: You are soo full of yourself

Him: Am I lying?

Me: I don't know

Him: Are you guys good though?

Me: We good

He ran his eyes around..

Him: Don't you ever get bored?

Me: Not really.. I have my novels to keep me busy
He went over to the couch and picked up my novel..

Him: "Step Brother Dearest" by Penelope Ward.. This ain't no good bed time story for my boy

Me: Or a girl

I rolled my eyes..

Me: Aren't you supposed to be going home?

Him: Naa you know what, I'll stick around for a while.. This seems interestingHe sat down..

Me: Someone save my soul

Him: I also might have dinner with you guys just don't put too much spices like the lasttime

This is going to be a long night..

—

NDARH

A

The house was very quiet, made me wonder if the kids were around. I looked at the time,they supposed to be here and gathered around the dinner table. I looked at my driver while taking my glasses off..

Me: Thank you

He put my luggage bag down..

Him: Good night Sir

Me: Good night

I picked it up and made my way upstairs, all the doors of the bedrooms were closed. I made my way to my bedroom.. I don't think I have to go into detail on how things aren'treally good between me and my wife, the only reason why I haven't divorced her as yet isbecause of my image and we always have to keep up public appearances. Most peoplerespect me because they think I'm a fully committed family man, sometimes what you see is not what is.. Nonts was sitting on the couch busy applying lotion on her legs while watching TV. She was wearing her silk night dress with a matching gown.. I closedthe door and she looked at me..

Her: Ndarha

Me: Good evening

She got up...

Her: You didn't let me know that you were coming back today

I looked at her, the night dress was a bit short, just above her knee level and the gown was longer. It was a perfect tight fit for her breasts too..

Me: I wanted to surprise you

I put the bag at the corner of the room and made my way to her..Me: Are you surprised?

She laughed..

Her: Yes I am

I put my hands on her cheeks and kissed her on her forehead..Me: It's good to be back home

Her: How was your trip?

Me: It was good, though it took long

Her: I'm glad you back home and safe

I kissed her on her forehead again and then went on to kiss her on the lips. As we both got lost in the moment, I lowered her night gown she caught it before it fell on the floor and then she broke the kiss. She fixed it..

Me: I know that I've done some things, I know that I've hurt- Her:

Would you like something to eat?

Me: Nontsikelelo Ndarha.. Khasithethe (let's talk) Her:

Sithethe ngantoni? (Talk about what)

Me: Everything that's happened

Her: Sithethe ngalento yakho yolala no Armani? ubucinga andiyiboni lonto? Ucinga uthetha ngalento izakundonwabisa? (Talk about how you were sleeping with Armani and thought that I was blind to see it? Do you think talking about that is going to make me happy)

Me: Ndifuna ukulungisa umtshato wam kwaye ndifuna nokulungisa olu sapho lwethu

(I want to fix my marriage and I want to fix our family)Her:

Don't you think it's too late for that now?

Me: No it's not.. I had a piffany back when I was in Kenya, a lot happened and I wannamake this work. Ndiyakuthanda Ntsiki wam (I love you)

She chuckled and walked away..

Me: Nontsikelelo!

She opened the door and walked out..

—

XOLELW

A

Master and I we were sitting on the couch, while watching Tv. We were sitting on the small couch and I was on top of him with my legs extending over to the armrest of the couch. I kept on dozing and his hand kept on playing around my thighs up until it went further up. I was wearing my Pajama shorts.. I looked at him..

Him: Did you do life sciences at school?

Me: No.. Khange ndiyenze tuu

Him: Ithi ngik'shayele ke (let me tell you something)Me:

okay...

I gave him my attention..

Him: You can't fall pregnant if you have unprotected sex while you a virginMe: I

don't know about that

Him: Ngiyak'tshela angisho (I'm telling you)

Me: That doesn't sound right

Him: Want me to prove it?

Me: Not without a condom

Him: Xolelwa a condom is going to hurt you trust meMe:

I don't wanna fall pregnant

Him: You won't, I promise.. Wena themba Mina (trust me)Me:

How many girls have you slept with?

Him: Isn't that my business?

Me: What's your status? A condom will be good since I don't know your statusHim:

Are you indirectly saying I'm Positive

Me: I didn't say that

Him: Then what are you saying?

Me: Im-

Him: Entlek awusuke phez'kwami (get off me)Me:

Now you getting mad because I as-

Him: Xolelwa Ngithe awehle (I said get off me)I

got off him..

Me: I can't believe that you madHe

got up..

He kept on poking me on my forehead..

Him: You think that you all that just because your father is a deputy president, you a princess le ekini! When you out of your house learn to respect other people sezwana?(do we understand each other)

I didn't say anything..

He clicked his tongue and walked away to the bedroom, that was uncalled for..

—

ARMAN

I

I tried him again, his phone rang until it took me straight to voicemail. This is the 3rd time I'm trying him. I exhaled and put my phone away, I am not used to this silence. Usually by now I'm keeping myself busy at the house, maybe washing dishes or chit chatting with Xolelwa while we sitting outside and eating ice cream, or even watching a

movie. I am not used to this total silence.. My therapist said change is uncomfortable, but change is also good. I didn't feel like this change was good, I didn't agree to come here with Jojo only to spend a night alone while he's out getting up to no good. If he is working late then he should've called or texted me than to just be silent, it wasn't nice. Maybe Jojo is disgusted with me, maybe he doesn't see me the same way that he did 11 years ago. I don't blame him though, which guy would wanna be with me I am damaged goods.. I laid on the bed while hugging the pillow as tears streamed down. I had a lot of unsettling thoughts crowding my mind and truthfully speaking I was tired now of feeling this way, I don't wanna feel this way anymore..

–

NDARH

A

After taking a shower that I've been long yearning for I made way out of the bedroom to go and check on the kids again, their bedrooms were empty which was very unusual especially for Xolelwa because she doesn't sleep out. I don't think she is with Lukhele, I was on the phone with him earlier on he would've told me if Xolelwa was with him.

What's happening? What is it that I'm not being told about? What has been happening around here since I've been gone

I made my way back to the bedroom to get my phone so that I can call her, I passed the guest room and it was slightly open. I noticed Armani's teddy bears on the bed, I opened the door wider and made my way in.

I walked over and sat down on the bed, I looked around and noticed some of her things. I was a bit confused, did she move into the house? What exactly has been going on?

Could David the President be true in his statement when he said Mani might have Stockholm syndrome?

I took one of her teddy bears, she had a lot of them. I used to buy her a teddy bear every month, and she would get rid of the old ones but there's one that she kept. When I asked her why she told me that it used to help her fall asleep.. I looked at it while busy turning it around..

Me: Come back home Mani, I promise that things will be very different this time around

–

XOLELW

A

Now I wished that I didn't come here, Master hurt me with what he said while I was just

asking a simple question. I was sitting on the couch while crying, been doing that for awhile now and I had turned off the light, the Tv was on but the sound was off.. I heard the bedroom door opening and closing, now his guilty conscience doesn't allow him to fall asleep.. He made his way to me and I fixed my eyes on the Tv, he crouched right in front of me and put his hand on my thigh. I removed it..

Him: I'm sorry

Me: First thing tomorrow I'm driving back home

Him: Don't say that.. Angisho ngiyaxolisa (I am apologizing)He

wiped my tears..

Him: Okay ke.. We'll do it your way, tomorrow morning will get tested?I

shrugged my shoulders..

Him: It's been a while since we last saw each other, we supposed to be enjoying spending time together this weekend not fighting like this

He was right about that.. Him:

I'm sorry let's go to bedHe

kissed me on my cheek.. Him:

Ngiyak'cela tuu (please)

Master can melt any girl's heart if that's even possible, I don't know how to describe the person that he is but he can definitely charm his way into your soul too... He picked me up

Him: And maybe then we can buy a lot of condoms tomorrow

I wrapped my legs around his waist as his hand were holding me on my butt making sure that I don't fall.. I wrapped my arms around his neck..

Me: We won't need them

Him: Are you sure?

Me: If what you said was right then..

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

I laid my head on his shoulder as we made our way to the bedroom to sleep..43

JOJO

I realized the next morning that I have spent a night at Nomfundo's place. I think I passed out while we were laying on her bed, we didn't have sex. Checking my phone I had at least 4 missed calls from Armani, It's still early in our relationship for me to be fucking up like this. I made my way to the kitchen from her bedroom, she was having breakfast

Me: Why didn't you wake me up?

Her: I tried but you didn't wanna wake up I

looked at the time and it was 7:45..

Me: I gotta get home and think of a good explanation or else I'll be single Her: I

have a Dr's appointment today at 12 in the afternoon

Me: Why didn't you tell me a bit sooner?

Her: I am telling you now and you don't have to come since you obviously in a lot of trouble

Me: Are you insane? I will be coming

Her: You will meet me there then Me:

Cool I'll do that

I took my keys and phone.. Me:

See you at the Dr's office Her:

Okay

I went over and kissed her on the cheek and left..

—

MONG

Z

The Dr suggested a wheelchair as a mode of transportation whenever I wanna go to the bathroom or move around the hospital since my major operation was around my stomach. Each time when I try to walk on my own I feel an excruciating pain arising from that area, but still I am not invested in using a wheelchair. I feel like if I use a wheelchair I won't be motivated to try and walk on my own so I am using crutches... The Nurse helped me to get on the bed again..

Her: You overdid it this morning

Me: I have to push myself or else I won't leave this place
She passed me the oxygen mask..

Me: Thank you

My Father and my little Brother walked in..

Monde: Hey Mongz

Me: Mo.. Are you good man?

He made his way to me and we bumped fists...Him:

I'm good.. Are you good?

Me: I'm good

They greeted the Nurse..

Nurse: I will come back later

Me: Thank you

She walked out..

Dad: How are you feeling today?

Me: I'm getting there.. I'm pushing myself to get better
Dad:

Don't overdo it

Me: I'll be fine

Monde: I got another merit at school
Me:

See.. That's my boy

Dad: Yaa he's doing very well at school, though your accident almost affected him
Me: I'll be careful next time

Dad: Or maybe get a chauffeur for the time being
I nodded...

We both looked at Monde as he got his phone out and kept himself busy with it..
Dad: Tell me something..

I looked at him...

Him: What really happened between you and Armani that Sunday morning? Did she perhaps say something to you that got you upset?

I thought for a while..

Me: I don't remember

I remembered very well what she told me..

Dad: I know how you feel about her but I think that you should stay away from her
Me: Why?

Him: Armani is now with Jojo

Me: What?

Him: They were on the papers not long ago

Me: That's Impossible.. Armani doesn't want anything to do with the Ndarha's not after what they did to her

Dad: What did they do to her?
I looked at Monde..

Me: Ndarha used too.. There was a lot of unpleasant things that were done to her by him at that house

Dad: Well then it doesn't look that way because she is with Jojo now
I was confused by what he was saying..

Dad: That's why you need to let it go and let her be.. She seems and sounds like a confused girl, I am utterly disappointed in her playing you like that against Jojo. She never came across like one of those girls to me..

It was disappointing, it was very disappointing..

—

XOLELW

A

The first thing we did that morning was to visit a medical surgery around the area so that we can do the Hiv test. It's not that I doubt Master but I think it will strengthen the trust in our relationship if we did this test. We received pre-counseling before the test, and we were going to receive post-counseling after the test. While we were waiting for the results, I received a call from my Father. My heart almost stopped beating. I looked at it with my palms sweating and my throat dry, I will definitely crack if I answer his call..

Dr: You can go ahead and answer it

Me: No it's okay

I put it on silence..

Master looked at me, and I looked at the Dr waiting for the results..

—

ARMAN

I

By the time Jojo got home I was already dressed and ready to leave. I won't take what he did last night lightly, because then he will do it again and again..

Him: Mani I am so sorry

He tried to touch me but I stepped back..

Him: I lost track of time at the office

I looked at him and he didn't look like someone who was working late. People who were working late present with a few signs, like fatigue. Jojo looked fine..

Me: I'm not going to do this with you, please take me home Him:

Take you home? I thought this was home

I zipped my bag..

Him: doll come on

Me: Please take me home

Him: Can we at least talk about it?I

shook my head..

Me: There's nothing to talk about, I don't wanna talk about it.. Please take me home JojoHe

sighed..

Him: Fine.. Let me shower first then pack a bagI

wonder if Jojo and I we going to work..

—

NATASCH

I

I had an unusual visitor, worse it wasn't even visiting hours. I am suspecting he bribed his way in.. It was empty in the visiting room, was just him sitting at one of the tables. Imade my way to him, I did not know this person at all..

He got up...

Him: Nataschi?

I hope he is not a lawyer, I told Jojo not to get me one..I sat

down as he did too..

Me: Who are you?

Him: Someone who is looking for the truthI

kept quiet..

Him: I know that you didn't kill Bonza, are you covering up for someone? Are youcovering up for Jojo?

Me: Who are you?

Him: As I have said before.. I am someone who is looking for the truth

I stood up..

Me: I don't have to do this with you

Him: If you're found guilty, you going down for a long timeMe: I'll
take my chances

Him: Look I am sent here to reason with you and get the truth, you don't wanna go against
my bosses.. Life for you around here can be cruel and you might even get aharsh sentence

Me: Are you threatening me?

Him: No I'm giving you a friendly advice He
stood up too and buttoned his jacket..

Him: I'll come again sometime when you have changed your mindHe
took his briefcase and walked out..

–

XOLELW

A

The ride back to his place was depressing and quiet, I was lost in my own thoughts and I kept on
looking at my middle finger. I had left my ring at home.. When we got home I went straight to
the bedroom, that call really disturbed my rational thinking..

Master: I thought that you would be thrilled seeing that I'm Hiv negativeMe:

Yaa.. It's good news

Him: Kwenzakalani? (what's going on) since you got that call you've been acting verystrange..

I looked at him..

Him: Ringa nami (Talk to me)

Me: That phone call was from my Dad.. I think he's back

Him: I thought you said you told your Mom that you going to visit your Sister

Me: I did but.. I don't know if my Father will buy that story, that man is not easy to fool

Him: Xolelwa you can't live like this.. If you don't wanna do this marriage thing vele njeuphume nendaba (tell him the truth)

Me: My Father is a very ruthless man Master, he won't hesitate to have you hurt and I can't risk that.. I love you too much to have you hurt and your Aunt will hate me

Him: Then this is how you want us to do things? Be sneaky and hope that he doesn't find out?

I sat on the bed..

Him: bheka ke.. I might have a plan but I don't think that you going to like it Me: Will

it work?

Him: It has potential risks but it might work Me:

Okay.. Tell me about it

–

ARMAN

I

We did drive back home, though this place has a lot of bad memories but at least it doesn't Harbour loneliness..

Jojo: Can we talk now?

He opened the kitchen door for me.. Me:

No

I made my way in..

Him: But I lost track of time at work

Me: I know you lying so there's no use talking about it

As we made our way to the staircase, I heard a familiar voice nearing. I stopped..

Ndarha made his way in, into the kitchen. I let go of my bag and it dropped to the floor, everything played in slow motion from there.

He was on the phone when he walked in, he paused and looked at us. Then he continued talking..

Him: Yes I understand very well... That's good I like the idea

His eyes made their way to me, he looked at me from head-to-toe..

Ndarha: I am actually on my way now.. I'll meet you there so that we can talk more about it

He looked at his wrist watch..

Him: Yes thank you.. I'll see you then.. Bye

He lowered his phone and fixed his hat with the same hand that was holding his glasses. He then passed by us and made his way to the door while putting on his glasses, Jojo got a bit closer to me.. Ndarha chuckled while slightly shaking his head and whistled his way to the door, he was doing his signature walk with his other hand buried deep inside pocket..

I looked at him until he made his way out, I jumped a little when Jojo put his arm around my shoulders..

Him: Are you okay?

I slowly nodded as the door closed..44

NATASCHI

I waited for the Person in front of me to finish and then after it was my turn to make a phone call. I called Jojo, and it took him a while to pick up..

Him: Hello

Me: Hey it's me

Him: Is everything okay?

Me: No.. Someone came to see me today

Him: Someone?

Me: Some gentleman.. He said that I need to tell him the truth because he knows that I'm covering up for you

Him: What?? Only the 3 of us know about this and I know my Sister would never run her

mouth to anyone

Me: I didn't tell anyone, I'm in jail remember?

Him: Did you recognize the gentleman? Does he look familiar?

Me: No I don't know him and he doesn't look familiar.. He said if I don't tell him everything his bosses are going to be pissed and they going to make my life a living hell around here

Him: I will make a few calls, we need to get you protection and get you the hell out of there!

Me: How is everything going there?

Him: It's difficult without you and everyone is busy asking questions Me:

That's sad

Him: I will get you out

I looked at the next person on the queue.. Me: I

have to go I'll call you some other time Him:

Take care of yourself

Me: I'll do that.. Bye

Him: Bye

I put the phone back..

—

ARMAN

I

Jojo had accompanied Nomfundo to the Dr, he didn't even want to go I forced him to go.

He was concerned that Ndarha might violate me but Mam'Gabi offered to put an eye on me, and if something uncomfortable happens I will call him right away..

I was in the guest room busy tidying up, I ended with fixing my teddy bears on the bed. I took my favourite and looked at it..

Voice: That one has always been your favourite

My heart skipped a bit, I looked at him as he made his way in. He was without his hat and glasses..

Ndarha: I won't hurt you.. I promise, I'll even leave the door wide open, someone will hear you when you scream

He opened the door wider, and I searched for "Calmness" deep inside of me but all I came back with was fear..

He got closer and I stepped back, then he stopped. We stood a distance away from each other..

Him: Being in Kenya for so long made me to be sober with my thoughts I don't know where he was going with this..

Him: One thing I've realized is that you don't hurt someone that you claim to truly love He can't be doing this, not now..

Him: Armani I've caused you pain for quite a long time now, my love was toxic to you I still remained quiet..

Him: For that I'm sorry

I gave him a weird look, Ndarha doesn't apologize.. He's too proud for that..

Him: I may never take back everything that I did to you but I can make sure that your life from here on until you die is better than what it was a few years ago

I listened carefully..

Him: I am setting you free.. Your money is still in your account, you can move out if you want too. Go back to school and do all the things that you have always wanted to do

I don't think I was hearing him right..

Him: I'm very glad that you back with Jojo, I'm glad you guys found your way back to each other after all true love conquers everything

This was not the Ndarha that I know.. He

literally went down on his knees..

Him: This is me saying I'm sorry, and this is also me saying I'm setting you free

I didn't know how to react..

Him: You can go anywhere that you want and do everything that you have always wanted to do, I swear I won't come after you

He then got up..

Him: I hope that one day you will forgive me for everything that I did to you.. I'm truly sorry
Armani

He walked out and left me there very confused..

—

XOLELW

A

Master: I know it's a crazy idea but..

Me: It is crazy.. People bring babies into this world because they want to have babies, not because they..

I exhaled..

Him: Another option is to go and put a bullet in between his eyes
I laughed..

Me: Ya that's crazy

Him: I love you, I wanna be with you and I want to see you happy
Me:

My Father is not my only majorly concern in this situation

I looked at him..

Me: I need to know that you will be with me through it all, as time goes on I don't want to be stuck with what was a mutual decision between us

Him: I'm going to be here through it all.. I promise
I nodded..

Me: Okay let's do it

Him: Are you sure? You don't want to think about it first?
I shook my head no..

Me: I trust you and if you say this is going to work then.. It's worth a try

Crazy as the idea of having a child might sound, I hope it does work. I truly love Master and I wanna be with him, no one said that love was going to be easy..

He came closer to me and put his hands around my waist, he leaned over and kissed me.. It was a bit uncomfortable at first because this whole thing is not happening spontaneously, it's a planned act. As soon as the idea of Lukhele being the one to break my virginity crossed my thoughts, I willingly and fully committed to what we were doing..

He unbuttoned my t-shirt at the top and took it off, we then went back to kissing.. What started off as uncomfortable, ended up

Creating a special moment between us.. He stared deep into my eyes as he ran his thumb on my lower lip..

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

He picked me up and placed me on the bed, he removed my jeans and took off his clothes too. I was left with my bra and underwear only, he was left with his briefs.

He kissed me on my thigh all the way up to my tummy, then he moved to my neck.. I was surprised to even have my body reacting to what he was doing, I have never had a man do this to me... [REMOVED]

—

XOLISW

A

I received a call from a number that I didn't recognize. I put everything down and answered the call..

Me: Hello?

Voice: Xoliswa.. It's me

It was my Father..

I sighed..

Me: Can I help you with anything?

Him: How are you?

Me: I'm good

Him: That's good to hear.. Your Mom says Xolelwa is visiting you for the weekendMe:

Yeah so?

Him: I've been trying to call her but she's not picking upMe:

That's my problem because?

He didn't answer right away, he let at least 10 seconds elapsed before answering..

Him: I want you guys to come over for dinner, I want to talk to you. Jojo and Armani are around, take it as a family meeting

Me: If I'm not busy I'll come

Him: It's a Saturday what can you possibly be busy with later?Me: I

have things to do.. So I will see

Him: I understand.. Please do let your sister knowMe:

Yeah whatever Ndarha

I hung up..

That was weird..

—

ARMAN

I

Still very much confused by what Ndarha said I made my way downstairs so I could talk to Mam'Gabi about this. It felt as if like I was dreaming, I mean.. It has to be a dream

As I was making my way to the sliding door that led to the pool, I sort of noticed Ndarha at the main kitchen. He looked like he was with one of the chefs. I made way there and stood next to the door to see what was going on..

Ndarha: This is good.. You prepared this all by yourself?Her:

Yes sir

Ndarha: This is my last bite

She giggled..

Her: That's what you said the last time

Him: Hmmmmm.. This is really good

Her: It's nothing serious..

Him: The chefs I have around here cannot put a simple traditional dish togetherShe giggled again..

Him: You love cooking?

Her: Very much

Him: You should go to a culinary school

Her: That sounds expensive

Him: Not if I'm funding you, and then when you done you can work here up until you get a good job.. Maybe at a hotel, I have contacts in high places

Her: Really Mr Ndarha? You would do-

That's when I made my way in..

Ndarha put the fork down when he saw me, he was now on casual wear..Him:

Please pass me my glasses

The girl passed him his glasses..

Him: Think about it and get back to me

Her: Yes sir

He smiled at her and then made his way to the door, I stood there with my arms foldedblocking the door a bit..

Him: May I?

I bit the inner part of my cheek as I slowly moved out of his way with my arms stillfolded..

Him: Thank you

He walked out and I looked at the girl..

Me: Are you new?

She nodded.. Her:

Yes I'm new

She was a beautiful young lady..

Me: How old are you?

Her: 20

Me: Who hired you?

Her: I know one of the chefs who asked me to come and teach them a few traditional dishes

I nodded.. Me:

You fired

Her eyes widened..

Her: I'm sorry but -

Me: My name is Armani and I supervise all the departments around here, so no one told me about you... Truthfully speaking you working here illegally

She kept quiet..

Her: But Mr Nd-

Me: Ohw he's not going to help you secure a spot around here.. I run this ship and everyone will tell you, you should've asked someone first

Her: Please Mam' I really need this job I

looked at her..

Me: Okay.. Maybe we can work something out She

seemed relieved..

Me: You will be a maid

Her: A mai-

Me: Take it or leave it, you will work your way up

Her: I'll take it

Me: Good! Let's get one thing straight while we at it.. I don't wanna see you in this kitchen or any other kitchen, busy cooking for any member of the Ndarha family do we understand?

Her: Yes Mam'

Me: They not just another typical family so I'm a bit strict and careful on who prepare their food

Her: Yes Mam'

Me: Good! You can take off the chef jacket and look for one the maids around here, they will give you a maid uniform

Her: Yes Mam' and thank you for the opportunity Me:

What's your name?

Her: Zoleka, but they call me Zoe

Me: I'm not your friend so I'll call you Zoleka

Her: Yes Mam'

Me: I'll be watching you like a hawk, one mistake you out.. Understood? Her:

Loud and clear Mam'

Me: Good.. You can be excused

She made her way out.. I looked at the plate that had food in it, I took it and threw it in the trash bin..

45

ARMANI

Later on that day I prepared dinner for the whole family since Nonts hinted that Ndarha called out a family meeting which was going to be exactly at 19:00. Looking at the time, we now had about an hour left until the meeting is carried out. Preparing dinner actually

went quicker because Nonts decided to help me, and to my amazement her mood today was better. She was singing and surprisingly I didn't see her with a glass of whiskey...

Me: You seem happy today

Her: Yes I am

Me: someone sent you a bottle of whiskey? She
laughed..

Her: That's funny, but no..

She looked at the glass..

Her: Ndarha suggested that we work on our marriage, we have decided that we gonngo and see a marriage counsellor

Me: That's good.. That's very good to hear Her:

Put that there

I took the glass and placed it exactly where she directed me too..

Jojo made his way in just as we were preparing the table, so much has happened today I didn't even have the energy to continue being mad at him..

Nonts: I'm glad you home.. Go freshen up quickly, exactly at 19:00 the family meeting is starting

Jojo: What family meeting?

Nonts: You don't know?

Jojo: Know what?

Nonts: Your Fath-

Jojo: Ndarha

Nonts: Don't disturb me when I'm talking Jojo

kept quiet..

Nonts: Your Father called a family meeting, he wants everyone to attend the meeting at 19:00. I am sure the twins are also on their way

Jojo: What meeting now?

Nonts: I don't know but.. There's something

different about him, something hopeful Jojo:

Something hopeful?

Nonts: Yes.. I think he wants to change his ways and we going to start working on our marriage

Jojo mocked Nonts statement with a chuckle..Jojo:

You joking right?

Nonts: I'm not joking

Jojo: Then you must've had a lot to drink

Nonts: What's wrong with him changing?

Jojo: People like him never change but if you want to believe it then good for you. You guys can work on your long dead marriage and leave me out of it, I am way too old for mediocre

That statement really rubbed Nonts the wrong way..

Nonts: People are capable of change! Not so long ago you had a drug scandal and you preached about changing, everyone is capable of change

Jojo: Everyone can change, just not Ndarha

Nonts put the plate down..

Her: Armani you have everything under control?Me:

I think so

Her: Thank you.. I'll come down at 19:00

She walked out and I looked at Jojo..

Me: That was insensitive

Him: I told her the truth

Me: If you can change.. So can he

Him: Excuse me?

Me: I'm just saying.. You told me that you have changed and I forgave you, why are you discouraging her?

Him: I know that I messed up but you don't have to be team Ndarha just to get back at me

I kept quiet..

Him: Look at me

I kept on fixing a few things...

Him: Hey!.. Look at me

I looked at him..

Him: Have you forgotten what he did to you? What he did to all of us? If he wanted to change then he would've done that long time ago, if Ndarha is really changing then he must be dying

Going back and forth with him about this, is going to be useless.. He came all the way around to me, he wrapped his hands around my waist and kissed me on my neck..

Him: Are we cool now?

Me: We cool

He kissed me again and I switched him off by separating from him and going to the other side of the table, I heard him exhaling

Him: I guess we not cool as yet

(Silence)

Him: Guess I'll go and freshen up for the damn meeting

I let him be.. When I noticed that I was alone, I put the table spoon down and closed my eyes..

Me: Armani what's wrong with you? What's wrong with you? I kept on asking myself that question over and over again..

—

MONGZ

I wanted nothing more but to be out of this place, I wanted to go back to my life..The Dr
walked in, he didn't have his coat on

Me: Heading home?

Him: Yes.. My shift ended about an hour agoMe:

Shouldn't you have left an hour ago?

Him: You know how it is after a long shiftI

looked at him and laughed a little..

Me: You sly bastard aren't you married?

Him: Doctors can work up to12 hours a day, trust me when I get home I want to sleep soI have to
keep myself busy here at work, it's nothing serious just servicing each other

Me: I don't even think I wanna hear moreHe

laughed..

Me: Are you even supposed to be telling me this?Him:

No because it's supposed to be a secret Me: Your

secret is safe with me

Him: I passed by to see how you holding upMe:

I don't get it down like that with guys

Him: Don't kid yourself, I just heard one of the Nurses saying you pushing yourself waytoo hard

Me: I have too so that my Dr can see that I'm making good progress and discharge meHim: What's
out there? Why do you wanna be out of here so bad?

(Silence)

Me: Can I ask you something?

Him: I have 5min

Me: I know this girl who is a maid and, she has been abused so badly by the family she works for, what I don't understand is her not wanting to leave. As we speaking she is currently dating the Son

Him: Your story is a bit tricky.. Is the Son abusive too?

Me: He once threw her down and she hurt her shoulder pretty bad.. Look it has been years of sexual, physical, and emotional abuse from the Father to this girl. I thought that she would finally break free but, it seems like she has gone from the father to the son.. For the life of me I don't get it why is she still there because she's not even held captive in a room somewhere she has free will to go anywhere she wants. I'm even thinking she wants to leave in a coffin

Him: That sounds more like Stockholm syndrome.. Stockholm syndrome is when the victim suddenly develops affection and feelings of trust for their abuser, in most cases even if they can be rescued from that life and environment they tend to go back because the abuse and their abuser is all they've known

Me: Can it be cured?

Him: Counselling from a psychiatrist can be effective especially if the abuse has emotionally and mentally enslaved the victim, though at times it takes years for the victim to recover.. The goal is to make them see that they were abused make them experience life without their abuser

I sighed..

Him: Most people tend to frown or judge the victims because they don't understand. Stockholm syndrome is viewed as Taboo in the society, how can you go back to your abuser? going back means you enjoying it, which is not true. They have suffered mentally to even realize that what happened to them is wrong, it's more harder if they dependant on the abuser. The abuser gains more power to control and brainwash them

Hearing him talking like that was discouraging..

Me: How do I even begin to help or fix someone who has that?

Him: It will take a lot of strength and a lot of time but it's not impossible. It needs dedication and patience

Me: Where do I begin?

Him: You show them the beautiful side of life, you show them that life can still be lived

without their abuser, you show them that pain is not all there is to their life. Genuine happiness, love, and peace shouldn't be foreign to them

I nodded..

Me: I get you

Him: It takes a real man to love such a broken woman and fix her.. Just remember that years of mental slavery to abuse cannot be undone in just a few days

Me: Then you need to let me go

Him: I'm still keeping you for observation, I don't want your operation getting an infection and I wanna see if you can survive for days without that oxygen mask. If you check out on those two, then I'll check you out.. For now you stuck with me buddy

Me: It seems like that

I need to get out of here, I need to get better so that I can help Armani beat this thing with the Ndarha's. Even if we don't end up together but I care a lot about her, I want to see her free and living her life without that toxic family..

—

XOLELW

A

After the first round I took a lukewarm bath and Master went out to get me a few things that can ease the soreness. He got me bathing salts and some ointment. We then decided to go again after a while and the second round he was more attentive and he did something that I really liked which was going down on me. Basically that's what I liked more and not forgetting him sucking on my nipples too, which made it more nicer...

We were at it most of the day with minor breaks in between, and right now I didn't want anything anymore. I was dead tired, very sore and urinating was a challenge..

He came back up from playing with his tongue around my sore entrance in hopes of "soothing" the area.. He kissed me..

Him: Is that better?

Me: No.. I just wanna sleep and bath later on using the bathing salt and maybe it will get better, I'm very tired

He laid next to me and I laid my head on his chest.. He started playing with my fingers

as I slowly drifted away to sleep with his arm around me, deep down I was praying that this moment never ends.. This was the best moment of my life..

—

ARMAN

I

Things around the dinner table were tense, no one said anything as we waited for Ndarha to make his way in. Xoliswa was here, and Nonts seemed to be still upset by what Jojo said..

Nonts: Xoliswa

Xoliswa looked at he..

Nonts: uthi kwenzekile ntoni ngo Xolelwa? (what happened with Xolelwa)

We all looked at each other because we knew where Xolelwa was, and we thought her "visiting" Xols was going to be a good cover up until Ndarha called out a meeting..

Xols: She stayed behind, she didn't wanna be a part of this meeting

That was a weak excuse. Xols better pray her Father believes that story especially since Xolelwa has never defied him..

Ndarha finally showed up when everyone was starting to get impatient, he kissed Nonts on the cheek and then sat down across the table..

Him: My apologies for being late

Xols: Can we get to it already?

He looked at all of us..

Him: Where is Xolelwa?

We looked at Xols..

Xols: She stayed behind

Ndarha: What do you mean she stayed behind? Xols:

She didn't wanna be a part of this meeting

Ndarha: Is someone going to tell me where Xolelwa is? Can someone tell me the truth?

I knew that excuse wasn't going to sell..We

all kept quiet..

Ndarha: Then I guess I'll have to make a few calls so they can locate her, after all her car has a tracker

He excused himself from the table..

Nonts looked at us..

Her: Where is my baby? What's happening?We

kept quiet..

She got up..

Her: Nizakuyithetha inyani (You will tell the truth)She

walked away to join her husband..

Xols: Shiiiiit!!!

Jojo: Get Xolelwa on the fucken phone right now (Whispering)Xols: I

did.. Her phone is off

Jojo took his phone..

Me: What are you going to do

Jojo: Calling someone to locate her first before that bastard does

He got up and walked out, Xols and I looked at each other not knowing what to do, though I would've came up with a better excuse than Xols..

46

ARMANI

Jojo came back and we looked at him hoping that he will give us good news..

Jojo: Couldn't get hold of anyone, it's a Saturday night and people are getting drunkI looked at Xols..

Me: But Xols what were you thinking? That excuse was definitely not going to sell

Her: Excuse you Armani I didn't hear you say anything that sounded better than my excuse

Something was definitely not right with Xols, Yes she is a bit arrogant but her attitude today was way off..

Ndarha and Nontsikelo came back..

Ndarha: Her tracker has been disabled We

all kept quiet..

Nonts: Her phone is off, her tracker has been disabled I think someone should start talking because my baby might be in trouble

We still remained quiet..

Ndarha: If she's not back by tomorrow then I'll make a few calls again Me: Can

I please be excused?

Nonts: Uyaphi ke ngoku? (where are you going now)

I got up and made my way to the kitchen to call Master, somehow I also got worried a bit since her phone has been off and now her tracker has been disabled..

Master picked up after I have tried him for a long time.. Him:

Skeem (sleepy voice)

Me: Hey Skeem.. Is Xolelwa around?

Him: Ya but she's sleeping

I let out a sigh of relief..

Me: Was checking because her phone is off and now her car tracker has been disabled

Him: I had the tracker disabled when I drove out with her car to go buy her something, I figured that her father would use it to locate her. Her phone has been off for the same reason

Master was smarter than I thought.. Me:

Thank God (Whispering)

Him: Skeem I'm very tired can I check on you tomorrow morning?Me: Yes

no problem.. Tomorrow it is

Him: Sharp

At least Xolelwa was safe. I turned around to find Nonts standing not that far from me. That freaked me out a bit, how much of that phone call did she hear??

Her: Who were you talking too?I

looked at her..

Me: I may have to answer to you as a servant but personal calls I don't have to answer to you

I made my way back to the dinning table and she followed me.. I pulled the chair and sat down..

Xols: Finally!! can we start now?

Nonts sat down too across me, and her look made my skin crawl..

Ndarha: I called this meeting because I have a few things to say to you guys We

listened to him..

Ndarha: I know that things are not good between us, I haven't been a good father and a good husband

Jojo chuckled..

Ndarha: When I was in Kenya I had an epiphany, it's amazing how loneliness can give you sober thoughts. I realized that I cannot be without my family and I hope that it's not too late for us to try and fix things

I waited to see where he was going with this.

Him: I cannot take back what I have done but I can try to make up for it He

turned to Xoliswa..

Him: I know that it was wrong of me to send you far away in hopes that the military was going to change you back to what I wanted you to be, I should've tried to understand who you're and for that I'm sorry. I want to make things right, starting with you giving me

your bank account so that you can get a certain allowance every month until you are well stable enough to stand on your own

Xols: I don't need no damn thing from you

Nonts: Xoliswa!

Xols: It's the truth.. It's too late to be playing Daddy now She pointed at Jojo..

Xols: That has been my Dad for all this time, when I left the military he was the one who helped me financially, he got me a place to stay and provided for me until I started my own business. If it wasn't for him I would be homeless, he is the only one who took it upon himself to find me and be there for me when I had no one. Not long ago he got me a car, I don't know what relationship you and I have to work on because I'm good.. I don't need you and I don't need your damn money! I've been doing fine without it

This wasn't going well..

Ndarha: Jojo..

Jojo: Don't even start with me, I don't wanna hear it

Xoliswa: If you so much of a changed man how come you still forcing Xolelwa to marry someone that she doesn't love, what father would sell his Daughter to an old man?

Jojo: Yeah let's talk about, release Xolelwa from this shame of a commitment. It's disgusting!

Ndarha: It would be better if Xolelwa was here to speak for herself, now I get what you two are saying but I didn't force Xolelwa to do anything. Lukhele had an interest in her and Xolelwa agreed

Jojo: That's bullshit and you know it! Xolelwa is a pushover and she's very scared of you. She probably agreed just because she wanted to make you happy and continue being the obedient child that she is

Ndarha: When she comes back we will definitely talk about this Lukhele situation

Xols: Nonts are you also in this epiphany shit? Will you also lay down your sins on the table? Let's start by how you were quiet when your husband abused us

Ndarha: It's not your Mother's fault.. She had no choice

Jojo: We all have a choice

Xols: The same choice Armani didn't have when you were busy sexually and physically abusing her?

I can't believe Xoliswa brought that up, It made Ndarha uncomfortable especially since Nonts was at the table..

Xols: I didn't hear you saying shit about that

Ndarha: I did talk to Armani about that, I did apologize Xols

stood up..

Xols: Well then thank you for wasting my time with all this meeting bullshit! I'm leaving Jojo

turned to me..

Jojo: Go get our things.. I'll bring the car upfront

I stood up without saying anything and without making any eye contact with anyone, I made my way upstairs..

–

MONG

Z

Her: Easy..

She helped me to sit on the bed but somehow she lost balance and fell on top of me while I fell backwards on the bed..

Her: I am so sorry.. I hope I didn't hurt you She

got up..

Me: I'm good

Her: Sit up straight let me see

She did hurt me a little but, I wasn't going to say it because I didn't wanna make her feel bad.. Rebecca is the most sweetest Nurse that I've ever met, she's 26 years old and very much dedicated to her work..

She took off the bandage and checked my operation..

Me: See.. I'm good, I'm not even bleedingShe
closed her eyes..

Her: Thank God

She wrapped the bandage again..Her:

I'm really sorry

Me: It's fine

Her: Tell me if it's too tight

I held her hand and she looked at me..Me:

I'm good stop fussing

She smiled..

Her: I'm sorry.. Thing is we came a long way for you to be better so..Me: I

know and you did a very good job

We continued looking at each other..

Her: I'm going to need my hand back I

let go of her hand..

Me: I'm sorry

She giggled..

Her: It's okay

Me: Weren't you supposed to be on the morning shift?Her: I

changed shifts with a colleague

Me: You must be single

She giggled again..

Her: Well..

My Father made his way in..

Rebecca: And we done.. Are you sure that it's not too tight?Me: It's perfect

She smiled while fixing my shirt..

Me: Thank you

Her: It's my job

She was very beautiful I won't lie..

My Father broke our eye contact when he cleared his throat..Her: I.. I'll bring your dinner later

Me: Okay

She made her way out while greeting my father..Me:

What are you doing here so late?

Him: Looks like you and the Nurse are getting along very wellMe:

She's a very nice girl

He pulled the chair and sat down..

Him: How are you holding up?

Me: I'm getting used to breathing on my own now for 3 hours without using the oxygen mask, but walking is still a mission. After a few steps I get an excruciating pain from my stomach

Him: You will get there just don't push yourself too much

Me: I have too.. I need to be out of here so I can see how Armani is holding upHis expression changed..

Him: I don't think that girl is good for you

Me: That's because you don't know her that well

Him: I know her enough to see that she's not good for you, she left you here and went straight to Jojo's arms. Trust me she is a confused girl and I don't want her to confuse you more, so leave her alone

I didn't expect him to understand...

—

ARMAN

I

Nonts walked in as I waited for Jojo to come and help with the bags, she didn't look happy..

Her: You have been sleeping with my husband?I

didn't say anything..

Her: Xoliswa masked it as "sexual abuse" but I don't think soMe:

Nonts..

Her: Let me ask you something.. Did he hold a gun at you and forced you to sleep withhim?

Me: No..

Her: Did he threaten to kill you if you tell anyone about it?Me:

No..

Her: Exactly what did he do that made you not to say anything about the "Abuse" I didn't know what to say..

Her: Ndithetha nawe Armani!! (I'm talking to you)

Me: Nonts you won't understand

Her: Yes you right I won't understand! I won't understand how you opened your legs for my husband!! I won't understand the betrayal after everything that I've done for you!! I should've put you out that same day after we buried your Mother!!

I can't believe she was saying all of those things to me..

Her: Let me ask you something, did you at some point sleep with my husband here in my house?

I kept quiet..

Her: Did you?? (screaming)

I really didn't know what to say to her..

Her: Sies!!!!

She spat on me..

Her: First of all I want you out of my house, and then I want you to leave my son! You started with my Son years ago, then his Father, now my Son again?? Ungcolile Armani!!!(you're dirty)

Tears were at the verge of falling..

Her: Just to think I put you under my armpit and loved you as if like you were my ownchild then you stab me in the back by sleeping with my husband!!

She slapped me..

Her: ulihule mntana ndini!! (you're a whore)

She slapped me again and from thereon things went south, she attacked me physically and all I could do was just scream

I have seen Nonts Angry, but I have never seen her this angry. She was slapping me, pulling my hair, pushing me around and she grabbed some heavy object that was next to the dressing table. If it wasn't for Jojo rushing his way in and stopping her she would've hit me with it on my head and gave me a concussion..

Jojo: What are you doing?

Jojo grabbed the object from her and put it down, she stood there breathing heavy while parting the weave from her face..

Her: Why Armani? Why? (crying)

What do you say to a woman who is that broken? Her:

Ubucinga ukuba andazi? (You think I didn't know)Jojo:

Ma..

Nonts: Bendazi (I knew) I waited all those years for you to come to me and tell me what he was doing to you, at least that would've made me feel better knowing that you were against what he was doing but you never came.. You never came, instead you stole my husband from me (crying).. Everyday you took the love that he had for me!!

I sat on the bed crying..

Her: I will never forgive you for that

She looked at Jojo..

Her: Get this thing out of my house!!

She walked out..

—

MONG

Z

Me: Dad I need to tell you somethingHe

looked at me..

Me: Ndarha is an evil bastard

Him: Why?

Me: Armani told me that Ndarha has been abusing her sexuallyHim:

What?

Me: He would also go as far as hitting her and threatening to kill her should she runaway

He was speechless for a moment..

Him: I don't know what to say.. I mean I know that Ndarha is heartless but this..(Silence)

Him: Why isn't Armani doing something about it? Why doesn't she just leave theNdarha's?

Me: It's not easy

Him: not easy in what way because instead of running away she went to the son..Mongezi was Armani really abused or she's just playing the Father and the Son?

I exhaled..

Him: This is the more reason why you need to stay away from this girl, she is sicker thanI thought! from hereon I want you to focus on yourself and getting better, leave this

Armani alone

—

XOLELW

A

We woke up at around 5am the next day because Master had to go to work and I had to go back home. It really broke me deep inside having to go back to my depressing life after the amazing weekend that I had with him.. I didn't wanna go, I didn't wanna go back home to my life..

Master: You okay? Me:

I'm not going backHim:

Huh?

Me: I'm not going back.. I'm staying here with you

Him: Skat bheka.. (love look)

Me: I don't care what you say but I'm not going back, I'm staying here.. If my Father wants me back home, he will come here and dragged me back home kicking and screaming or in a body bag.. I'm not leaving

47

NONTSIKELELO

Armani has been like a Daughter to me, I took it upon myself to fill that void of not having a Mother the minute I agreed for her to continue staying with us. I treated her no different from the rest of my kids, in fact her and Jojo even went to the same private school. I was a bit disappointed when I learned that she was romantically involved with Jojo later on in her teen years and at the same time my heart was at ease because she was a wonderful girl who respected herself. Not even once have I heard her saying she'sgoing out to have fun, nor have I seen her consuming alcohol. She even went on to be a role model to Xolelwa, She was the big Sister that Xolelwa needed..

My excessive drinking started when my Husband fell out of love with me, and then fell inlove with Armani. They thought that they could keep it a secret but, I long noticed.

It hurt, it hurt a lot because Ndarha and I we go way back. I mean, I sacrificed a lot forhim including choosing him over my family when he was still broke. I was the one providing for us, supported him in this whole Political thing even though I didn't know

where it was leading to. It was very difficult having my husband chase a far fetched dream of being a Politician, while I had to slave everyday to put food on the table and it became worse because there was another mouth to feed, I had to singlehandedly take care of Jojo too up until our finances took a different turn. Ndarha has always been a bittough, he has been through a lot as a child suffering from physical and emotional abuse in the hands of his own Father and I think that his abusive past is the reason why he is like this today. There's a lot of things from there that he never dealt with and the kids became his victims, especially Jojo. Yes I could've stood up to him and protected my kids but if I left where would I have I went too? with 3 kids and without a job? My family long disowned me. Ndarha had made it clear that if I leave with the kids then I'll be on my own, and I really wanted my children to have the best of life including a good education. Despite that, I was also a victim of his abuse I lived in fear of my own husband. There wasn't much that I could've done..

Xoliswa claimed that Armani was sexually abused of which I find very difficult to believe. I asked her if she was threatened and she said "No", so why didn't she ever come to me and tell me about what was happening? I monitored her most of the time and she showed no signs of a girl who was being abused. If your child can be sexually abused you would know because the behaviour starts to change, they no longer act the same.

They withdrawn from the world and they no longer that jolly child you used to know, and in Armani's case there were no red flags. She still remained the same..

Me: Thank you Gabi

Her: Can I get you something else?

Me: No thank you

She walked away..

Me: Err Gabi

She came back..

Her: Yes Mam?

Me: Thank you for coming in on a Sunday

Her: It's not a Problem

Me: Starting from tomorrow I would like you to take the ropes and supervise the other maids

Her: I don't follow

Me: Armani is no longer a part of this family, she left last night for good

Her: I.. That doesn't sound like her to just pack up and leave without a reason I saw my
Husband walking down the stairs..

Me: Armani is history that's all I can say to you Her:

Yes Mam'

Me: Thank you.. You may excuse yourself

She bowed and then walked away while greeting Ndarha..

Ndarha: You still on your nightwear, that means you skipping church today? He sat
down..

Him: Jojo mentioned something about you attacking Armani last night? Before they left?

Me: Yes I did attack her

(Silence)

Him: Armani did nothing wrong, if you wanna crucify someone.. By all means please crucify me,
the s.. Everything that happened between us was never consensual, I took advantage of her

Me: You telling me what you want me to believe

Him: I'm telling you the truth

I picked up my glass that had whiskey in it and drank.. Him:

Drinking won't help sol-

Me: Don't you dare say that!! (shouting) I

put the glass down..

Me: After everything that you have put me through, falling in love with our Servant's Daughter?

Her: I am not in love with her

Me: Yes you're!! I.. Do you know how hard it was for me to witness your small little moments? You thought I was too drunk to see huh?

Him: Don't do this.. You only hurting yourself

Me: You know what.. My Parents were right about you I stood up and took my glass..

Me: I should've never let you in, because now you have ruined my life! And you ruined my kids! I walked away..

–

ARMAN

I

I stood at the sliding door and watched the rain pouring hard in the pool, the clouds appeared a bit dark indicating that the heavy rain won't stop anytime soon. Not forgetting the thunder that freaked me out every now and then.. I never slept last night, I was too heartbroken to even get sleep. I felt the pain literally piercing through my heart, that's how hard it was. It hurt a lot because even though Nonts had her own faults but she was the only thing I had closest to a Mother, after I lost mine. I knew that one day everything was going to come to light, I just didn't know that she was going to view things from this perspective. My heart broke more when I thought of Xolelwa, Nonts is obviously going to tell her and she's going to hate me. I can't imagine what this is going to do to her..

Jojo hugged me from behind as I wiped my tears, I know that he might have a lot to say but right now I didn't wanna hear anything.

I just wanted the world to close in on me..

–

XOLELW

A

Master had to go to work so we didn't talk much about that issue of me staying, he said that we will talk more about it when he gets back. I had the courage to switch on my phone and I had a lot of missed calls from different people, including my Fiancé Lukhele. The first person I called was Xoliswa, the phone call was carried out with me busy snooping around..

Xols: I hear what you saying but you can't just stayMe:

Why not? You and Jojo did it?

Her: Me and Jojo we were sent away and then we never came backMe: I

don't wanna go back there

Her: I understand but you need to go back and put everyone out of their misery. You need to break things off with Lukhele face to face and you need to talk to Dad

Me: I don't wanna talk to Dad, he's going to kill me

Her: He won't.. Apparently he had an epiphany while he was in Kenya, he claims to be a changed man

I laughed.. Me:

Yeah right

Her: Either way Xoks, you need to go back and talk to them. You can't just leave like thatI sighed..

Me: Fine I'll go later

Her: And call your Mom to tell her that you safeMe:

Okay I'll do that

Her: I love you

Me: I love you tooI

hung up..

I continued going through his things until I stumbled upon something that sent shivers down my spine, Master has a gun. That really freaked me out..

—

MONG

Z

Rebecca: Good morning

She was standing at the door..

Me: What are you doing here? Isn't it supposed to be your day off or something?
Her: It is
She made her way in..

Her: I was in the neighborhood and I thought I should stop by to see how you holding up
Me: You drove out in this weather?

She nodded..

Her: Yes I did

Me: That's a bit extreme

Her: Don't worry, I'm used to it

She sat down..

Her: How are you holding up?

Me: What can I say?

Her: Wanna take a walk around the hospital to see how far your legs can take you now?
Me: I guess so

Her: I'll get your crutches

Me: Thank you

She got them and then helped me to get out of bed..
Her:

Here you go

Me: Thank you
Her:

Are you good?
Me:

Yeah I'm good

Her: Okay then let's go

We made our way to the door..

Her: Don't forget to take it easy

Me: Yes Mother I will

She laughed..

—

ARMAN

I

Jojo was now in the shower, we had decided that we going to spend the rest of the dayIndoors since it was raining cats and dogs outside... While he was busy showering and whistling, I already had with me a drain cleaner that I found in his cleaning supplies, I opened it and I didn't hesitate nor did I think twice. I couldn't gulp it down all at once because of the bitter and burning taste, so I took big sips..

Me: I'm sorry Jojo (Crying)

I hope that by the time he's done, the drain cleaner would've served it's purpose..48

XOLELWA

On my way back to Johannesburg I called my Mother, since I didn't wanna be distractedI put her on loud speaker..

Ma: Xolelwa! Where are you?

Me: I'm on my way Ma

Ma: We have been trying to get a hold of you but..

Me: I know and I'm sorry.. I'll explain everything when I get home

Her: I'm happy to hear that you alright, I don't know what I would've done if somethinghappened to you

Me: I'm fine Ma..

Her: Okay we will talk when you get here

Me: Okay

Her: I love you

Me: I love you too

My mood changed drastically, it wasn't fun knowing that I was going back to my depressing life. If it was up to me, I would stay here in Mpumalanga forever..

—

JOJO

Stepping out of the bathroom to the bedroom, I was met by a horrific scene. Armani was on the floor and it looked like she was bleeding from her mouth. I quickly made my way to her..

Me: Armani...

I held her and tried to wake her up but she wasn't responding..Me:

No..No.. Don't do this to me! Come on wake up

Still she wasn't responsive..Me:

Armani wake up!

I looked around and I saw the drain cleaner, I got up from the floor and got my phone to call for help..

—

NDARH

A

The President's plan wasn't working at all, it did more damage than good.. I forfeited going to church and went to meet up with him at some golf course, unfortunately we couldn't just shut it down and stop people from entering. The owner wasn't having none of that..

Me: Your plan didn't work

Him: What do you mean?

Me: It did more harm than goodHe

looked ahead..

Him: Patience Ndarha

Me: Nonts attacked Armani physicallyHe

hit the ball but it missed the hole..

Him: She found out that you were sleeping with Armani?

Me: Yes.. My other Daughter Xoliswa brought it up last night while we were having dinner

He moved closer to the ball..

Him: It was bound to happen.. Nontsikelelo breaths fire, she's a scorned woman

Me: This is not working for me, this facade of a "changed" man is not working for me, it makes me look weak

Him: So you want to go back to the old Ndarha?

Me: Yes.. At least everyone knew their place, no one was urinating on my head. You should've seen how the kids were talking to me

Him: If you not happy with my Plan then okay.. Go back to your old self and let's see if it will produce good results

Me: It's not about producing good results it's about everyone knowing their place and showing me respect

He hit the ball and it went straight into the hole..

Him: Well then I tried so now I'm going to sit back and let you run your household and your family the way that you want

Me: I will show you that the old Ndarha was way better than this new Ndarha who seems weak

He handed me the golfing stick..

Him: Good luck then

Me: Things will go back to normal, I'm going to show them that I'm still the boss and I demand respect!

—

NOMFUND

O

My Mom came to see me yesterday when I called her and told her that we needed to talk, seeing me in this state that I'm in she decided to sleep over. It was clear to her that we had a lot to talk about..

Her: You still going to wear this pants?I

looked at them..

Me: No I don't think so

She was helping me to clean up my wardrobe, all my old clothes that I no longer wearshe was gonna leave with them to go and give them to my cousins..

Her: I'll get that for you

Me: Ma I'm pregnant not sick She

got the box for me anyway..

Me: I know that you disappointed in me, I'm sorryShe

looked at me..

Her: I'm not disappointed

Me: You not?

Her: Fufu you old.. You respected me and your father by finishing school and then getting yourself a good job, plus it's not like you got impregnated by someone who doesn't wanna be a part of the baby's life or someone who is married. Yes you and him are no longer together but it's good that he is stepping up to his responsibilities

Me: He is.. Jojo is going to be a good FatherHer:

Does his family know?

Me: He said he told them about the pregnancyHer:

And??

Me: Honestly speaking Ma.. Jojo's family is brokenHer:

Broken?

Me: They a broken family

Her: I don't think I understand what you telling me, I thought rich people don't have problems

Me: Trust me they a perfect example of the phrase "Money cannot buy you happiness" I

don't even think I want them to be a part on my baby's life, they full of drama nje Her: Don't say that.. Let them decide if they wanna be a part of the baby's life or notMe: I really don't want stress and they come with a lot of stress

Her: Ngathi sowuba nehaba nje (You exaggeting)

Me: I'm telling you Mama.. Something is not right with that family

—

JOJO

Help did come and Armani was taken to the hospital, while we were on our way I called Xoliswa because I was very confused and scared that Armani might not make it. When we arrived at the hospital, Paramedics rushed her in I followed through as a few medicalpersonnels rushed to her rescue. Everything was done in a rush, from the introduction toher being taken to one of the Operating rooms and I was told to remain behind, they didn't allow me to go in with her. Now the wait will have to torture me

After an hour or so of waiting Xoliswa came through, I was relieved to see her..Her: Hey

Man

Me: Hey

Her: What happened?

Me: Armani tried to kill herself, she ingested a drain cleanerHer:

Wtf?

Me: It's all my fault.. I should've long gotten her out of that house, I should've kept mypromise and went back for her

She sat next to me and put her hand on my shoulder..

Her: Don't blame yourself.. It's not your fault, it just got to a point were she couldn't takeit anymore

Me: Nonts attacked her last night, if I didn't get to them Armani would've had aconcussion. Nonts was ready to kill her

Her: Geez! What's wrong with that woman?

Me: Apparently she blames Armani for her failed marriage. She is so sure that Armani willingly gave herself to Ndarha

Her: Armani is not like that, she's not vindictive. She would never deliberately hurt anyone, I'm disappointed in Nonts

Me: You know how your Mother is like when it comes to her husband, she couldn't even protect us from him.. Did we really expect her to protect Armani?

Her: That's fucked up

Me: I need her to pull through just this one last time Her:

Armani is a fighter, she will come out of this alive(Silence)

Xoliswa: Fuck me!

Me: What?

I moved my eyes to where she was looking and I saw Mongz, he was with some lady. Me: Not this.. Not now

Her: Are you kidding me? I thought he was long discharged Me:

Discharged? I thought he died!

He seemed a bit cosy with the lady..

Xols: You got to be kidding me

His smile seized when he saw us.. Me:

He better not come here

Xols: So what now? He's fooling around with a Nun? That dress is too long

Me: I don't know what Armani saw in that guy, his ass is weak! Mongz is a weakling He looked at the lady again and then they continued with their journey..

Xols: I don't know what's worse Armani being here or Mongz still breathing Me: He better stay away from her and I mean it

–

NONTSIKELELE

O

I poured myself another glass of whiskey when Gabi made her way into the lounge, she was breathing fast and looked ready to die..

Me: Is everything okay?

She shook head No..

I slowly got up from the couch and fixed my falling night gown.. I put my hand on the armrest of the couch for balance..

I looked at her hoping that she will talk already..Her:

Jojo sent me a message

Me: What message?

Her: It's Armani

Me: Gabi what's happening?

Her: Armani tried to hurt herself, she tried to kill herself by drinking a drain cleanerMe:

Intoni? (What)

Her: Mam what happened? Why did Armani leave?I sat on the couch again..

Me: We had a misunderstanding last nightHer:

A misunderstanding?

Me: I told you that she left, she's not coming back anymore

Her: Then I'm sorry, the only reason why I kept on working here was because of her so since she is gone.. There's nothing left for me here too.. I quit

She walked away..

–

JOJO

I was getting impatient, the wait was killing me..

Xols: I'm going to get myself some water, should I bring you some?Me: No

I'm good

Xols: I'll be right back

She stood up and went, I looked at the time while exhaling in frustration..I closed myeyes and laid back on the chair..

Me: Come Mani.. You have to make it

While I was sitting there totally in my feelings, I heard the sound of crutches. I openedmy eyes and it was Mongz..

Him: What are you doing here?I

looked at him..

Him: Did something happen to Armani?

Me: How is that any of your business?

Him: Something did happen to her

I ignored him..

Him: What happ-

Me: Dude you crowding my space

Him: I swear if you or your Father hurt Armani I wi-I

stood up..

Me: You will do what?

I looked at the crutches.. Me:

You going to do what??

Mongz is really trying to talk a big game for someone who is dependent on crutches totake a few steps, One blow and I might end his life.. The Dr made his way to us..

I tried to stay calm..

Him: Good morning Gentlemen

We greeted him back..

Him: Who came with Ms Ngwenya? Armani Ngwenya?Me:

It's Me.. How is she?

He sighed..

Me: How is she Dr?

Him: I'm sorry..

Mongz: What for?

Him: We tried everything but.. There was too much internal bleeding and..He exhaled..

Him: I'm so sorry for your loss⁴⁹

MASTER

When I checked my phone I had a few missed calls from my Aunt. Since I had a bit of time on my hands, I decided to call her.

My Aunt was the one who raised me up even when my Mother was still alive because she had no kids of her own, since my Mother was working far from home she gave my Aunt full custody of me..

Her: Master

Me: Mamzo

Her: I've been trying to call you

Me: I am at work

Her: Okay then we will talk later

Me: No singa ringa nou (we can talk now) I have a bit of time
Her: I quit my job

Me: Ndaba zani manje? (Why)

Her: I don't know what they did to Armani but Jojo sent me a message saying she was admitted

Me: Eish kanti labantu banjani? (What kind of People are they)

Her: I am very worried, I tried calling her phone and Jojo but.. I can't get a hold of them
Me: Keep on trying her phone I'll also try her

Her: Akungcono azohlala ngapha nami, angiyiboni nje lento yakwa Ndarha (She must come and stay with me here, I don't trust those people)

Me: Ayikho enye vele (It's better that way)

Her: She can look for another job while she thinks about her future and what she wants to do, but the Ndarha's.. They will end up killing her

Me: Nami ngizoringa naye ak'na stress (I will also talk to her)
Her:

Okay I will call you later

Me: Sharp

—

JOJO

Mongz: Armani is dead?

Dr: No..Not the Mother. I meant the babies, both the twins didn't make it
I chuckled in disbelief..

Me: What twins?

Dr: She was pregnant with twins and by the look of it she was almost in her 3rd trimester

Mongz and I looked at each other and then we looked at the Dr..
Me: If she was pregnant I would know, I would've noticed

Dr: She didn't say anything?

Me: No

Mongz: 3rd trimester is??

Dr: 7-9 months..

Mongz: I think we would've noticed, yes her tummy was a bit big but not Pregnancy big. I thought she was just putting on weight

Dr: It was hard to notice because there was a condition involved, a condition known as Intrauterine growth restriction (IUGR)

Me: What exactly is this IUGR?

Dr: IUGR is when the unborn baby or babies are smaller than they should be because they not growing at the normal rate in the Uterus. Some of the babies if they make it, they born underweight. In Miss Ngwenya's case the Placenta wasn't in it's right position so the babies couldn't get the proper nutrients that they needed, a severe case of malnutrition was involved

This was shocking..

Dr: The reason why the Mother survived the poison was because of the babies, more damage was caused to the babies and they didn't make it of which I don't think they were going to make it even if the poison wasn't involved

Mongz: So Armani is okay?

Dr: She's going to be okay, she didn't ingest a lot of it and if she wasn't found at the right time then severe damage would've been caused especially to some of her vital organs

Adding 2 and 2 together I came up with the perfect answer, The babies belonged to Ndarha. What I didn't understand was him having another set of twins again..

Me: Was it identical twins?

Dr: No it was Fraternal twins, a boy and a girl. Each twin was developing from a separate egg meaning each egg was fertilized by a different sperm

Xoliswa came back..

Xols: How is Armani

Me: Let's go

Xols: Where are we going?

I pulled her to the side..

Me: Armani was pregnant by Ndarha

Her: What?

Me: The poison did more damage to the babies than it did to her, they didn't make itHer: "They"

Me: It was twins

Her: You kidding me right? How is it that he was having another set of twins?Me: It

wasn't identical twins, it was fraternal twins a boy and a girl

Her: This is some messed up shit!!.. I didn't even know she was pregnant I just thought she was gaining weight

Me: I don't think she also knew, she would've told me

Her: This was a blessing in disguise, the babies had to dieMe:

I'm going there right now and you coming with me Her: You

going to Ndarha?

Me: Yes and you are going to make sure that I don't catch a case! I am tired of Ndarhanow

–

XOLELW

A

When I got home my Mother was passed out on the couch.. The way that she was laying on the couch was even embarrassing. Her night gown was slightly open, and she wasn't wearing any underwear and bra. I saw a half empty bottle of whiskey on the table with a glass..

I woke her up..

Me: Ma..

She didn't wake up.. I shook her

Me: Mama vuka! (Wake up)

She slowly opened her eyes..

Her: Xolelwa

She rubbed her eyes..

Her: What time is it?

She fixed her gown as she rose up from the couch..Me: I'll
get you some water

I went to the kitchen to get her a glass of water and she followed me...Her:

Where are you coming from, Xoliswa was here last night

Me: Ma I have to talk to you about somethingHer:

Yintoni ngoku? (what's wrong now)

I passed her the glass of water..Me:

I don't wanna marry Lukhele Her:

Andiva? (pardon)

Me: I don't wanna marry him, I don't love him

Her: Xolelwa why didn't you say so from the start?Me:

Because I was scared.. You know how Dad is She put
the glass down..

Me: I am in love with someone else, someone who is young like me and he is independent

Her: You lied and went to see him?I

nodded..

Her: This is a difficult matter.. How can you go and spend a weekend with a guy, did you sleep with
him?

I kept quiet..

Her: Xolelwa!!! You engaged to someone else and you go around opening your legs??

You've known that guy for how long now?

Me: Not that long

Her: What has gotten into you? We were worried about you while you were out there opening your legs?? To some guy while you eng-

She collected herself..

Her: I am very disappointed in you.. Very disappointed!!She took the glass of water and walked away

—

MONG

Z

They allowed me to see her, I was sitting by her bedside and holding her hand. It was hard looking at her and imagining what she has been through, to even think that her last strike was suicide it really cut deep..

She tried to move while opening her eyes..Me:

Hey

She turned her head and looked at me. I could see it in her eyes that she was drained.Me: You should get some rest

She gave me a faint smile...

Her: Mongz

Me: Get some rest

Her: I'm.. I'm so glad you here

It was even hard for her to talk..

Me: You tried to hurt yourself?

Her: I see it didn't work

She closed her eyes..

Her: Did the.. Did the baby die though?

Me: You knew that you were pregnant?

Her: I suspected.. I wasn't taking the pill as instructed, sometimes I would forgetMe: The babies didn't make it

Her: Babies?

Me: You were pregnant with non-identical twinsShe kept quiet..

Me: Was it Jojo?

She slowly shook her head..

Her: It was Ndarha

I suspected much.. Her:

Is Jojo around? Me:

No.. He's not here

Her: It's good that he's not aroundMe:

Try and rest

Her: Do you think there's a possibility you and I can be friends again when I get out of here?

Me: We will see

Her: I hope so Me:

I hope so too

I kissed her hand..

Me: Get some sleep

—

XOLELW

A

If my Mother didn't take it well then my Father is going to flip, I don't believe this selfrighteous act of his. My Mother came down, I was in the kitchen cooking..

She made her way to me and took the recipe book from the small stand and closed it..Her: You don't deserve to cook anything in my house

I exhaled..

Her: Xolelwa I trusted you.. We trusted you

Me: You want me to apologize for living my life?

Her: No! There's a difference between living your life and being a whore!!.. Did Armani put you up to this?

Me: Armani didn't put me up to anything, Master and I-Her:

Master?

She thought for a while..

Her: Master?? I've heard that name b-

Her eyes widened and she hit me with the book on my chest..

Her: That boy who came with Armani the other day? Xolelwa did Armani put you up to this? Are these her teachings? You listen to Armani now? Is she your Mother?

Me: Armani did not put me up to Anything Mama

Her: Suxoka Maan Xolelwa! (don't lie)

She threw the book on the counter..

Her: Andithi niyambona lo Armani wenu? (You see this Armani)

The door flung open and Jojo made his way in, he was holding a gun followed by Xols..Jojo:

Where is Ndarha?

Mom: what's going on?

Jojo: Where is that Bastard husband of yours?We

were dumbfounded..

Jojo: Is he upstairs?

Jojo made his way to the stairs...

Nonts: He is not here We

then looked at Xols..Me:

What is happening?

Xols: Armani tried to hurt herself, she drank a drain cleanerMe:

What? Why?

Xols: She..

She cleared her throat..

Xols: She's going to be fine but.. The babies didn't make itMe:

What babies?

Xols looked at Mom...

Xols: She was pregnant with twins!

Me: Uthi kutheni? (What are you saying)

Xols: Armani was pregnant by..

Nonts: Ohh thixo onofefe!

All of a sudden she collapsed on the floor..Me:

Ma!

50

ARMANI

[2 MONTHS LATER]

Me: Order number 86??

Everyone looked at Me..

Me: Order number 86?

No one stood up to come and collect the order..I put it back and took another one.. Me:

Order 87?

The customer stood up and came to collect his order.. My pregnancy made me realise something very important and yet disturbing, if the twins survived then I would've been tied to Ndarha forever. Who knows? Maybe he was even going to treat them exactly as how he treated his other kids. I am not proud of what I did and I also don't regret what I did, I couldn't bring myself to be tied to the Ndarha's anymore. They have broken me down to the core, I almost lost my life because of them. Despite all that I will forever be grateful for everything they've done for me, but their good deeds do not triumph everything that they have put me through.. I got to learn that I suffered from something known as "Stockholm syndrome" I was diagnosed by my psychiatrist and when he went deeper to explaining, it sounded like something that I was never going to break free from. It sounded like I was going to suffer from this Syndrome for the rest of my life..

When I was discharged from the hospital, I broke things off with Jojo a week later and then I moved in with Mam'Gabi. Today I am working at some KFC, somewhere in pta and I got this job through a dear friend of mine Khethi. Khethi saved my life twice now, first when I escaped being held hostage and now she got me a job. It's not a permanent position and I'm happy with that, I can juggle both work and my therapy sessions. It's good to keep busy since I couldn't find space at any tertiary, and sitting at home busy feeling sorry for myself was only going to depress me more. Mongz is the one who offered to pay for the therapy sessions and they don't come cheap since it's a psychiatrist, I told him I could use my savings and he told me that I can save that for school next year..

My friendship with him is a bit confusing, we are strictly friends with a bit of kissing here and there but we have never had sex..

Rodney came back.. Me:

It's about time! Him:

Sorry I took long..

Me: All that matters is that you're here now.. I'll see you after my lunch break Him:

See you then

I went to get my phone so that I could go out for lunch, I'm supposed to meet up with Khethi. I'm sure she's mad that I'm running late...

—

NOMFUND

O

Ever since Jojo broke up with Armani he hasn't been himself. He tries to convince himself and everyone else that he is okay, but I can see deep that he is not. Never in a million years did I think Jojo was capable of loving someone else, other than himself and his flashy life... I was 7 months pregnant now and I couldn't wait to give birth, I wish he would come already. We going to have a healthy baby boy, Jojo's prediction was rightall along....

Me: So Tash is out?

Him: Yes.. There wasn't enough evidence that pointed to her being the one whomurdered Bonza

Me: I always knew that she was crazy, why did she turn herself in for a crime that shedidn't commit?

He was quiet, I looked at him all glued to his phone and then he clicked his tongue after a few seconds..

Me: What?

Him: It's nothing

He put his phone on the table upside down..Me:

Stalking Armani on Facebook again?

Him: I'm not stalking her, she is one of my friends on Facebook

Me: You created a fake account Jojo and then sent her a request. You constantly checking what she's posting, just leave the girl alone. She's happy with her new guy whois he? Mongz? I like the current picture she uploaded

Him: I didn't ask you for that information FufuMe:

Sorry I was just saying

We continued eating but I guess this Armani situation was bothering him more than I thought..

Him: Mongz doesn't deserve her

Me: And you do?

Him: Yes I do.. We have a history

I chuckled..

Me: If you say so

Him: Just finish your food Fufu so we can go
I shook my head..

—

NDARH

A

I put on the latex gloves and looked at him hanging upside down busy spitting blood on the ground and crying..

Me: Who is it? Who did you snitch too?

He continued crying without saying a word..

Me: I guess we have to do this the hard way again

I took the golf stick and hit it against the drum first..Me:

Who did you snitch too?

Him: Please..

Me: I'm going to hit it against your mouth and hope you spit out a few teethHim:

Please.. I'm begging you (crying)

Me: You have 3 seconds He

didn't say anything.. Me:

Your 3 seconds is up!!!

When I was about to swing the stick, I got disturbed..Turbo:

Boss

I put the stick down..

Turbo: You have a visitor

Me: Who is it?

The President made his way inI

looked at Turbo..

Me: You can continue but keep it down

I walked over to the President and he gave me a serious look..Him:

What are you doing?

I took off the gloves..

Me: Good morning to you too David

Him: Have you noticed that you way out of control? Ever since you found out that Armani was pregnant and lost the babies you have been way out of control. I know youhurting, but this is not the way to do things

Me: That guy has been stealing my money, and now he went as far as betraying me.. Hewas a shit accountant from the start

Him: And you only see it now? Tell me that what you doing has nothing do to withArmani losing the twins?

Me: Are you going to do me that favour I asked for?

Him: I'm not going to remove Mabuza from his position just because Armani is happywith his Son, he has nothing to do with this

Me: Okay.. Next time don't ask me to do shit for you! I will deal with the Mabuzas myselfI turned and went back to handling my business..

—

XOLELW

A

That day when I heard about my Father and Armani, I decided to pack up and leave. What really made me leave was the fact that my Mother blamed Armani for everything, she even went as far as blaming her for their failed marriage. I have known Armani for most of my life and I know that she would never deliberately hurt anyone, she is not thatkind of a person. I was more disgusted by my Mother's reaction to this whole situation, after all she failed to protect us her own kids so I didn't expect her to stand up for Armani.. I moved in with Xoliswa, I have been staying with her ever since..

My phone rang again, I looked at it and it was Lukhele. He has been calling me and I haven't been taking his calls. I don't know what he wants because I ended things with him...

–

NONTSIKELELE

O

The Dr came back with my file then she sat opposite me.. I looked at her with my mouth dry and my heart beating very fast..

Her: The results are back and unfortunately they confirmed that it is Alcoholic hepatitis just like I had assumed

I swallowed and then bit my lower lip..

Her: I'm sorry

Me: Is it curable?

Her: Not entirely but we can treat it and stop it from progressing Me: So

I'm going to die?

Her: You will if you don't stop drinking I

felt a lump stuck in my throat..

Her: At least now we know what it is and we can start treating it, you will have to go to a rehabilitation center

Me: I can't go there..

Her: You have too

Me: Can we try other alternatives?

Her: Detox, medication to reduce the inflammation of the liver, and then AA meetings? Me: I

think I can do that

Dr: That's a good start... It's a very good start

–

MONG

Z

I loosened my tie and paced up and down the office as his eyes couldn't move away from the file that I had given him. The silence in the room was getting to me..

Me: And?

I took off my tie..

He closed the file..

Him: Where and how did you get your hands on this?Me:

That's my own secret

Him: Mongezi

Me: From his accountantI

went back to my chair..

Me: So do we have a case commissioner?

Him: You can call me Uncle

Me: I just don't want it to look like you doing favours for your nephew

Him: This is not a favour.. You reported a crime to me and I'm looking into itMe: So there is a case?

He opened the file again and slightly nodded..

Him: Isaac Ndarha will have to answer to fraud, Embezzlement, and money launderingMe:

Enough to put him away for a long time right?

Him: Enough for the country to see him for what he truly is..He

tossed the file on the table..

Him: He can easily explain himself out of all these charges and pin everything on the accountant

Me: How? Everything is in there.. Written in black and white

Him: This information cannot be used in court as evidence, you attained it illegallyI laid back on my chair disappointed..

Him: I promised my sister before she died that I'll keep an eye on you, so I'll see what I can do since this means a lot to you

He stood up..

Him: I'll get back to you

Me: You going to arrest him already? That's dedication
He laughed..

Him: I said I'll see what I can do

Me: Thank you Uncle..

Him: This Ndarha might be powerful but he still has to answer to me. He is not above the law, and I am the law

Me: Chesa! So he is not a God after all?

Him: He can't even high 5 the heavens

He extended his hand to Me for a handshake

Him: It was good seeing you, even though you only contact me when you need help
Me: Maybe you and your family can come over sometime for dinner

Him: You know my history with your Dad, how about you come over to my house?
Me:

Okay no problem

He took the file..

Him: I'll call you, if I don't.. Watch the news

Me: I will

He gave me a weird look..

Him: Why are you even doing this?

Me: I'm doing this for someone who means a lot to me
He smiled..

Him: Can't wait to meet her

Me: Yeah you will meet her

He looked at the time..

Him: Let me go.. I'll call you

Me: Thank you Uncle

Him: You welcome

51

ARMANI

I was only left with one hour before I could go home. Don't get me wrong, I don't hate my job but it's very demanding and standing on my feet for hours isn't child's play. I was helping out at the back when we heard a bit of noise at the front, at first I thought a fight had erupted but.. We have never had a fight around here, there's always a security around

Not really interested in what was happening Rodney came through at the back and asked for me, I don't wanna lie I got a bit scared. When a manager randomly calls you and he looks like he is about to drop dead, best believe there's some trouble. We made our way to the front..

Me: Is.. Is everything okay?

Him: This man asked for you

I looked at the man and I didn't recognize him.. Man:

It's not me.. Jojo is the one looking for you

He pointed out at where Jojo was sitting, every eye was on him but no fan got closer to ask for a picture or to talk to him..

I exhaled..

Me: I can't go to him.. I'm working

Rodney: It's alright you can go to him, you almost knocking off anyway I was not hoping for that answer at all..

Jojo is very stubborn and troublesome, he thinks I haven't noticed that he's even

stalking me on Facebook with a fake account..I really didn't like what he was doing because tomorrow this whole situation is going to be out on social media.. I made my way to him

He put his phone on the table as I sat down, the guy he came with stood guard and made sure no one got closer to us and ask to take a pic with Jojo..

Me: Jojo what are you doing here?

He looked at me without saying anything..

Me: This is my workplace you can't just show up anytime you feel like it, some of us have to work for a living

Him: Why did you break up with me?

Me: I told you I just need time to myself. I need to be emotionally independent and figure this thing called "life" on my own. I don't wanna be dependent on anyone, especially a man. I wanna provide for myself, I wanna be my own woman without any man behind me

He laughed while shaking his head..

Him: If so then why are you running around with Mongz?Me:

We just friends

Him: Sundiqhela Armani! (don't fuck with me)

I looked at the customers and they still focused on us..

Him: You call whatever you two are doing just being "friends"Me:

Please don't cause a scene.. I don't want drama

Him: You asked for drama the minute you left me for himMe:

You have too much baggage Jojo okay?

Him: And you don't?I

stood up..

Me: Now you might say something that you going to regret laterHim:

Sit down

Me: Bye Jojo

I didn't get far when he pulled me back to him. He put both his hands around my waist..Him: Don't make me give this People a show because I will

He faked a smile..

Him: I am known to always fuck up my reputation so don't try me!Me:

What do you want from Me?

Him: Stop all this nonsense with Mongz. You know that your heart belongs to me, you belong with me and as a matter of fact I am running out of patience

Me: This is not the place nor the time to talk about thisHim:

Then make time...

Me: I have to go back to work

Him: This is for Twitter later

Me: Huh?

He leaned over and kissed me..

—

XOLELW

A

Loli: Are you ready?I

nodded..

Her: Okay I'll tell you what it says

Ever since Master and I started having sex I haven't thought of doing a pregnancy test because I've been scared. The only reason why I decided to do it now is because I haven't been feeling well lately, and the sickness seems to not be going away..

Loli: Okay let me see..

She looked at the test, a few seconds passed with her all quiet..Me:

Lolitha?

Her: My word Xoks, it's two lines.. You pregnant!

Me: What?? I mean are you sure? I'm pregnant?She
nodded repeatedly..

Her: Yes you pregnant

I got up from the bed and made my way to her..Me:
I'm pregnant?

Her: Yes, take a look..

I took the pregnancy test from her and looked at it, she was right. I was pregnant.. The two lines
were as clear as daylight..

Me: Ohh my word Loli.. I'm pregnant.. I'm pregnant

Her: Okay calm down.. Breath in and out, slowly

She helped me to go and sit down on the bed again..Her:

Breath in and out..

I know what the plan was but now that everything is real, I wasn't sure anymore..I looked
at her..

Me: Ho..I mean.. I am pregnant with a human baby inside of me

Her: Maybe I should get you a glass of water, should I get you water?Me: Yes
please

Her: Okay I'll be right back continue breathing in and out, slowlyI did
exactly as how I was told..

—

NONTSIKELELE

O

Things at home haven't been good, more especially since the kids want nothing to do with us.
On top of that my husband wants nothing to do with me anymore, he blames me for Armani
losing the twins..

I was sitting alone on the couch and the house was dead quiet, I brought the glass of whiskey closer to my mouth.. I heard the Dr loud and clear when she said I shouldn't drink, but right now I didn't care about the physical pain. It couldn't be compared to the pain that I was feeling deep inside..

–

MONG

Z

I had an interesting visitor, it was Rebecca. Rebecca and I we still keep in touch. I don't know what we doing exactly, but she's a good Person and I will forever be grateful for everything that she has done for me while I was in Hospital..

Her: Hey

Me: Hey.. How you doing?

Her: I'm well and you?

Me: I'm doing good

She gave me a hug

Me: It's good to see you Her:

It's good to see you too She sat

down..

Me: Would you like something to drink?

Her: No thank you.. I'm not here to stay Me:

How is work going?

Her: Work is going good.. I'm on nightshift, how is work going on your side? Me: I

have a lot to catch up on but.. I'll be good

Her: I'm glad you adjusting very well

She's a very admirable person, not forgetting her beautiful smile.. We had an awkward moment when we both ran out of something to say.. My phone beeped, I checked it and it was a WhatsApp message from Armani which read:

"Husband dearest I'll be knocking off soon, I hope you have a good day at work. A dozen

of kisses and hugs"

I smiled and texted her back:

"Go home and rest wifey dearest.. I love you" We

like to tease each other a lot..

Rebecca cleared her throat and I looked at her..Me:

Sorry about that

I put my phone away..

Her: It's okay..

(Silence)

Her: Was it your girlfriend?

Me: It's a complicated story

Her: Okay

My phone beeped again, this time it was a WhatsApp message from my home boy and he sent me a pic of Armani and Jojo kissing.

Him: "It's trending"

I quickly went on Twitter and indeed it was trending with tweets like: "Who would've thought that Jojo's girlfriend works at KFC, I'm shook"

..

"But guys this is sweet, such love is sweet"

..

"When you look at Jojo you would think that he would go for a model or someone who is on his level, not a mere KFC worker. I am taken"

..

"I'm loving this.. I love their relationship they good together"

..

"At least she's not a slay queen"

..

"When are they getting married? They good together no lie"

..

"I hope she makes him a better person"

I looked at the picture again not knowing what to make of it..Rebecca:

Maybe I should leave

I looked at her..

Me: I'm truly sorry about that, you caught me at a bad time

Rebecca: It's okay.. I'll see you some other time

Me: Enjoy work later on

Her: Thank you

I walked her out..

—

NOMFUND

O

Today they were shooting the final scene of "Usapho". I decided to stay behind and observe how they really put an entire episode together. Jojo was not around so Tashwas in charge, and she kept on stealing glances at Me..

Tash: Hlehle I like that part but please give us more aggressionHlehle:

Yes Mam'

Tash: Good.. Let's go again

Tash made her way to me..

Her: Hey

Me: Hi

She looked at my big bump..

Her: I.. Congratulations

Me: Thank you

Her: Jojo is the Father of the baby?

Me: Yes he is

She kept her eyes glued on my tummy which creeped me out..Her: I see

Jojo walked in..

Jojo: How is everything going?

Hlehle: We doing good boss

Jojo: Good! Remember it's the last episode we have to perfect itHe looked at me..

Him: Why aren't you sitting down?

Me: It's okay.. We okay

He placed his hand on my bump..

Him: You okay but I think he's tiredI chuckled..

Me: We both okay don't worry

Tash turned and went back to the crew, I really don't trust this bitch..Jojo: Come sit on my chair

He walked me to the Director's chair..

Him: Are you comfortable?

Me: Yes.. Thank you

He kissed me on my cheek..

-

NDARHA

I was out having some lunch with my PI..Me:

Do you have anything for me?

Him: Not yet Sir.. I am still digging

Me: You still digging? If that information lands on the wrong hands it can be used against me

Him: I know Sir and I'm doing my best.. Is your accountant saying anything?Me: He is

dead.. Died without giving me a name

Him: So we back to square one

Me: Now I trust in you to ma-

The commissioner walked in with a few of his Men, he went to the counter to talk to the manager of the restaurant..

The manager checked the black book and then said something to the commissioner, they all ran their eyes around until they landed on my table, then they made his way tous..

PI: Do you think that..

Me: I think soo

Commissioner: Good day gentlemenWe

greeted him back..

Him: Mr Isaac Ndarha, you're under arrest for fraud, embezzlement, and money laundering. You have the right to remain silent, anything and everything you say can and will be used against you in the court of law. You have the right to an attorney, if you can't afford one. One will be appointed to you

I laughed at that last statement..

Him: cuff him

Me: Is that necessary? I'm not resisting any arrest

Him: You are no different from any other criminal Mr Deputy President

I stood up as the officer cuffed me..

Me: So every criminal out there gets arrested by a commissioner?He got closer to me..

Him: No, but in your case I thought I should be here when you walk out of here in handcuffs and then have your picture splashed front page in every newspaper so the country can see the corrupt people in power!.. I have already tipped the media and theystanding outside, so mr deputy.. Go to hell!!

52

ARMANI

All I wanted to do was to rest when I got home. My feet were aching, I had pain on my lower back, and I also had a headache. I know I don't work everyday but whenever I do go to work it's always busy, and I am mostly called in on the busiest days when People have forgotten paid.. Mam'Gabi and I we were sitting in the lounge ready to watch skeem saam. I had offered to cook but she declined and told me she will do it since I had a long day..

Her: Nginyaqala emsebenzini next week Monday (I'm starting work next week Monday)

After quitting her job at the Ndarha household we thought that she was just gonna sit at home and take a break, but she surprised us when she told us that she got a job at some pharmacy. She got the job through someone from church. Her job description is no different from what she used to do at the Ndarha's, even on this one she will be cleaning and helping around with packing and everything else that involves housekeeping. Master is not happy with all of this and I'm not happy too. Mam'Gabi is old now, she needs a break and a rest before her body totally shuts down. She even complains about her legs a lot I just don't know why she doesn't wanna sit at home and relax. She's been a maid for a very long time now..

Me: Mam'Gabi why don't you just sit at home? Your body needs to restHer: I'm not used to sitting at home and doing nothing, that's not me Me: I don't know then

We continued watching TV when my phone rang, it was Xolelwa..Me: I have to take this.. Excuse me

I walked out to answer my phone..

Me: Xoks

Her: Hello Mani

Me: How are you?

Her: I'm good and you?

Me: I'm well just tired

Her: I see you trending on Twitter

Me: I'm what?

Her: The kiss? I didn't know you and Jojo were back together

Me: We not back together Jojo is just crazy I don't know why he doesn't want to leave me alone

Her: Well then People are very sure that you guys are dating and should you be seen allcosy in public with another guy, Twitter is going to crucify you and say you not faithful

Me: Jojo is so immature

I let out a sigh, this whole situation was draining..Her:

Mani I need to tell you something

Me: What is it?

Her: I'm pregnantI

laughed..

Me: What a joke

Her: I'm not joking.. I'll send you a pic of the pregnancy test on WhatsAppMe: Are you serious?

Her: Dead serious, and I'm very scared. What am I going to do with a baby? Armani I can't even take care of myself

Me: I.. What did Master say?

Her: I haven't told him

Me: You're going to tell him right?

Her: No.. I mean.. I don't know

Me: Xolelwa I hope you not thinking about AbortionHer:

Why not? It's still early in the pregnancy

Me: Are you mad? Master is going to kill you and you might lose him for goodHer: He

won't know that I was pregnant besides you did it too

Me: I didn't abort the babies

Her: You killed them and moved on with your life like nothing happened

Me: My situation was different.. What did you expect? Obviously when you have unprotected sex you will fall pregnant

Her: I messed up big time

Me: Call Master and talk to him, or I will

Her: Ar-

Me: Call him!

I hung up and looked at my phone while shaking my head..Me: The

Ndarha's and drama!

—

MASTE

R

"Mehlo wam agrhumbiwe.. Sebeng'dung' ingqondo Badung' inhliziyo, yam Badung' unembeza wam. Vel' aksekho lutho Bathath' ithemba lam Sale sobuya, Sale Sobuya"

I was playing "Dj Ganyani_Emazulwini" while marinating the meat. I took the can of stoney ginger beer and drank from it while shaking my head to the rhythm of the song. I put the can down when I heard a knock at the door.

Me: I'm coming

I wiped my hands and checked my phone, none of my friends sent me a text informing

that they going to stop by. I didn't even have a missed call. The person knocked again..Me: Eyy
Maan ngithe ngiyeza! (I said I'm coming)

I went and opened, some guy I didn't know was at my my door step..Me: And
then?

He looked at me..

Me: Can I help you?

He pushed me out of the way and made his way in, that was disrespectful. I closed the door and
turned to look at him. He ran his eyes around my small kitchen, I kept quiet and waited for him
to say something..

Him: Entlek Ucabanga ukuthi ngine skhathi sok'dlala ne? (you think I have time for games)

Me: Askies?

Him: I drove all the way from Gauteng ukuthi ngize la ngizoringa nawe, uStwetla ngaleyondlela
wena neh? (I drove all the way from Gauteng to come here and talk to you, you that important)

I chuckled and raised my hand pointing at him.. Me:

Bese sithi wena ubani konje? (who are you) He

looked at my finger that was pointing at him..

Him: As'zwane ngento eyi one kqala, point at me one more time ngizok'nyathela saan! (Let's
understand each other on one thing first, point at me again and I'll kick your assboy)

I was confused, this guy comes to my house to disrespect me..

Him: Alika qini isende mfana kithi ukuthi ungaze uphakamele iGrootman lakhosiyazwana? (You
not that old to disrespect your big man like that)

Me: Ima kancane (wait a minute) Shine?

Him: Is'Ola sam' kunini sifuna uk'ringa nawe? Kanti sik'cengela ini? (my Mom has been trying to
talk to you, why should we beg you)

I've heard about him and his sister, though it was my very first time meeting him. His Mom once mentioned them to me on the phone before I stopped taking her calls..

Him: Ukwenze kwenzeke mfana kithi (make it happen)He

looked at me..

Him: Awushifte (move)

I moved and he opened the door..

Him: Ohh bheka ke mangaz'tholi ngibuya la, ngoba kuzonyiwa poi (I don't wanna come back here again because I'll fuck you up)

He clicked his tongue walked out, banging the door behind him. I wonder why his Mother is forcing to talk to me..

—

MONG

Z

I looked at the picture and continued reading a few comments, they really got to me that I threw my phone against the wall..

Me: Nxa!!!!

I walked over to pour myself a glass of whiskey, Jojo doesn't know when to give up Dad:

Mongezi!

I turned and looked at him as he made his way in..

Him: What are you doing drinking? Put that down, you know you not the best person when you drunk

I put the glass down..

Him: Chazela Mina ke mfana kaMabuza ukuthi yini le? (Explain to me what this is about)

He handed me his phone and eNCA news reported that the deputy president of South Africa got arrested earlier today, they even included a video of him being walked out of the restaurant in handcuffs..

Dad: I see your Uncle there I

stroked my beard..

Me: So?

Him: Mongz did you do this?I

handed him his phone..

Him: This is about Armani isn't it?

Me: Ndarha broke the law

Him: Mongezi!!

My Father doesn't raise his voice unless it's necessary..

Him: lo Armani wakho nawu utanta noJojo izimanga zakhe uzibeka obala (This Armaniof yours is with Jojo and she makes it public)

Me: Baba.. (Dad)

Him: Weee Mongezi uyothini Uma uNdarha ethola ukuthi uCommissioner uMalume wakho? (What are you going to do when Ndarha finds out that the commissioner is yourUncle)

I kept quiet..

Him: He will know that you behind all of this nonsense. Uzoyimela ke mfana omdala?(are you going to stand your ground)

I still remained quiet..

Him: Hlukana nale Ntombazana! Ngiyakukhuza njalo (Leave that girl alone, I'm warningyou)

He walked away..

—

NDARH

A

He finally took off the handcuffs, we were in one of the interrogation rooms. We have been in here for a long time now. I massaged my wrist as he went to sit down on the other side of the table, opposite me..

He had my file in front of him..

Him: off the record.. I have evidence and I'm going to make sure that we build a case

against you

I looked at him without saying anything..

Him: Who are you working with? The President?He
shook his head..

Him: Nci.. Nci.. Nci.. I bet you didn't see this day coming, did you now?I laid
back on the chair..

Me: Is this personal?

Him: Not at all.. I'm just doing my job Me: I
didn't know being rich was a crime?Him: I'm
not stupid Ndarha

Me: Do you know that having an offshore account is not illegal?

Him: It is illegal when you involved in money laundering and embezzlementMe: Can
I have my phone call now?

Him: Nope.. Not until you give me somethingMe:
I am entitled to-

Him: You entitled to nothing!

He looked at the officer who was standing the door..

Commissioner: Take him to the holding cell so he can be alone with his thoughtsThe officer
came to me..

Me: So this is personal commissioner?

Commissioner: We will continue with this tomorrow I'm sure by then you will havesomething for
me

Officer: Let's go sir

-

ARMANI

I was having an early night. After eating and bathing I decided to go to bed.. Just when I closed my eyes my phone beeped, I checked it. It was a WhatsApp notification, I went on WhatsApp and it was a video from Jojo. I downloaded and opened it. He was laying on his bed, he didn't have a t-shirt on just a chain around his neck. A song was playing in the background and he was singing along..

Him: "Ooh I love you so But why I love you I'll never know Ooh I love you so But why I love you I'll never know"

I laughed, he was making unnecessary noise..

Him: "Ooh I love you so But why I love you I'll never know Ooh I love you so But why I love you I'll never know"

I closed WhatsApp and buried my face on the pillow, with a few butterflies in my tummy..53

ARMANI

The following morning I was woken up by a call from Mongz..Me:

Good morning (Sleepy voice)

Him: Good morning

I waited for him to lead the conversation..

Him: Still in bed?

Me: Ya.. It's still early

Him: It's 8:00am

Me: I had a long day yesterday, work was hectic

Him: I'm sorry to hear that but.. You gotta keep the hustle goingMe:

That's very true

Him: I wanted to take you out?

Me: Today?

Him: Yes.. I have a surprise for you

Me: Today I wanted to stay indoors and relax Him:

Trust me the surprise is going to be worth itMe: Can't

we do it some other time?

Him: No, It has to be today Me:

Okay then I guess it's fine

Him: I'll pick you up at 10:00am

Me: Okay

Him: Then you can explain the "kiss" to me that's trending on Twitter

Me: This is why I wanted to stay indoors, People are getting the wrong ideaHim: Either

way wifey.. You got a lot of explananing to do

Me: I want out of this marriage alreadyI

heard him laughing..

Him: I don't believe in divorce so..

Me: I'm stuck to you?

Him: Like superglue

Me: Let me get ready then

Him: I'll see you at 10:00 exactly

Me: Aren't you always punctual husband dearestHim:

At all times Mrs Mabuza

Me: See you then..

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: I love you more

Me: See you at 10:00am MongzHe

laughed again..

Him: Bye

There's something about Mongz, I think we had a connection from the very first day when I met him. Unlike Jojo, I think he has good intentions with me and a part of me is very much in love with him.. I couldn't sleep anymore so I made my way to the kitchen to have a glass of water, Mam'Gabi was up and preparing breakfast already..

Me: Good morning

Her: Good morning Armani.. Ulele njani? (How did you sleep)Me:

I had a good rest

Her: I thought that you would still be sleepingMe:

I wish..

Her: uRight? (are you alright)

Me: Mongz called.. He's coming over to pick me upShe
nodded without saying anything..

(Silence)

Her: Can I ask you something?

Me: Yes?

Her: Exactly what are you doing with these boys?Me:

I don't understand

Her: Jojo and Mongenzi.. Why are you playing them against each other?

Me: I'm not playing them against each other because I'm dating neither of them

Her: Yes you not but you giving them the wrong impression. Look I am not trying to tell you how to live your life, I know you young but this is gonna become a dangerous game. What if they end up hurting each other? If you not looking for a serious relationship then drop both of them stop entertaining them. If you are looking for a relationship choose one of them or go get someone else

Mam'Gabi is right, this has to stop..

Me: Personally Jojo and I come very far, he was my first and we shared something special. He is always going to have a special place in my heart..

Her: But?

Me: I don't think we still have that chemistry anymore, a lot has changed and he has a lot of baggage. He is going to be a Father soon, he is entertaining other women and his temper is very unstable. Besides all of that he is a Ndarha, being with him will always drag me to the past that I'm desperately trying to move on from. I'll always be attached to the Ndarha's which is something that I don't want, especially after what happened between Me and Nonts

Her: Jojo loves you that's an honest truth but I don't think he is right for you anymore. So much has changed and though he is not Ndarha by blood but he was raised but that bastard, he has taken from his step father. Especially his hot temper

Me: That's very true.. He is a lot of stress

Her: Either way the choice is yours, so long you happy I'll support you..I

definitely have a lot to think about..

—

NONTSIKELELE

O

Learning that Ndarha was behind bars I called the President to ask what was going on..Him: Don't worry I am taking care of it

Me: Are all the allegations against him true?

Him: No they not, I think Ndarha might have pissed off someone who retaliated by having him locked up

Me: Who could that be?

Him: I don't know that's what I'm trying to find out, so far I sent a lawyer to go there and see what's happening. Don't worry he will be out

Me: Thank you.. Thank you very much

Him: Don't worry yourself too much, he will be home soon

Me: I appreciate that.. Thank you

Ever since I took it upon myself to drink while the Dr gave me clear instructions that I shouldn't consume alcohol anymore I haven't been feeling well.. I decided to call Xolelwa, her phone took me straight to voicemail. I sighed and put my phone on top of the pillow next to me..

—

XOLELWA

A

Xols looked at the pregnancy test while I waited for her reaction.. Her:

What? You pregnant?

She looked at me..

Her: You pregnant? I

nodded..

Her: How could you be so careless? What you gonna do with a baby? I didn't answer her..

Her: I am very disappointed in you!

Me: It's not like I planned the whole thing

Her: That's what condoms are for, another alternative is to take the pill. Now you have just ruined your whole future, Yes you might be working but a baby Xolelwa is no child's play. You not mature enough to be a Mother

Me: So what should I do now? Running back and forth like this won't change the situation

Her: Have you told him yet?

Me: No

Her: You have to tell him and then he has to come over so that we can talk She put the pregnancy test down..

Him: Out of everything that's happening right now, you decide to go and get pregnant? Are you serious?

She walked out of the bedroom still pissed and ranting..

—

JOJO

I put down a few ideas again hoping that the storyline was going to come together now, then I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

The door opened and Nomfundo made her way in..Her:

Hey

Me: Hey.. What are you doing here?

She made her way to the chair and then sat down..Her: I need to talk to you

Me: You should've called, I would've come to your placeHer:

It's okay.. I needed some fresh air

Me: Is the baby okay?

Her: The baby is fine

Me: So what's the problem?

Her: My Parents are around and they wanna see you.. TonightMe: Are they angry?

Her: My Mother has accepted but my Father is not so happy about the situationMe: I understand.. Should I come alone or should I bring my Mother too?

Her: I think for now you can come alone

Me: I'll be there

Her: What are you doing here in the studio?Me:

I'm working on my next project

Her: So you really not going to listen to the fans? There won't be season 4 of Usapho?

Me: Fans can mislead you at times, Usapho ended good if I push it.. I might ruin the storyline

Her: Okay.. So what's the next project that you working on?Me:

Patience..

We heard another knock at the door..Me:

I'm very popular today.. Come in!

We focused on the door as it opened and Tash made her way in, Nomfundo let out a sigh..

Tash: Good morning

Me: Morning

Tash: I didn't know you had companyMe:

Nomfundo was just leaving

Nomfundo looked at me all dumbfounded..Her:

I was?

Me: I'll see you tonight

Her: Whatever Jojo, and don't be late

She slowly got up and made her way to the door, I went back to my laptop when suddenly I heard her verbally attacking Tash

Fufu: Excuse Me?

Tash: You bumped into me

Fufu: I did no such!

Tash: You bumped into me Nomfundo

Fufu: Why would I bump into you? Are you saying I'm trying to hurt my son on purposeTash: I did not say that!

Fufu: First your psycho ass was in jail confessing to a murder you didn't commit, now you wanna knock me down and have me lose my son? You wanna catch a real case now?

Tash: I see your hormones are all over

Fufu: Don't talk about my hormones okay? And stay away from me!!

She clicked her tongue and walked out, banging the door behind her. Tash shook her head and came to sit down..

Me: Sorry about that.. Her hormones are all over the place lately Her:

I've noticed

Me: How are you? You look good

Her: Thank you

She handed me a paper..

Me: What's this?

I read it..

Her: I'm resigning

Me: This is a joke right?

Her: No it's not.. We finally said goodbye to Usapho so there's nothing keeping me here anymore

Me: Come on Tash.. I'm working on my next project and you know I'm going to need you Her: I don't think so.. I got me a plane ticket I'm leaving

Me: You leaving?

Her: Yes.. My Aunt is in the States, I'm going there.. Maybe I can have a fresh start you know forget about my life here and everything that's happened

Me: And forget about me? Her:

Yes, and forget about you Me:

When are you leaving?

Her: In a few days time

She stood up..

Her: I have to go..

I looked at the resignation letter..

Her: Bye Jojo

She turned and walked to the door..

–

MASTE

R

I decided to call Mamezala to find out what it is that she wants from me..Her:

Hello

Me: Hello.. It's me

Her: Master?

Me: Yes

Her: I'm soo glad you called

Me: Your Son was here

Her: He was? I hope he didn't start any troubleMe:

What do you want from me?

Her: I know that you think I killed your Mother but I didn't.. I had nothing to do with her passing

Me: Then what do you want from me? What do you want from a bastard child that almost ruined your marriage? Shouldn't I be a reminder of what my Mom and my Fa..And your husband put you through?

Her: I'm not going to blame you nor hate you for what happened! Yes your Mother was a constant thorn in my marriage but I don't hate you and I'm not going to crucify you for her sins

Me: Again what do you want?

Her: Your Father left you something, I want you to get your inheritance just like your brother and your sister

She held on to that for all this while..

Her: I want you to meet up with his lawyer so that you can sign some documents and the money will be transferred into your account, that's all I wanted. For you to get your inheritance.. I will Sms you the Lawyer's numbers

I did not expect this at all..

—

ARMAN

I

Mongz didn't tell me where we were headed too, and I noticed that now we were out of town. I looked at him as he focused on the road and sang along to the song that was playing..

Him: "But things just get so crazy living life gets hard to do.. Sunday morning rain is falling and I'm calling out to you, Singing someday it'll bring me back to you.. Find a way to bring myself back home to you"

Somehow I can't get enough of his voice, Mongz has the most beautiful voice that can make any girl's knees weak and give you that hot feeling in your vagina. I swear he can get you in bed with any romantic song..

He turned and gave me his side smile while slightly hitting the steering as the song went for high notes

Him: "That may be all I need, In darkness she is all I see.. Come and rest your bones with me, Driving slow on Sunday morning.. Driving slow, Oh, yeah, yeah.."

I reduced the volume and he stopped singing

Him: That was offensive, my voice don't sound good?

Me: You know I'm crazy about your voice.. I just want to know where we going? We have been driving for a while now

Him: I'm taking you this other game reserve, I don't know why you didn't pack a few clothes because we going to check in for a few days

Me: What?

I hit him on the shoulder.. He laughed..

Him: In this marriage we never went to our honeymoon so..

Me: You a terrible husband, and did it click to you that I'll have to go to work?Him: It didn't.. I'm sorry, if they fire you then you can finally be a housewife Me: That's just wrong

He laughed again..

The next song played "Yuna ft Usher_Crush"Me:

my word I love this song!!!

I increased the volume..

Me: "You call me on a lazy afternoon, Asking me what I'm up to, let's find something todo

Baby I'd be down, down, down, down, down"He

nodded while curving his lower lip..

Him: Okay not bad..

Me: Now you stuck with me singing the whole songHim:

Or I can just do this..

He reached for his earphones and put them on..Me:

How fair is that?

Him: You can continue singing and I'll play music from my phone, that way I won't hear you

He pat me on my thigh..

Him: We both win in this situation

I folded my and starred out of the window..54

JOJO

I drove to Xoliswa's place later on that day after she had sent me a text that Xolelwa is pregnant. I was furious I won't lie, Xolelwa just escaped a relationship that was forced upon her by her Father, instead of finding her feet she goes and falls pregnant. She probably was more safer at home than she is now with all this freedom..

Me: Are you insane?

She was standing behind Tiger..

Me: Xolelwa are you insane?

Her: I didn't ask for this okay?

Me: I don't care!! I don't care whether you asked for this or not! Is this what freedom is doing to you?

Tiger: Let's all calm down

Me: You calm down!!

Tiger: Yelling and threatening to hit her won't change the fact that she's pregnant! I tried to calm myself down..

Tiger: Xolelwa maybe you should excuse us for a few minutes She looked at me and then walked out to the bedroom..

Tiger: Okay.. For real though what's bothering you? I sat down..

Tiger: What's wrong Jojo?

Me: I'm her big brother I'm not going to be happy over the fact that my little sister got impregnated by a random guy.. What do we know about him? We know nothing!

Tiger: What is eating you up?

(Silence)

Me: Tash is leaving.. She's moving to the states Tiger:

And?

Me: She's leaving Xols

Her: So what?

I remained quiet..

Her: The only reason why this would affect you is if you in love with herI shook my head..

Her: Jojo you and this chick also go way back, you have had sexual encounters, you always together obviously feelings would be involved. I think Tash loves you too, morethan you think. Which girl would help you cover up a murder? She went to jail for you even though it was for a brief moment and not even once did she rat you out. She's always there cleaning your mess without complaining, she knows you better than any girl out there. She helped you build your empire, she was there next to you. If she gets on that plane you going to lose her forever. She's not coming back

Me: All along I thought Armani was my one and only

Her: You and Armani are trying to hold on to something that no longer exists. Yes onceupon a time you guys were good together but not anymore, You two are better off with different people. Plus your relationship with Armani is not going to work, a lot has happened. Armani needs to be free from the Ndarha's, she needs to find happiness somewhere else. Just think of it, with everything that's happened and you guys decide to hit it off again she will never be happy. She will have to see Mom again, always seeNdarha and be reminded of everything that happened to her. She will always be depressed and this time around she might kill herself for real. You need to let Armani go,as much as you think there's a future between you too but.. It won't work Jojo, trust me..

—

TASH

I was at my Parents place, I'll be here up until I leave and go to the states. This decision comes from a heart that wants to get away from Jojo, it's no use being here and constantly watch him being with other women knowing very well how I feel about him. This last straw comes from the discovery of his "True love" a girl called Armani. It's bestI just move far away and move on with my life. Change is scary, and the at same time change is good..

Mom: I'm glad that you leaving South Africa, this country is not good! How can theyarrest you without evidence that you killed that lawyer?

My Father had gone out to get a few things, we were going to have a barbacue..

Her: They almost sent me straight to the emergency room

Me: I'm glad that I'm leaving, but I'm not so glad that I'm leaving you

Her: Don't worry about me Bokkie, I want you to have a fresh start somewhere elseMe:

Change is good

Her: What about work?

Me: I'll ask Jojo for a reference, maybe I'll get something when I get thereHer:

Things over there seem difficult

Me: I'm sure that I'll manage

Her: Maybe you can work with another big shot producer

Me: Like Scott Derrickson, he is a good screenwriter, director, and producerHer: I will

pray for you Bokkie

Me: Thank you Ma

Her: Put the rolls in the mini basket for meMe:

Okay Ma

I feel good about this change, I hope things workout for the best..

–

XOLELW

A

I closed my eyes and started breathing in and out. I think Jojo left because it was now quiet, I didn't hear them talking..

I dialed Master's number, my heart started beating fast when I heard it ringing..Master: Skat..

Me: Hi.. Hey Love

Him: Unjani? (how are you)

Me: I'm good.. How are you?

Him: Ngi grand (I'm alright)

Me: I called to tell you something

Him: Athi ng'cave (let me see) You pregnant?Me:

How did yo.. Did Armani tell you?

Him: No.. Xolelwa we had unprotected sex a few times remember?

Me: I'm really scared.. It seemed fine when we were planning the whole thing but nowHim: Hlisa

uMoya uzoba grand (calm down you'll be fine)

Me: How do you know that I'm going to be alright, that everything is going to be alright?Him:

Angisho ng'khona? (I'm here)

Me: Things are not good with my family right now and now this, every girl needs herMother when she's pregnant. Things between me and my Mom are not good

Him: Don't stress yourself too much, things will work themselves out at the end you'llsee

Me: I just wish you were here

Him: I'll come down there in a few days time, we will talk about this moreMe:

Plus my Brother and Sister want to see you

Him: I'll come

Me: Okay then..

Him: I'll call you later

Me: Don't forget

Him: Ngike ngakhohlwa nini? (when did I ever forget)Me:

I'm just saying..

Him: I'll call you

Me: Okay bye

Him: Ngiyak'thanda Xolelwa Ndarha yezwa? (I love you Xolelwa Ndarha)

Me: I love you too

Him: In English? Soze Kaloku muntu wam'I

chuckled..

Me: Nam Ndiyak'thanda Master.. Uyavuya ke ngoku? (I love you too Master.. Are you happy now)

Him: Aii abantwana bama private school!Me:

You also went to one njena

Him: Ya mine was different from yours

Me: What's the difference?

Him: Sizoyixoxa ngelinye ilanga (We will talk about it some other time)I

heard Xols calling my name..

Me: I have to go, my Sister is calling me

Him: Bye Skat

Me: Bye

—

TASH

My phone rang, I took the cloth and wiped my hands.. It was Jojo..Me:

Hello?

Him: Tash

Me: Yes?

Him: We need to talk

Me: About the resignation letter? Jojo please don't make this difficult. Us-Him: I

don't want you to leave

Me: You will find another assistant, My job is not that difficult

Him: But she can never be you

Me: Jojo I don't wanna do this with you

Him: Where are you? Can I come and pick you up? Me: I

am at my Parents house and no you can't comeHim:

Please.. I just wanna spend one night with you Me: You

mak-

Him: Just one nightI

exhaled..

Me: Fine.. You can come but we having a barbacue

Him: I hope your Parents won't mind having an extra guestMe: You

know they love you

Him: I forgot

I chuckled..

Him: I'm on my way

Me: See you when you get here

Him: Cool

I put my phone down..

—

ARMAN

I

I felt someone gently shaking me, I opened my eyes..Mongz:

We here

Me: That was a very long ride

I looked out of the window and this was no game reserve..Me: This

is no game reserve

Him: I know

He got out..

Me: Where are we?

He went all the way around to my side and then opened the door..Me: What is this place?

Him: Come

He stretched his hand out to me and helped me out, I closed the door..

I looked around and we were parked next to some house, we were in some rural area to be more clear. The houses looked a bit strange with the grass rooftop, and the yards were very big.

Me: Mongezi where are we?

He put his hand around my waist..

Him: Do you trust me?

I looked at him..

Me: I trust you

Him: Let's go

It was a bit dark and I noticed that they didn't have electricity, we made our way into the yard.. There was at least 3 if not two houses in one yard, and this yard that we made our way into had a place where there was about 4 cows locked up.. We stood at the doorstep of the main house in the yard, this one didn't have the rooftop grass.. Mongzi knocked a few times while I was in the world of confusion..

Voice: Ngiyeza (I'm coming)It

was a female voice...

Mongzi: You alright?

Me: You bringing me into this place that I don't know and you asking me if I'm alright?

I heard a very terrible cough that was nearing to the door, then the door opened.. It was opened by some woman who looked like she was in her 60s, she didn't look that much

old though..

Her: Sanibonani? (Greetings)

Mongz cleared his throat..

Mongz: Bengisacela ukubuza Ma, kuka Phiri la? (Is this the Phiri residence)Her:

Yebo kukhona (Yes it is)

Mongz: Igama lami uMongezi Ma, Angazi noma uzokhumubula ukuthi kube khona omunye ubhu- (My name is Mongezi..I don't know if you still remember but someonecam-)

Before Mongz could even finish she started crying, and put her hands on top her head..

Her: Ohw Nkosi yam' wuwe lo bebethe uzoza no Armani? (You the who is supposed to come with Armani)

Mongz: Yebo Ma (Yes Mam)

She looked at me..

Her: Nguye Lo uArmani? (Is this Armani)

Mongz: Yebo Nguye (Yes it is her)

She started jumping around while crying..

Her: Aww mkhulu uJehova.. Ngibonge okhokho ukuletha umntwana ka Londeka la Ekhaya (My God great.. I am also grateful to the Phiri Ancestors for guiding Londeka's child back home)

My Mom's Name is Londeka, now I was getting more and more confused..Me:

Mongz what is this?

He held both my hands.. By now this woman was laying down on the ground crying..

Mongz: Remember that Sunday before I had the accident? When we were out having breakfast then you told me about your Mom's family? You told me what your Mother told you about them?

I nodded..

Him: I had a PI track them down, that's why we here now.. This is your Mother's home

and that is your Grandmother

I shook my head while taking a few steps back..Me:

No.. No..

Him: Armani..

I looked at her and then looked around again and I was overwhelmed by different emotions. I turned around and literally ran back to the car..

Mongz: Shit!!

I got to the car and pulled the door handle, the door didn't open. It was locked.. He made his way to me..

Him: Armani..

Me: Open the door I wanna go back to Tembisa!

Him: I know this is overwhelming an-

I looked at him with my eyes full of tears..

Me: You said.. You said we were going to a game reserve
Him: I know.. I know..

He tried to touch me, I stepped back..Me:

You said...

Him: I know what I said but had I told you the truth you weren't going to agree to come
I saw my Grandmother making her way to us.

Mongz: She's also going to help us track down your Father and his family
This was too much..

Her: Armani??

I looked at her and her apron was dirty since she was rolling on the ground..Her:

Ngasho ngathi lizofika lelanga (I did say this day would come)

I couldn't hold back my cries..

Her: Ungakhali mzukulu, kukini la.. Use khaya manje, xolisa intliziyo sthandwa sam'(Don't cry my Grandchild, this is your home.. You're home now, let your heart heal)

She slowly made her way to me and hugged me, I squeezed her tight..Me:

Gogo (Grandma)

Her: Phephisa Sisi.. Xolisa intliziyo, konke kuzolunga manje (Let your heart heal..Everything is going to be okay now)

I can't even put into words how I was feeling.55

ARMANI

I walked Mongz to his car still very much taken by the events of today and how much he blindsided me from everything.. He leaned over against the car and looked at me..

Him: I saw a lodge not far from here, since we not going back tonight maybe we can spend a night there and then we'll drive back here again in the morning

I didn't say anything..

Him: Armani I know that you mad at me, and I'm sorry that I didn't tell you about this upfront. I should've discussed it with you first

Me: I'm just overwhelmed.. I spent my whole life with no family, The Ndarha's were the only family that I knew. I gave up the hope of ever finding my real family

Him: Again I'm sorry

Me: If you don't mind I wanna spend a night here, you can come back tomorrow morningHe looked at me..

Him: Are you sure?

Me: Yes.. I think my Grandmother and I we have a lot to talk aboutHe nodded..

Him: I will come back tomorrow morning

Me: Please do me a favour, when you get to the lodge call Mam'Gabi for me and let her know about this, there's no service around here

He handed me his phone..

Him: You can save her number I'll call her when I get to the lodge

I took it and saved her number, then I gave his phone back to him..Him:

Aren't you going to need anything?

Me: Maybe the basics.. You know a toothbrush, facecloth and a soapHim:

I'll get them for you and come with them tomorrow morning Me: Thank

you

Him: It's dark now I should be on my way

Me: Please arrive alive

He chuckled..

Him: I will

He came closer and put his hands around my waist, just when he was about to kiss me my Grandmother called out..

Her: Armani..

Mongz let go of me..

Mongz: My PI did mention that she's a tough womanMe:

I'll see you tomorrow

Him: Good night

I watched him get in the car, then I made my way back into the yard as he took off..

My Grandmother was busy adding some wood to the fire that she had prepared, I walked up to her..

Me: Can I help you with that?

She stood up straight and looked at me..

Her: Tshela mina ngane yam' uLondi azange nje wakufundisa isizulu? (Tell me my child,Londi has never taught you your mother tongue)

Me: She did but I tend to mix Zulu and Xhosa together when I speak because I grew up in a house dominated by amaXhosa

She looked at me confused..

Me: Ndiyakwazi uthetha Isizulu Makhulu (I can speak Zulu Grandma)

Her: Ngiyabonga.. Ngoba phela Mina ang'fundanga ntombi yam' manje lolwimi lwenulwesingesi luyangihlula (Remember I am not educated my child, I don't know English)

Me: uXolo Makhulu (I apologize)

Her: Thatha la (Take this)

I took the wood from her..

Her: Ufaka la emlilweni (You put the wood in the fire)Me:

Okay

I threw in a piece of wood and then quickly stepped back making sure that none of the flames got to me..

She laughed..

Her: Awuu kodwa kuyosa kudala la kuwe (You still have a long way to go)I

looked at her..

Her: Faka phela Ngane yam' Mara ungalahleli (Put some more but don't just throw it in)Me:

Makhulu kodwa Ku Late for ukupheka ngoku (It's late to cook now)

Her: Asipheki sobilisa amanzi wetiya (We not going to cook, we preparing this fire to boilwater for tea)

Me: Umlilo ongaka Makhakhulu for iti? (Such fire just for tea)

Her: Awufake Armani ngisayo landa ibhodo (Put some more I'm going to fetch the pot)She made her way to the house to get a pot.

–

NOMFUND

O

It was very awkward around the dinner table with my Parents. We haven't even started

eating because we done been waiting for that fool Jojo to show up..Dad:

Ukudla kuzoze kubande (The food will end up getting cold)

It was a very embarrassing situation, mainly because my Father is very strict and he finds this situation very disrespectful..

Dad: Just because he comes from a well respected and popular family, that doesn't mean he should disrespect us like this.. I don't care if he is famous but this is unacceptable

Mom: I'm sure he is held up somewhere

Dad: What could be more important than this? If he cannot prioritize how can I trust that he will be a good father to my grandson?

Mom: Nomfundo can you try him again?

I took my phone and called him, the line just rang. He didn't pick up..Me:

Akaphenduli (he is not answering)

Dad: You should've found yourself an ordinary man Nomfundo, someone who was going to value you and respect you. This Jojo of a Person, he is not good for you!

Me: May I please be excused?I

stood up and walked away..

Mom: You have upset her now

Dad: I was only telling the truth!

I went to my bedroom to let it all out, Jojo is shit..

—

TASH

Him: After you

I walked in first and he followed..

I glanced at the spot where Bonza's dead body laid on that tragic night, and it all came back to me. There was a lot of blood on the floor, he's eyes are always going to haunt me.. Jojo put his hands on my shoulders..

Him: Are you okay?

He kissed me at the back of my neck..Me:

I'm fine

Him: Let's go upstairs

The Barbacue went well, we had fun. A lot of fun. I was surprised that Jojo didn't eventouch his phone, not even once. He gave all his attention to us..

He held my hand as we made our way upstairs..Him:

We forgot the food in the car

Me: We will get the food later

I didn't know what was going on, one moment he is playing happy families with Fufu, then he finds his "true love" now he is bothering me.. Jojo is one confused soul..

—

MONG

Z

I made it in time to buy a few things at Pick n Pay. They were going to close at 20:00 of which now it was 19:55.. My phone rang as I was confused on what to get Armani, I amnot quite sure about the toiletries that she uses.. I got my phone from my pocket and it was my Uncle..

Me: Malume (Uncle)

Him: Mongz.. How are you boy?

Me: I'm good..

Him: Ya mfana I have bad news

Me: I'm listening

Him: Ndarha's lawyer was here earlier on, Ndarha will be going home tomorrow morning That was disappointing...

Him: I did tell you that the lawyer was going to twist everything Me: it's

no big deal Malume.. That's why I have Plan B

Him: Plan B?

Me: Yes

Him: Mongz what are you planning?

Me: We will talk again Malume.. Thank you

Him: Mong-

I hung up and called my PI..

Him: Sir

Me: You did well by finding Armani's family.. Thank you

Him: I was just doing my job Sir

Me: Either way.. You went an extra mile

Him: Thank you Sir

Me: Unfortunately I have bad news

Him: Yes?

Me: Ndarha is going to be released tomorrow morningHim:

I'm guessing we moving to plan B now?

Me: Yes, and plan B is the last plan

Him: We will execute it Sir

Me: I hope so.. It's the last strike

Him: I won't disappoint you Sir

Me: I know you won't.. That's why I trust in you

—

ARMAN

I

We were now sitting around the fire, I had a mini blanket around my shoulders to protect myself from mosquitoes.. We were having a dumpling that my Grandmother had prepared earlier, it actually tasted nice..

Me: Makhulu ndicela ukubuza (Grandma can I ask)Her:

Buza ngane yam' (ask my child)

Me: Bencinga ukuba apha ekhaya kuka Ngwenya

Her: Cha ngane yam', la ekhaya kuka Phiri kodwa uLondi ebendele kwaNgwenya (We are the Phiri's but Londi was married off to the Ngwenya family)

Me: Ohh ndiyaqonda ke ngoku (I understand now)

Her: Sisaxoxa ngaye ke ubabakho uNgwenya bengicabanga ukuthi ksasa siye sobabonangaphambi kokuthi uphidele emuva (While we on the Ngwenya issue, I was thinking that we should go visit them tomorrow before you go back)

Me: Hai Makhulu.. Umama ebendixelele oko ngo Tat'uNgwenya ukuba ebengumntu onjani. Andiqondi ukuba uzakundivuyela (Mom used to tell me about him and I don't think he will be happy to see me)

Her: Iminyaka seyadlula Armani, Kanti naye ubabakho usekhulile. Akasafani nakudala (Years have passed Armani, your Father is not the same Person anymore)

I kept quiet..

Her: Angisho angeke uhlale iskhathi eside la, kuhle ukuthi uhambe umbonile ukuze mowubuya futhi uzoqala ke ufunde nge mvelaphi yakho (You not going to stay for kind here so I want you to meet him before you leave, so that when you come back again you can learn about your roots)

I didn't think that this was a good idea..

—

TASH

Me: Your turn

He rolled the dice.. Him:

Let's see if I'll win

We were sitting on the carpet in his bedroom busy playing some board game..Me:

Shame.. You didn't win, maybe next time

Him: Ya this is shit

Me: Do you want us to go and watch TV?

Him: No.. I think I have a better idea

He ran his hand on my thigh all the way up to my bumshort..Me:

We not going to have sex

Him: Come on

Me: No we not having sex, especially when I don't know what we doing.. What are wedoing?
What do you want from me?

Him: Okay I'll be honest..

He cleared his throat..

Me: I love you Nataschi

rolled my eyes..

Him: I'm being for real

Me: I'll sleep in the guest room

got up from the floor..

Him: You not being serious are you?

Me: You only love me because you want pussy

Him: That's not true

Me: It is true.. Why you only love me now? Why not before Nomfundo and that other girl?Him:

Tash

Me: Good night Jojo

56

ARMANI

The next morning I woke up a bit late, when I checked my phone it was 10:00am which was not like me. Being a maid for all those years I had to wake before everyone woke up

so I was used to waking up early until today. I don't know why but I had a peaceful sleep, I slept like a baby without having any nightmares nor waking up in the middle of the night. The house was already clean, I made my way outside and my Grandmother was busy with a few things. She laughed when she saw me..

Her: Weee Armani kaze uyoganelaphi, yiso iskhathi sokuvuka lesi? (I wonder who is going to marry you when you wake up at this time)

I walked up to her..

Me: Molo Makhulu (Good morning Grandma)

Her: Molo nawe nje noma uvuka ilanga sekukudala laphuma (Good morning to you too even though you woke up late)

I yawned while looking around. It was very sunny and a few people were already walking up and down, I saw some old man busy with his cows. This place was very peaceful, and very quiet. No sound of cars and no unnecessary noise. I even saw school kids in their school uniform...

Me: Makhulu (Grandma)

She looked at me..

Me: Andikho ready ukuhlangana noTata (I'm not ready to see my Father)

Her: Kanti nami nje ngiyicabangile leyonto. Kuzomele ngiye Mina k'qala ngibazise, beseke uma ubuya sizoya khona (I also thought of it and I will have to go there first and let them know, then when you come back we will go together)

Me: bendicinga lonto nam' (I was also thinking the same thing)

I looked around for a tap and I didn't see any, on the other hand Mongz was running late with the toiletries..

Me: Ngicela ukuyogeza (Can I please go and bath)

Her: Kanti ke ngane yami mele uyolanda amanzi le ekhoni, kunempompi yesigodi sonke (You will have to go fetch water from the tap a bit far from here, there's only one tap for this section)

I exhaled..

Her: Usheshe wakhathala (You got tired way too soon)

I then saw some guy making his way into the yard. He was wearing a leopard print muscle vest, blue overall pants, and black boots. He had a stick with him... He made his way to us busy singing..

Him: "Kaz' ukhulupheka kwavelaphi.. Sekungathi ngakuthenga..."He

stopped singing when he got closer..

Him: Aww Mam'Phiri

Grandma: Lwandle ngane yam' (Lwandle my child)

His eyes were glued on me while speaking to my Grandmother. He had a small afro and a bit of facial hair..

Him: Uphilile kodwa? (Are you well) Grandmother:

Ngiphilile wena? (I'm well and you)Grandma:

Ngiphilile nam' (I'm also well)

My Grandmother stood up straight..

Him: Ntokazi

Me: Hello

He gave me a weird look..

Grandma: Kanti ungathuki ke Lwandle ngoba umzukulu wam lo uArmani (Don't be puzzled, this is my Granddaughter Armani)

Him: Umzukulu wakho? (Your granddaughter)

Her: eheee.. Njengoba ngangihlala ngikhuluma ukuthi uLondi wam wahamba nengane encane (Just like I've said before that my Daughter left with a baby)

Him: Aww Madoda.. Yiyo ingane encane le ubuhlala ukhuluma ngayo? (This is the Granddaughter that you've always been talking about)

Her: Nguye umzukulu lo, kodwa ke akaseyona ingane (She is my Granddaughter, though she's no longer a baby)

He took my hand and kissed it..

Him: Ngiyababula ukukwazi Ntokazi (It's nice to meet you)

I retracted my hand back and nodded with a smile to kill the awkwardness..

Grandma: uLwandle ke lo Armani, uyangisiza ngeyi nkomo, nakho konke okunye la ekhaya (This is Lwandle, he helps me with the cows and other chores around here)

He was making me uncomfortable by starring at me..

Grandma: Lwazi ngicela ungikhaphele yena ayolanda amanzi (Can you accompany herso that she could get some water)

Him: Awu kanti ngingaya mina Mam'Phiri (I can go)

Grandma: bengifuna ukuthi ake abone la esgodini (I just wanted her to see around here)

Him: Khululeka ke Mam'Phiri ngizoyiphelezela intokazi(Have no fear, I will accompanyher)

He pointed at the small house with his stick..

Him: Ngisayo landa izinto zokukha (I'm going to fetch the buckets)He walked away..

Grandma: Unenhlanhla ukuthi uLwandle uzile, kube manje uhamba wedwa (You luckythat he came, you would be walking alone now to fetch the water)

–

TASH

I made my way downstairs and Jojo was preparing breakfast. He was walking up anddown all whistling at what not...

Me: Good morning

Him: Morning.. I thought that I'll be long done by the time you woke upMe:

Seems like you still busy

Him: Just the sausages left

He opened the chair for me, and I sat down..Me:

Thank you

Him: Let me get the sausages

He went to the the kitchen to get them and I poured myself a glass of orange juice..I waited for him to come back..

Him: I squeezed the oranges myselfMe:

I see.. You went all out

He placed the sausages on the table..Him:

Wanted to make it speci-

We were interrupted by the intercom..

Him: I wonder who that is.. I'll be right back

I dished up for myself while he went to check who it was, and just when I was starting to enjoy my breakfast I heard Nomfundo yelling and swearing at him.. I don't know what shit hell hormones Nomfundo is going through but she has been full of shit lately.. She made her way into the dinning area after a while..

Her: Are you serious Jojo?

Worse I was wearing Jojo's t-shirt because mine was very wrinkled..Her: You stood me up for this?

Jojo: I can explain

Fufu: Explain what?? It's pretty obvious that she's your first priorityJojo:

That's not true

Fufu: It is true!!.. You know my Father was right, I don't know what I was thinking falling pregnant for you!!

Jojo: Nomfundo calm the fuck down!

Her: I'm not going to calm down! Last night's dinner was very important to me, you couldn't just sacrifice one night of eating pussy just so you can meet up with my Parents?

Jojo didn't know what to say..

Fufu: You know what.. From here on stay away from me and my baby! I will raise this baby on my own, I'll be a single parent.. Enjoy your life with miss thang over there

Me: Miss thang?

Fufu: Psycho!!

Jojo: Nomfundo!!

She kept quiet..

Jojo: I think you should leave I'll call you laterShe

looked at me..

Her: Do you even know that we have been fucking? I'm not talking about something that happened while we were still dating, I'm talking about something that has been happening recently

He grabbed her by her arm and dragged her out..Her:

Stop it!! I'm pregnant you bastard!

Jojo: Leave! I'll call you later

This is so like Jojo, I don't know what I was thinking

I got up from the chair as he made his way in still followed by Nomfundo.. I laughed while shaking my head..

Me: I don't know what I was thinking

Jojo: Tash I can explain

Me: I don't think so

I tried to leave but he blocked my way..

Him: Please don't leave

Me: There's a lot of things I need to do before leaving the countryHim: You

not leaving the country

Fufu: She's leaving? Leaving SA for good? At least that has senseJojo:

Nomfundo shut the fuck up!!

She kept quiet..

Me: I can't deal with this drama!

pointed at Nomfundo..

Nomfundo: At least I'm not crazy!!

Me: I rest my case

I made my way to the kitchen with Jojo following me..Him:

Tash wait..

I opened the door and walked out, she grabbed me by my arm..Him:

Wait..

I turned and looked at him..

Me: Wait for what?

Him: Can we talk?

Me: Talk about what exactly? You wasting my time?

Him: Tash..

Me: I'm tired of the games Jojo, I'm tired of being unappreciated. There's someone outthere who can love me and make me happy I just gotta know where to look

Him: No don't say that.. Don't say things like thatMe:

I'm tired okay? I'm tired of being used by you

Him: What do you want me to do just to show you how much I need you in my life?I shook my head..

Me: Maybe it's too late

Him: Don't say that

He tried to hold me but I pushed him off..

Me: Jojo please.. Stay with your Baby Mama and leave me alone okay?I walked away..

Me: I hope she will be gone when I come back from my walk so I can get my phone upstairs and call someone to come and get me

–

ARMAN

I

Lwandle was the one pushing the wheelbarrow that was carrying two buckets and I was holding the 3rd bucket, as we made our way to get water. It was so embarrassing that I was out without brushing my teeth and washing my face..

I kept my eyes wandering about, I didn't wanna talk nor make eye contact..

Him: Ngiyacabanga ukuthi ayikujabulisi lendawo (I'm sure this place doesn't make you happy)

Me: Ngoba? (Why)

Him: Ngisho phela ngoba ihlukile kunase Goli (It's different from the city)I

shrugged my shoulders..

Him: ewwwuuu.. Kanti nami ngibuye futhi ngibhore ngokukhuluma kakhulu (I'm sure I'm also boring you too busy talking a lot)

I chuckled..

Me: Ukuthi nje andiqhelanga ukuhamba estratweni ndingeka hlambi (It's just that I'm not used to walking out in the streets while I haven't bathe)

He stopped and looked at me..

Him: uKhuluma isixhosa NesiZulu? Uhlanganisa konke nje? (You spoke Xhosa and Zulu at the same time)

I kept quiet...

Him: Bengingiza ukuthi egoli kunjje (I didn't know that the city was like that)He

laughed after that statement and I did too..

Me: As long you can understand me that's all that matters

Him: Weeee kubuye kulahlelwe nelamgesi (Then there's English on top)Me:

Khawume wethu (wait a minute)

We both laughed..

—

NDARH

A

I got a call from the president right when I had stepped my foot at home..Him:

What happened?

Me: Have you found who is behind all of this nonsense?

Him: A background check on the Comissioner revealed that he is related to theMabuzas, he is Mabuza's brother in law

Me: What?

Him: What do they have against you?

Me: I have no idea.. Mabuza is a good friend of mine, why would he turn against me?Him: I don't know but we have to talk to him and find out

Me: We have to talk to him, I can't believe he is the one who did thisHim: I'm surprised too

Me: I will call you later, let me bath and then rest a bit.. The holiding cell was not a funplace

Him: Don't forget to check Mabuza

Me: I will

I hung up.. This didn't make sense, why would Mabuza turn on me like this?

—

ARMAN

I

We waited in the queue for at least 30min. I can't believe that they only have one tap where almost everyone in this section gets their water from. The queue wasn't long, problem is that people were filling up a lot of buckets. Lwandle and I got our bucketsfilled up, he helped me place the other one ontop of my head and it was very heavy..

Him: lingawi phela (Don't let it fall)

I walked slow as it threatened to fall..Me:

This is heavy!

Him: Angikusoli awujwayele (I don't blame you.. You not used to it)Me:

You understand English?

Him: Ngaya phela eskolweni noma ngingafundanga ukuyaphi (I did go to school thoughI didn't get far)

As we were walking the bucket was very unstable, and before I knew it. It fell, splashingwater on me..

Me: Haisuka!!! (shouting)

I was wet, Lwandle laughed..

Me: It's not funny Lwandle He

made his way to him..

Him: Awumanzanga kakhulu kodwa? (aren't that wet)

He bent down and checked my dress, he squeezed the dress so it could drain a bit ofthe water. My hand was on his back..

Him: Kuhle ngoba awulimalanga (At least you didn't hurt yourself)

He also took off my shoes and made sure that I was okay, he took off his vest andwiped my legs dry..

Me: You don't have too Lwandle

Him: Kodwa ngoba ngiyafuna nje (I want too)

I let him be and then I saw Mongz approaching, he was a bit far but not that far as to notrecognize him..

Me: Lwandle ngiyabonga (Thank you)I

stepped away..

Lwandle: Ima phela Armani seng- (Wait a minute)I

stopped him..

Me: No it's fine.. Thank you

I looked at Mongz making his way to us and Lwazi picked up my shoes..Mongz got to us..

Me: Hey.. We were just fetching water, the crazy thing is that my bucket fell and it got water all over me

Lwandle: Kanti mina nje besengimnceda (I was just helping)

Mongz gave Lwandle a serious look without even joining in the laughter, honestly speaking I have never seen him this serious before...

Lwandle: Ithi ngihambise lawa esiwakhile (let me take the rest of the water to the house)

He put my shoes down and went to the wheelbarrow, he started pushing it while Mongz looked at him..

Me: Mongz

He seemed like he was in a world of his own..Me:

Mongz

He looked at me..

Me: Are you okay?

He smiled..

Him: Ya I'm good

He picked up my shoes from the ground..

Him: Will you be able to walk?

Me: I don't know I'll try

Him: There's thorns around here.. Come on hop on my backMe:

I'm wet (laughing)

Him: I won't die I

laughed again..

Me: Okay

I got on his back and we made our way home way..

Him: What's happening you got water all the way up to your vagina?Me:

Nooooo.. My dress is a bit high up

Him: Ohw my bad.. Thought I was going to have to kill someone busy touching on your Vagina

Me: You insane (Laughing)

Him: You laugh about it but you'll be surprisedMe:

Pleaseee!! you the most sane guy I knowHim: It's

good to know

I whispered in his ear..

Me: Thank you

Him: I love you and I wanna see you happyMe:

I love you too

(Silence)

Me: I meant that we can now officially start a relationship type of "I love you" He

stopped and put me down..

Him: Are you sure?

Me: I'm sure

Him: Where does that leave Jojo?

Me: he is history

Him: Armani I need you to be sure about this, I'm not pressuring you

Me: I'm sure.. I mean what you did to me it's.. I have never had anyone who loves me as much as you do, who cares for me as much as you do.. You make me happy and I wanna be with you, only you

Him: I want that too

Me: Maybe we can go to my Grandmother's place and I can bath, I haven't even brushed my teeth

He kissed me on my forehead..

Him: Let's go then

He put me on his back again..57

ARMANI

A MONTH LATER

It's amazing how things can change in a short space of time. After that first visit to my Grandmother's place I went back to the city and I quit my job to come and live here for awhile, life is somehow very interesting around here and very different from the life urbanlifestyle

Grandma: Siyabonga Armani (Thank you Armani)

Lwandle's Mom was around and I had made them tea with choice assorted biscuits..

Ms Mhlongo: Akufani noLwandle nje ukuthi avele anyamalale kanje(It's not like Lwandle for him to disappear like this)

Lwandle and I have been good friends ever since I came back here for my second visit. He was teaching me a lot of things including taking care of the cows, and he would also help me to fetch water on a daily basis until about a week ago when he suddenly disappeared. No one really knows what happened to him..

Grandma: Kuyamangaza ngoba phela uLwandle akamani ahambe engayaleya (It's shocking because Lwandle doesn't go without saying where he is going)

Ms M: Yikho ekumangazayo lokho, futhi nje angayaphi uLwandle? (That is shocking, plus where would he go)

I cleared my throat and they looked at me..

Me: Angiqondile ukudelela (I don't mean to be disrespectful)

Grandma: Khuluma phela Mano uma kukhona okwaziyo (speak up if there's something

that you know)

Me: bunjani ubugebengu la esgodini? (how is crime around here)They both

paused for a moment..

Ms M: bukhona kona kodwa akusiyinto engasimisa ngezinyawo, khona futhi ubani ongagebenga uLwazi? (There is crime around here but it's not something that we used too or something that is common, plus who can kidnap Lwazi)

Grandma: Akekho umuntu ongayenza ubugebengu ngoba uyazi nje ukuthi angashiswa abulawe abahlali la (There's no one who can do crime here, the person knows that they can be set on fire by the villagers)

This was very unusual..

Me: Manje kuzoyiwa nini emapoliseni? (When are we going to the police)

Ms M: Uma usukhuluma ngama phoyisa ngilahla iThemba (When you involv the police I am losing all faith)

Me: Makhulu bendicela bandla ukwazisa uMongezi ngalento, mhlambe angasiza(Grandma can I please inform Mongz about this, maybe he can help)

Things between me and Mongz have been good, we communicate via calls at a specific time since network coverage is bad here. There's a supermarket a bit far from my placethat's where I go and charge my phone and then he calls me from there, network there is not so bad.. Though my being here makes things a bit harder for us to see each other constantly but we try to communicate as much as we can, and he has been very supportive of my finding my true identity and learning more about my family. I love him very much and I hope he will be able to stay faithful up until I come back seeing that we haven't been intimate yet. I had to temporarily stop seeing the psychiatrist too, I will continue with the sessions when I go back to the city..

Ms M: Ubani uMongezi? (Who is Mongezi)

Grandma: Isoka lakhe lase Goli, umfana nje Olungile ngiyacabanga angakhona ukusiza(It's her boyfriend from the city, he is very kind and I do think that he might help us)

Ms M: Nginga bongakakhulu Armani (I would be truly grateful Armani)

Grandma: Wuye phela othenge lama khekhe kano kusho abuya Egoli (He is the one who bought this biscuits for us, all the way from the city)

Ms M: Kona amnandi.. Ayazwakala ukuthi awatholakali la eduze (They very nice, you can tell that they not from here)

I smiled as they continued drinking their tea and eating the biscuits..

—

MONG

Z

"Yazi ang'understand baby why uvale iPhone, manje ngibuya kubo kodwa bathiabamboni.. Ende ngiqinqa emalubhini, still angimtholi.. Mhlampe ubaby uyang'shayashaya wathi akajoli.. Ngic-"

The song stopped when a call came through, I went to get my phone from the desk. It was my PI..

Me: What's the report?

Him: She basically does the same chores almost every day and she's mostly with her Grandmother

Me: That's all?

Him: Yes Sir.. There's nothing out of the ordinary as yet, since her male friend went "missing"

Me: Thank you very much

Him: You welcome Sir

I hung up and continued with the song...

"Lo cherry uyang'cika yaz'.. Ngizombamba ngescima plus.. Sefuna ukubuya neDrop,ujola amajita emlazi, makengambamba ngizom'gxavunisa okwe glass.. Ngibuye ngimshaye naphantsi, ngimfuqe nge-"

I saw Ndarha standing at the door. I stopped the song..

Him: You shouldn't be listening to such songs, they promote domestic violence against women which is not right

He made his way in, and my assistant got in after him.. Her:

Sir I tr..

Me: It's okay

Her: Can I get you something to drink?

Me: Don't stress yourself I have a feeling that Mr Ndarha won't stay for too longHer: Yes

Sir.. I'll be at my station if you need anything

Me: Thank you

Ndarha sat down.. I sat down too on my chair and slightly opened the drawer incase hetries something stupid so that I can get my gun..

Him: I see that the business is doing wellI

should be ending his life right now..

He put his arms on the table, while leaning forward..

Him: Mongezi your father and I we more like Brothers, when I found out that he was thereason why I was arrested and my reputation tainted like that... I didn't understand why

I kept quiet..

Him: Honestly speaking I was ready to retaliate until I continued with my investigationsand all evidence pointed out to you

I let him continue..

Him: Why would you want to go against me like that? You more like a Son to meMe: I

know about Armani

He kept quiet for a long time..

Him: I did hear that you two are dating.. What exactly do you know?Me:

Everything..

Him: You see if I wanted Armani I would get her, I know where she is and trust me it won't take much to convince her to leave you. After all, she is still very much confused. You think you know everything but you don't, so if you still value your relationship with her then you will stay away from me. If you don't, I have enough dirt on you to make herleave you. Your history with the girls you've dated previously is not very beautiful, andyour last one it ended in a very tragic manner

He got up..

Him: I don't usually go into war with kids, my being here is even degrading to me. I'm going to warn you for the last time, stay in your lane Son

He glanced down at my phone..

Him: Cut that crap music and concentrate on your medication

He buttoned his jacket, then took out his glasses from his pocket. He put them on and walked out with his one hand buried deep in his pocket..

—

JOJO

Me: Are you warm?

Her: It's not even cold

I pulled the covers up to her..

Her: Khawuyeke Jojo yhuu!! (Stop it)I

looked at her..

Her: Ndi right (I'm alright)

I slightly sat on the bed, and she got a bit irritated...Her:

Jojo can't you go irritate other people?

Me: Well since I'm single I don't have anyone to irritate, you the only woman in my life that's why I'm irritating you

(Silence)

Me: You gave us quite a scare

Her: I didn't mean too.. With everything that's happened I didn't think anyone cared

My Mother got admitted a while back apparently she has alcoholic hepatitis, and her drinking was made things worse..

Me: You need to get better because I messed up really bad with Nomfundo, she's 8 months pregnant now and we need to go to her Parents. They forbidding me to have a

relationship with my Son when he's bornHer:

We will sort that out

I held her hand..

Her: How is everything going with you? No girlfriend?

Me: I'm still trying to start something with Nataschi but she's being difficultHer: Given your history.. I don't blame her

Me: At least she didn't leave the country that's promisingHer:

Do you love her?

Me: I do.. Very much. Nataschi gets me and she has helped me build and run my empire,she is the most amazing woman I have ever met

Her: Took you long enough to realize thatMe:

Ya, what can I say?

Her: How is Armani? When last did you talk to her?

Me: I think it's been 2 weeks now. The last time we talked was when she made it clearthat she's with Mongz now and I should leave her alone.. I still can't believe he trackeddown her family

Her: Mongz is a bit dangerous, when he sets his mind on something he gets it. I wantyou to stay away from Armani I don't want you having any altercation with him, he suffers from clinic depression, he gets paranoid very easily, he has anxieties, and I'm pretty sure he is bipolar too. He needs to take medication just to stay right

Me: I'm not scared of Mongz.. I'm going to stay away from Armani because she seemshappy not because of him

Her: Either way Jojo just stay away from himShe yawned..

Me: Should I leave?

Her: Don't be silly.. How is Xolelwa?

Me: She's fine.. She asked for a transfer and moved down to Witbank, to be with her

baby daddy

Her: Have you met him before?

Me: Not yet but I heard they around so later on I'll be meeting him

Her: He is Gabi's nephew and he helped Armani when she was kidnapped so.. He probably isn't a bad person

Me: Xolelwa seems happy with him

Her: I'm not very happy with the decision she took but she's been suffering for a long time and I'm happy that she's happy

Me: Get some rest.. I'll come and see you again tomorrow, I'll come with Xoliswa

Her: Don't bring that one she's tiring

I laughed...

Her: When I make it out of here alive.. I'm going to divorce Ndarha

Me: What?

Her: It's about time

That took me by surprise..

—

XOLELW

A

I vomited again with Master's hand rubbing my back. I wiped my tears..

Master: How are you feeling now?

I shook my head..

Me: I hate vomiting

Him: Askies

I waited for a while and I didn't feel like vomiting anymore, he helped me to get up from the floor then he flushed. I rinsed my mouth and washed my hands, I was feeling like shit..

Me: I feel like shit and 9 months is still far

He pulled me closer to him...

Him: Sizoba grand (We going to be fine)

Me: Easy for you to say because you not Pregnant

Him: Ngoba ngihlala ng'khona ke Mami (I'm always here) Me: Ya

continue to make yourself feel better by saying that

Him: I'm very supportive, I even eat things that I don't like just to make you feel betterI

chuckled..

Me: That's the best partHe

kissed me..

Mam'Gabi: Master.. Xolelwa..

We were visiting Mam'Gabi. Master was off and my transfer was taking longer than expected, the paperwork was delaying and now I wasn't complaining anymore seeingthat most of the time I'm not feeling well. I might rest for the entire first trimester..

Mam'G: Unjani manje? (How are you feeling now)She

gave me a glass of water..

Me: Still the same

I find this whole situation a bit weird, I mean Mam'Gabi was our maid for a very long time. She was serving me and now she is practically my Mother in law, the tables haveturned.. I'm still not used to her in this way but nonetheless she's very good to me and she tries to achieve a certain relationship between us though I avoid her a lot because I'm not used to how things are now..

Her: So how are you going to survive at work?

Me: I'll go back to work when I'm on my second trimesterHer:

Weee ave utefa Xolelwa (You a cry baby)

Me: Pregnancy is hard

Her: And it's going to get more harder

Master: let's not scare her that much.. Phela uyobe sekhalela Mina (She will bebothering me)

Master checked his watch..

Him: Athi ngiye stradini ngodlala namajita, ngizonibona jumpas nge dinner (Let me goout for a bit, I'll see you guys later)

He was going to live me here with his Aunt?He

kissed me on the cheek..

Him: Ngiyabuya yezwa? (I'll be back)I

nodded..

Me: Okay

He made his way to the door, and when he had gone out awkwardness creeped in. I wish Armani was here to make this situation less awkward for me..

58

TASH

I opened the door and he was standing there looking all sorts of sad, I actually felt sorryfor him. I searched his inner emotions through his eyes before I could let him in, then I opened the door wider and he made his way in with his hands buried deep in his pockets. I closed the door and waited for him to say something..

Him: How are you?

Me: I'm well and you?

Him: I'm good

A second passed..

Me: Can I help you?

He licked his lower lip first before saying anything..Him:

Tash it's been a month

I folded my arms..

Him: What's this punishment for?

Me: It's not a punishment

Him: I know you have feelings for Me, I have feelings for you too why can't you give us a chance?

He has been a good boy lately, but still I don't trust that Jojo can be committed to one woman..

Me: Jojo you don't understand

Him: Then please make me understand

Me: It's hard being in a relationship with someone that you deeply love only to have that person fool around, cheating is heartbreaking and I don't wanna go through those emotions. I don't believe that you can be committed to one woman only, not so long ago you were fooling around with Nomfundo while you were said to be committed to another woman

Him: With Nomfundo it was only about sex and nothing more. Her hormones were all over and I didn't want her sleeping with another man while she was pregnant with my child, I promise you though I haven't slept with Nomfundo in a while now

Me: What about your true love?

Him: Here's the thing.. Armani and I we go way back but what I forgot is that she is in love with the old Jojo, the one that she was dating years ago. I am no longer the same person anymore, a lot has changed and I was trying to hold on to old memories

Me: How do I know that if we give it a try tomorrow you won't change your mind and go for someone else?

Him: Because I love you.. Tash you have always been there for me through thick and thin. I didn't realize that I had a good woman until you threatened to leave

I didn't know if I should believe him or not..

Him: If I fuck up you can leave and I won't even try to stop you, I'll even buy you a ticket but for now please babe let's see what we can work out

A part of me believed him but another part of me was skeptical.. He made

his way to me..

Him: Please..

He put his strong hands on my waist and kissed me on my neck, kisses on the neck always give me goosebumps. He moved up and kissed me on my cheek then went to whisper next to my ear..

Him: Please..

He squeezed me tighter to him and gently bit my earlobe, he left a kiss again on my cheek and then finally kissed me on the lips. I loosened up and wrapped my arms around his neck, truthfully speaking I haven't went down this road in a very long time. Jojo is big and my petite body stands no chance against him, that's why when he is holding me tight it's a bit difficult to escape...

I lowered my hand down to his jeans..

Him: I've missed you so much

Me: I've missed you too

[REMOVED]

—

ARMAN

I

My Grandmother was the one who bought me airtime when we got to the shop so that I could call Mongz and let him know about Lwandle missing. This might be a stretch for him but it's worth a try..

Him: Sthandwa Sam'

Me: Love

Him: Where did you get airtime to call me?

Me: My Grandmother bought me, it's not a lot though the call might even cut
Him: Is everything okay?

Me: No.. Everything is not okay

Him: What's wrong?

I could sense the worry in his voice

Me: You still remember Lwandle right? The guy who helps around here at home? Him: Yes

I do

Me: He went missing

Him: What do you mean he went missing? Isn't he too old to be missing? Akayazi indlelaebuya ekhaya? (He doesn't know his way back home)

I chuckled at that statement even though this was sensitive..Me: It's a serious matter my love, his Mother is devastated

Him: I'm sorry to hear that about your friend, I hope he comes back home soonMe: That's why I called you.. We need your help

Him: I don't understand

Me: Can you please help us look for him

Him: Shono ke Nana, Mina ngoyenzani ngoba ang'yazi kahle leyo ndawo. Ngoqala kuphi ukumfuna? (Tell me something, What am I expected to do because I don't even know that place, where will I begin to look for him)

He had a point there..

Me: I don't know but any help will do

Him: Hai Amarni uyaziqala Izindaba (Armani you like starting trouble)Me:

Ndiyacela njena (I'm asking you nicely)

Him: Okay I'll see what I can do

(One minute remaining)

Me: I have to go.. My airtime is about to finish

Him: Should I call later or tomorrow?

Me: Maybe tomorrow, later we going to my Dad's placeHim:

Tomorrow it is then

Me: Okay my love bye

Him: Uziphathe kahle (behave)

Me: I will

Him: I love you sthandwa sam'

Me: I love you too

I let out a sigh and hung up..

–

MONG

Z

I looked at my cellphone and went back to the room, I looked at Lwandle. His hands were tied with a ligature rope that was hanging from the ceiling. His arms were weak from hanging and he looked disoriented from all the beatings he endured.

I looked at my PI and he poured water on him, Lwazi woke up while coughing..

Me: It's your lucky day today.. Ngizok'dedela uye ekhaya (I'm going to release you so that you can go home)

He didn't believe what he was hearing.. Him:

Ngiyabonga mhlekazi (Thank you Sir)

I looked at my PI and he put on the latex gloves and then took the big scissor. He made his way to Lwazi and pulled down his pants together with his underwear, he aimed the scissor exactly at the tip of his dick..

Lwazi panicked..

Me: Easy.. If you move they'll be blood everywhere He tried to calm himself down..

Me: Uyabona Lwandle I love Armani and I don't hurt people that I love.. On the other hand, wena you mean nothing to me. I can simply kill you and have you buried somewhere in a shallow grave like a dog.. Is that what you want? Ukufa njenginja? (todie like a dog)

Him: Cha mhlonitshwa! (No sir)

Me: Angizwa? (I can't hear you)

My PI pressed the scissor harder that I saw tears in Lwandle's eyes..Him: Cha

mhlonitshwa (No Mhlonitshwa)

I looked at my PI and he removed the scissor from Lwandle..

Him: Armani is a bit sick and I don't want you putting any ideas in her head or leading her on, ungambheki nangalawo mehlo wokuthi mhlambe ningajola (don't even look at her as if like you two can date)

Him: Ngiyakuzwa Mhlonitshwa.. U Armani usufana nodadewethu (I hear you Sir.. Armani is like a sister to me)

Me: Ngiyababula ukuzwa lokho ke mfana omdala (I am happy to hear that big man)I took out my wallet, and counted R1500 from it. I put it on the table..

Him: Sowuzathengela uMama ukudla (You will buy groceries for your Mother)I looked at my PI...

Me: You will drive him halfway, just abandon him in the middle of nowhere but let it be a bit closer to the village

I looked at Lwandle..

Me: Uma ungayithi vu lento.. (If you dare say anything)I shook my head..

Me: Nci Nci Nci..Umamakho uyokhala impilo yakhe yonke (Your Mom is going to cry for the rest of her life)

Him: Ngeke ngikhulume Mhlonitshwa (I won't say anything)

I looked at my PI and nodded, he took the scissor and cut the ligature rope to free him. When he was freed he pulled up his underwear and pants while tearing up..

Him: Ngiyabonga Mhlonitshwa (Thank you sir)PI:

Asambe Ndoda (let's go)

My PI took the money and handed it to him..

Lwandle thanked me one more time while limping his way to the door.. I got my phone out...

Me: Weak bastard!!

–

ARMAN

I

My Grandmother and I walked back home, she was awfully quiet..Me:

Makhulu udiniwe? (are you tired)

Her: Hayi akunani wena Mano (It's nothing serious)Me:

uRight Makhulu? (Are you okay)

She stopped..

Her: Angifuni kubonakale ngathi amagama wami mabi (I don't want it to sound like I'mtalking bad)

Me: Yintoni Makhulu? (What's wrong)

Her: Uyamthemba lomfana ozwana naye? (do you trust this boy you dating)Me:

Umongezi? Ewe ndiyamthemba Makhulu (Yes I do trust him)

She started walking again..

Me: Ubuziswa Yintoni? (why do you ask)

Her: Angimzwisisi kahle (I don't get him)

Me: Uyandilahla kengoku (You confusing me)

Her: Kukhona okungekho kahle ngaye nje ulunge kakhulu, uhleka kakhulu abantu abanjalo bavame ukuba yingozi Uma bekwatile (There's something about him that's notright. He is way too kind, he laughs a lot.. Such people are dangerous when they angry)

I laughed..

Me: Umongezi unentliziyo entle Makhulu, udalwe njalo (He has a good heart, he wasborn like that)

Her: Akaze nje mhlambe wakwesabisa noma wakushaya? (He has never threatened youor hit you)

Me: Cha Makhulu, Umongezi akekho njalo (Mongezi is not like that)

Her: Hayi asazi (We don't know)I

held her hand..

Me: Suba nexhala sal'kwazi sam' Umongezi akekho njalo (Have no fear my old woman, Mongezi is not like that)

—

TASH

He grabbed my butt and made me go up and down faster than I was actually doing it, feeling all of him deep inside of me was a bit uncomfortable. I kept on losing my breath and I was starting to get sore now, we have been at it for a while now...

His breathing became unstable again as he pressed me down harder and my hands were on his chest, he moaned louder while coming deep inside of me. This time around I felt some hotness... I leaned over and kissed him, he ran his hands on my back... I was very tired and in pain that I collapsed on top of him while he was still inside of me, and I felt him slowly slipping out.

He wrapped his hands around me and I closed my eyes..59

ARMANI

This meeting with my Father and his family was getting to me, never in a million years did I ever imagine us meeting. I looked at myself one more time on that cracked small mirror. The cornrows that my Grandmother did with my hair, they weren't bad. I'm surprised a woman of her age knows how to braid, she told me that she used to braid my Mother's hair when my Mother was young.

Grandma: Mano usulungile? (Are you ready)

Me: Ewe Makhulu ndi ready (Yes Grandma I am ready)

I hope the meeting is going to go well because he even sent a car to come and fetch us, my Grandmother had long set this date up with him before I came back here for my second visit..

—

MONG

Z

I went out of the office for a brief moment to go and meet up with my cousin Nokhanya, her Mother and My Mom are sisters..

She gave me a hug..

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Her: I'm well.. It's nice to see you

Me: Nice to see you too, you look good Her:

Thank you, you don't look bad eitherMe:

Thank you

Her: I was in the neighborhood then I remembered that you work around here and I decided to hit you up

Me: It's good that you did.. It's been a minute since I last saw youHer:

That's very true

I looked at the Menu..

Me: How are the kids?

Her: They good, you should come by sometime when they around to see themMe: I'll

do so

My phone beeped, it was a text from Lauri which read:

"I'm running a bit late, but I'll be there. The Uber is delaying" I

texted her back:

"You should've told me I would've sent a driver to fetch you" She

replied back after a few seconds:

"I'll be there be patient"

My cousin cleared her throat and I put my phone down and looked at her..Me:

Sorry about that

Her: Girlfriend?

Me: No.. Not exactly

She gave me a weird look..

Her: Talk to me Cuz

(Silence)

Me: It's just some slay queen that offers me a service and then I pay herShe slightly opened her mouth in shock..

Her: You dirty dog!! Don't you have a girlfriend?

Me: It's just sex nothing more

Her: But still Mongz, that's cheating

Me: My girlfriend is dealing with a few Personal issues, I don't wanna pressure her withsex just yet

Her: There's nothing painful like finding out that your boyfriend is sleeping withsomeone else, it's wrong trust me I've been there

Me: My girlfriend won't find out because Lauri knows what this is, she does this for aliving. She entertains loaded guys to maintain her lavish lifestyle

Her: What about Hiv? What about STI?

Me: That's what condoms are for

She shook her head..

Me: I'm a guy Cuz, I need to go down this road once in a while you will never understand. When my Girlfriend has sorted herself out then I'll stop

Her: I'm highly disappointed in you

Me: Order something while I'm still in a good mood.. I'll handle the bill

—

TASH

Jojo wrapped his big arms around me

Him: What's wrong? You have been lost in your own thoughts for a while now
Me: It's nothing

We were still in bed..

Him: Talk to me

He kissed me on my forehead..

Me: I need to tell you something

Him: It sounds serious

Me: It is

Him: What is it?I

exhaled..

Me: I can't have kids

Him: Huh?

Me: I had an abortion once in my life and it damaged me, I can't conceive
He kept quiet..

Me: Since we trying this relationship thing I wanted to be honest with you, so you know
what you getting yourself into..

Him: I get what you saying

He remained quiet for a while..

Me: If you change your mind about us I understand

Him: Don't be silly I'm not changing my mind, I still wanna be with you. When that time
comes for us to start our own family we will consider all alternatives that will be made
available to us, we'll get a good specialist who can help us

Me: I hope so

Him: Don't stress yourself about it I'm not in a hurry

Me: Since Nomfundo gave you a baby I don't want her disrespecting me that I can't conceive
as time goes on, it's no secret that she hates me and I feel like she's going to

use my situation against me

Him: Forget about Nomfundo and I would never let her disrespect you like that. Hormones are also playing a big role in her being this crazy, I'm sure after giving birth she will be fine

Me: I hate being useless

Him: You not useless

Me: If I can't give you kids then I'll be useless, a woman's worth depends on her being able to give her partner kids

Him: What's with this baby talk all of a sudden?

Me: I'm just saying, I don't wanna invest too much in this relationship only to have you get tired of me that I can't conceive

Him: Okay you know what, we will cross that bridge when we get there. For now let's talk about something else, something less depressing

He gently bit me on my neck and I giggled..Me:

How about we go out? I'm hungry

Him: Now that is a problem, you telling me that you don't wanna cook woman?Me:

Why cook if there's restaurants?

Him: Maybe I should reconsider this relationshipI

laughed..

Him: Let's go and shower then we can go out... My treat Me:

designer heels and a matching bag your treat as well?Him: I

thought we were going out to eat

I looked at him..

Him: Fine anything you want

Me: Thank you

I kissed him..

Him: Gold digging tendencies coming out Me:

Ohw please (laughing)

—

NONTSIKELELE

O

Ndarha walked in holding flowers and a basket of fruits, I was sitting on the small couch busy reading a novel..

Him: Shouldn't you be in bed?

He came and kissed me on my forehead.. Me:

I'm tired of sleeping

Him: How are you feeling?

He pulled the chair and sat down after putting the flowers and the basket on top of the cabinet..

Me: I'm hanging in there

He took off his glasses..

Him: The Dr said you will recover very well if you could stop drinking completely, not much damage has been caused

Me: Ndiyeva (I see)

Him: I was thinking that maybe you should start with AA meetings when you get discharged, I don't know what happens there but Pe-

Me: I want a divorce

He looked at me as if like I had insulted him..

Him: What?

Me: Ndicela iDivorce Ndarha (I am asking for a divorce)

Him: A lot is happening and I know that you confused but a divorce?

Me: I'm not confused.. This is me thinking straight, I want a divorce and when I get discharged I want you out of my house for good!

He laughed.. Him:

Your house?

Me: When you bought that house, you said that you were getting it for me and the kids remember?

Him: Okay I'll temporarily move out of your house but we not getting a divorce Me: I

don't wanna fight about this

Him: We not fighting.. I'm just telling you that we not going down that road, if you upset find a way to deal with your emotions. Go see a professional

Me: If you worried about me getting half of everything that you own don't be, I just want the house, I want to keep my cars and I want an allowance of R35 000 a month. That won't even hurt your pocket

Him: I'm not worried about everything that you might get from this marriage, honestly I'll even give you half a million a month all that I'm saying is that we not getting a divorce. We going to try and fix this

Me: Maybe I should just let my lawyer handle this

Him: That's cute Darling.. I like the fighting spirit but you'll be wasting money that you don't even have, because I'll drag the process and make sure that it kills your bank balance

He got up from the chair..

Him: You should've thought about leaving me long time ago, now it's too late He put on his glasses..

Him: Work on getting better.. I love you

–

MONG

Z

Lauri and I we always meet up at the same hotel "The Mirage" Hotel. She has been taking care of my sexual needs for a very long time now, and she knows that this is strictly about sex and nothing more..

I grabbed her ponytail as she went for a deep throat, that's the most amazing part about

a blowjob, when you find someone who knows how to do it and she's a pro.. She took it out and gave me a hand job, while running her tongue around my tip and I couldn't hold back my moans..

Me: Fuuuuuuck!!

She went back in and my phone started ringing, I ignored it but the person kept on calling. It clicked to me that it might be Armani....

Me: Pass me my phone

Her: Just ignore it

Me: I said pass me my phone

She got up and went to get it, then she gave it to me. It was my PI..Me:

Yeah?

Him: I abandoned him in the middle of nowhere like how you wantedMe:

That's good Man

Him: I wanna run something by you

Me: Can't it wait?

Him: Unfortunately no

Me: What is it?

Him: Nontsikelelo Ndarha has been running her mouth to one of the Nurses that she wants a divorce

Me: What?

Him: All we need is for the divorce to get messy then we can go ahead with our plan, we kill her and then frame Ndarha. Make it like he didn't want to her to divorce him

Me: That could work.. Look we'll talk later about thisHim:

No problem Sir

Me: Bye

Everything seems to be fitting in perfectly in my last plan of getting rid of Ndarha, for

good!

60

NOMFUNDO

Sometime next week I will have to pack up and go live with my parents up until I give birth. Even so, I will still have to live with them when the baby is born until Jojo gets his act together and do right by his son. I would've preferred it if my Mother came down to live with me but my Father is very strict and he prefers things done this way.

Today I haven't been feeling very well, I've been experiencing some cramps more like mild period pains but now they getting a bit tense. They come and go lasting for about 30 seconds.. I held on to the counter as they hit again, I was starting to panick because I'm 8 months pregnant. It's not time yet...

I heard a knock at the door and I slowly made my way to open while breathing in and out, It was Jojo. I didn't have time for his nonsense today..

Him: Hey

Me: Hi

He closed the door..

Him: You good?

I went over to the counter again and leaned against it face down, the cramps were now coming stronger..

Him: What's wrong?

Me: Jojo please leave I'm not in the mood to fight with you

Him: I'm not here to fight with you, I'm on my way to meeting my Sister's boyfriend and I thought that I should pass by and check how you were holding up

I kept quiet...

Him: Fufu?

Me: I'm not feeling well

He made his way to me..

Him: What you mean you not feeling well?

Me: I've been feeling some cramps an- Him:

Why didn't you call me?

Me: They weren't so bad at first but now they starting to get worseHim:

Okay I'm taking you to the hospital

Me: It's really painful (Crying)

He helped me to stand up straight and I held on to him..Him:

Will you able to walk?

Me: I don't know.. Ahhhhhhhh (Crying)

Him: I can't believe you were in pain almost all day and you kept quiet, what you trying todo? Kill my son?

He picked me up and I wrapped my arms around him. Advantages of him being obsessed with the gym, he had no problem getting me to the car quicker than I would'vewalked..

Him: If you called me I would've came with a different car, I'm not sure if the Ferrari isgoing to be comfortable for you..

Me: It doesn't matter can we please just go?

He put me and got his car keys, he unlocked and helped me in. At least we will get therefaster..

—

ARMAN

I

My Father's place was better looking than most of the houses I've seen around thisvillage, it showed that he was well off..

From my Grandmother's place to his place it was an approximately 30min drive, thedriver had fetched us with an Amarak double cab.

I was very nervous as we made our way inside the yard, I even thought that my heart was going to beat out of my chest.. A few kids were playing around, I saw two women

who were busy doing chores and they looked at us..

Driver: Sezifikile izivakashi, uMadlamini ukhona? (Our visitors are here, Is Madlamini around)

I saw poles and electrical wires, this means they have electricity. I also noticed a big water tank and a tap.. His house was the only house in that area that was different in a good way.. One of the ladies stopped what she was doing and quickly ran to the house.

We stood there and waited to be welcomed in..

Grandma: Ukahle Sisi? (Are you alright)

My throat was dry to raise any words so I nodded..

We must've waited for a few seconds when another woman came out of the house, she didn't look that old. She must be a few years older than my Mother. She slowly made her way to us with her eyes on me..

Driver: MaDlamini sengiba lethile ke (I have brought them)

She didn't say anything to the driver but continued looking at me.. Her:

Thandolwethu?

I was confused..

Her: Cha Nkosi yam waze wafana naye uLondeka (You look exactly like your Mother) She wiped her tears using the apron that hung around her waist..

Grandma: Kunjani MaDlamini? (How are you)

Her: Ngiphilile Ma wena unjani? (I am well and how are you)

Grandma: Nami ngiphilile (I am well too)

My Grandmother turned to me..

Grandma: uMaDlamini lo, unkosikazi wesibili wala ekhaya kwaNgwenya (This is MaDlamini, the second wife)

This is the humble and kind soul that my Mother always told me about, she only told me her name and never told me her surname

Grandma: MaDlamini.. Isizukulu sami lesi, indodakazi ka Londeka. Kodwa ke uLondeka

wamupha elinye igama, igama lakhe uArmani Ngwenya (MaDlamini this is my Granddaughter, her Mother named her Armani)

Her: Ekugcineni waze wabuya ekhaya (at last you came back) She hugged me..

Her: Ubabakho ebahlale ebuza ngawe (Your Father always asked about you) So funny he always asked about me but never bothered to even look for me.. She looked at me..

Her: Noma nje sengizwe ngo Ma ukuthi uLondeka akasekho, sengibonga Okhokho ukuthi basilethele wena (Even though I've heard that Londeka is no more, I thank the ancestors that they led you back home)

I couldn't hold back my tears, it hurt a lot knowing that I suffered so much while I had a family..

MaDlamini: Ungasakhali Thando, sowufikile ekhaya (Don't cry Thando, you're home now) She hugged me again..

Her: Phephisa Sisi

–

XOLELW

A

I made my way to the bedroom to get dressed, I had taken a bath in preparation for the coming dinner that we were going to have. I was a bit nervous, I just hope that Jojo and Master won't clash. Jojo is still not very happy about the whole pregnancy situation..

Mam'Gabi being the sweet Angel that she is, she had helped me with the cooking.. Master walked in, upon observing him I could tell that he was tipsy. It was very disappointing that he would drink while we had such an important dinner ahead of us..

Him: Skat

Me: Are you tipsy?

He looked at me..

Him: Ya mhlambe ng'bambe one or two (I had one or two)

Me: While we have an important dinner ahead of us?

Him: Xolelwa ang'dakwanga angithi (Xolelwa I'm not drunk)He
threw his car keys on the bed..

Me: You shouldn't have drank, maybe this is not important to you but it's very important to me.. I'm
very disappointed in you

Him: Ageke saxabaniswa yinto encane so (We won't fight over such a small matter)Me: Still..
He made his way to me..

Him: Kanti yini? (what's wrong)

Me: You just don't know my Brother and Sister, they difficult peopleHim:

Abang'thusi (They don't scare me)

Me: I didn't say that.. I just want everything to go well without any fights and arguments

Him: uGabi ukhona so konke kuzoba grand ungabi ne stress (My Aunt is around soeverything is
going to go well, don't stress)

He had a point, we all respect uMam'Gabi I hope she will keep the peace..Him:
How much time do we have left?

Me: I don't know but I think they already on their wayHe
pulled the towel..

Him: As'shaye izinto ezi fast, ithi ngik'chamele fast (let's have a quickie)Me:
What?

Him: Eish konje ng'khohliwe (I forgot)

Me: That sounds disgusting

Him: I didn't mean it like that nawe maan, kanti uzofunda nini (when will you learn)Me:

Either way we can't have sex bec-

He picked me up and threw me on the bed, he then got on top of me..

Me: Your Aunt is around (Whispering)

Him: I'll be quick

Me: I'd like to see that (Laughing)

Him: I'll show you

He kissed me and I opened my legs wider. I helped him to take off his t-shirt as I was already naked. He ran his hand on my tummy all the way down to my cookie and then his thumb gently rubbed against my clit, I lowered my hands and unbuckled his belt. Since we had to be quick about this I helped him to take the rest of his clothes off together with his sneakers, until he was left with only his briefs and socks. I touched his manhood and he was rockhard.. He pinned both my hands against the bed, tightly locking them down with his one hand. With his other hand he forced his thumb inside my mouth and I started sucking it, wet as it was he took it out and ran it around my hardnipple all the way down to my clit and I bit my lower lip.. He kissed me again while playing around with his thumb on my clitoris and my hormones took over. He released my hands and ran his tongue on my lower lip, he pulled it a bit with both his lips while he made his way down to my neck leaving wet kisses all the way to my tummy. He left a lot of wet kisses there before making his way down to my already wet cookie. As soon as I felt his tongue against my wet hole, I rose my body up a bit and moaned. He slowly ran his tongue in circular motion and for the life of me I couldn't hold back my moans, so he came back up and kissed me while laughing..

Him: You will have to be a bit quiet

Me: I'll try (laughing)

Him: Warasa futhi ngiyak'yeka (If you scream again I'm going to leave you like this)I
nodded..

I heard Mam'Gabi calling out..

Her: Xolelwa your Sister is here

We both kept quiet and looked at each other..

Mam'Gabi: Xolelwa?? Master??

She knocked and it clicked on me that we didn't lock the door..Master:

Uyeza usagcoka (She will be there, she's dressing up)

My eyes widened...

Me: Are you s-

He put his hand over my mouth.. Master:

Bekasageza (she was bathing)

Mam'Gabi: Okay makaceda eze ke (she can come when she's done)

We heard footsteps furthering away from the door, Master removed his hand from my mouth..

Him: Aii maan kanti uSis'wakho intombazana enjani egcina iskhathi? (How can your Sister be this punctual)

Me: Wait until you meet her, you will be shockedHe

got off me..

Him: Shocked that you guys are twins?I

chuckled..

Me: No.. Shocked at her physiqueHe

gave me a weird look..

Me: Get dressed, Xoliswa is very impatient

–

ARMAN

I

The house was more beautiful inside and it had a lot of rooms, I had no doubt that they were a big family.. My Grandmother helped MaDlamini to prepare the table whilst I was left to look at the family photo album, with MaDlamini occasionally standing next to me and telling me who was who..

I learned earlier on that the first wife had passed on, now MaDlamini was the only wife left. I'm glad it's her than that witch..

MaDlamini: Ubabakho unamantombazana k'phela (Your father only has girls)

That was sad, I remember when my Mother used to tell me that he was obsessed with having a boy..

Me: Bakuphi? (Where are they)

MaDlamini: Abanye bashadile kanti abanye base maNyuvesi (Some are married and some are in different universities)

I nodded, seems like I'm the only one who doesn't have her life figured out.. We heard someone calling out from the kitchen..

Voice: Kukhona abantu la ekhaya? MaDlamini? (Is there people here? MaDlamini)MaDlamini:

Ubaba usefikile (Your Father is here)

I closed the photo album and he made his way into the living, I stood up..

He had on his overall pants, a t-shirt and black boots with a cowboy hat. He looked old, he was probably a bit older than Ndarha.

He looked at us and took off his hat...

Him: Sanibonani (Greetings)

They greeted him back..

He ran his eyes around until they landed on me..

MaDlamini: Baba sine-

Him: Thandolwethu?

It was almost as if like he had seen a ghost. The whole room went quiet..

Him: Thandolwethu??

His voice started breaking..

I didn't know how to respond to him.. He put his hat down and slowly made his way to me..

Him: Thandolwethu ngane yam'? (Thandolwethu my Daughter)

I was immediately overwhelmed by different emotions as he couldn't control his too.. He hugged me..

Him: Aww.. Ngane yam' (My child)

It was a very emotional moment as I cried on his shoulder..61

XOLELWA

We made our way to the kitchen and indeed Xols had arrived with her girlfriend Lolitha. I made my way to Lolitha and greeted her with a hug..

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm good and thanks for coming

Her: You welcome

I was happy that Lolitha was also here, that will force Xols to behave. I moved on and hugged Xols, she picked me up a little..

Her: You good?

Me: Yes I'm good and you?

Her: I'm good

Jojo was missing..

Me: Is Jojo running late?

Xols: No he is not coming

Me: Why?

This was a low blow for him, I know he is not happy with this whole pregnancy situation but he could've made an effort to come for me..

Xols: He had to take Nomfundo to the hospital

Mam'G: Is she okay?

Me: It's still early for her to go into labour

Xols: He didn't say much other than that she's having cramps, I will hear from him later on

That was actually sad to hear, I hope the baby is okay..

Me: That's sad

Her: Ya what can we say?

I think Master was a bit taken and fascinated by Xoliswa's physique. If you don't know her, You would actually think that she's a guy. She is taking testosterone supplements which are deepening her voice a bit, in combination with her lifting weights too they have made her big. Most of her female characteristics are slowly fading away..

I introduced her to Master, then Master extended his hand to her. They shook hands for a brief moment and I noticed that Xols was having a tight grip on Master's hand, I think it's a way of her trying to intimidate him. Which is funny because Master doesn't get intimidated that easily.. I was really scared with them having an altercation

Mam'G: We can make our way to the living room before the food gets cold

They all made their way to the living room except for me and Master, he looked at his hand and then he looked at me a bit irritated.

Me: She lifts weights and she's on supplements, her handshake has a bit of some force..It's expected

He didn't say anything..

Me: Come on..Let's go

I held his hand and then we made our way to the living room..

—

ARMAN

I

Everyone at the table seemed to be enjoying the food and the company except for me, I was falling back on catching up with everyone so much so that my Father noticed. He then asked for us to be excused, we went out to the Porch and MaDlamini furnished us with drinks.. A few seconds passed by without any of us saying anything, but then what can we say to each other?

Him: Mhla uzalwa sakuqamba igama sathi uThandolwethu ngenxa yothando ebenginalo for unyoko (when you were born we named you Thandolwethu, because of the love that I had for your Mother)

My Mother never told me about this name..

Him: Eqinisweni Thando kuningi okwenzaka phakathi kwami noLondeka (There's a lot that happened between me and your Mother)

Me: Nje ngantoni? (Like what)

Him: Uma wakho ebenga boni liso linye Nodlunkulu (Your Mother wasn't in good terms with my first wife)

I knew that already..

Him: Yiyo into eyayenza ukuthi ahambe la ekhaya (That's the biggest reason why she left)

Me: Emva kokusweleka kuka Mama, ubomi baba nzima kakhulu (After the death of my Mother, life became very hard)

It was difficult for me to date back to the abuse..

Me: Ndanyanzeleka ukuba ndihlale nosapho lakwa Ndarha apho ebesebenza khona uMama, ngenxa yokuba ndingena khaya (I was forced to live with the family that she worked for because I had no home and no one)

I sighed..

Me: I was 9 or so at that time, kwathi ekuhambeni kwexesha uTat'Udarha wa.. (I was still young at that time, but as time went on Ndarha started..)

He looked at me..

Me: waqalisa ukundidlwengula (He started raping me)

I could see that his expression wasn't the same anymore..

Me: ndithetha ngo Isaac Ndarha.. (I'm talking about Isaac Ndarha)

Him: Isaac Ndarha.. Isekela mongameli? (Isaac Ndarha.. The Deputy president) Me: Ewe

(Yes)

Him: Yima Thando.. Unyoko wayesebenzela uNdarha nomndeni wakhe? (wait.. Your Mother was working for the deputy president)

Me: Ewe Tata (Yes) nami ekukhuleni kwami ndayenzwa isigqila sakwa Ndarha (When I grew up, I was made their servant)

It was hard for him to process everything..

Him: Ngizisola Mina ngayo yonke into eyakwehlela ngane yami, eqinisweni azange sikufune ngoba azange nakanye ngicabange ukuthi uLondeka angasuka la emakhaya abalekele egoli (I blame myself for everything that happened to you. Not even once did I think that Londeka would run away to Johannesburg)

Me: Kwakubuhlungu ukusokola ndine family, I family engazange yazihlupha ukudikhangela (It was painful suffering while I had a family that didn't look for me)

He exhaled..

Him: Angazi nokuthi singaqalaphi siyilungise le ndaba ngane yam' kodwa Uma ukhethaukuthi sibe khona empilweni yakho ngiyakuthembisa ukuthi angeke uphinde uhlukumezeke ngaleyo ndlela (I don't even know where we going to start in fixing this matter my child, but I promise you that if you want us in your lives. I will make it a point that you never get abused in that manner ever again)

—

JOJO

The Dr made his way to me after a short time of waiting while they were still busy with her. I was a bit worried, if she was in labour shouldn't it take a bit longer? I hope the Dr doesn't have bad news for me..

Him: Mr Ndarha

I looked at him all anxious..

Him: They both okay

That was a relief..

Him: It was what we call Braxton hicks. Braxton hicks are more common in the second and third trimester, we mostly refer to them as practice contractions or pseudo(false) labour pains..

With everything that he was saying, I was just happy to hear that they were both okay..

Me: So can I take her home?

Him: Unfortunately not. Her BP is way too high and now I will have to keep her here for a

few days to monitor the Baby's heartbeat That

didn't sound too good..

Him: If I may ask, has she been stressed lately?

Me: I wouldn't call it stress exactly, the thing about her is that she always wants everything done her way. If you don't do something her way she blows up and stresses herself and the baby for nothing

Him: Well even so, it's very important that she doesn't get stressed too much. She's very close to giving birth and if anything could go wrong the baby might not make it

I thought for a while..

Me: Can I please see her?

Him: Yes.. So long you don't stress her Me:

I won't

–

ARMAN

I

My Father asked if I could spend the night here, my Grandmother didn't wanna sleep over she was worried that someone might steal her cows so she was driven home. I learned later on that the riches come from the cows that my father had, he was selling them at a very high price because his cows were big and well fed. He had promised to take me to the kraal first thing tomorrow morning..

Him: Mele sikwenzele umsebenzi, sikwazise kwaba phantsi (We must perform a traditional ceremony for you before you go back, so that we can introduce you to the ancestors)

I nodded..

Him: Sicele Okhokho ukuthi bakuvikele futhi bakukhanyisele ngaso sonke iskhathi (Ask the ancestors to protect you and guide you at all times)

That sounded like something that needed to be done indeed..

Him: Ngiyaxolisa ngakho konke odlule kuko (I'm sorry for everything that you've been through)

Me: Sendivuyela ukuba ndinifumene (I'm happy that I found you)

Him: uMam'Phiri uthe isoka lakho elikuncedile ukuthi uthole umndeni wakho (Your Grandmother said your boyfriend is the one who helped you to find your family)

I don't think I wanted to have this conversation with him..Me:

Ewe nguye oncedile (He is the one who helped a lot) He nodded..

Him: Kuzomele eze phela ukuze simazi (He needs to come so that we can meet him)I chuckled..

Him: Ithi ke ngikushiye uphumule ngane yam' sovuka ekseni kakhulu ngoba phela mele ngikubonise namathuna wabo khokho bakho (Let me leave you to rest because we have an early morning)

MaDlamini was preparing the guest room for me.. Him:

Ulale kahle ndodakazi (Sleep well my Daughter)Me: Ulale

kakuhle nawe Tata (sleep well too)

He gave me a shallow smile and then walked out..

—

JOJO

I glanced at Nomfundo and she was fast asleep, she had something on her tummy that monitored the baby's heartbeat. I took out my phone and sent Tash a message that I didn't go to the dinner anymore, I let her know that I was at the hospital with Fufu...

I pulled the chair and sat down, I kept myself busy with my phone while I let her rest..

—

NONTSIKELELE

O

He kissed my hand..

Him: How are you feeling now?I

smiled at him..

Me: I'm feeling a whole lot better

Mabuza and I we having a newly found affair, we realized that we had feelings for each other when he heard that I was admitted and he came to see me everyday. He is the major reason why I have decided to give up on my marriage, I want to see where this thing of ours is going to take us. Unlike Ndarha he cares a lot about me, and I know thathe would never hurt me..

Him: What did he say about the divorce?

Me: You know Ndarha is Ndarha, but he will eventually give himHim:

Masithembe njalo (Let's hope so)

Me: So how are we going to work because your Son hates me, things are going to be more hectic now that he is involved with Armani

He exhaled..

Him: To be honest I'm not happy that he is with that girl(Silence)

Me: To be honest with you she is a very good PersonHim:

Didn't you hate her no so long ago?

Me: I was just in denial. Armani would never hurt anyone on purpose she is not like that,I know for a fact that the reason why she kept quiet about this was that she was being controlled and manipulated.. I'm sure he was even physically abusive to her

Mabuza shook his head..

Him: Ndarha is sick

Me: I can't believe I've been a fool all this long

Him: When you love someone you tend to be blind to every bad thing that they doMe: I'm just glad I found the strength to let go

Him: I'm glad and also proud of you

He kissed my hand and I smiled at him..

Him: I can't wait for you to be-

Ndarha walked in, my heart almost stopped beating. What is he doing here this late at night? He only comes in the morning or during the day.

Mabuza let go of my hand and he stood up straight, Ndarha couldn't comprehend on what was going on. All in all I was praying that they don't start fighting..

Mabuza looked at me..

Him: Do you want me to leave?

Me: Yes

Him: I'll see you tomorrow

I faked a smile and then he kissed me on my forehead...Him:

Have a good night rest

Me: I will

He kissed my hand for the last time and then made his way to the door, he passed Ndarha and they both exchanged deadly looks...

After he had walked out, it was quiet for a while..

Ndarha: For how long has this been going on?

I kept quiet..

Him: So he is the reason why you want a divorce?He

made his way to the bed and I froze..

Him: You having an affair with someone whom I consider a brother? with my surname attached next to your name and a ring on your finger?

I swallowed..

Him: Have you slept with him yet?

Even if I wanted to say something I didn't know what to say..He

put his arm on my neck and choked him..

Him: I have news for you

He leaned over and whispered next to my ear while still choking me..

Him: If you don't end this disgrace of an unfair I'm going to kill him right in front of you just to torture you (whispering)

I was struggling to breath..

Him: That is a promise

He let go of me and then did the unthinkable, he slightly spat on me.. Him: You disgust me!

62

ARMANI

3 WEEKS LATER

I stayed with my Father and his family for a while up until we were done with the traditional ceremony of introducing me to the ancestors. It brought me a little bit of inner peace knowing that I now have a family, a family that was happy to have me back in their lives. A family that appreciated me a great deal... Fun as it was but I couldn't stay there forever, I needed to get back to the other life that I had already started with Mongz. Before I left, my Father gave me two options, just like his other kids he asked me what I wanted to do. I could either go to varsity or start a business. If I choose to go to varsity he will carry me through financially, if I choose to start a business then I'll get R250 000 from him as a start up capital... Right now I am all for option number 2. Starting a business is not easy so is being a graduate, most graduates are struggling to get jobs.

Our country is continuously failing the youth in so many ways.. I am not sure about the kind of business that I want to start hence why I decided to meet up with Khethi, I'm sure that she can help me think out of the box..

Her: Mara yazi uyinja Marni (You're such a dog)

Khethi talks a lot of shit, if I wasn't used to her I'd be offended by her statement.. Me:

Ndenze ntoni ngoku? (What did I do now)

Her: Ngikutholele umsebenzi bese wena uyawulahla nje (I found you a job and then you just quit out of the blue)

Me: We working on a business plan now aren't we? So let's forget about the past

Her: I hope this business plan of yours is going to work because I don't wanna quit my job and be stranded

Me: Khethi focus

Voice: Order number 56

Khethi: I'll get it

She got up and went to get the order...

I looked around and saw some lady starring at me, I was very sure that she was stalking me because when we were at Mr Price earlier on she was also there. She quickly moved her eyes away when I looked at her, she didn't look familiar..

Khethi came back with our order..

Her: Asidle ke (let's eat)

Me: Khethi

She looked at me..

Me: I feel like we being stalked

Her: Stalked?

I leaned over to her..

Me: You see that woman sitting at the corner by the window, don't check now..She turned and looked at her..

Me: I said don't check her now

Her: Maybe she's just here to eat Mani

Me: I hardly think so, when we were at Mr Price she was there.. She has been sitting atthat corner starring at us

Her: uSerious?

Me: Yes I'm serious

Her: Do you want me to approach her?Me:

No don't..

Her: Ithi ngiyabuya (I'm coming)

She got up and made her way to the woman..Me:

Khethi.. No..

Khethi started talking to her but I didn't hear what she was saying, I then saw the woman standing up and taking her crutch. She looked at me one last time and then started limping to the exit, Khethi came back

Her: Sorted

Me: What did you say to her?

Her: Nothing much..

She started eating..

I couldn't help but ask myself who she was...

—

JOJO

Today I was the one who drove my Mother to her AA meeting just to show her how proud I am that she's taking her health seriously..

It hasn't been an easy road for her, detoxing was the most difficult thing that she went through I thought she wasn't even going to make it..

Me: And we here

She looked at the time..

Her: We even early

(Silence)

Me: I want you to know that I'm very proud of you

Her: It's just an AA meeting Jojo (irritated)

Me: Are you okay?

She kept quiet and fixed her hair..

Her: Ndarha is refusing to give me a divorceMe:

What?

Her: He wants to cage me in this toxic marriage, I'm sure right now that he had us followed

Me: I know that he is a bastard but this is too much, why is he having you followed? Her:

Because he is Ndarha

Me: That's insane..

Her: Forget about him for a second, how is baby Mama doing? Me:

That's what I wanted to talk to you about

Her: Yes?

Me: We need to go to her house and talk to her Parents, otherwise they won't allow me to see my Son

Her: They didn't even bring her to our house to inform us that she's pregnant, they also wrong on their side

Me: Ya Nonts that doesn't matter, what matters is that they have the power so we need to play by their rules or else I won't see my son

Her: Unfortunately we will have to take Ndarha with Me:

I don't want him there

Her: He gave you his surname Jojo and now you going to give it to your Son. He might not have been the best but he was the only Father figure that you had, and him being there as the head of the family will make her family not to disrespect us

I guess she was right..

Me: Fine then he will come with

Her: How is the white girl?

Me: Ma stop calling her that

Her: She is White

Me: I know but that sounds racist

Her: Couldn't you get a nice black woman?

Me: Tash and I go way back

Her: Our cultures are going to clash

Me: I know but you will have to accept her you have no choiceShe
looked at the time again..

Her: I need to go

Me: Call me when you done I'll come and get youHer:

Okay

I kissed her on the cheek..

Me: I love you

Her: I love you too

She got out of the car..

—

MONG

Z

Today I was off and I was glad that Armani was back from her trip, this long distancething was
starting to get to me a bit..

Dad: Mongezi

I was just about to go out..

Him: We need to talk

I walked up to him..

Me: About what?

Him: I want you to know that Ndarha is going to come at us with all that he's gotMe: Why?

Him: Nontsikelelo and I we have found our way to each otherI
squinted my eyes..

Me: You what?

Him: I know that this is sudden and unexpected but.. Me: But nothing! You know exactly how I feel about her

Him: She's been in our lives for a while now and you two used to be very close

Me: That was before the Armani situation.. You gave me shit about Armani and then you go and do this? She is a married woman and on top of that she is an alcoholic

Him: You the last one to judge

Me: She is Ndarha's wife, you really wanna eat Ndarha's leftovers?

Him: Mongz I was telling you this because you my Son and she's someone special to me. Whether you like her or not she's not going anywhere

Me: Then you shouldn't have told me about this.. I have to go I left him standing there..

—

XOLELW

A

Things between me and Master weren't so good anymore. After that dinner he started acting very strange and I don't understand why because the dinner wasn't that horrible.. Since that dinner we've only had sex once and it wasn't so great either because he stopped halfway and told me that he wasn't feeling well. He tries by all means to avoid me. He is hardly around, like today he's doing a nightshift, he should be resting but he's not around. I don't know what's going on but what he's doing is very hurtful, I think he has lost interest in me.

Jojo: So let me get this straight, he impregnates you, gives you false hope about a non-existing future then he goes and do this?

I decided to call Jojo and talk to him about this, he is a guy and might tell me what exactly is going on with Master..

Me: I don't know what I did (Crying)

Him: You want me to come down there and talk to him? Me: I

don't wanna make the situation worse

Him: You my Sister and I love you, I won't let any guy play youI
had an incoming call...

Me: I have another call coming through

Him: Okay I'll call you later

Me: Okay

Him: I love you and don't cry.. He is not worth your tearsMe: I
love you too

The incoming call was Xols, and just like Jojo she also wasn't happy with the situationHer: I got
your WhatsApp message, Who the hell does he think is?

Me: One minute we madly in love then the next minute he is acting strangeHer:

You should be packing your things now and driving back to my placeMe: I'm not
leaving Xols

Her: Then come stay with me for a few days, you don't need the stressMe: I'll
come

Her: When?

Me: I'll see

Her: You should've let me break his neckI
chuckled..

Me: Despite everything he is my baby daddy

Her: Baby daddy my left foot! If he is away from home this much, he might be cheatingIt was
insane because I have never been cheated on before..

Her: I have to get back to work, I'll call you later when I knock offMe:
Okay

Her: I love you

Me: I love you too Sis

–

NDARH

A

The President was just as shocked as I was..

Him: Mabuza yinja engcolile (Mabuza is a dirty dog)

Me: He is like a brother to me and I've known him for a very long time now

Him: We trusted him so this means he could've done this with one of my wives too, I've let this man into my house, I've trusted him around my wives.. No he can kiss his position goodbye, we going to break him to the core after this

Me: Exactly what I was thinking

Him: He is not getting away with this one

–

MASTE

R

Rigo: Good for us who can have a beer or two

Rigo and I we good friends. He used to work at the mine but got fired when he showed up to work a bit drunk..

Him: Master

I looked at him..

Him: You're here but at the same time you're not here Me:

Ya I'm deep in my thoughts

Him: Kwenzenjani? (what's wrong)

Me: A few weeks back I met up with my girlfriend's twin Him:

Bese? (then)

Me: Nayi indaba (here is the problem)

I took out my phone and went on Instagram, I viewed Xoliswa's pictures and showed him..

He whistled..

Him: She has a male twin that looks this much like herMe:

That's exactly what I meant, it's a girl

His eyes widened..

Him: Yeeh mnaka ungadlali ngami (don't play with me)I

rubbed my face with my hands..

Me: To think that she has my Girlfriend's face and then that muscular body

Him: Yena her facial muscles are tightening a bit.. Entlek how did she end up lookinglike this?

Me: Testestorome supplements, I think that she's also taking other few things tooHim: Tjerrrr

Me: I can't even.. It's hard for me to look at my girlfriend and not picture her twin, lookingat her it's like now looking into another man

He laughed..

Him: But your girlfriend looks different, yes facially kuyayelana but..

Me: I can't even touch her or be around here anymore, this whole situation makes mefeel uncomfortable

Him: It wouldn't be fair dumping her because of her twinI

sighed..

Him: Ehh Mnaka, you considering dumping her vele?

Me: I don't know Mnaka.. All I know is that I can't keep up with this, Phela lomuntu isgoing to be a part of our lives for a very long time

Him: Ya ngiyakuzwa mnaka (I hear you)63

ARMANI

Later on Mongz came to fetch me and we went to his house, It'll be my first time doing a

sleepover since we started dating. Their helper Maria was off, so we were left to prepare dinner no make that I was preparing dinner and he was helping me..

Me: Ohhh Mongz.. You not doing it right

Him: I did tell you to give me a less stressful task like opening the tin of beans or something

Me: Even a 5 year old can do that

Him: Let me leave this before I ruin it further Me:

You can come and do this, it's quite easy He made

his way to me..

Me: You cut the potatoes like this

Him: I think I can do that

I gave him the knife..

Him: What ended up happening with your friend? Me:

Which one?

Him: The one who went missing

Me: Ohw Lwandle.. When my Grandmother called me she told me that he has returned home

Him: That's good.. Did he say what happened?

Me: She says that he doesn't want to talk about it but he has a few bruises Him: That's sad... I'm sorry I couldn't help

Me: It's okay so long he is back home safe and sound (Silence)

Me: You know something interesting happened today Him:

What happened?

Me: I think that my Friend and I we were stalked

Him: Stalked?

Me: I know it sounds crazy but.. When we were at Mr Price I saw some lady, then I saw her again when we were at KFC she was sitting a bit far from us and she kept on starring at me

Her: Do you know her from somewhere?

Me: No I don't.. She was limping, she had a crutch with herHe
stopped cutting the potatoes..

Him: She was limping? What else do you remember?

Me: Nothing much other than that her complexion is a bit dark and she's very prettyHim: Are you
sure? She was limping?

Me: Yes

Him: Did she say something to you or you to her?Me:

No but Kethi did talk to her

Him: What did she say?

Me: I don't know Khethi didn't tell me, but the conversation was very shortHim:

Okay

Me: Do you perhaps know her?

Him: No.. Why do you ask?

Me: Your interest in her

Him: Just wanted you to be sure about her description, so I can get my PI to find outwho she
is and if she's working with Ndarha.. I don't want anything happening to youthat man is crazy

Me: Aren't you sweet?

He cleared his throat..

Him: Am I cutting them good?I

checked..

Me: That's good.. You cutting them well

Him: That's what I wanna hear

—

XOLELW

A

Master came back, already I was worried because he was supposed to be at work since he was doing a nightshift..

Him: Hey

Me: Hi

He made his way to the bedroom and I followed him, he sat on the bed and took off his sneakers..

Me: Can we talk?

He exhaled in frustration knowing very well what was coming..Him:

Ya let's talk

I folded my arms and leaned against the door frame..Me:

What's happening?

He took off his cap and ran his hand on his head..

Me: Please don't tell me it's nothing, I'm not crazy and I'm not stupidHe
nodded..

Him: Vele nami I won't try and make excuses for my behaviourI
swallowed and asked the most difficult question ever..

Me: Are you seeing someone else?He
looked at me...

Him: Come here

I went to him and he made me sit on top of him..

Him: I'm not seeing someone else and I'm sorry for how I've been acting

I kept quiet..

Him: I love you and I would never hurt you like thatMe:

Then why were you acting cold towards me? He cleared his throat..

Him: Just that dinner with your sister that night rubbed me off the wrong way

Me: I know.. Xoliswa has always been protective when it comes to me, she doesn't act like my twin but more like a big sister

He nodded..

Him: Awung'ringele (tell me something)

Me: Yes?

Him: Ithini lento yabo konje? (What do they call it) Is she going to transition?

Me: I don't know she hasn't said anything to me but I don't think, just because she has an interest in girls doesn't mean she wants to change into a guy. I just think she enjoys having that much strength but underneath it all she's still a woman

Him: Ku grand (It's okay)

I couldn't help but think that something is going on, this whole entire thing cannot only be based on the dinner. A dinner that happened 3 weeks ago..

Me: What about work?

Him: I'll get a sick note tomorrow morning

Me: Okay

He kissed my cleavage..

Him: Again.. I'm sorry for how I've been behavingMe:

It's okay

That was a lie, it wasn't okay..

He moved up and kissed my neck, then he finally kissed me on the lips..

He stood up with me on his arms and he threw me on the bed, he then grabbed my foot

and dragged me to the edge of the bed..

I was wearing my nightgown without any underwear, he parted my legs and instructed me to hold them just so I keep them that far apart from each other. He quickly undressed himself while starring at my cookie..

I was surprised at how hard he was without me stimulating him anyhow, or maybe it's because it's been a while since we last did it and the last time we were intimate it wasn'tso great. He wrapped my legs around his waist and rubbed the tip of his penis against my clitoris, he moved down to rubbing it against my hole. He rubbed against my whole vigorously until I was wet, meanwhile I kept on squeezing and massaging my breasts against each other. He kept on doing that with his other hand squeezing and spanking my left thigh, after some time my legs got tired and I placed them wide open on the bed. He rubbed himself for the last time and then penetrated me without any warning, he took it out and put it in again without pumping. I have never seen nor experienced this aggressive dominant sexual side of his, It wasn't scary but just surprising.. He put it in again and didn't take it out this time around. He squeezed my cheeks and made me to look at him while he pumped me hard, soo much that I lost my breath. I moved up a bit which made it to slip out, he dragged me back again and opened my legs while spankingme on my thigh..

Him: Ucabanga ukuthi uyaphi? Ngoba asikaqedi la (Where do you think you goingbecause we not done here)

He put it in again and started banging me all over again, he held my thighs just so that I don't escape again..

-

MR MABUZA

I walked in and ran my eyes around, I didn't know how he looked like to be honest I didn'tknow who I was looking for.. It would save me a whole lot of time if I could ask someone to assist me, I made my way to the police officers..

Me: Good evening

One of the officers looked at me..

Me: I'm looking for detective king

He continued looking at me without saying anything..

Me: Please tell him that Mr Mabuza the minister of transport is here to see himHe stopped what he was doing..

Him: Yes Sir

I turned and looked at the door making sure that I wasn't followed, I then looked at the officer while he disappeared from the reception.. I didn't wait that long until I saw the officer making his way back to the reception with another gentleman, the gentleman made his way to Me..

Him: Mr Mabuza?

Me: Detective King?

He nodded.. He extended his hand to me for a handshake..Him:

This way Sir

He led the way and I followed, I nodded to the officer who called him for me..We got to his office and I sat down..

Him: Can I get you anything to drink?

Me: No thank you.. I don't wanna stay for too long since I might be followedHe sat down on his chair..

Him: Of course

I handed him the file that I was holding..Me:

Everything is in there

He took it from me and opened it.. After a few seconds of reading he whistled..Him: This is big.. This is very big

Me: The Commissioner said you the best, and I have to protect my family. Right now I have no choice but to trust in you

Him: I understand Sir and I won't disappoint though I have never handled such a big case before The commissioner is my Brother in law and we don't really get along, but we decided to

put our differences aside because he cares about the safety of his nephews and I will make sure that my Sons are always safe..

King: Did our "informant" agree?

Me: Still going to meet up with him tomorrow
He nodded..

Him: I will hear from you then

I stood up and extended my hand to him..

Me: Right now the safety of those I love lies in your hands
Him: I'll do my best Sir

Me: Thank you.. Thank you very much

—

SENZEN

I

I looked at my father's picture and tears followed, It's been a while now since he left us, may his soul continue to rest in peace..

Mom: Senzi!!

Me: Ma?

Her: Buya phela sizodla (come dinner is ready)

I wiped my tears and put the photo away, I got up and made my way out of the bedroom to the living room. My plate was on the small table, she was sitting on her couch with her plate on her thigh..

Her: ufuna usizo? (do you want help)

Me: Cha! Ma (no thank you)

I slowly sat down and she stood up then got my plate for me..
Her: Here

Me: Thank you

My Mother is a lecturer at the University of Johannesburg..

We closed our eyes and she blessed the food..Me:

Amen

We started eating in silence, I kept on stealing glances at her. I coughed a little..Me: I went to town today

She looked at me..

Her: Alone?

Me: Yebo Ma (Yes)

Her: You used taxis?I
nodded..

She kept quiet..

Me: I.. He has a new girlfriend I saw her

She stopped eating..

Her: Was he with her?

Me: Cha.. (No)

I saw relief from her side..

Her: Don't ever do that

Me: I think he has forgotten about me Ma, he has someone else and I think he's happywith her

Her: Senzeni first of all you went to town alone, what if someone who works for him sawyou?
You want me to lose you too?

Me: I don't think he can hurt me anymore Ma

Her: He doesn't want to hurt you! He wants you dead!Me:

M-

Her: Hai Maan Senzi!! I lost my husband in the hands of th-She
calmed herself..

Her: I don't want to lose you too! He thinks that you dead and it's supposed to stay thatway

I glanced down at my plate and the silence took over again..

Her: I'm going to bath and then sleep, it's been a long day.. Can you apply the ointmenton your own?

I nodded..

Her: Good night

Me: Night

—

XOLELW

A

I turned and looked at Master who was passed out next to me after that intense session,I looked at him and smiled a little.

Although this was a new experience because I'm used to him being gentle and what not,it wasn't bad and I liked it..

I leaned over and kissed him, he didn't even move he was out. I don't blame him he reallyexhausted himself, I just hope that this won't have any effect on the baby...

My phone vibrated, it was my sister...

Me: Hi..

Her: So.. Are you on your way?

I got out of bed and made my way out..Me:

I don't think I'll come

Her: huh?

Me: Things between us are fine now

Her: Xolelwa..

Me: It was just a minor thing that's all

Her: I'm disappointed, you going to let a guy play you?

Me: I love you too Sis Her:

Yeah Whatever.. Bye

She hung up on me and I laughed...64

XOLELWA

I woke up the next morning to Master preparing breakfast, he seemed to be in a good mood today that he was even singing..

Him: "Zong'thol' ekasi lami ke ke ke ke (ke ke ke ke ke ke).. Ng'chillile ng'phethe ezinye zam' ke ke ke ke (ke ke ke ke).. Z'kginile s'yocova kwasan' ke ke ke ke (s'yocova kwasan's'yocova kwasan').. S'jimile aw' phela nezam' s'bekezele (s'bekezele s'bekezele).. Aw' mpintshi spirit (ngaphel' uphel' umoya son ntwana yam')"

That was very unlike him, my ghetto boyfriend preparing breakfast.. I stood there and looked at him before laughing, he turned and looked at me..

Him: Uhlekani? (why are you laughing)

Me: Just... This is funny

Him: After everything that's been going on, ngithe mangizehlise (I decided to humble myself)

I put my hand on my tummy..

Me: It smells nice

He walked up to me and kissed me on my cheek..Him:

Breakfast is served

He put his hand on top of my hand..

Him: You don't feel like vomiting this morning?

Me: No, not yet

Him: In that case ke, I'll fix you something

Me: Thank you

My phone started ringing.. It was my Mother, I glanced at it without saying anything..Master: Ubani?
(who is it)

Me: It's no one importantHe
gave me a weird look..Me:

It's my Mother

Him: Vele uzomziba kuze kube nini? (for how long are you going to keep on ignoring hercalls)

Me: I am not ready to talk to her

Him: Zimbi lezoy'ndaba ke (That's bad news)I
looked at the time..

Me: I have to go, I'll be late

Him: Sesiya phi ekseni so? (where are we going this early)Me: I'm
going to the Dr, I have an appointment

Him: Manje bewuzong'shayela nini? (when were you going to tell me)Me:
Things weren't really a bed of roses between us remember?

He took off the Apron and held my hand..

Him: Eish ya neh

He kissed my hand.. Him:

Let me get my Keys

He went to the bedroom to get his car keys..

—

ARMAN

I

I turned and stretched my hand to the other side but it was empty, I opened my eyes andI was
alone in bed. I rose up from the pillow

Me: Mongz?

It was quiet, I got my phone and noticed that he had sent me a message.. "Have something to take care of at the office, I'm sorry"

I rolled my eyes and threw the phone on the bed, that was disappointing. I got out of bed and went to brush my teeth while washing my face in the process. I really thought that last night Mongz and I were going to get it down but that didn't happen, his mind seemed to be very far away. He was distracted.. When I was done I changed my Pj's and then made my way downstairs where their helper Maria was preparing breakfast..

Me: Sawubona Ma (Good morning Ma)

Her: Sawubona sisi (Good morning) Me:

Can I help you?

She looked at me a bit surprised..

Her: Errr.. Yes please

Me: What should I do?

Her: You can prepare the sandwiches Me:

Okay

She smiled while shaking her head..

Her: Yazi no one has offered to help me before Me:

Well I was once a Servant so..

Her: Ngiyabonga Ndongakazi (Thank you very much)

I helped her prepare breakfast and Mr Mabuza came down, his presence made me uncomfortable....

Him: Good morning

Maria: Good morning sir

Her reply was accompanied with a bow.. He

rotated his watch while looking at me..

I didn't know what to say to him, I know that he doesn't really like me that much..

Him: Armani

Me: Tat'Mabuza

Him: Kunjani? (how are you)

He sat down..

Me: Ndiphilile Tata wena unjani? (I'm well and you)

Him: I am well

Maria brought him the newspaper..

Him: Thank you

Him: Is Mongezi coming down?

He opened the newspaper...

Me: He is not around, he went to the office

He nodded while reading through the newspaper. I excused myself...

—

LOLITH

A

I banged the door and walked away..

Tiger: Hey!!!

I ignored her..

She caught up with me and then grabbed my arm..Her:

Hey!

She shook my arm a bit..

Her: That's my car do you understand?

I looked at her hand having a tight grip on my arm..Me: Let
go of me!!

She let go of my arm and wiped her lips with her thumb..

Her: You crazy do you know that?

Me: Where did you sleep last night?

Her: I called you and told you that I-My

Mom called out..

Her: Loli.. Xoli..

We looked at each other and then looked at my Mom faking smiles, she put her arm around my waist..

Mom: Oooooohh this is a nice surprise We

met her halfway..

She hugged me..

Her: How are you sweetheart?

Me: I'm good and you?

She hugged Tiger..

Mom: Hello my Darling

Tiger: How are you?

They broke the hug.. Mom:

Well what can I say Me:

How is he?

Mom: Let's go inside

She made her way back to the house..

We decided to go and visit my Parents house because my Father was admitted, one of his lungs had collapsed. You can't separate him from a cigarette, my Father has been smoking ever since he was a teen. He told me he started smoking at the age of 13, a pack of cigarettes only lasts him for a day..

Tiger: I'll get the bags I

pushed her..

Me: Don't ever kiss me or touch me! I don't know what bitch you have been muffing lastnight

Her: I know that you stressed because of your father being in hospital, I understand what you going through because my Mother was admitted too not long ago but you didn't see me acting Crazy

I laughed..

Me: Please!!!! you don't even love your Mother! You don't care about her, even if she died you wouldn't feel a thing she has been use-

(Silence)

Her: Say it.. She has been useless all my life right?Me:

Tee..

She chuckled and spat on the ground..

Her: You can come get your bag because I'm not stayingMe: I

didn't mean that

I followed her..

Me: Tee please stop I didn't mean that

I grabbed her strong arm and tried to stop her..Me: Tee

wait..

Her: Stop..

Me: Please I'm sorry I didn't mean thatShe

stopped..

I wrapped my arms around her waist and laid my head on her chest..

Me: I'm sorry I didn't mean it.. Please don't leave, I don't want you to leave.. Please

I'm very scared of losing Tiger now. Since she fixed things with her family I feel like she won't be needing me anymore. I have insecurities that she might leave me for someone else and I don't think I'll survive the breakup, I no longer feel like I'm good enough for her. At the start of our relationship I was confident because you know she only had me but

now she has her Brother, Her Sister, and her Mother. She gets a big fat allowance from home, her business is doing well and her Brother is also there for her financially, he even got her a car. I'm scared she might wake up tomorrow and not need me anymore..

–

NONTSIKELELE

O

I looked at my Husband sitting across the table, for the first time in a very long time we had sex last night and we had sex again in the early hours of this morning. I don't know how to describe the experience, I am not Armani's age group, I'm not really flexible, I've reached menopause, my hormones are unstable and I don't know if he enjoyed himself or not but from my side.. I was surprised that he can still perform like that at his age, maybe that's why Armani never even thought of saying anything.. I poured the orange juice..

Me: I wanna go down to Mpumalanga and see Xolelwa Him:

She still doesn't pick up your calls?

Me: Yes

Him: Give her some time

Me: My baby is pregnant she needs her Mother Him:

We will go after we have sorted Jojo's issue

I kept quiet.. That was unlike my Husband, The Ndarha I know would be dragging Xolelwa back home while she's kicking and screaming. I think deep down he is giving in because he is scared of losing his family..

–

JOJO

I looked at it and then looked at the sales assistant.. Me:

What do you think?

Her: It's too big for an engagement ring, try a small diamond.. Like this one She tried to get it for me but her hands were shaking so bad that it fell..

Me: Now that's bad

Her: I'm so sorry.. I'm just nervous because we have never really had someone of your.. I mean..

Me: Relax I don't bite, I'm just another typical customer
She took a deep breath..

Me: Let me see that one

She handed it to me..

Me: Thank you

—

SENZEN

I

Me: Way maker Miracle worker Promise keeper Light in the darkness My God That is who you are
Way maker Miracle worker Promise keeper Light in the darkness My God That is-

I heard a knock at the door, I switched off the kettle.. Me:

Ngiyeza (I'm coming)

I limped my way to the door, I can walk a small distance without my crutch.. I unlocked the door..

Me: Hawu Mamncane usukhohlwe ukhiya wakho futhi? (Aunty you forgot your key again)

I opened the door and instead of my Aunt it was a blast from my past, I tried to close the door but he pushed it with force and I fell while it opened wider. I should've asked first who it was, I should've locked the security door. None of that came to my mind because It has been a few years now, I thought I was still safe. I fell right on my left leg, the leg that has always been giving me a problem..

The pain was unbearable..

Me: Ahhhhhhh!!!

He closed the door and locked it..

Me: Ouchhhhh!!

I put my hand on my thigh and bit my lower lip.. He stood there all frozen and starring at

me, a part of me was dead scared..

I looked at him without saying anything, he ran his hand on his face..Him:

You..

He pointed at me and chuckled..

Him: I knew that I was being fucked over with that statement that you were dead! A part of me never believed it

He walked over to me and I tried to move but my leg didn't allow me.. He crouched in front of me and tried to touch me, I trembled in fear..

Me: Please don't hurt me

He put his hand on my cheek and I turned the other way with tears falling..Me: Please don't hurt me..

I could feel his hand shaking...

I turned and looked at him, I saw tears in his eyes too.. He leaned over and put his forehead against mine while wiping my tears

Me: Don't hurt me (Crying)

He kissed me..

65

ARMANI

Jojo called me and asked to meet up with me, he said he had something important to discuss with me. Since I was bored I decided to meet up with him, we met at some restaurant that he picked out...

Me: If I knew we were meeting at a place like this, I would've dressed upHim:

Don't be crazy.. You look good

He opened the chair for me..

Me: Thank you

He went and sat on the other chair opposite me.. Before anything else, we decided to

order first. I ordered a salad and a Ice tea..

Him: I'm even surprised you allowed to come, Thought you hated meMe: I

don't hate you.. I could never hate you

Jojo and I might have not made it as lovers but he is always going to have a specialplace in my heart, and we always going to be civil towards each other..

Me: Sounded important on the phone when you calledHim: It

actually is

Me: What's wrong?

Him: I am working on my next project and it involves youMe:

I don't understand

Him: I don't think I've ever met such a strong and courageous woman like you. You havebeen through the greatest pain but yet you still here, I would like you to give me the opportunity to tell the world your story if not Africa

Me: Wait.. You wanna?

Him: Yes.. I wanna work on a drama that will be based on your life and what you've been through, there's going to be a few changes here and there but.. Everything else is going to be what you have been through

I was not expecting this.. Me: I

don't know what to say

Him: You can say yes or no, only the people who know you and know what you've been through will notice the similarities but everyone else won't know to protect your identity

I thought for a while..

Him: You will be compensated, we will see how people will react to season 1. If theyhappy with it then we will have season 2 as time goes on

This was big, this was very big..

Me: I have always been a private person you know how we were raised

Him: Yes I know.. That's why I want you to take your time and think about it, if you say

No it's okay I'll understand I

let out a sigh..

Me: Fine I'll give it a thought

Him: I'll hear from you then

Me: How are things going with you?

Him: Things are going well I think I'm at a point in my life where I now know and understand maturity better, I know what I want and I'm content

Me: You haven't been making the headlines lately, I'm proud Him:

It's called growing up

Me: I wonder if Paparazzi is going to capture this moment Him:

They can do whatever they want, we have nothing to hide Me: That's

very true

Him: How is everything going with you?

Me: Things seem to be making a bit of sense, reuniting with my Family has been the best thing to ever happen to me.. I feel like things will work out for the better and I am in the process of being an entrepreneur

Him: Isn't that good to hear? a soon to be financially independent woman and I'm sitting here wondering why we didn't make it

Me: It's life.. We good as friends than lovers

Him: It seems that way

Me: How are things going between you and your girlfriend?

Him: Things are good between us, matter of fact I even went to check out a few rings for when the time is right

Me: You and marriage?

Him: I'm going to be a Father very soon, I'm in my early 30s there's no time for games anymore

I nodded..

Me: Never thought I would see this day

Him: There comes a point when one has to grow up.. How are things between you and lumpy?

Me: Lumpy? Really?

Him: You know I don't like the guy

Me: Things are good between us thank you for asking and insulting my boyfriend

Him: We might no longer be together but I will always care for you so he better treat you right at all times

Me: I'll let him know

Him: Do let him know or it'll be his death

laughed while shaking my head..

—

SENZEN

I

He brought me a glass of water together with the pain killers, I was still in pain...He handed them to me and then sat down on the couch..

Him: Are you sure that you don't wanna go to the hospital?

He seemed different, more sane than the last time when we crossed paths.. Mongz and I we go way back, we started dating in high school when I was in grade 10 and he was in grade 11. By then my Father was still around and though we live in the hood but my Parents were able to take me to the most expensive private school so that I could get the best education, My Father was an engineer. Mongz and I dated from high school all the way to varsity, seeing how deeply in love we were, we decided to go to the same varsity and we rented out a flat close to school. I lied to my Parents about living with him, they thought that I was in Res and a friend of mine would agree for her room to pose as mine on most weekends when they wanted to visit. Things were great between us, Mongz was the best boyfriend that I could ever ask for well that was until I was introduced to the darker side of him. What I didn't know was that he was on medication and he stopped taking his meds along the way, for reasons known only to him.. What

was almost a perfect love story turned into a nightmare when the abuse started, I stayed because I was in denial and things progressed pretty fast...

I lied for him, I covered for him until the bruises were visible enough that I couldn't lie for him anymore. I came clean to my Parents and my Father was furious, I ended the relationship and we turned him in but he never went to jail. He was found clinically insane and was ordered back to his meds and therapy, then I only got a restraining order. That piece of paper was meant to protect me from him. I moved back home and I traveled to school, Mongz just never gave up even with the restraining order. The last straw was when he had my Father killed, in his own insane mind he was convinced that my Father was the reason why our relationship ended. He saw him as an obstacle and he had him "Removed", he thought by doing away with my Father no one would come between us anymore and that we would be together forever. He tried to get me back but I refused. How could I be with someone who killed my own father? Someone who constantly hurt me physically and emotionally? When I refused to take him back that's when he ran me over with his car, reason why I now have problems with my leg. I have scars that remind me everyday of how I almost died that night, he literally ran the car over me three times. I am even lucky to still be alive..

Me: What.. What are you doing here?

Him: It wasn't right that everyone lied to me

Me: We had too or else I wouldn't be here, you wanted me dead Him: I

wasn't myself wh-

Me: You stopped taking your medication knowing very well that you were sick.. There's no excuse to what you did, you killed my Father

Him: I didn't kill your Father

Me: You didn't pull the trigger yourself but you had someone do it for you, he was shot more than 10 times! his body had bullet holes all over and just because your family is well connected the case went cold and you got away with everything. You said you loved me Mongz

Him: I did love you.. I never stopped loving you Me:

You don't hurt someone that you love Him: Okay

maybe we both did each other bad

Me: I'm sorry we both did what? I've never done anything to you Him:

You left me the minute you found out that I was on medication

Me: We both know that's not true! I left you after you raised your hand on me for the first time, I wasn't going to stay in an abusive relationship.. Your love is not healthy, it comes with a lot of obsession

He wiped his face with his hands..

Me: Please leave me alone, if you've ever loved me then you will leave me alone.. I just want my life back

Him: Are you seeing someone?

Me: Mongz Please.. Please leave me alone I can't live like this anymore I tried to get up but my leg wouldn't allow me.

Him: At least let me take you to the hospital Me:

No ill be fine

I heard a knock at the door..

Voice: Zeni.. It's me

It was my Aunt..

She knocked again and I looked at Mongz.. Me:

It's my Aunt.. I have to open for her

Him: No you not going to open for her because I'm not supposed to be here.. Remember? Me: I have too.. She-

He got up and made his way to me..

Him: Where is your Phone?

I kept quiet..

Him: Where is your phone?

He took out his gun.. I swallowed

Him: I'm going to ask you for the last time.. Where is your phone sweetheart?Me:

Kitchen

Him: Don't move and don't even try to scream or else your Mother is going to find you in a pool of blood together with your Aunt

He walked out and went to the kitchen..

Aunty: Zeni???

I sat there not knowing what to do, after a few seconds Mongz walked back in with his index finger on his lips..

Him: Shhhhh

I can't believe we going through something like this again...

—

XOLELW

A

Dr: There.. We have a strong heartbeat

I looked at Master and he was on his phone.I

shook his head then he looked at me..

Me: Can you hear the baby's heartbeat?

Dr: Everything seems to be going well, I'm impressedWe

looked at the monitor..

It was good to know that the baby is doing well..Dr:

How are you coping with Morning sickness?

Me: I'm trying to get used to it, though it's difficult at timesDr:

Pregnancy has it's ups and downs

Me: It does

Dr: And we are done..

She got me the paper towel..

Master helped me wipe off the gel from my tummy..Him:
Now it's kicking in that we going to be Parents The Dr
laughed..

Her: The baby's heartbeat makes everything realHe
helped me to get out of the bed..

Me: I still can't believe that I am carrying a human beingDr:
Feels unreal doesn't it?

Me: Yes it does

We went back and sat on the chairs.. Master held my hand..

—

LOLITH

A

My Mom knocked at the door, and then made her way in..Her: I
made you some tomato soup

I sat up straight...

Her: It has always been your favourite..Me:

Thank you

She handed it to me.. Her:

Careful it's still hot She

then sat next to me..Her:

What happened?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Her: Talk to me

Me: I just feel like Tiger and I we won't make itHer:

Why do you say that?

Me: She has reunited with her family

Her: Isn't that good?

I shook my head with tears in my eyes..Me:

I'm scared

Her: Scared of what?

Me: That she might leave me

Her: Why would she?

Me: Because now things are going well for her and probably she might not need me anymore

Her: Have you talked to her about this?Me:

No

Her: I have no doubt that she loves you very much, you scared because she was still going through a lot when she met you and she had no one. The only thing that's going to make her leave is if you keep on annoying her like this, and saying so not good things about her Mom

I looked at her..

Her: She told me before she left

Me: I didn't mean those things

Her: Whatever happened between her and her Mom is between them, even if she could tell you how much she hates her Mother don't join in the hate too because no matter what happens she's still her Mother and each time when you make her angry she's going to go to her Mom

I nodded..

Me: Focus on your relationship with her and stay out of their relationshipMe: I'll

do that

Her: give her some space you will call her again tomorrow.. Finish your soup so we can go and see Daddy

–

MR MABUZA

He looked at me..

Him: Why are you doing this?

Me: Because Ndarha and the President don't care about anyone else but themselves, they destroying the country with their selfish ways and they involved in a lot of illegal things

Him: Why should I trust you?

Me: Because I love my kids and as their Father I always have to protect them(Silence)

Me: What I'm showing you I've already given it to a certain Detective who is ready to strike only if you agree to be our informant.. This evidence will work better in court if it comes from a rivalry I couldn't think of any party other than the UDA

Him: Going ahead with this would also put me and members of my party in danger

Me: Not if you go public. If the UDA goes public with this then they won't be able to touch you because the whole country will be behind you, if anything happens to you everyone will know it's them

Him: If we go public it will jeopardize the case Me:

It won't.. Not if you reveal a portion of it Him:

How were you able to attain this?

Me: Ndarha and I go way back so he trusted me, I kept this for insurance.. I knew that one day I would need it to use it against him

Him: Him and the President won't be able to get out of this one.. This is big Me: So

do we have a deal?

He looked at me without saying anything..66

SENZENI

He pressed the gun against my thigh, I was on the phone with my Aunt..Her: Zeni
you were supposed to wait for me

My Aunt is our helper and what I call my babysitter. She is unemployed and my Mom thought it
would be better if she could come and help us, usually when I go anywhere I go with her...

Her: Your Mom told me that you went to town alone this other time too

Me: Yes I did, that should show you and Mom that I can manage to do things on my own

Her: You know that your leg gives you problems every now and then, where are you? I'll come

Mongz moved the gun and lodged it in between my thighs, just a bit up my vagina. He
leaned over and whispered on my other ear..

Him: Think carefully about your answer He
kissed me on my cheek..

If I mess this up he is going to kill me, I don't know how he expects me not to sound nervous when
he has a gun buried in between my thighs..

Me: Aunty please.. Just let me have this one day to myself, being out on my own makes me feel
independent. It makes me feel alive again and most importantly I feel like an adult

Her: We don't mean to treat you like this we just don't want anything happening to you I
exhaled..

Her: Okay did you leave the keys at the usual spot? You will find me at home Me: The
keys?

Her: Yes the keys.. I wanna start with the laundry Me:
Where are you now?

Her: I'm at the spaza shop

Me: ohw uhm

Mongz: Tell her the keys will be at the usual spot (Whispering)I

hung up, he looked at me..

Him: And now?

Me: If I tell her that the keys are at the usual spot then she will come backHe

removed the gun from my thighs and stood up straight..

Him: So what you going to do now sweetheart?Me:

You need to leave

Him: We not done talking

Me: What do you wanna talk about?My

phone vibrated, it was my Aunt.. Him:

Tell your Aunt to come home

I looked at the gun and then looked at him..

He brought his lips closer to mine, I closed my eyes..

Him: I'm trying so hard not to hurt both of you but you making this very hard for meI

opened my eyes..

Me: I don't want you to kill her

Him: We will be long gone when she comesMe:

Long gone?

Him: You supposed to be "out" remember?My

phone vibrated again..

Him: If she comes here and finds me here then I'll have no choice but to kill her, or youcould just save her life and we go out

He moved the gun up to my lower lip..

Him: Your choice Zee

–

ARMAN

I

I called Mongz again but his phone sent me straight to on voicemail, so I decided to call his office. The receptionist picked up..

Her: MM Logistics Tsholo speaking how may I help you?Me:

Hi.. I would like to speak to Mr Mabuza please

Her: Unfortunately he is not in today Mam' may I take a message?Me: He

is not in meaning that he didn't come?

Her: Yes he took a day off today

Me: I see

Her: Who am I speaking too and can I take a message?Me: No

thank you.. It's fine

That was strange, why would Mongz lie? I tried him again but his phone was still on voicemail.. I checked the text that he sent me telling me that he had to rush to the office, hoping that there would be a mistake somewhere but it was clear. I did not like this at all..

–

XOLELW

A

Xols: So when are you planning on talking to Mom?Me:

I don't wanna talk to Mom

Her: You can't hate her forever

Me: What she did was not right

Her: I know but she's really trying, she even stopped drinking

Me: She stopped drinking because she got sick, she wasn't going to voluntarily quit drinking

Her: She misses you and she really wants to talk to you

Me: What she did to Armani was cruel

Her: She acknowledges her mistakes

Me: Did she talk to Armani? Has she apologized to her?Her:

Come on Xolelwa

Me: No you come off, I will talk to Mom when I feel like talking to her which won't be anytime soon

Her: Okay fine.. Suit yourself

Me: Thank you and Bye

Her: Bye

After everything that's happened, I am not ready as yet to talk to my Mother..I heard a knock at the door..

Me: I'm coming

I went to open and it was some woman..Her:

Good day

Me: Good day

Her: I don't know if I got the right house but I'm looking for Master?Me:

Yes you got the right house

Her: May I please come in?

Me: I..

I wasn't sure about letting her in..

Her: I'm his step mother Mamezala, I don't know if he ever mentioned me?I shook my head..

Me: No he has never mentioned you to me

This woman seems sincere but the world is a messed up place and the most sincere ones are the dangerous ones..

Me: Can I call her first before letting you in?

Her: Please do.. In the meantime I'll go get my bag from the car
Her bag? She's planning on staying?

I called Master..

Him: Skat..

Me: Your Step Mother is here

Him: What?

Me: I wanted to confirm with you first before I let her in
Him:

Did she say her name was "Mamezala"

Me: Yes

Him: What is she doing there?

Me: I don't know.. How far are you?

He clicked his tongue..

Him: Ngiyeza (I'm coming)

—

NATASCH

I

I was out doing a bit of shopping with Jojo, he has been behaving lately. Though things seem to be picking up between us, I don't wanna give my heart fully in until I am very sure that he is committed to me..

Me: I'll get both of these

Him: They the same just different colours

Me: I'm getting the red one for myself then the beige I'm getting it for Nomfundo
Him:

That's nice of you but I don't think she will accept it

Me: It's just a good gesture from a good heart, plus it's a very nice bag

Him: Even so.. Nomfundo won't accept it and I don't think we should force it on her

Me: I'm trying to be civil with her, I don't know why she hates me this much

Him: She will come around on her own but for now maybe it's good that you leave her alone you know for the sake of peace

Me: So how is it going to work? I won't be involved in the baby's life? Him:

That will be entirely up to her

Me: And if she doesn't want me anywhere close to her baby? Him:

Then you'll have to respect her wishes

Me: Wow!

Him: Look Tash she's the Mother of my Child, the last thing I want is to piss her off, more than I already did. If she's not comfortable with you around the baby then you will have to respect her wishes

Me: Exactly how is that going to work? When they are around at your place I shouldn't come? Let's not forget that this is the same woman you've been having sexual relations with even after you guys had broken up

Him: That was before you and I became an item Me:

So what? I must just dismiss it like that?

Him: Where is all of this coming from now all of a sudden? Me:

You know what.. I'm even done with this shopping

I put the bags back where they belonged and then walked out..

—

XOLELW

A

It was a very awkward situation just sitting there with this woman and waiting for Master..

Me: Would you like something to drink?

Her: Yes please.. Tea would be nice Me:

okay

I stood up from the couch and went to make her some tea.. She later on came to the kitchen..

Her: I never thought for a second that Master would be in a stable relationshipMe:

Why?

Her: He is just like his big Brother

Me: I didn't know he had siblings

Her: For certain personal reasons he doesn't like usMe: I'm

sorry to hear that

Her: We trying to connect with him but..

Me: He is stubborn

Her: That he is..

Me: You will be staying with us?

Her: Yes for a week, There's a prayer week at Faith ministries church that I want to attend. It starts today

Me: Ohw I heard of that church by Rev Nazo Buthelezi, it's currently the biggest church in Mpumalanga

Her: Have you ever been there before?I

shook my head no..

Me: No I haven't been there

Her: I know him personally.. Him, his wife, his Mom and his kidsI

laughed..

Me: You can't possibly know him personally

Her: Yes I do.. Nazo and my Son are like Brothers they've been best friends for a long time and now His Daughter and My Granddaughter are also friends

I looked at her..

Her: But that's another story for another day

Me: You really know him? (Shocked) Her:

Yes him and my son go way back..Me:

That's.. Wow I can't believe it

Her: If you want you can come with me to church and we-The
door opened and Master walked in..

Me: Babe you won't believe this.. You-

Master: What are you doing here?

Mamezala: I am here to attend some special event and I thought I could pop in and see you

Master: I want you out.. Go stay at a hotel or somethingMe:

Master!

He looked at me..

Him: Ungazingeni (Stay out of this)

Her: It's fine I'll just call my Son and let him know that I'll be staying over at a B&B or something like that

She walked to the living, I looked at him..

Me: Are you serious?

Him: I don't want this woman in my house or anywhere near youMe:

Why?

Him: Eyy Ntombazana ndini kukwami la (This is my house)Me:

You being unreasonable

Him: Khuluma wena futhi? (You the one speaking) you don't even wanna talk to your Mother

Me: That's unfair

Him: Xol-

His phone started ringing.. He looked at it..Me:

Who is it?

Him: It's her Son

He clicked his tongue in annoyance and walked out to the bedroom..

—

SENZEN

I

With his clear instructions I left the key at the usual spot for my Aunt and then we left before she could walk back home. I was very uncomfortable and very scared because I didn't know where we were going, and Mongz being unstable as he is there's no telling what might happen.. To my surprise we drove to the Mirage hotel, and then he booked us a room. By how they attended to him I could tell that he was a regular here..

I don't know what this was all about but I hope he won't expect me to sleepover, I can't have my Mother be worried about me..

Me: What are we doing here?I

sat down..

Him: I told you that we need to talk

(Silence)

Me: You can't force me to be with you, I don't wanna be with you anymore I cannot be with someone who has hurt me like that. I will never be happy in this relationship, I will always wake up depressed and sad. There's never gonna be any happy or romantic moments because everytime when I fix my eyes on you, I'll always be reminded of what you did to me

He didn't say anything..

Me: All I want is for you to let me be, Learn from our past relationship and make your current relationship a success.. She doesn't deserve this

Him: You were stalking her?

Me: No.. I was in town and coincidentally we were in the same shop, at first I wasn't sure that it was her until I followed her I recognized her because I follow her on Twitter

A silent moment struck us again..Me:

She seems like a nice lady

Him: She is an amazing Person, she gave me a reason to love again after what happened between you and me

Me: You need to tell her everything.. You need to be honest with her.67

XOLELWA

I got his car keys and handed them to him, he took them while looking at me..

Me: Later on when you check up on us don't be surprised if I don't pick up, I will be at church with your step mom

Him: Umazi nje 3 seconds, all of a sudden you going to church with her

Me: Don't be like that, I need a bit of fresh air.. I'm always stuck around hereHe put his hand on my tummy..

Him: I don't want anything happening to you guys

Me: We going to church Babe what can they do? Hit us with a Bible until we die?(Laughing)

He didn't laugh, so I knew that he was serious..

Me: I don't think she will kill us, you know she's here.. Her kids know she's here she wouldn't get away with murder so stop worrying

I squeezed his cheek..

Him: if anything happens or if she makes you feel uncomfortable, call meMe: I will

He kissed me..

Me: Got your sick note?

Him: Ngiyiphethe (I have it)

He started tickling me on my tummy..

Him: bye bye Nana..

Me: Stop it (Laughing)

Him: Ugade umamakho ongana nqondo yezwa? (Take care of your Mother who ain't got not sense)

I held his hands..

Me: Stop it (laughing) you gonna be late

He squeezed my cheeks gently and then kissed me..Him:

I'll see you tomorrow morning

Me: Bye.. I love you

Him: I love you too

He grabbed the rest of his things and I walked him out..

–

TASH

Tebza: Here put this in too

I was at my friend's place and we were preparing dinner, Jojo has been calling but I ignored his calls. I was still upset over what he said..

Tebza: It's a tricky situation friend.. Most women don't want their Baby Daddy's girlfriend anywhere close to their Baby

Me: It's ridiculous! I feel like Nomfundo is using the baby to control Jojo.. I mean I don't even know why she hates me so much

Her: Just let her be.. Fighting with her is going to be a disadvantage for you, Jojo is obviously going to take her side because she's the one with the baby and since you told him about your situation.. Baby Mama is always going to win, she's the only woman who has a baby by him

Hearing Tebogo say that really broke my heart, the last thing I want is to be a second option at all times..

Me: Like if she visits his place with the baby I'm not allowed there, what if he sleeps with

her? They have had sexual relations after they had broken up.. She really played her cards right with the baby

Her: Now we can put it in the oven

Me: Maybe I should just let him go

Her: What? Just because of Nomfundo?Me:

He should've let me skip the county

Her: He loves you and he wants to be with you

Me: I don't see that happening with Nomfundo controlling him like this, just imagine I'm not allowed at my boyfriend's place when she is there.. Who does she think she is?

Her: The Queen of England

We both laughed..

Me: She should keep on dreaming

Her: Just love your Man babe and forget about herI

sighed..

Me: We will see how this is going to endI

put the chicken in the oven..

—

ARMAN

I

I turned the tables around with Mongz, he has been calling but I ignored his calls. I wanted him to feel how I felt when I've been trying him the whole day, and I still haven't forgotten that he lied to me.. Busy ignoring his calls made him to stop by, I let him in..

We looked at each for a while, we were standing next to the sink at the kitchen..Him: Why

haven't you been picking up my calls?

(Silence)

He folded his arms..

Me: Where have you been?

He looked at me trying to see if I knew something else other than what he had texted me..

Him: I was at the office Me:

Don't lie to me Mongz

Him: What makes you think I wasn't at the office?

Me: I called the office, your receptionist said you never showed up! And your phone has been on voicemail the whole day

He didn't say anything..

Me: This nonsense you doing doesn't reflect good on you, are you having an affair? He chuckled..

Him: Having an affair?

Me: I've been gone for a while and it would've given you plenty of time to start something else with someone

Him: That's cute sthandwa sam'.. Pack a bag I'm borrowing you for a few days Me:

Why? So you can leave me at your house alone while you go and see her? Him: Her, who?

Me: I don't know, you tell me!

Him: Armani I'm not cheating on you

Me:....

Him: Go pack a bag I'll be in the car

I watched him as he walked up to the door, he opened and then turned and looked at me..

Him: You serious about this cheating thing? He

closed the door and walked back to me..

Him: I've had a long day please don't do this, I'm not cheating on you okay?

I realized right then that I might love this guy more than I thought, What he did today got

to me really bad. I can't imagine Mongz being with me and then seeing someone else on the side, if it's happening then it might've started while I was at home. I've been gone for a long time, enough time for him to get up to no good..

Him: Pack a bag and let's go sthandwa sam' I'll tell you where I was when we get home I looked at him as he put both his hands on my shoulders...

Him: Ngiyak'cela tuuu (Please)

Me: Fine

Him: Thank you

Me: I'm only going because I want to hear your lousy excuse Him:

I'll be in the car

Me: Okay

I watched him walk up to the door again..

—

DETECTIVE KING

The Captain knocked at my door.. I put the file away.. Him:

How far are you with the Bonza case?

Me: Errr..

Him: I told you that I wanted you on this case

Me: I know Sir but I've been a bit occupied by another case

Him: What other case? I've cleared you from other cases.. We need to solve this case Nkambule

Me: I know Sir.. But-

Him: No buts.. You the best I've got so please don't disappoint me Me: Yes

Sir

Him: I need a full report on this case by the end of the week

Me: Yes Sir

Him: Good night

Me: Night

He walked out of my office..

I was still waiting for our informant to contact me before I could go to the captain with the Ndarha case, our informant hasn't contacted me yet.. I got up and went to get the box for Bonza's case and then put it on my desk. I took out all the evidence and the file so I could go through everything and see what they missed about this case. Usually coldcases are passed on to our station, we have solved a few of them. Make that I have solved a few of them...

Me: Let's see what we have here

–

MR MABUZA

I got a call from the President..

Me: Hello?

Him: Know that I'll be removing you from your positionMe:

I'm not surprised

Him: Why did you do it? We were all Brothers and we trusted youMe: I

don't think I have to explain myself to you Sir

Him: Ndarha is going to come for you, do you understand that?Me:

Yes I know that

Him: And I'll help him bring you down! You are a traitor and you disgust me!He

hung up on me..

I laughed a little while shaking my head..

–

DETECTIVE KING

I watched the surveillance footage again busy rewinding and checking if I didn't miss any important details. What I didn't understand about the whole thing was that the footage would go blank and then it comes up again when Bonza is already in the car with Jojo Ndarha bidding him farewell, why would it have a glitch on that specific moment when Bonza walked out of the house to his car. Unless of course he didn't make it out of that house alive.. I picked up the phone and dialed the tech department..

Voice: Tech department, Thebe on the lineMe:

Just the person I wanted to talk too Him: King

what can I do for you?

Me: I have a footage that I need you to fix for meHim:

How serious is it?

Me: Just a glitch

Him: I can work around a glitch

Me: I'll bring it to you now now

Him: Yes Sir

I put the phone down and got up from my chair, I made my way to the board. The board had a picture of Jojo Ndarha, Xoliswa Ndarha and his assistant/girlfriend Nataschi

Me: Who was helping who? And why?

I circled Jojo's face with the permanent maker..Me:

Possible murderer

I looked at Xoliswa and Nataschi..

Me: Loyal accomplices

I looked at him again..

Me: What was the motive behind the killing?I

tapped the marker on Nataschi's face..

Me: Why did you confess to a crime you didn't commit?

Something was very off with this case..

–

XOLELW

A

Later on Mamezala and myself drove to church, I was surprised at how full it was.

It was literally the biggest church I've ever been too, my Dad's church didn't have nothing on it. There were screens all around for those who were sitting at the top, and luckily we weren't that far back.. People were still coming coming in, the chorus leaders were were keeping up on our feet with praise songs..I leaned over to Mamezala

Me: The church is big

Her: It's very big Dear

She fixed my pillow on the chair..

Her: You don't wanna sit down and rest a bit?Me:

No thank you... I'm still fine

I don't know why Master hated this woman, she is a very nice Person.. She even cookedbefore we came here..

We continued singing along and I saw that some other guests were ushered to the front row, maybe they were Pastors or Prophets too.. As we were busy singing the camera moved from the members of the congregation and focused on the other entrance, the one that was close to the front where it's mostly used by Pastors. I saw Nomvelo making her way in, I literally jumped for joy.. She was with Some other lady and one of the Ushers was holding her bag for her.. She's one of the women who inspires me a lot, I read her books and watch her motivational sermons and now she's sitting just a few rows ahead of me, I couldn't believe my eyes. I felt like I was dreaming...

Me: That's Nomvelo!!

Mamezala: Mrs Buthelezi

Me: Yes! Gosh I forgot!

The camera focused on her most of the time and It was refreshing busy stealingglances at her, I wasn't even concentrating on the singing anymore..

NOMFUNDO

Jojo: Are you nervous about tomorrow?Me:

A bit.. You?

Him: Just nervous about how your Father is going to react, especially since I stood you up that day

Me: I am weeks away from delivering a healthy baby boy please don't stress me, I don't wanna go into labour before time. Do come tomorrow

Him: We will come, we have already contacted your family remember?

Me: You better show up because my Dad won't be having it anymore with youHim: I'll be there.. I promise

(Silence)

Him: How are you guys holding up?

Me: We doing okay, there's this little exercises that I stumbled upon on YouTube and I do them every morning. They will help make the labour process more easier

Him: Are they safe?

Me: Yes they safe, they for pregnant women who are close to giving birthI yawned..

Him: Let me not keep you, you should get some restMe:

Call me tomorrow before you guys leave

Him: I'll do so

Me: Goodnight

Him: Goodnight

—

XOLELW

A

Rev Buthelezi was at the pulpit looking revashing in his black clerical collar wear. I don't wanna lie he was very handsome especially with his beard nicely trimmed and his bald

head, not completely bald though..

It was very quiet now as we waited for him to say something, one of the Pastors had opened the service with prayer for us. Everyone was looking forward to hearing him Preach, what I have come to realize is that not only does he heal physically but he is also gifted in healing with words. I watched one of his sermons a while back and I enjoyed it.. He had his head slightly bowed and his eyes closed, he moved his hand and rubbed his chest busy clearing his throat. That's when one of the chorus leaders started singing and we all stood up and joined in, one of the Pastors stood up and walked over to the pulpit. We didn't really hear what they were saying, Then the pastor went and got him a bottle of water and we all sat down again at his command..

They handed him the water..

Rev: Thank you

The Pastor went back to his seat..

Rev: I got this uncomfortable sharp pain on my chest and the pain felt very familiar..He opened the bottle and took a sip...

Him: My Wife was probably saying a short prayer for God to intervene, not because of the love but because of the fact that she's not ready to raise the kids alone

We all laughed..

Him: And maybe love too.. I don't know only her and God knowsHe put the bottle of water away..

Him: This sharp pain I felt in my chest took me back to when my Brother used to stay up almost every night complaining about the same pain. Mind you, I have never experienced such an intense pain before other than tonight. When my Brother had this pain, I later on learned that it came from a heart and soul that carried both Anger and hurt. He had so much anger and hate for me because of stupid decisions that I made which landed me in hot water all the time, and the more that hate grew the more and more it destroyed him emotionally that he went on to feel it physically. At first I didn't understand why I was experiencing such until the holy spirit revealed something to me. 90% of the congregation is carrying a heavy load of emotional pain, and hate towards a certain situation or a certain somebody which in turn is becoming heavy on me. Here's the thing we cannot move forward with the sermon because most of the anger is aimed at God, many of you are blaming him for certain circumstances and hurt that you cannot

heal from. Whilst another bunch the Anger is aimed at their loved ones be it a relative that hurt you, your husband, and even your Parents.. When he said that I thought of my own Parents and my heart sank.. The Bible says in Isaiah 43 verse 18-19 "Do not remember the former things, Nor consider the things of old" (NKJV). Holding on to anger does not do anything to your offender, it only robs you everyday of your inner peace, your joy and your will to live freely. One will say "You don't understand what that Person did to me, or what I've been through" Yes I won't understand that's true, but holding on to that will only destroy you emotionally so much so that the devil will find a crack to snake his way in and confuse you even more. People who commit suicide didn't wake up and do it, it was something they maditated on everyday and then the devil's whisper finally influenced them into taking their own lives. When you emotionally drained the devil will whisper to you every chance he gets. He will tell you no one cares, he will tell you that your situation will never change, he will tell all those things and when you start to believe them then you have given him authority over your life. He will help you destroy yourself in all aspects..

Forgiveness is not easy but forgiveness is medication that can heal your broken soul.

If you have hardened your heart from forgiving your offender then Pray about it, Pray to God and ask him to help you forgive, ask him to help you heal. When the devil tries to break you down even more, Pray harder! when depressing thoughts visit you Pray! When you have your back against the wall and don't know where to turn too be like Joseph the dreamer. Lift your head up and pray.. When Joseph was deep in that pit and there was no way out, I'm sure turned and looked to his side only to keep on being reminded by the pit that he was trapped. The only way out was up and not down, he had to hold his head up and look right at the heavens that was his only way out. When you feel like you can't go on anymore, when you feel suffocated and done, your only way out is lifting your head up and praying.

This is the reason why we gathered here, this whole week is dedicated to nothing but serious praying. Unfortunately we cannot fully connect to the heavens if we have restrictions in our hearts. Let go and give it to God. He was there when it happened, he saw it, he knows your pain better and he knows how your Anger came about. Whatever emotional burden you carrying, give it to him at this instant because keeping it to yourself will only destroy you..

I found myself wet with tears, looking around I wasn't alone who felt like that. There was a lot of people who walked in here with their own emotional burdens, Reverend Nazo hit deep where it hurts the most with his words..

—

ARMAN

I

I walked out of the bathroom with a towel covering my wet body, I walked out and went to the bedroom. I was welcomed by the sound of Mongz beautiful voice singing and playing the piano, I stood at the door and looked at me..

Him: "I never thought that I'd love someone, That was someone else's dream. 'Cause you give me something That makes me scared, alright, This could be nothing But I'm willing to give it a try-"

He looked up at me and gave me his charming side smile, he continued singing..

Him: " Cause you give me something that makes me scared, alright, This could be nothing but I'm willing to give it a try.. Please give me something, 'Cause someday I might know my heart.."

He stopped and I gave him a standing ovation.. I made my way in..Me: That

was beautiful

Him: Thank you.. I try (Smiling)

I walked up to him and leaned over on the piano..

Me: You not off the hook yet and your singing won't save you this time around He sighed..

Him: Let's hear it

Me: Where were you?

Him: You sure that you wanna know?

I nodded. We then looked at each for a while..Him:

Okay

He got up from the small bench and made his way to his closet, my heart started beating fast since I didn't know what to expect. I would be very broken if I find out that he is cheating on me and possibly thinking of leaving me for someone else. I mean apart from my past relationship with Jojo, this is my first relationship were I willingly gave my heart away. I wasn't forced into anything, out of the will of my heart I gave him

my love..

He came back with a small basket and placed it on the piano..Me: What is this?

Him: This is my life

He took out some pills from it..

Him: My sanity is dependent on these pills

I checked them out, and I remembered what his Father shared with me..

Him: I stopped taking them back when I was in varsity because I thought that I didn't need them anymore, that was until I hurt someone who meant the world to me. I hurt her so bad that she never found it in her heart to forgive me and when it ended I never thought that I was ever going to love someone else, that's how much she meant to me.

He exhaled..

Him: Then you came along Sthandwa Sam'

He turned my face to him so that I could look at him, stare deep in his eyes..

Him: That day when we came over, the first thing that attracted me to you was how humble you were, you were very polite and very shy

He was making me blush..

Him: And that smile was what made me to fall in love with you. You made me believe in love again when I had lost all hope..

Mongz is a very good person and he doesn't deserve what he's going through, he doesn't deserve this mental illness..

Him: I love you and I want you in my life for years to come.. I want you to know exactly what you're getting yourself into, but I believe that I will never hurt you. No matter what happens, I will always take my medication. You will become the reason why I will be committed to taking my meds, because the day I hurt you will be the day I turn myself into a psychiatric hospital and have them throw away the key

He put his hand on my cheek..

Him: I love you Armani and I will understand if you don't wanna be with me anymore

I looked at him..

Me: You will understand?

Him: I'll..

He cleared his throat and nodded..

Him: I'll understand

He was saying that but I could see that deep down he was scared, scared of me walking out on him..

Him: The choice is yours

The room went quiet for a while without me saying anything to him. The more I held my peace, the more and more he got anxious..

I opened the bottle of pills and took out the capsule, I opened the other one and did the same thing.. I placed them on his hand..

Me: At what time do I need to remind you to take the pills and how many times-I couldn't even finish the sentence and already he was kissing me..

Him: I love you so much Mrs Mabuza

Me: I love you too

When I was at my lowest he was there for me. Mongz literally helped me through with the whole Ndarha thing by getting me the most expensive psychiatric help, then he went as far as finding my family for me. If it wasn't for him, I would still be tied around the Ndarha's. I was a mess when he met me and he helped me through it all because he loved me, and I'm willing to help him through it all too because I love him..

Being that much close to each other made our hearts to connect, we were now at a point where we wanted to share our love in an intimate way..

Him: Are you sure about this?I

nodded..

Me: I'm sure

I don't know how this is going to work out since I haven't been with another man other

than Ndarha, I'm praying that I will be able to give myself to him without any restrictions. He took my hand and led me to the bed, he sat on the bed and I sat on top of him..

I wrapped my arms around his neck, and he wrapped his around my waist and we started kissing. The kissing part continued up until he removed my towel, and things were still good... Flashbacks of my past sexual relations flooded my mind like an earthquake wanting to destroy everything, with every touch and every kiss I couldn't get Ndarha's image out of my head..

Deep down I kept on convincing myself that "Relax girl it's not him", maybe once upon a time those sexual relations were appeasing but now thinking about them I felt disgusted and very uncomfortable with Mongz touching me in an intimate way..

Mongz: Hey

I looked at him not realizing that what could've been a 4 play made my body to tense up in a very bad way.. It's like I just froze

I got up from him and quickly picked up the towel to cover up my body.. Me:

I'm sorry

Him: It's okay

Me: I just need some time alone I

walked away..

Him: Armani it's okay

I picked up the pace and ran to the bathroom, I shut the door on his face and tears streamed down..

Him: Please open

I sank down crying..

Him: Please open the door

How will our relationship work if I can't satisfy him sexually, then he's going to cheat on me.. Why is this happening now? Why is my past with Ndarha haunting me now.. Will I ever be rid of that man?

XOLELWA

I couldn't get a good night sleep, I kept on tossing and turning busy thinking about what Rev Nazo said. I am all for forgiveness, but when I think about what has been happening at home I feel very discouraged to pick up the phone and call my Mother. It all came back to me, all those unsettling memories of being abused by my Father and my Mother just turning a blind eye to everything cuts deeper than anything. Most of my life I had to live exactly how my Father wanted me to live, he controlled almost everything that I did including the man that I was meant to marry.. I heard the door unlocking, I quickly wiped my tears and checked the time. It was 6am, I think that I have been up since from 3am or so just lost deep in my thoughts..

When Master passed the lounge to the bedroom he noticed me sitting on the couch in the dark. He put his things on the other couch and switched on the light, he made his way to him..

Him: What happened?

He sat next to me..

I sniffed..

Me: It's nothing

Him: Look at me

I turned and looked at him..

Him: Bowukhala.. What happened? I

let out a sigh, and wiped my tears..

Me: Your Step Mother and I did go to church

Him: Ingaye le ndaba? (does this involve her) I

shook my head no..

Me: Just what the Reverend was preaching about it really tore deep inside

Him: Eish yazi besihleli grand singayi esontweni, wafika lo sisi bheka manje wenzani (We were living in Peace without attending any church, then this woman comes by and look what's happening now)

Me: It's not her fault

Him: Yabona yonke lento ngathi izongidina (I'm starting to get irritated)Me:

But it's not her fault

Him: No maan angisho wuye okuyise esontweni lakhe? (She's the one who took you to her church)

He was frustrating me more by acting up..

Him: Kuzomele abone indlela, lithi liphuma abe sekahambile (before the sun comes up I want her gone)

Me: Master..

Him: Futhi nje yazini.. Ithi ngenze so (let me do this)

He took out his phone and dialed some number, he put it on loudspeaker..Me:

Who are you calling now?

Him: Shhhh

The phone rang thrice before the other person answered..Voice:

Ekse?

Master: eh jo.. Awenze uLande is'Ola sakho fast (Come and get your Mother)Voice:

Kwenzenjani manje? (What happened)

Master: She's bothering my girlfriend

Voice: Ngiyala ayifani naye leyo oyishoyo (I deny, my Mother is not like that) Master: She

took her to church, ang'cavi ukuthi Isonto lakuphi, ang'cavi ukuthi why..

Whatever happened lapho kulelo sonto it's something that upset her a lot. For the firsttime I come home and my girlfriend is crying

Voice: Manje makatefa indaba yam' ngoba? (So if she's a cry baby that's my problembecause)

Me: Eyy awutshela umamakho ahambe la kwami before I physically throw her out

Voice: Yabona lapho kunganyiwa saan' iTyama lingavuka ethuneni (That would be a startof world war 3, so much so that your Father would ressurect from the dead)

Me: Let it go she didn't do anything wrong

Voice: Entlek yaz' iskhathi sok'dlala ang'naso (I don't have time for games)He hung up..

I got up from the couch and walked out.. Him:

Manje uyaphi? (Where are you going)Me: And if you kick her out I'm also leavingHe followed me..

Him: Wena uyaphi ke? (Where are you going)

Me: I don't know maybe my Sister's place or my Brother's placeHim:

Nou yimi oWrong? (Now I'm the wrong one)

Me: No just that you don't understand, and you not prepared to even understandI put both my hands on my face and started crying..

Him: Eish okay ke askies.. Woza la maan ungakhali (come here, don't cry)He pulled me to him..

Him: Then make me understand

Me: I don't even wanna talk about it anymore (Crying)He wiped my tears..

Him: Alright ke we'll talk about it some other time, askies skat..He kissed me on my forehead..

Him: Hade neh? (I'm sorry)I nodded still crying..

—

ARMAN

I

Mongz had decided that we should go and see the psychiatrist today since I had a

breakdown last night. I don't know why the events of my past had decided to catch up with me now that I'm in a healthy, and peaceful relationship.. He handed me the bowl of cereal..

Me: Thank you

He sat next to me on the couch. We haven't exchanged much words since last night's incident, this thing was really getting to me and Mongz was being supportive as always...

He kissed me on my shoulder..

Him: I want you to understand that we going to get through this.. Together

I faked a smile. I hope he understands that this is not just a minor problem, and I do pray that we will be able to get to the bottom of it

Him: I love you and I'm not going anywhere

Me: Promise?

Him: I promise

He pat me a little on my thigh..

Me: Eat your breakfast so that we can go I need to pass by the office and check something

Me: Just like how you were at the office yesterday? He

looked at me..

Him: I thought we were over that

Me: You're over that.. Not me

Him: Ng'cela singaxabani Manoo (Let's not fight Manoo) Me:

Whatever Mongz

He gave me a weird look and I concentrated on the TV, we were watching the news..

"A dead body was found next to the pool of the Mirage hotel by one of the workers as he was about to carry out his duties this morning. The body is that of a female who is said to be in her late 20s, it is believed that she leaped off the balcony of the 3rd floor during the early hours of this morning. The hotel has released the name of the deceased which

they had noted it down when she was signing for the key, she has signed under the name "Senzeni Cele" which could be an alias. The police and the hotel management are pleading that if you familiar with the name please contact the police department so that they can contact the family of the deceased. Investigations will be carried out to see if it was suicide or if she had been murdered, it is also believed that she came to the hotel to meet up with a male companion who never showed up. If anyone has any information about the deceased please come forward"

Me: She was definitely murdered

Mongz: Why do you say that?

Me: How many People book a hotel room in the most expensive hotel just to commit suicide?

Mongz: Maybe she didn't want put her family through hell by committing suicide at home

Me: Naa I don't believe. She was with someone in that hotel room, maybe a boyfriend or client. The mirage hotel is known for accommodating rich clients with their slay queens, It's an undercover brothel. I'm telling you that it was a deal gone wrong, what if he didn't wanna pay and she threatened him that she's going to tell the wife? And now he bribed the hotel so that they could protect him

He chuckled..

Him: Awusho ke Armani.. Ukwazelaphi konke lokho? (How do you know all of that) Me:

Maybe I have a client there

Him: Ngeke kwenzeke lokho sthandwa sam' (That will never happen) Me:

Why? Are you jealous?

He moved his eyes from the TV and looked me, giving me that ever so charming sidesmile..

Him: Phela makakhona ngizomthola bese nginihlanganisa ngamakhanda noyi two.. Lokho kuyoba ukufa kwakho (if he is around I will find him and kill both of you.. That will be your death)

Me: I'm joking Babe I heard from my friend Khethi, she knows things and she knows People

Him: Angakufaki ke ezintweni zakhe (I hope she won't influence you into doing such)Me: She's a good Person

Him: I hope so..

Me: Did you take your meds?

Him: Yes I did

Me: I didn't see you

Him: You were bathingI

shook my head..

Me: You will have to drink again in front of me.. I didn't see youHim:

Who died and made you my Nurse?

We looked at each and laughed..

Him: I did take my meds

Me: You will drink again

Him: Weeee Armani..

Me: Phela if you don't take your meds I'm leaving you

Him: Ungazong'bhedela awuyi ndawo futhi I did take my meds (Don't talk nonsense I did take my meds)

Me: Open wide and let me see

Him: Uyabheda ke manje (Now you talking nonsense)I

squeezed his cheeks..

Me: Open let me see (Laughing)He

removed my hand..

Him: Finish your cereal so that we can go.. We running lateI

continued eating, he looked at me and shook his head..

Him: Asazi (We don't know)

—

JOJO

my intercom rang just when I was about to leave the house, I checked who it was and I didn't recognize the gentleman standing at the gate. I pressed the button..

Me: Yeah?

Him: Good Morning

Me: Can I help you?

Him: I am Detective King Nkambule, I hope this is Mr Ndarha's residence? Jojo Ndarha?Me: Yes

Him: May I have a quick word with you Sir?

Me: About what?

Him: It would be better if you let me in, we can't communicate through the intercom now can we?

Me: Can I see your badge?

He flashed it..

Me: What is this about? I have a very important meetingHim:

It's about Bonza

Me: I long gave my statement

Him: I understand that Sir but-

Me: I'm sorry Detective but I have to go

Him: No problem Sir.. I'll come back later with a search warrant and the Forensics team so that they can spray luminol and see if we won't find any traces of blood, I'm sure that will be enough to keep you in custody.. Or I can just talk to your Sister and your Assistant since you are in a hurry

I let go of the button and thought for a while, I can't disappoint Nomfundo again she will

never forgive me this time around.. I pressed the button again..Me: You

do that Detective

He didn't say anything too for a while..

Him: Very well sir.. Have a nice day Me:

You too

He got back in his car, I took my phone and quickly texted Xols and Tash..This is not good..

—

NDARH

A

I looked at Armani's pictures on my phone that I got from Facebook, she looks so happy with this Mabuza boy. It's so funny how both Father and Son are determined to taking all the women in my life.. My wife made her way in, I put my phone away..

Me: You look beautiful

Her: Thank you

I looked at the time..

Me: We running a bit late

Her: Jojo is always late My

phone rang..

Me: I have to take this, it's the President

I got up and took my phone, then I went out of the room while passing next to her and running my hand on her butt. I noticed that made her a bit uncomfortable.. I answered my phone..

Me: And?

Him: He said that he will do it tonight

Me: I can't wait to attend his Son's funeral, did you give him clear instructions?Him:

Yes he's going to make it look like an accident

Me: Perfect..

I turned and looked at my wife..

Me: He will be too broken to even think about Nonts

Him: Are you sure about this? His Son means everything to me

Me: And my wife means everything to me, if she goes ahead with the divorce I'm going to lose my family. I've already lost Armani and I'm not about to lose my wife and kids too, I'm trying very hard to get my family in order again, I'm not gonna have Mabuza break it all for me

Him: I understand..

Me: Thank you for this.. I owe you one

Him: I always have your back old friend

Me: I know you do

Him: We will wait then to hear about the accident maybe tomorrow morning
Me: Very well

Him: Bye

Me: Bye

I hung up and made my way to her..

Her: He just texted me that he is on his way

Me: I don't say this much but I'm very proud of Jojo, my first Grand child is going to be aboy, the heir to most of my fortune. He is going to continue with the Ndarha legacy. I think we should pass by the bank and withdraw maybe R150 000, to give to the girl's parents. Our way of saying sorry that we late

Her: Won't they say we disrespecting them? What if they say we despising them or something like that?

Me: They will be fools to refuse such an amount of money
Her: I don't want to ruin this for Jojo

Me: Trust me they might act up and what not but they won't refuse that kind of money,

and that will only be the beginning. After all we want the best for our Grandchild, our first Grandchild

Her: And Xolelwa?

Me: Is Jojo on his way?

Her: Don't change the subject

Me: I don't have a child by that name.. Xolelwa disrespected us to the last degree, she is cohabitating and decided to fall pregnant by the nephew of a woman who used to be our Servant! In my whole life I have never seen such disrespect, she has disappointed me more than Xoliswa being confused about her sexuality and Jojo being involved with a white girl.. I don't wanna hear anything about Xolelwa

I took my glasses from the table..Me:

I'll be waiting outside

I walked up to the door..

Her: I knew you understanding Xolelwa's situation was just a facade, now your true colours are showing

Me: I never wanna hear that name in this house ever again, she now has a new family. Our former servant and her Nephew!

70

JOJO

Tiger was the only one who got back to me, Tash never replied to the text that I sent her and it was very frustrating because our stories have to be same if not better than the last time.. Nomfundo's Parents did let us in without any hassle but her Father did not look happy, he had on a serious face...

Ndarha: We would like to take this opportunity and thank you for welcoming us at your home. We are deeply sorry for showing up late, we got lost a bit along the way but that's not an excuse. My Son should've asked for more clearer directions

A moment passed without Fufu's Parents saying anything...Ndarha:

I would also like-

Fufu's Mother: I should get refreshments

Fufu's Father: Refreshments will come later, there's no time for refreshments especially when we don't know how this meeting is going to go

A part of me wanted to stand up and go outside to check on Tash, but I didn't want it to look like I'm being disrespectful and not taking this meeting seriously. I know that if I step out of line, this man is going to make it difficult for me to see my Son..

Fufu's Father: As a Father I wanted my Daughter to have the best in life. I wanted her to get a good education and stand up for herself. I didn't want her to be another static of women who are financially dependent on a man, I wanted Fufu to be a strong independent black woman.

We held our peace and let him continue..

Him: I was disappointed to find out that she's pregnant, what's worse is that she is no longer in a relationship with the Father of her baby

He looked at me after saying that..

Him: I would've had her be in a stable relationship with possible marriage in the near future, but then we cannot change how this generation is

I could say that so far this was going well..

Fufu's Father: We might not be at the same level as your Family but at the end of the day, Your Son impregnated my Daughter

Ndarha: That's something we cannot change and we are here to do things your way. It is very disappointing to learn that they no longer together but at the end of the day, My Son wants to do right by his child. It's not every young man who steps up to his responsibility but Jojo is willing to play his part as a Father to his child only if he could be allowed too. This is going to be our very first Grandchild and we would also like to be a part of his life, we don't want Nomfundo to be a young struggling Mom. We are here to do things the right way

Fufu's Father: I understand what you saying and right now it's not about us, it's about our Grandchild. We also appreciate that you made time to come and have this meeting with us, it shows that you do care about the well-being of the child

Ndarha: We very much do I

cleared my throat..

Me: I apologize if this will seem disrespectful but I would very much appreciate it if my Son could use my surname

Fufu's Father: Then you will have to pay for damages once your Son is born
Me: I understand Sir

This went better than how I had imagined.. Fufu's

father: Now the refreshments can come

Ndarha: Before the refreshments I would like to offer a token of appreciation
He took the small bag and put it on the table.

Ndarha: With this money we would like to apologize for coming late and I am hoping that we're going to have a good relationship from here on

Fufu's Father: We accept your token of appreciation and a healthy relationship will exist between our families only if your Son will do right by his Son

Ndarha: He will do right by him, I will make sure of that Fufu's

Father: In that case, we can have the refreshments
Fufu's Mother stood up..

Nonts: I'll help you with the refreshments only if you don't mind Fufu's

Mother: I appreciate that a lot.. Thank you

Fufu's Father: Maybe Fufu can join you, I know she's worried Fufu's

Mother: I'll get her

They both disappeared to the kitchen..

—

ARMAN

I

Today's session was very different, it carried a lot of emotions. Talking about it this time around created a stream of tears, I wasn't able to hold back..

Me: I feel very differently about it now than before, the fact that I was even pregnant with his twins it-

I tried to fight the tears back.. Me:

Why is this happening now?

Her: The memories of the sexual abuse always haunted you. You feel differently about them this time because you have experienced a different moment with someone and now you see consciously that what happened to you was cruel

I wiped my tears..

Me: Mongz is the best thing that has ever happened to me, even last night when I had that episode he didn't force the situation, he wasn't upset.. He was very worried about me

She nodded..

Me: How do I stop this?

Her: Some rape survivors start to find healing when their perpetrators acknowledge and apologize, to them it's a way of validating that what happened was never their fault.

Then they let go of the guilt that they might have been holding on to, the guilt of "Maybe I was the one who provoked him by wearing this and that or by going to his place" that happens mostly if the perpetrator was known to the victim. Then in other cases such as yours, the perpetrator might never even consider acknowledging what he has done. When we first started with the sessions, the impression I got from you about him was that he thinks that what he was doing was right. He didn't see it as taking advantage of you but he saw it as a mutual affair, of which it wasn't. Being a high profiled person that he is, he would go to great lengths in covering his tracks by somehow shifting the blame on you by any means. I remember when it happened to me, my healing came after I confronted my perpetrator. I didn't care if he was sorry or not but I wanted him to know that what he did was wrong, I wanted him to know that I was sober minded and I knew that what he was doing wasn't right. A traumatic experience is one that is solely dependent on the mind for healing, when it's lodged into your subconscious mind it is bound to show up at any time and unexpectedly. Healing is not forgetting what happened because you will never forget, but healing comes from remembering what happened and the pain weighs lighter than it did before. He will visit your mind with every sexual touch from anyone, because your mind has been programmed to knowing him only. Now it hurts mainly because someone else showed you a different side to it, a better one for that matter. You said that when you had that episode and the sexual moment seized, Mongz didn't force the situation further. At that instant it was an act of proving to you that your body is yours and he respects it, he

cannot violate any part of it when you have clearly not given him any consent. Pieces of your psychiatry are being put together, your brain is trying to shift from how it was programmed to thinking differently in an independent manner. I usually try out a certain technique with my patients before evaluating them for medication

Me: What is that?

Her: It depends on whether you want to be intimate or you want to sustain from intimacy until you're able to trust a male companion, but if we try the exercise I won't be the one to do it. I'll refer you to a sex therapist she has helped a lot of couples. If your boyfriend's schedule is fitting then I can book you an appointment for tomorrow, we will see how it will work out. How about that?

Me: Okay I think we should try it

Her: I'll call her

—

TASH

I heard someone ringing the door bell, I went to check who it was and it was a gentleman that I didn't recognize. I remembered Jojo's text and I had no doubt that it was the Detective..

Him: Good morning Mam'

Me: Good morning

Him: Is this the residence of Miss Nataschi Gobbler? Me:

Yes this is she

Him: I am Detective Nkambule, King Nkambule

Me: May I help you?

Him: I am here to ask you a few questions about Bonza

Me: I thought I was long cleared from all charges of that case

Him: I usually work with cold cases and investigations are now being carried out again on this case, I am a Detective assigned to the case

Me: I see

Him: May I please come in?

Me: Okay

He made his way in with another officer.. Him:

This is my colleague, Officer MthethwaMe:

Would you like something to drink?

Him: No thank you

Me: This way

We all walked to the lounge and sat down..

Him: If I believe correctly you confessed to murdering the lawyer?Me: Yes

I did

Him: Why?

Me: I haven't been quiet honest about everythingHim:

Why is that?

Me: I fear for my life Detective

Him: Is there someone threatening you?Me:

Yes... It's the deputy President

Him: I don't follow

Me: I have been Jojo's assistant for a very long time now, he literally trusts me with hislife. I have always had his best interests at heart and a while back I stumbled upon something

He took out a pen and a pad..

Me: It is no secret that Mr Ndarha and his Son never saw eye to eye, and apparently lateron I found out that Bonza was both Ndarha and Jojo's lawyer of which we never knew about. Now Detective there's no crime in Bonza having both Ndarha and Jojo as his clients but the crime starts when Bonza becomes Ndarha's filthy sidekick. See Bonza was working with Ndarha to bring Jojo down, it started with the awards when Jojo lost.It was all Bonza and Ndarha, then also the kidnapping of their servant it was all Ndarha

because the Servant was in a relationship with Jojo a very long time ago. After finding out all about this I never told Jojo about it I went and confronted Bonza, then Bonza promised to cut all ties with Ndarha if I don't tell Jojo about this because he feared that we might go public about it and his reputation would be tainted. I did tell Jojo about it and that night we had a meeting at his house, Bonza came clean and Jojo wasn't happy about the Betrayal. There was a physical altercation between them and then Bonza decided that he will drop Ndarha and also expose him for how dirty he is to prove his loyalty to Jojo. That night Bonza was meant to talk to Ndarha but unfortunately it didn't end well. See, Bonza sent me a message a few minutes after he left Jojo's place that he suspects Ndarha might have had him followed, he suspected that Ndarha already knew about this and he got to him. I still have the message I will show you

The room was quiet for a while..

Him: Still all of what you saying doesn't give out a reason on why you confessed to a crime that you didn't commit

Me: Detective when Mr Ndarha found out about what was happening he threatened us, he threatened us that if we go public with the information he was going to pin this whole thing on Jojo, so Jojo persisted and I just turned myself in knowing very well that I wasn't going to be found guilty and that the case would go cold after all how many politicians and People in Power get to pay for their sins? The law favours them in this country. They get away with almost everything

Him: I hear you Miss Gobbler but you seem to be making a lot of accusations against the Deputy President without proof

I got my phone..

Me: Proof number 1.. The text I was telling you about I retrieved the text and showed him..

He turned to the officer..

Him: Take this number so we can validate that indeed it belonged to the deceased Officer: Yes Sir

Me: With the Kidnapping you can ask the lady herself, her name is Armani I'm sure she will provide you with clearer details

He looked at me..

Him: When did you confront Mr Ndarha?

Me: Jojo and I went to his house, I can't remember very well when but you can ask MrsNdarha she saw me and also their Servant Armani did see me.. That's when I took the liberty to confront him

Him: How do I know you didn't go there to visit? Seeing that you two are datingMe: By then I was still his assistant

He kept on writing on the pad and then he looked at me..

Him: Thank you for your time Miss Gobbler, I will be checking all the information youhave given me and if it checks out, I will let you know

Me: Thank you Sir and I do hope that now he will finally pay for his sinsHim:

On my side I do hope you told me the truth, nothing but the truth

I raised up my hand..

Me: So help me God

He gave me one last look and then turned to his colleague..Him:

Let's go

I followed them so I can go and close the door.. Thank goodness that Jojo told me everything including Armani being kidnapped, I hope this story will lead him somewhereelse..

—

MONG

Z

Tsholo: Sign hereI

signed..

Her: And here

I signed again..

My phone rang, it was Armani..

Me: I have to take this

I put her on loudspeaker so that she could hear me talking to my assistant and get assurance that I am at the office..

Me: Sthandwa Sam'

Her: Hey love

Me: Done already?

Tsholo: Sign here too I

signed..

Armani: Yes I'm done

Me: That was quick

Armani: Ya she is referring me somewhere else and you will have to attend with me Me:

Where?

Armani: Sex therapist

Tsholo chuckled..

I got my phone and put her off the speaker.. Armani:

You still at the office?

Me: Yes but I'm almost finished.. Sex therapist?

Her: Ya sex therapist.. We going there tomorrow at 10am

Me: Okay just give me a few minutes and I'll come pick you up so we can talk more about this sex therapist

Her: I'll wait for you

Me: I'll be there now now

Her: Okay bye

Me: bye sweetheart

I put the phone down.. Tsholo:

That's all.. Thank you

Me: Okay

Tsholo: You never came across to me as someone who needs help in the bedroom?Me: Go back to your station

She laughed and walked away.. Just as I was about to leave, my Father walked in and closed the door.. He made his way to my desk..

He put both his hands on the armrest of the chair and gave me a serious look.. Him: Please tell me that you had nothing to do with the death of your ex girlfriend?

Me: I don't understand.. Why would I have something to do with it when I was told that she was dead

Him: Don't play smart with me Me: I

heard it was ruled as suicide

Him: Investigations are being carried out and I'm damn sure that it wasn't suicideMe: I did take her to the Mirage hotel but I didn't kill her

Him: Why did you even take her there in the first place?

Me: I needed closure and I got closure.. She didn't want me driving her back home so I called and Uber for her, I left first and she remained behind waiting for the Uber. I was surprised when I saw the news this morning, I didn't wanna say anything because Armani was around. She's already thinking that I'm cheating this was going to be another accusation

Him: I don't care about your relationship with Armani right now, what I care about is you going to a mental institution for a very long time.. You worked hard to be where you're right and I don't want you ruining your life over something so stupid

Me: The Coroner will prove what really happened to her, an Autopsy will determine the cause of death

Him: Mongezi Mabuza do you know that if they find out you were with her on the surveillance camera you will be the first and only suspect?

Me: It doesn't matter.. The same surveillance camera will prove that I left the hotel, I wasn't there when she jumped off

Him: So you believe that she killed herself?

Me: Yes I do.. Zeni wasn't happy that I tracked her down, she probably panicked and thought death was the only way out to be rid of me

Him: For your sake I hope what you telling me is trueMe: I

didn't do it.. I didn't kill her!

71

NOMFUNDO

I was glad to hear that everything went well, I mean my Father is a very difficult man to please It's good that he put my happiness first and also thought about the well-being of my unborn baby.. My Father and Mr Ndarha were in the lounge drinking whiskey, Jojo was all over the place and his mom was at the kitchen with me whilst my Mom had gone out to the bedroom giving us some space..

Nonts: Now I feel very bad that you were at my house the other time and I just ignored you

Me: It's okay (Smiling)

Her: The was a lot that was happening and my mind was everywhereMe: I did

notice that things were a bit tense but it's all forgotten now

Her: So tell me, how did you let my son go that he ended up with a white girl?I

chuckled..

Her: What happened between you two?

Me: He just woke up one day and decided that he didn't love me anymore. The honest truth is that he never loved me, Jojo would sle-

Her: He would what?

I wasn't sure if I should be telling her this or not...

Me: He was having sex with Tash right when I was sleeping upstairsHer:

What? What hold does this white girl have on my Son?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: Jojo is nothing without Tash, he is very much dependent on her. His whole life is wrapped around Tash's little finger. She's there for him, when he messes up she's there to clean up the mess. Their love for each other is very confusing also toxic if I may put it that way.. They make a mean team

I think it was hard for her to process what I've just said..

Me: Even though he was a shitty boyfriend, but at least he's going to make a good Father

Her: Now I'm scared for my Son's life. This white girl sounds..

Me: Unstable, and I don't want her anywhere near my Son. She practically confessed to a crime that she didn't commit, you can't get any crazier than that

Her: I don't know why he never tried to make it work with you. You beautiful, you come from a good family and you black

We laughed..

Her: I cannot wait until I meet my Grandchild

Me: I cannot wait for him to come too, pregnancy isn't that much fun Her: You

will be giving birth soon

She looked at the time..

Her: We should be leaving now.. I haven't seen Jojo Me:

He's outside on his phone

She sighed..

Her: The girlfriend?

Me: Yeap.. The girlfriend

I am not being petty or anything but, I'm a bit happy that Jojo's Mother doesn't really like Tash. It's good to know that she has my back on this because I really don't want Tash anywhere near my baby..

—

TASH

I was chilled on my couch reading one of my favorite books. Buttons and lace by Penelope Sky, a glass of sparkling wine was on my coffee table. I was very much caught up and I had sank in deeper on the chapter that I was reading, until my phone vibrated next to me. Not only did it disturb me but it also freaked me out, it was Jojo. I put the book upside down and answered his call..

Me: Jo..

Him: Did you get my text? Did he come?

Me: I did get your text, he did come Him:

And?

Me: I told him the truth, or our own version of the truth Him:

Did he buy it?

Me: We will see

I heard him exhaling..

Him: I don't want you and my Sister implicated on something that I fucked up on Me: We all

in this together, we helped you get rid of the body so.. We all guilty of something, just call your Sis and make sure her statement collaborates with mine, did you give out yours?

Him: No.. I refused to talk to him, he said he will be coming back later with a search warrant

Me: He should forget because he won't get anything at your place

Him: Ya here's the thing.. He is bringing the Forensics team with him and luminol

Me: He won't be given any search warrant, he won't be coming with no luminol he just wanted to scare you. He is setting you up, right now I won't be surprised if he is following you checking if you won't be stopping at some store and buying bleach. If he does come back later on he will be very much focused on the smell of bleach in your house and with that, it will validate to him that you were "Cleaning" the blood making sure that luminol doesn't detect it. If he is not following you-

I got up from the couch and went to the window.. Me:

He is watching my place

Him: I thought the case went cold

Me: Bonza was not just anyone remember? He was attached to you and your father I took a deep breath...

Me: Jo look.. I know that you and your Father are trying to fix things but right now it's either you or him, and if it's you(chuckle) You going to lose everything and Nomfundo is never going to let you have any relationship with your son

Him: I know what's at stake.. We stick to the plan Me:

Yes we stick to the plan

I heard someone calling him..

Him: I have to go, it's my Mom. We at Nomfundo's place I clenched my teeth..

Me: Okay

Him: I'll see you later.. I love you

Me: I love you too

I lowered my phone and went back to reading my book..

—

ARMAN

I

Mongz fetched me and we drove back to his place, he was awfully quiet which was unlike him. When we got home I decided to prepare some lunch for us, I kept on checking my phone since my Grandmother usually calls me around this time. I hate the fact that she has to walk all the way to the shop to make a call since reception at her place is bad. I had bought her a phone before I left and told her to ask Lwazi to teach her how to make calls.

I looked at my phone again and sighed..

Mongz: Expecting a call?

I looked at him, he was leaning against the fridge. I didn't even see him when he made his way in..

Me: Yes.. My Grandmother is supposed to call me todayHim:

How does she charge her phone?

Me: At the shop.. They charge R10He

nodded..

Me: Are you okay?

He looked at my hands..

Him: I need to talk to you

Me: About?

He made his way to me..

Him: How about we put sharp objects away for a secHe got

the knife from my hand and put it away..

Me: You scaring me

Him: Armani I..

Me: What?

Him: Remember when we were watching the news and they.. Uhm.. There was a case of a girl who leaped off the balcony at the Mirage hotel?

I slowly nodded..

He put his hand on my cheek..

Her: I know her.. She's my ex and I was with her at the hotel earlier on that day before she died

I removed his hand from my cheek and took a step back..Him:

Nothing happened sweetheart.. I swear

Me: Then what were you doing at that expensive brothel with her?Him: We

went there to talk

Me: You couldn't talk over the phone? At her a restaurant? Do you think I'm a fool?

Him: I know how it seems but.. I didn't sleep with her I swear

Me: I asked you if you were cheating on me and you said no.. You lied to me!!Tears started to form...

Him: I didn't lie to you.. Nothing happened, you have to believe meI blinked and the tears fell..

Him: Armani please..

He tried to touch me and I grabbed the wooden cutting board and hit him on the shoulder with it..

Me: Don't touch me!! (yelling)I

hit him again.. Repeatedly..

Me: Don't you ever touch me!! (yelling)

Him: Armani stop!

When I was about to hit him again, he blocked it and I hit him on the elbow. I heard a sound like something was cracking, he groaned in pain and then he retaliated and slapped me hard across the face. I let go of the board and it fell..

Him: When I tell you to stop, you better fucken stop!!!

I looked at him as he held his elbow, he clicked his tongue and walked away. I ran and climbed on his back and started scratching him on his face. He moved back to the wall and started hitting me against the wall until I fell, he turned and kicked me on my ribs. One kick was tense enough to make me scream very loud.. He kicked me a few times and then he put the sole of his shoe against my throat and pressed hard.. I tried to get his foot off but I couldn't, I couldn't even breath. He pressed harder and harder until I felt myself drifting away into a land of no return.. I slowly closed my eyes

—

XOLELW

A

The house was quiet. Master was sleeping and Mamezala was at the guest room reading her bible, I was in the lounge watching TV.. I took my phone and looked at it, a part of me wanted to call my Mother but another part of me didn't want...I finally dialed her number, it rang unanswered.

I canceled the call and threw the phone next to me, the honest truth is that I miss her. I miss her a lot..
5 minutes passed before she got back to me, I took a deep breath and answered..

Me: Ma

Her: XolelwaMe:

Hello Ma

Her: Ohhh Nana wam' kodwa.. I thought I was dreaming when I got your missed callMe: I did
call

Her: Unjani? Is everything going well? How is the baby? Kodwa XolelwaThe
call was turning emotional..

Me: I miss you Ma

Her: I miss you too

I couldn't hold back my cries..

Her: Sulila Nana.. (Don't cry)

I wiped my tears..

Her: I wanted to come and visit you but I was scared you wouldn't wanna see meMe: You
can come and visit

Her: When do you want me to come?

Me: I don't know.. When you free

Her: I can come tomorrow, pack a bag and stay with you for a whileMe:

Okay

Her: You will text me the directions

Me: I will

Her: Don't ever do that Sisi.. I was worried about youMe:

I'm okay

Her: You don't know how happy I am to hear your voiceMe:

I'm happy too

It was good hearing her voice again, it felt like a heavy burden had been lifted off from my shoulders..

—

ARMAN

I

I opened my eyes and my vision was a bit blurry at first, then when everything was clear I saw Mongz and his Father standing not that far from me. I slowly lifted my head up as his father made his way to me with a glass of water and what looked like painkillers.. He crouched in front of me, I was laid on the couch..

Her: Are you alright?

My body was sore, especially my left side..

Him: Drink these....

He got two pills..

Him: You will feel better

It all came back to me, I freaked out..Mr

Mabuza: Calm down

Me: He tried to kill me!

Mongz hung his head in shame..Mr

M: I know but calm down Me: I

want to go

Mr M: Okay go get your things I'll drive you home

He put the glass and the pills on the table, then he helped me to get up..Him: How are you feeling?

Me: I just want to get out of here

Him: Go get your things

I made my way upstairs but Mongz blocked my way, he had on an arm sling. I think I might've caused serious damage to his elbow..

Mr M: Don't even think about it Mongezi

He didn't wanna move, so his father came and pulled him aside..Mr M:

Let her go

Mongz: If she leaves she's never going to come backMr M:

I know but right now.. Let her go

I quickly made my way upstairs to get my things, without even looking at him..72

MONGZ

I tried to keep it all in but no matter how much I told myself that the damage done to my elbow will eventually seize after a few blocks of ice, the pain was unbearable. It was swollen, red, and I couldn't move nor stretch out my arm. It left me no choice but to go and consult. I was even lucky that our family Dr has an Xray machine, his surgery is very sophisticated and so is his equipment..

Him: You lucky to even still find me here, I was about to knock lock upMe: I

am lucky indeed

He looked at me through his glasses that were hanging at the far end of his nose..

Him: As I have said, it is a feature. Too much damage was done to the coronoid process, you lucky you didn't shatter the Ulna bone

Me: English please

Him: In English you going to need a minor surgery to correct the damage that was caused

Me: Will I be able to use my arm after the surgery?Him: I

believe so

I nodded..

Him: What happened?

I bit my lower lip in frustration..

Me: My girlfriend and I we got into a physical altercationHim:

Mongz you know better than to hit a woman

Me: She attacked me first with a wooden board, I tried to stop her but she kept on then I ended up beating her

Him: I'm against domestic violence against women but a woman who hits a man, that's just embarrassing

Me: I shouldn't have retaliated, I should've found a way to calm the situation

Him: Look! some girls are crazy, sometimes they need to be taught respect in a physical manner so they can stop thinking that they powerful. If a woman beats you once and you let her get away with it, she's going to do it again and again until uba yisiyoyo sendonda (until you become a weak man)

Me: It was not intentional. She's going through a lot currently so.. Him:

Umfazi oshaya indoda haisuka! (A woman that beats a man)He walked over to his desk..

Him: I would understand if she was in a situation where you attacked first and she was trying to defend herself, but her attacking first. Phela the damage caused to your elbow shows that she was repeatedly hitting you with that thing, and then the scratches on your face.. Hai Mongenzi!

Me: It still doesn't justify what I did too, I could've killed her

My Father knocked once on the already half opened door and then made his way in..Him: How is your elbow?

Dr: He's going to need a minor surgery

Dad: Is he going to be okay?

Dr: I believe so, I wanna write a referral letter. You will take it to the hospital and then they will set up a date for you

My Dad's phone rang..

Dad: Excuse me (Walking out)

Dr: In the meantime don't strain it, at least it's not your dominant hand. I'll give you some pain killers for pain and an ointment to massage it every night up until your surgery

Me: Thank you

The Dr and I ended up talking about random things, things that didn't include my love life and it's nightmares. He mainly asked me about my work and other things that weren't so important.. Dad walked back in, he was in a different state now...

Dad: Is he done? Can we go?

Dr: I still need to give him a few things

Me: Is everything okay Pops?

Dad: No.. That call was about your Brother

Me: What's wrong?

Dad: They had an accident at the boarding school

Me: What accident?

Dad: There was a fire

I got off the bed..

Me: What?

Dad: We need to go

Me: How did that happen? What started the fire?

Dad: I'm not sure but we have to go

Me: How is he?

Dad: Mongz I don't know! That's why I'm saying we should be on our way.. Let's go!

—

ARMAN

I

Mam'Gabi sat on the edge of the bed..

Her: You need to eat something I

cleared my throat..

Me: I'm not hungry

Her: Hai inzima le ndaba (This is a difficult matter)

I was hurt at what transpired between me and Mongz. One moment we happy, then the next moment we fighting so much so that we almost killed each other or rather he almost killed me..

Her: Armani I'm old and I understand that our ways are not like the modern ways when it comes to relationships, but..

She sighed..

Her: You don't hit a man. I'm not saying he was right by hitting you, all I'm saying is that no matter how angry you're do not resort to violence. Their pride and egos will never allow them to be hit by a woman, that's how they were raised and they will strike back

(Silence)

Her: I know we all have our limits Sisi kodwa you not a violent Person, are you sure that you not displacing your anger?

I sat up straight and looked at her..

Her: Since you started with your therapy it has ignited some anger deep inside of you but now you angry at someone who didn't hurt you like that.. Mongz is not the one who crushed you, Ndarha did

She was right about that, ever since I started opening up again about my past. I have never been the same..

Me: I don't know what came over me today

Her: How about you take a break from dating? Focus on yourself, your healing and the business that you been meaning to start? Maybe a break will do you good

Me: Maybe

Her: When violence is involved, the relationship becomes very toxic..

I don't know how I'm going to do this life thing without Mongz, he always had my back,

he was protective, loving and sweet. I don't wanna lose him but at the same time what happened between us is not healthy. He almost killed me and that scares me a lot, whatif we get into another physical altercation and then he cannot control himself and endsup killing me? I don't want that to happen..

Mam'G: Woza Sisi.. I'll dish up for you

I got out of bed while wiping my tears, she led the way to the kitchen and I followed..Her: Have you thought about the kind of business that you wanna start?

Me: Not yet

Her: Yabo.. That's something you need to focus on from now onWe heard a knock at the door, we looked at each other..

Me: Are you expecting anyone?

Her: Ngaleskhathi.. Cha! (at this time.. No)

Me: I'll get it

I went to open and the police were at our doorstep, the other one wasn't on uniformthough..

Him: Good evening

Me: Evening

Him: I don't know if I'm at the right place but.. I'm looking for Miss Armani.. Miss Armani Ngwanya?

Me: I am Armani

Him: Then I'm at the right place.. I am Detective Nkambule and this is constable Chauke, may we please come in?

Mam'G: Ubani Armani? (Who is it Armani)I

let them in..

Me: It's the Police

I don't know much about Detectives but the ones I've seen on TV they look old, this one on the other hand didn't look ancient and he was very handsome..

Detective: Sawubona Ma.. (Good evening)

Mam'G: Sawubona

Detective: Siyaxolisa ukutholeka la ekhaya ebusuku so, siphazamise isidlo sasebusuku(We apologize for just showing up announced at such an hour, disturbing your dinner)

Mam'G: Ayikho inkinga singanincenda? (There's no problem.. Can we help you)

And he has manners too, most detectives pull their weight around. I was very impressed by how respectful he was..

Him: I am here to get a statement from Miss NgwenyaMe:

Armani please

He smiled a little confirming to my plea..

Him: I am here to get a statement from Armani

Mam'G: What statement?

Him: About her kidnapping

All the fun and drooling at that instant vanished, fear started to kick in..

—

XOLELW

A

After that phone call my mood changed for the better, I even prepared dinner while singing..

Me: "Nothing really matters.. I don't really care, what nobody tell me I'm gonna be hereIts a matter of extreme importance, My first teenage love affair"

Master showed up from the passage, he was late today..He chuckled..

Him: Awusho vele uke waba nayo iTeenage love affair noma nje sewuyacula ngoba naku kuyaculwa emhlabeni? (Have you ever had a teenage love affair for real or you just singing for the sake of singing)

Master likes to tease me a lot, I don't even get offended anymore.. I sang again

Me: "Nothing really matters.. I don't really care what nobody tell me I'm gonna be here Its a matter of extreme importance, My first teenage love affair"

He laughed..

Him: uNdarha ekuphi? (Where was Ndarha)I

rolled my eyes..

Him: Why you so happy?

Me: Is it a sin to be happy?

Him: Phela bowukhala not so long ago then all a sudden sesiyacula, yini? Khona ibhari osoyincwasile njalo? (You were crying not long ago, now all of a sudden you singing, is there another guy you having a fling with)

I laughed at that comment...

Him: Kanti nex Skat, vele mayikhona indaba Mina ngokhahlela inja ibuyele eSPCA (Ifsomething like that exists, I'm kicking a dog back to SPCA)

I laughed out very loud..

Me: Heeeee! ave uFull of yourself (you full of yourself)

Him: Awww' sekak'fundise ne broken English? (he's got you on some broken English)I

laughed again and then he came and squeezed my cheeks..

Me: Stop it (laughing)

Him: Kungafiwa.. Manje futhi

I tried to get his hand off but it was a tight grip, which also made it difficult now for meto speak..

He kissed me and then let go..

Me: That really hurt

Him: For real now.. Zkhiphani? (What's up)

Me: My Mom is coming tomorrow for a visit

Him: Who called?

Me: I did

Him: That's good.. Ngiz'phethe ngawe (I'm proud of you)Me: It was good hearing her voice

Him: As long as you happy then ng'sharpMe:

Thank you (smiling)

Him: Manje uza nge G5? (she's coming with a G5)Me:

Uhm no.. She's actually going to be..

I coughed and cleared my throat..

Me: She's going to stay with us for a while

Him: Moss Kumnandi la, sishaya enye iB&B yamasimba (It's nice here, we running a serious B&B)

I kept quiet..

Him: My Aunt can also come yabo?

Me: Don't be like that

Him: Umeme bani futhi? Armani? (Did you also invite Armani)

(Silence)

Him: Where is she going to sleep? Because our current visitor is showing no signs of leaving anytime soon

Me: I.. I thought that maybe you can take the couch for a while, My mom can share abed with me

Him: Angizwa?

Me: Mamezala is going to leave after the church thing is over so it's only going to be for a few days sleeping on the couch

Him: I must take the couch? Kwami? In my own house?Me:

Please..

Him: Take the cou-(chuckle) sengijwayelwa kabi la

He made his way to the door.. I exhaled in defeat..

—

NDARH

A

We were watching the news and they were reporting on the fire that erupted at the boarding school. Nonts wanted to have a reaction, but she stopped herself as to not show that a part of her still cares for that bloody Mabuza..

Me: Isn't that the same boarding school where Mabuza's Son enrolled at? Her: Yes it

is

Approximately 10 students were reported dead so far, a few of them suffered severe burns and another bunch survived. They were still locating others students too. I took the glass of whiskey from the table hoping that he was in those students who died.. My phone beeped it was a text from the President which read:

"Prepare your black suit, we going to a funeral"

—

MONG

Z

My thoughts were disoriented when we arrived at the hospital, I had been catching up on the whole incident following every media outlet that covered the story on social media, right now we not even sure that Monde made it or not. We made our way in and walked straight to the reception, my father did all the talking as I waited for the feedback. My Mother's death ruined me, Monde's death will finish me.. Dad walked back to me..

Him: She says we should wait with the other Parents, most of the kids were brought here and they still busy with them, the Nurse will come with the list of the students who survived

Me: Monde is not dead, he can't be dead!!

saw tears in his eyes..

Him: This was no random fire Me:

You think someone set it up?

Him: Not someone.. It was Ndarha, I'm damn sure it's him

Me: Why would Ndarha do this?

He kept quiet..

Me: If Ndarha did this to Monde because of your affair with his wife I swear... You better pray my Brother made it! You and that bloody Ndarha better pray Monde's name is on the list of the students who survived or else..

73

ARMANI

Me: Who told you about the kidnapping because I didn't report it? Him: So the kidnapping did happen?

Me: Some other things are better left unsaid Detective, I didn't report it for a reason. For my own safety

Him: I assure you that nothing is going to happen to you Mam'Gabi looked at me and gave me a nod..

Me: It wasn't an actual kidnapping, it was staged Him:

What do you mean?

Me: My Mother was working for Ndarha and his family as their live in Servant, I was very young at that time. When she passed on I continued living with them since I had nowhere to go and then later on in my life I became their Servant, that's when Mr Ndarha

I took a deep breath..

Me: That's when Mr Ndarha had an interest in me and the sexual abuse started, then the physical abuse

They all kept quiet and let me continue..

Me: At one point he beat me so bad that he didn't know how we were going to explain my bruises to his family so he staged a kidnapping

Him: How did he do that? And did he have any help? I nodded..

Me: Yes.. His Lawyer Bonza helped him they actually took me down to his family house

in Soweto where his Sister lived and I was held hostage there, then he told everyone that I was kidnapped. They actually planned everything

Him: How did you get away if you did?

Me: I escaped, after my physical interaction with Bonza's Sister.. That's how I got to live here

He wrote on his Pad..

Me: Detective what good will it do? Because there is no evidence it's just going to be my word against his

Him: I will talk to Bonza's Sister, if she agrees to be a witness we might have a case Mam'G: He cannot keep on getting away with everything, something has to give

Detective: That's why I'm here to get the truth so I can build a case against him, hopefully a strong one

He stood up..

Him: Thank you for your time Armani, I will contact you and let you know about the case Me: Thank you very much

Mam'Gabi walked them to the door..

—

MONG

Z

Waiting has never been so hard, it weighed heavy on my soul knowing that my Brother might not be no more because of the mistake that my Father did by fooling around with Ndarha's wife. Monde is paying for something that has nothing to do with him..

I saw a Dr and two Nurses making their way to us, we all stood up and waited for them. One of the Nurses was holding a pad, probably that's the list of the students who made it...

Dr: Good evening and we apologize for keeping you waiting this long No one had the heart to say anything as we were all anxious...

Dr: I am very sorry for what happened and I want every parent present here to know that

we doing our out most best to help the kidsA

few Parents nodded..

Dr: With us we have a list of the learners that are admitted, learners who presented with mild to moderate burns and were able to provide us with their names. If your child's name is not on the list, it's either the child is in a critical state, the child has not been accounted for or in worst cases the child is no more

I swallowed when he said that..

He turned to the Nurse and the Nurse started calling out the names, and the ward that the child was admitted in.. We waited anxiously to hear Monde's name because now she was halfway through the list and with each name that was called out my heart sank lower and lower to my knees..

Nurse: And the last Learner that gave us his name is Monde Mabuza, he is in ward 6D

When I heard his name everything started to move in slow motion, I was overwhelmed by different emotions. Just to think that we almost lost him.. We quickly made our way to the elevator, my Father and I we haven't said any word to each other ever since he told me that Ndarha might be behind the fire

Even inside the elevator we exchanged no words, up until we got to the 6th floor..

We looked for Monde until we found him, he was sitting on the bed with an oxygen mask around his mouth and the Nurse was bandaging his arm, we made our way in and I went up to him. The initial plan was to hug him but I don't know how badly burnt he is I wouldn't wanna cause him any more pain...

I sat next to him on the bed..

Me: Hey buddy

He lowered the mask..

Him: Hey (coughing)

Nurse: All done

Dad: How bad are his burns?

Nurse: Only his arm was burnt

Me: Only his arm?

Nurse: Yes and then he inhaled a lot of smoke I

looked at Monde..

Him: I was outside when the fire started, I ran back to the room to fetch my phone that show I got burned. My long sleeve Pj top caught fire on my right hand and I struggled to take it off

I hugged him using my other hand, I don't know what I would've done if I lost him.. Dad: I'll be right back

He walked out..

Me: For how long are you guys going to keep him here?

Nurse: I will hear from the Dr but I'm sure the longest can be 4 days, the Dr wants to see if he can breathe on his own without having any chest pains

I nodded..

Nurse: I'll give you guys some privacy

Me: Thank you

She walked out and I fixed his mask..

Me: I can't believe you went back to get your phone, that was a dumb move. You could've got hurt pretty bad

Him: I wanted to call you and Dad in case I didn't make it That statement broke my heart a little..

Me: I'm glad you made it and you never going back there, we going to find you another school one that's going to be closer to home

Him: I'm not going back to boarding school anymore?

Me: No.. I'll personally drive you to school every morning, then Dad will pick you up Him: I liked boarding school

Me: I know but after what happened I think it's best you move back home He put the oxygen mask back on, then lowered it again..

Him: What happened to your arm and face?Me:

I got into a fight with Armani

Monde is a bit older now for me to be lying to him..

Him: You not supposed to fight with a girl or hit a girl, ain't that what you always told me?Me: I

know Buddy.. It was a messed up situation, you should never do it

I always talk to my Brother about such things so that he can grow up to be a better man than me. At least he was very young when our Mother passed on so it never affected him as badly as how it affected me. I have no doubt that his going to be good and be a better Person..

—

TASH

Jojo stopped by I don't even know why when I had told him that he shouldn't come, I didn't want the detective to get suspicious but then again we dating so we bound to see each other every now and then. The whole day it had just been me, my books, and my wine. I went even more harder on the wine when I had realized that he spent most of his day with Nomfundo. Yes I know that they having a baby together but then I am not so much happy with their closeness and now that the baby is going to be born soon I'm more scared that Nomfundo will matter more to him than I do. Let's be honest other than covering his tracks all the time what else do I bring to the table in this relationship?Nothing! I won't even be able to give him something so simple as a baby..

Me: You shouldn't have stopped by.. King might be suspicious

Him: We in a relationship, we obviously going to see each other at all times so he must just suck it in

Me: What do you want Jojo? I was actually going to bedHim: I

came to see how you were holding up

Me: I'm good

He looked at the empty wine bottle on the counter..Me:

How was your day with Nomfundo?

Him: I went there with my Parents to talk to her Parents

Me: How sweet.. I'm sure both Parents have agreed that you two should get marriedHim: What?

Me: You should leave.. I wanna go to bed

Him: How much wine did you have?

Me: It shouldn't concern you.. All I want you to do is leave Him:

There's nothing going on between me and NomfundoMe: Did I ask

if something was going on between you two?He looked at him..

Me: Leave!

He stood there and said nothing..

Me: Leave before your baby mama starts being dramatic! She already made rules aboutme not showing up at your place when she's around I'm sure the next rule that's comingis that you shouldn't come here anymore, and as always because you listen to her yougoing to-

He walked over and picked me up..

Me: What are you doing?

He put me over his shoulder and then threw me on the couch..Me:

What are you doing?

He sat me up straight and then removed my leggings, together with my underwear..[REMOVED]

-

MABUZ

A

I went outside and made a call to our informant, I thought by now he would've longcontacted the detective about the information that I had provided..

Him: Mabuza (sleepy voice)

Me: The was a fire at my Son's boarding school

Him: I heard about that.. I'm sorry, is your Son okay?

Me: He is okay but I'm sure that Ndarha would rather have him dead
Him: You think Ndarha is behind this?

Me: I don't think.. I know he is behind this

Him: He knows you betrayed him?

Me: No he doesn't.. This is about another situation

Him: If Ndarha can do this to his closest friends there's no telling what he can do to me, his biggest rivalry

Me: You and your Party have always wanted to win and trust me when I say you will never win whilst Ndarha is still out there. His party is always going to win and you will always remain number 2, so sad now because your runaup is gaining more followers. Soon you will be shifted to the 3rd position. Politics are a dangerous game, if you too scared then it's okay I'll give this information to someone else. Someone who will use it to their advantage

Him: No don't.. Honestly speaking I wanted to see if you were not playing me, now that I am convinced I will contact the Detective tomorrow morning

Me: You better do.. It's time that Ndarha's power and rule comes to an end, together with his friend the President!

—

DETECTIVE KING

I was disappointed to learn that the tech department couldn't get anything from the tape. The white girl's story seems to be checking out, even though I don't believe her. There's just too much loop holes to the story.. I was in my office going through the file that Minister Mabuza gave me about Ndarha, I was yearning to lock him up and throw away the key. This man is dirty to the core and he has too much scandals including trafficking girls from Kenya and selling them to other countries such as Mexico and Brazil that they can be sex slaves, he is involved in money laundering, embezzlement and fraud. Adding on Armani's kidnapping he will be facing serious jail time. If Ndarha and the President go down, this will be a good example to other politicians that just because they are in power it doesn't mean they will get away with everything..

MONGZ

I didn't go home, I decided to spend a night at the hospital just to make sure that Monde was safe and doing okay. Since the chair wasn't so comfortable I was up almost the whole time, busy checking him out and making sure that he was still breathing. In the morning my Father sent someone to drop off a few things for him, his toiletries, favourite Pjs and his Playstation 4. When he went to bath I tried connecting it for him, it was a bit difficult stretching my hand because of my elbow. Since the plasma Tv was high up the wall it needed both hands, but I tried my best until I was able to connect.. Hewalked back in with his toilet bag and a towel wrapped around his lower body..

Me: I connected the Playstation for you

Him: Thanks

He put his toilet bag on the bed and looked at me..

Me: You can get dressed so we can play fifa, you even lucky the hospital is allowing thisHim: Give me some privacy so I can change

Me: Monde I changed your diapers when you were young plus you going to need help,your arm remember?

Him: I will manage

Me: Monde..

Him: How would you feel if I invaded your privacy while you getting dressed?Me:

That's different

Him: How?

Debating with him about this is going to be useless..Me:

Fine I'll give you some privacy

My Dad walked in..

Him: Boys

He had takeaways with him..

Me: Let's give him some privacy he wants to get dressed
Dad: I am your Father Monde

Him: Still I need privacy

Dad: You only 11.. I don't even think you've reached Pu-Me:

Let's give him some privacy

We walked out.. Dad:

Private schools

Being mad at my Father is pointless, after this incident we really need to be a united front for the sake of Monde. Tension won't do him good..

Dad: The hospital allowed for him to play his games?

Me: Yes.. It will keep his mind from thinking a lot about what happened
Dad:

That's true

(Silence)

Dad: I want you to know that this Ndarha situation I'm handling it, let me do it my way. I find my way better because no one is going to get hurt

Me: I'll let you handle it your way, plus it's your mess

Him: And also I want you to know that I'll be ending things with Nontsikelelo
Me:

That's good to hear

Him: And I want you to stay away from Armani

Me: I had no intentions of doing anything to her, Since Monde is moving back home permanently I want it to be an environment that's going to be free from violence

Dad: I'm glad to hear that.. Should you and Armani decide to try again, Please go and seek professional help both of you

Me: I don't see us working out, my focus right now is on Monde, making sure that everything is well with him. I'm done with Armani and dating as a whole, for now

Him: That's good Son, concentrate on yourself, your company and Monde

As we were standing there and talking, we saw some Indian girl making her way to us. She was with a male companion that I assumed was her Father.. She was holding a potplant and she looked shy judging from how her eyes were glued to the floor when she got closer to us..

They both kept quiet and her Father poked her a little on the shoulder..Him: Go on

Her: Good morning

We greeted her back and that was the end of the conversation before it even begun..The father decided to lead the conversation..

Him: I apologize for that, my Daughter is a bit shyWe waited for them to introduce themselves..

Him: This is my Daughter Jaya, she is Monde's friend. When we heard about the fire she asked for me to drive her here so that she could come and see him, she was very worried

My Dad and I looked at each other..

Dad: That's very considerate of you young lady.. I am Mr Mabuza, Monde's Father. This is Mongenzi and he is Monde's big Brother

I stretched my hand out to them for a handshake but neither of them greeted me withone, instead the Father put his hands together and bowed his head a little..

I retracted my hand back..

Him: You can call me Khatri, it's my surname

We nodded.. The door opened and Monde walked out..Him:

I'm do-

He was surprised to see his friend, he quickly fixed his pj top..Me:

Need help with that?

Him: No I'm okay

He looked at his friend..

Monde: नमस्ते (Namaste)She

smiled a bit..

Her: Namaste (Hi) That

was unexpected..

Her: मने आग के बारे म सुना, मुझे मा कर (I heard about the fire, I'm sorry)

Monde: ध यवाद (Thank you)

She handed him the pot plant, I helped him to hold it and he gave me the "back off" look.

Her: This is for you. When I got it, it was broken I took care of it until it's roots became strong again

Monde: Thank you

Mr Khatri: The plant represents you and how courageous you areMonde: I'll

take care of it, I promise

Java: I will see you again next time

Monde smiled..

Her: अल वदा (Bye)

She smiled back at him..

Him: अल वदा (Bye)

They turned around and walked away, Monde walked back in. My Father and I looked at each other one last time and made our way in to his ward, it seems there's a lot that Monde has to explain to us, starting with how he knows the language..

—

TASH

Jojo spent the night at my place, we had a lot of sex last night and I was still feeling a bit sore. I took a bath and then decided to prepare breakfast for us, I had on my robe and sleepers.. As much as I wanted to brace this moment and our love but I can't help feel that Nomfundo is going to come between us.

He put his hand around my neck and kissed me on my cheek..Him: I

thought you would still be sleeping

I turned around and looked at him.. Me:

I'm not used to sleeping until lateHim:

How is the hangover?

He put on his t-shirt..

Me: I'll survive

Him: I was thinking that maybe tonight we can go over to my Parents place and havedinner with them? It's time they meet you

Me: You don't have to do that just because I complained about Nomfundo yesterdayHim: Clearly I didn't do my best last night if you still this cranky?

Me: Sex won't solve everything J..

Him: I'm trying my best here Tash.. What's wrong?Me:

Nothing is wrong.. I'm fine

Him: You not fine and honestly speaking I'm getting tired of this petty fights aboutNomfundo, why is she soo much of a threat to you?

I dated back to the day when I saw her crying on the pavement and he was thereconsoling her, they looked so convincing..

Me: She's not a threat to me.. I just don't like how she controls you at timesHim: You

will have to be more specific on the "controlling" part

Me: This thing rule of hers that I can't come over to your house when she's there is crazyHim: Not this again

Me: See that's your attitude towards this situation, you don't wanna hear how I feelabout it

Him: Nomfundo is not going to spend time at my place, if I wanna see the baby I'll go toher place

Me: I'm not stupid Jojo

Him: I think I should go

He kissed me on my cheek..

Him: I hope you do work on whatever it is that is eating you up right now He made his way to the door..

–

ARMAN

I

I woke up early to go and meet up with Khethi, we went out for breakfast..

Her: Catering is a big no.. Almost everyone is doing it plus it's included in society schemes and what not so it won't work that well

I scratched it out.. Me:

Then I don't know Her:

uSharp mara?

I put the pen down..

Me: I thought Mongz would've called by now but.. Her:

Have you tried calling him?

Me: No

Her: Yazi nawe you can call him?

Me: And say what? He almost killed me

Her: ihaba Armani (You exaggerating)

Me: You were not there

Her: Okay then don't call him

Me: The thought of him moving on breaks my heart already, I don't wanna lose him I love him a lot

Her: Both of you were wrong, Mina I say call him or go to his place and give him pussy..

When was the last time you had a dick up in you? You salty as hell I played with the pen..

Me: I'm not salty

She gave me a weird look while sipping her juice..Me:

Okay fine.. Maybe just a little

She took the salt from the table and started sprinkling it on her other hand..Her: This is you Mngani

I laughed..

Me: I don't know about sex solving our problems

Her: It will just put on something sexy uye Kubo then tomorrow call me all happy and smiling

Me: Hai that doesn't sound right, we had a big fight

Her: Okay then don't go there to fix things, go there to get fucked. You can't break up with him without knowing if he can.. You know, go and offload your salt Sisi

I laid back on the chair..

Her: Maybe you will even be able to think of a good business plan after that, when the salt is gone

She continued eating her breakfast..

Her: Don't worry.. Let me finish here then we will go to Edgars or Foschini, if you let him slip someone else will take him and treat him good

I started eating my breakfast too..

—

DETECTIVE KING

Me: I can't find my socks

Lihle: they in there

Me: No they not

She walked in..

Lihle: Let me see

She went through a few things in the drawer and then her hand came back with a pair of socks..

Her: If only they were a snake I

took them and kissed her.. Me:

Thank you

Her: What's wrong? You not yourself

Me: There's this case th-

Her: Ohw we bringing work stress home with us again? Me: It's

a big case

Her: It's always a big case I

pulled her closer to me..

Her: Today it's your day off and my day off, I don't want us talking about work My

cellphone rang.. I looked at it

Her: Don't even think about it

Me: Could be my Sister

I went and got it, then I looked at her..

Her: And?

Me: One second I

answered..

Me: Hello?

Voice: Is this Detective King?

Me: Yes.. Who is this?

Voice: This is Mr Mashaba the president of the UDA party, I was referred to you byMabuza

Me: Ohh yes I remember

Him: Is this a bad time?

Me: No not at all

Him: Can we meet up so we can discuss the case?Me:

Today?

Him: Only if you not busyI

looked at Lihle...

Me: I'm not busy.. We can meet up

Lihle rolled her eyes..

Her: Wow! I can't believe this

She walked out of the bedroom, I lowered the phone..Me:

Babe wai-

Mr Mashaba: Where can we meet Sir?I

sighed..

75

XOLELWA

I couldn't believe when my Mom showed up, I never thought that she was actually going to come. Seeing her again was the best thing that has ever happened to me in a very long time, and the hug took longer than anything I had imagined..

Her: Look at you, you look good

She wiped my tears...

Me: You look good too

I undoubtedly say that every girl needs her Mother. We go through a lot, and we face many challenges in life we need that motherly guidance and support..

I got her luggage bag for her and we made our way to the lounge, I was alone. Master and Mamezala had gone out. It was good seeing them trying to get along too..

Mom: This house is small but very beautiful
Me:

It is beautiful

Her: It shows that he is a responsible young man
Me:

He tries his best

Her: What has been happening with you? Did you get a job?

Me: Not yet.. I have decided to look for a job again when I'm on my second trimester, which I'll be entering very soon..

He put her hand on my tummy..

Her: How are we doing in there?

Me: We have our ups and downs but we doing okay

Her: I still can't believe that you going to be a mommy, you and Jojo are making me old now. I don't want them calling me "Grandmother"

I laughed..

Me: Ma just admit that you getting old

(Silence)

Me: How's everything at home? How is Dad?
Her

expression changed..

Her: He's okay

Me: Has he said anything about me?

Her: It doesn't matter baby. What matters is that I am here, Jojo and Xoliswa will always be there for you too. You have a good support system

Me: Ya I'm very grateful

She smiled..

Her: How about we go out and you can show me the mall

Me: Ahhh Ma, don't you even wanna rest?

Her: I didn't drive all the way here to rest all the time, come on.. Let's go do a bit of shopping

Me: On you right?

Her: On me

Me: Okay let me go put your luggage in the bedroom

—

ARMAN

I

I took a deep breath and rang the doorbell. I rang it again until someone opened, it was Mr Mabuza. He looked like he was on his way out..

Him: Armani?

Me: Good day Sir

Him: Can I help you?

He obviously was surprised to see me..Me:

Uhm.. Is Mongz around?

Him: Come in

I made my way in and then he closed the door..

Him: I thought that after what happened, you were going to stay away from him I didn't say anything..

Him: I discussed with you what Mongz has been through. Everyday it's a struggle for him, being normal doesn't come spontaneously for him as how it does to me and you, Mongz has to depend on medication to help him be normal. He might be on the medication for longer or even forever

Me: I understand Sir

Him: Then I think you also understand that your relationship with him is toxic, it seems like you guys are bringing out the worst f-

Me: That's not true Sir

He kept quiet and looked at me, stunned at how I spoke over him..

Me: I'm sorry sir but I love your son. Yes we had a bad moment and I regret acting violent in that situation. Despite how badly I carried myself it also showed that I was scared, scared of losing him. Whatever pills he might be on, whatever mental illness he is battling everyday doesn't change who he is. Mongz is very kind hearted, caring, loving and he cares for others more than he does for himself. I love him and I'm not going to give up on what we started, because I know what true love is now all because of him

He looked at me for a while..

Me: I apologize for disrespecting your son in his own home and I apologize that you had to witness that, but I promise that I will never carry myself in that manner again. I am even embarrassed at myself for how acted, it's not how a woman should act

(Silence)

Him: He's upstairs in his room

Me: Thank you Sir

Him: I'm going out for a while, I hope I won't be welcomed back by a dead body seeing that you two cannot control your tempers

Me: Nothing of that nature is going to happen Him:

I hope so

He made his way to the door while I made my way upstairs to his bedroom. It was so quiet, only my heart beating uncontrollably fast made noise.. I stood at his door and bit a nail, this was more nerve wrecking than I had anticipated. I took a deep breath and softly knocked at his door, I got no response. I knocked again but still nothing. I opened and made my way in, he was passed out on his bed. I walked up to the bed and looked at him peacefully sleeping. He only had his nikey shorts on and wasn't wearing any t- shirt. That's when I got to see the damage that I had done to his elbow, it was laying across his tummy. It was swollen and red, I just hope it's not broken. A part of me wanted to turn back and leave but then I can't give up without knowing if there's something left to fight for.. I took off my sandals, I dropped my bag on the floor and then laid next to him. He was only able to wake up when I laid my head on his chest..

Him: Armani?

He was still drunk by sleep..

Me: Hey

Him: What are you doing here?

Me: We will talk later when you conscious enough

He wrapped his other hand around me..

—

JOJO

I stopped by at Nomfundo's place. I wanted to know how she was doing seeing that she will be giving birth soon, just wanted to make sure that everything is okay..

Me: I still can't believe that there's a human in there

Her: It feels unreal until he starts moving

Me: Pity I have never felt him moving or kicking

Her: He has his moments

Me: How are you feeling about giving birth?

Her: Nervous.. I heard it's not a walk in the park

Me: Then we'll have to make it less scary for you, I'll check a few hospitals

Her: I'll be comfortable if my gynecologist could do the whole thing, we have a good relationship

Me: I'll call her and find out but we still need to check a few hospitals, I want you guys in one of the best private hospital

She put her hand on mine..

Her: We'll be fine, just make sure you there

Me: I wouldn't miss it for the world

As we both had our hands on her tummy, I felt him moving..

Me: Wait.. I didn't imagine that right?

Her: No

I ran my hand around and he moved again, Nomfundo laughed..Her: I

forgot that he doesn't like when you touch on this side

He just kept on moving and I can't really explain the feeling, but it was a bit unusual.Nomfundo held my hand..

Her: Stop it.. (Laughing)

Me: Is it painful when he does that?

Her: Not all the time.. It gets painful if he moves to this side and stays there for a longtime

Me: This is all so very fascinating

Her: Ya just know this is the first and the last baby you getting from meMe:

That's sad.. I thought you were going to give me more babies

Her: You crazy.. I'm sure Tash will pick up were I left offI

didn't say anything with regards to that statement..

Her: Or not.. Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine

She moved her hand down to her underwear..

Her: I have to go to the bathroom before I pee on myself moreMe: You urinated on yourself?

Her: Even sneezing is hard these days without wetting my underwear a little, mind youhe is compressing my bladder

I moved my hand there but she stopped me..Her:

Stop that's nasty

Me: Why aren't you wearing those things that you women put on?Her:

Panty liners?

Me: Yes whatever they called

Her: I do only when I'm going out, I find them very uncomfortable now I

helped her to get up..

Her: I'll be right back

She slowly made her way to the bathroom..

–

XOLELW

A

Mamezala and Master bumped into us when we were about to get into the car, we then made our way back to the house..

Mom: It's nice to meet you again Young man

Master: It's nice to meet you too.. Again

Mom: I still can't believe you came into my house bringing Armani back to us, then after that you got my Daughter pregnant

We all laughed..

Her: I still don't understand it

Mamezala: I never thought he could be this responsible when it came to a relationship Mom: I

thought we were going to start with marriage but then.. Asazi

My Mom knows how to run her mouth, so I didn't want her to say more things that were going to make this situation more awkward..

Me: We were actually going to the mall

She gave me a weird look..

Me: Mamezala you can join us.. If you don't mind Her:

I would love too

Mom: Obviously I hit a nerve.. Asambeni (let's go)

They walked out first..

Master: This is going to be interestingMe:

Don't start

He kissed me on my forehead with his hand on my tummy..Him:

See you guys later

Me: See you later

Him: Do you even have money on you? Or in your bank account?Me:

Mom is paying

Him: For a change.. My wallet is safe

Me: Ohhh please (rolling eyes)

Him: bye I love you

Me: I love you too

I went out to my Mom and Mamezala..

—

ARMAN

I

I turned and noticed that Mongz wasn't sleeping next to me anymore, I got my head up from the pillow and looked around. I got out of bed and made my way to the bathroom, I rinsed my head and my face. When I went back to the bedroom he made his way out from the walk in closet, with a t-shirt on his hand..

Me: Need help with that?

Him: I'm good

Me: Okay

I closed the door and leaned against it..

Him: What are you doing here?

I made my way to him and the smell of his shower gel met me halfway.. It was hard for me to say anything when those scratches on his face and his elbow reminded me of how I acted..

Me: Mongz I'm sorry

He put the t-shirt on his bed..

Me: I..I shouldn't have acted in that manner

Him: It's okay

His "okay" didn't say much though..

Me: I love you and I don't wanna lose you

Him: Armani I don't wanna hurt you, I still bite my tongue hard whenever I date back to that fight. Knowing that I almost killed you

Me: I have been through a lot and I'm going through a lot. I don't know how to deal with what happened and I don't know why it's bringing different emotions now. My life is starting to take a different turn and you made that possible, if it wasn't for you I wouldn't have met my Grandmother and my Father. You the only guy who has ever had true intentions with me.. When you told me what you told me, I guess I was too scared that I was going to lose to you. I'm trying to make something out of myself and I want you to be a part of my happiness, I'm sorry and I want us to work through this

(Silence)

Me: Please say something

Him: If we work through this.. Can we work through anything?I

nodded..

Him: Cause I have a couple of things to tell you and I don't know if we can work through them

Me: We can

He gave me a look of doubt..

Him: Okay.. You were right, I was cheating on you but not with Senzeni It was like a hot poker shoved down my throat..

Him: It was nothing serious though, just sexual pleasure. She's not exactly a prostitute but we been meeting up a few times to have sex, no strings attached

Me: Okay.. We can work through that I guess

Him: I did kill Senzeni

My heart stopped beating for a moment..

Him: Not physically but I had someone do it for me I

was very confused..

Him: She was my ex girlfriend and shit happened between us, so I was putting her out of her misery.

Her life was full of pain and painful memories, that's not the way to live.

Having to wake up everyday and be reminded of every bad thing that I did to her, I didn't want her to have that memory of me everyday of her life

It was getting hot in here, I unbuttoned my dress at the top..He

stretched out his hand to me..

Him: Can we work through that?

I looked at him and a lot was going through my mind, if he can do it to her then he can do it to me too..

Him: Can we work through it?

He looked at his hand and then he looked at the door.. The choice was mine indeed..I made my choice to him..

Me: We can work through it I

stretched out mine to his.. He

smiled a little..

Him: Then I hope you understand that you need to die with this secret Me:

Would you do the same to Me?

Him: No.. You part of my sanity, that would be the day they will lock me up at a mental institution and throw away the key

He put his hand on my cheek..

Him: I love you and I will not repeat the same mistakes of my past relationship with you.

I have changed from what I used to be sweetheart
Me: And the affair?

Him: It wasn't even an affair, whatever it was it's done right at this moment
I unbuttoned my dress further down..

Me: At least now I feel stupid having this underneath
He looked at my lingerie..

Him: As much as this is a turn on but.. I don't want you feeling uncomfortable like the last time

Me: Well we can try again and see

He lowered the left strap of my bra, and wet his thumb. He then rubbed it against my nipple..

Him: I have an idea, if this doesn't work then we can definitely start with the sex therapy
He kissed me on my neck...

Him: What do you say? Can we try out my idea?
Me:

Okay we can try and see

I unbuttoned the last few buttons of my dress and dropped it on the floor, he looked at me standing right in front of him in my new lace bra with its matching G string that Khethi helped me to pick out.. [REMOVED]

—

NDARH

A

I have been trying to get hold of the President but his phone rang unanswered. We were supposed to meet and talk about a few things. I tried him again and his wife picked up..

Her: Mr Ndarha (Sniffing)

I wasn't sure which wife picked up..

Me: Can I speak to David?

Her: He is not here

Me: Is everything okay?

Her: You haven't heard?

Me: heard what?

Someone rang the door bell..

Me: I'll call you back

I hung up and made my way to the door to open, to my surprise it was the police..Me: Can I help you gentlemen?

The one who was wearing private started talking.. Him:

Your security guards let us in without a hussleMe: I can see that

Him: I am Detective King and this is my team

I was more taken by the bullet proof vests that they were wearing..Me: Is there a problem Detective?

Him: We have a warrant of your arrest Mr Ndarha, if you could kindly assist us by turning around so they can cuff you

Me: There has to be a mistakeHe passed me the warrant..

Him: I'm afraid not.. We have already picked up your friend I'm sure you two can talk in the car about how you will get out of this one

Me: This is a mistake

Him: Mr Isaac Ndarha you're under arrest sir for human trafficking, money laundering, embezzlement, fraud, The kidnapping of Armani Ngwenya and the murder of Bonza Sithole.. You have the right to remain s-

Me: Shit!!

XOLELWA

2 MONTHS LATER

Since my Father's arrest I decided to move back home and be with my Mother in this difficult time. Things have been a bit difficult for us since they froze his accounts, the money on my Mother's account wasn't even enough to carry us, since she was getting money every month from my Father. I came to realize now in this difficult time, how expensive our lifestyle has been. We had to let go of a few maids, then we also let go of all our Chefs. We didn't have enough money to pay them all. I'm just thankful that my Father bought the house cash, otherwise we would be homeless.. I was halfway through my second trimester, I wasn't used to being far from Master anymore and a part of me lives in fear that he might cheat on me.. If I could be honest the Ndarha name or surname rather has been tainted very bad, so bad that no one wants anything to do with us. I have been looking for a job without any success, all our financial responsibilities are currently on Jojo's shoulders. Master was helping me out financially too, I even feel like I'm a burden to him..

Ma: Any luck?

I shook my head..

Me: No.. I have the qualifications, the experience I just think that my surname is the reason why I can't get hired

Ma: It's frustrating I won't lie, your father created a huge mess.. I don't even know what to do or who to turn to

I cleared my throat..

Me: Maybe we should just swallow our pride and contact Armani

Her: No..

Me: But..

Her: After everything that's happened, I doubt Armani would even want to look at us. She seems to be doing very well on her own, let's not disturb her peace

The intercom went off..

Her: I'll check who it is

She went to check..

Me: I still think that Arma-

Her: No Xolelwa.. That's not happening

(Silence)

Ma: It's Fufu and the baby

Nomfundo gave birth to an adorable healthy baby boy, they named him Lonwabo. Lonwabo Ndarha..

Me: I even forgot that they were coming

Ma: At least there's going to be some joy around here

My Mother loves her Grandson with all her heart, if it was up to her she would have them living with us.. She went and waited for them at the door until their car pulled up at the driveway..

Mom: And they home!!!!

She waited for them to get out of the car. I admire Fufu and her loyalty to our family. She calls every now to check up on us, unlike Tash who didn't even wanna come to dinner and meet us..

Fufu: Jojo couldn't pick us up so we drove

Mom: I'm happy you guys are here

She took the car seat from her..

Fufu: He is sleeping

Mom: He is always fast asleep when he gets here

Me: Maybe he enjoys traveling, the car might be comfortable for him Fufu: Hey

Aunty Xoks

Me: Hey.. Need help with the bags?

Fufu: Yes please

I got down from the chair..

Mom: You guys are going to sleep over?

Fufu: I thought that maybe it would be nice if we could visit for some few days, considering everything that's going on

Mom: Thank you so much.. I really needed to see him so he can brighten my moodShe took him out of the car seat..

Mom: Look at him peacefully sleeping

Me: He is getting big what are you feeding him?She laughed..

Her: Uyamsukela yazi

Mom: I'll go and put him downI turned to Fufu..

Me: Let's go get the bags

We walked out..

Her: How are you holding up?

Me: It's tough but..... We trying, if it wasn't for Jojo and Master I don't know what we were going to do

Her: All is going to be well

Me: I doubt.. The country has turned against us, everything is bad

Her: It is bad.. Jojo even stopped posting on Twitter and Instagram because People are attacking him, I hope this won't have any bad effect on his company. The new drama is supposed to start soon, I hope they respond well to it

Me: Me too..

Her: Or else my Son's legacy is going to go down the drainI exhaled..

Me: I don't know what to do anymoreShe put her arm around my shoulder..

Her: Don't stress much, it's not healthy for baby

Me: I just want everything to go back to normal, our lives are falling apart (Crying)She wiped my tears and hugged me..

Her: It's going to be okay, we going to get through this

–

ARMAN

I

I felt someone poking me on my shoulder, I paused the video and took off myearphones. It was my Grandmother..

Me: Makhulu

Her: Namanje usabuke yona leyo video? (Are you still watching that video)I kept quiet..

Her: Angeke ijike Mani.. Iyohlala injalo (It won't change Armani)

I cannot believe how things have changed for the better in my life within this period of two months. A friend of Mongz had a supermarket that was at the verge of closing because he was mismanaging his finances and couldn't afford a few things anymore including paying rent, So Mongz thought that it would be good for me to buy him out and then be the sole owner of the supermarket. The was hope that the supermarket wasgoing to make it seeing that it was inside a busy shopping mall. With all my fears and doubts I did buy him out with a lot of money and I became the owner of the supermarket.I used the money that my Father gave me and I also took a some from my savings and bought him out, then I used the rest to make a few changes and bought some of the stock that was needed. I know nothing about running a business and before I ran it down the drain, I decided to register for a part time business course that runs for a year, where you will be taught all that you need to know about running and managing a business. Khethi is one of my supervisors, she works along side with the previous supervisor so that she can learn a lot from her. I didn't fire the previous staff, it's betterhaving people who already know what they doing than starting afresh with new people.. So far I can say that I'm content with the turnaround of the supermarket and I am damn sure that it's going to keep on doing better and better..

I had moved out of Mam'Gabi's place, I went and got myself a place to stay in town andmy Father gave me his Nissan Hardbody double cab, said it would help me a lot. Not exactly my preference of a car but beggars can't be choosers, I can work with it while I'm still trying to make my supermarket a success, then when I'm well off I can get

myself a car that I've always wanted.. My Grandmother had come to visit me, she wanted to see my Mother's final resting place and I haven't forgotten time to take her there with my busy schedule, it's been a week now since she's been around and I pray this weekend I'll have to take her to the cemetery..

Things between me and Mongz have been okay but the Senzeni thing is starting to put a strain on our relationship. The hotel went and released the footage of Senzeni's last moments alive. The footage only showed them making their way in and to the reception, it also showed Mongz talking to the lady who was holding the font while Senzeni stood at a far distance from them. Basically the video ends there, it doesn't show them when they go to the hotel room. According to their policy, they respect the privacy of their clients so much that they can't install cameras inside the hotel rooms. Then after a while the video shows Mongz walking out of the hotel alone.. After that video was released to the public, Senzi's Mom took it upon herself to go to the media and speak ill of Mongz. She accused Mongz of the most horrible things that Senzeni's story went viral and Mongz was forced to prove his "Innocence". He took a lie detector test and passed it, I still don't know how he passed it. The coroner's report proved that Senzeni died from severe head trauma and internal bleeding, which resulted from her fall. She fell head first, the coroner went to confirm that there's no way she could've survived the fall. Still her Mother kept on pushing saying Mongz might have bribed the Coroner, Another one was brought into the picture and he said the same thing too. Mongz was not there when Senzeni leaped off from the balcony, the surveillance camera showed him leaving before Zeni made that fatal fall and he drove straight to see me after leaving the hotel. He has a perfect alibi to fool everyone, I would also believe it had he not told me the truth. This proves to me how dangerous Mongz is, he literally pulled off a Perfect murder..

Grams: Uyazi Armani ngalendlela oyibheka ngayo le video zonke izinsuku, kubonakalngathi kukhona okwaziyo (You know Armani the way you go through the video every now and then, it shows that you know something)

This whole Senzeni saga has made my Grandmother and my Father to dislike Mongz, despite all that he has done for me. I am the only thing that reminds them of my Mother and on several occasions they tell me that it would break their hearts pretty bad if something could happen to me, something that fate didn't intend (untimely death). They believe that Mongz killed Senzeni judging from what her Mother has been telling the media about Mongz..

I took my bag and car keys..

Me: I will see you later Makhulu

Her: Sowukwatile njalo usukhuluma elaba mhlophe? (Are you that mad)

Yes I was mad, actually I am mad. I am mad at the fact that an innocent girl lost her life, I know the truth and I can't do anything about it. It's sad witnessing her Mother's pain, No Parent should ever go through something like that..

—

NATASH

A

[MEDIA BRIEFING]

Journalist: Politicians are known to cater to their children financially, how do we know that your Production company wasn't funded by your Father?

Jojo: I'm glad you asked that question.. My Father has been a deputy president for a while now and if he was the one who funded my Production company then I would've started it sooner. I was gonna start it right after I was done with high school instead of wasting my time by taking on small roles and saving up, mind you I didn't just become a Producer overnight. I was first a struggling actor, who saved up every penny to start this production

Cameras were flashing, Mics were stretched out, iPhones were recording, it was just a messy media frenzy.. Jojo was giving out a statement for the first time since his Father's arrest. Initially he wasn't going to say anything but Ndarha's mistakes or sins, were starting to affect Jojo's company..

Jojo: My relationship with Ndarha has never been a nice one. We weren't close, I hated him and for years I had cut him off until recently...

Journo 2: What about the kidnapping of your ex girlfriend? When did it happen? Why did your Father kidnap her?

Journo 3: Was it a love affair gone wrong?

Journo 2: Or was it a love triangle?

Journo 3: Was both Father and Son in love with a Servant's Daughter?

I knew they were going to ask about Armani, I just didn't know their questions were going to be this direct. Jojo was speechless, I turned the Mic to me..

Me: I think we have given you guys our side of the story, We have been transparent and honest. Unfortunately the briefing ends here

They started to complain and kept on asking more questions, the security went to them and escorted them out. I followed Jojo to his office, he was clearly upset.. I closed the door..

Him: Why did you tell the Detective about Armani?

Me: Your undying love for your old flame is very admirable, but I had to do what I had to do to keep you out of jail!

Him: She doesn't deserve to go through this

Me: I know and it's sad that she's caught in the middle of this mess but that had to be done

He walked over to get the bottle of water.. Him:

Do you think this is going to blow over?

Me: Armani has given you permission to turn her life story into another hit local drama. With all this publicity behind Ndarha's scandal it will be a hit. People want to know more, People want details. Already they suspecting a love triangle why not give them what they want?

He gulped down the water..

Me: Take this opportunity and use it to your advantage

—

NDARH

A

I helped him to sit down..

Me: Are you okay?

He slowly nodded..

I looked around until I saw Rama, I waved at him and he made his way to us..Me: Are your pain killers finished?

President: No, but they not helping anymore

Me: The antiseptic?

He shook his head..

Rama: Is everything okay?

Me: No.. The President is in pain

Rama: Where are his pain killers?

Me: They not working anymore.. He needs medical intervention

Rama: That's not happening

I sat down next to the president..

Me: This is messed up

I looked at the general and his crew, they also looked at us..

Me: Something has to be done with him and his People
Rama spat on the ground..

Rama: What can be done?

Me: Who was the general before him?

Rama: That one is history.. In times like this I wish Shadow was here then the 27s would be put in their place

Me: Who is Shadow?

Rama: Some..

The President coughed up blood..

President: I can't anymore.. The pain is too much

Rama: Let me see

Rama checked his wound and he discovered that it was infected..
Rama: Fuck it! It's infected

Me: He needs medical help.. I'm calling the Guard

I stood up and made my way to the guard, I saw the General and his crew walking closetoo. I stopped and looked at the line that was drawn in the middle.. I stepped back and they did too, this place was hell. Worse we have been denied bail, and the date of our trial has not been set as yet.. The President was stabbed 3 days ago, he was used as part of someone's initiation from the 27s. See we weren't sharing the same cell, he was with the 27s and I was with the 28s. He is denied medical help and I doubt that he's going to make it, I don't think he will be able to stand trial if he doesn't get help soon..

–

MONG

Z

"Journo 2: What about the kidnapping of your ex girlfriend? When did it happen? Why did your Father kidnap her?"

Journo 3: Was there a love affair there?"

Journo 2: Or was it a love triangle?"

Journo 3: Was both Father and Son in love with a Servant's Daughter?"I

rewinded again.....

"Journo 2: What about the kidnapping of your ex girlfriend? When did it happen? Why did your Father kidnap her?"

Journo 3: Was there a love affair there?"

Journo 2: Or was it a love triangle?"

Journo 3: Was both Father and Son in love with a Servant's Daughter?"

I rewinded again and then I heard a knock at the door, I paused the video..Me:

Come in

My PI made his way in..

Him: Hey man

I closed my laptop..

Me: Hey

Him: You good?"

Me: I'd like to think so

He sat down..

Me: What brings you down here?

Him: I haven't received my payment for you know "taking care" of Senzeni?

Me: I didn't want to transfer it into your account, it was going to be suspicious.. I have it with me in cash

I got up from my chair and went to get the small bag and gave it to him..Him:

Thank you

I sat down again..

Me: No thank you for everything.. And thank you for the pills that calmed down my nerves during the lie detector test

Him: The lie detector test was to just seal everythingMe:

Indeed

Him: You don't seem like a Person who is relieved?Me: I

am..

Him: I know that you and I we not exactly friends but..Me:

Things between me and Armani aren't really good Him:

Because of this whole Senzeni Saga?

I nodded..

Him: Do you regret telling her the truth?

Me: Not really.. I had to tell her because if I didn't tell her and she found out on socialmedia about this, she was going to blow up

Him: Ya.. I understand

(Silence)

Me: I don't think she seems me the same way as before or even wants a future with me anymore

Him: Why you say that?

Me: Before this whole drama things were perfect between us, she trusted me and all.. Even with our sex life, it was either the withdrawal method or a morning after pill. All of a sudden she started asking me to use a condom

Him: She thinks you cheating?

Me: No.. More like she doesn't want to have a baby by me, not that I wanted us to have a baby now but..

Him: I get what you saying but.. Senzeni was your past right? Why didn't you just leave her it's not like she was a threat to your current relationship

Me: It was either Armani or Senzeni. I knew there wouldn't be any future between me and Senzeni considering how things ended between us, but then I wasn't going to live my life freely knowing that she's out there cause I would've kept on going back to her and that was going to ruin my relationship with Armani as they both held a special place in my heart

Him: I understand Man.. Just give her time, she will come around, if she wanted to rat you out then she would've long said something about this

Me: I do hope she comes around, we have come very far for her to just give up on us now, this is the last hiccup that we are going to encounter.. I just want her to put this behind us and forget about it

77

JOJO

I was on a video call with Nomfundo, I wanted to see Lonwabo but as always he was sleeping..

Me: You should've called and reminded me, I would've picked you guys up than you driving

Her: With everything that's going on, I didn't wanna stress or burden you

Me: For real Nomfundo you should've called, I would've dropped everything. You not in a good state to drive

Her: Jojo I'm fine.. I'm really doing well

Nomfundo wanted a natural birth but because of minor complications that could'nt be achieved, so she was forced to go under (C-section). Her road to recovery has been steep, I remember she would call me in the early hours of morning crying that she can'teven do the simplest thing ever and that is bathing the baby, that was a day after she had given birth. She wanted to do everything on her own without the midwife and her Mother helping her. She wanted to take care of our baby on her own..

Her: Plus a Mercedes is very comfortable

Me: I was even thinking of changing it for you to a G-wagon, a bullet proof one Her:

That's going to be very expensive and why would we need a bullet proof car?Me: With everything that's been happening I want you guys safe at all times

Her: You overreacting... Nothing is going to happen to us, what you need to do is to focus on your next project. That's how you going to redeem yourself and your fans arestill with you they love your work

Me: With Armani being dragged into the mud, I don't know if I should still run with herstory

Her: It is bad that the media is dragging her name into the mud, she's doing well forherself she doesn't need all this drama

When Fufu and Armani met each other they just hit it off from the beginning, closely observing their newly found friendship you would swear that they've known each otherfor a while now..

Her: I'll call her later and see how she's holding up

Me: Tash says we should run the story, she believes it's going to be the biggest thing inlocal drama

Her: As much as I don't like Tash but she's right, Armani's story is going to be big and ifshe's still comfortable with it then you should run it

Me: I'll see

Her: Have you visited your Father after everything that's been happening?Me: No..

He has called me a few times to come and see him but-

Her: Maybe you should go and see him

Me: For what? He ruined the whole entire family, now being a Ndarha feels like the biggest curse ever

Her: Don't say that... You should go and see him and hear his side of the story, I'm not saying what he did was right but Prison is a very cruel place. Seeing a familiar face might do him good

Me: Fine.. I'll go and see him later

Her: Okay.. We'll see you later too

Me: Alright be good

Her: Bye

Me: I love you guys

Her: I'm sure Lonwabo loves you too

Me: Ohhh I see what you did there Her:

bye (Laughing)

Me: Bye

Nomfundo and I we have become very close since the birth of our Son. I enjoy spending time with them, they bring me unexplainable peace and joy.. It's a pity that things didn't work out for us.. Tash made her way in, I'm glad it was after the video call because she would've started a fight about it. Tash gets on my nerves lately, she is very insouciant, we spend most of our time fighting. Being with her now is an emotional drag, our relationship is no longer nice anymore..

Her: I need you to sign here for me I

took the document from her..

Her: How about we go out for dinner later?

Me: Can't do.. Nomfundo and Lonwabo are around Her:

Ohw..

Me: Yeah they visiting my Mom and Sister, we going to have a family dinner later on Her: Am I forbidden?

Me: You can come, only if you won't start any drama. I don't want drama around my Son
Her: So now I'm not good enough to be around your son?

Me: See this is the damn drama that I'm talking about!
I handed the document back to her..

Me: I'm going out for a while, I'll be back later
Her: ohw

Me: I'll see you later

Her: Later it is I guess

–

DETECTIVE KING

Captain: And?

Me: Nothing yet.. There's no trace of any offshore account
Him: So they don't have an offshore account?

Me: I'm not sure, if they do have one then they haven't made a move yet

Him: We need to make sure that we on them and their accomplices 24/7, this is a verybig case and we don't wanna lose the ball

Me: Yes Sir

Him: Speaking of losing the ball.. That woman is here
Me:

Again?

Him: I think you should talk to her or she won't stop coming
Me: I guess so

Him: Congratulations Detective, now everyone wants you to handle their cases
Me: I am flattered

He laughed as I made my way out of the office to the reception, I saw her sitting on oneof the benches. She was wearing a black dress, she had on a black doek and black

boots. She comes here almost every week asking to speak to me, I have been avoiding her but I guess she doesn't really get the message

I made my way to her..

Me: Mrs Mthethwa?

She looked at me..

Her: Detective Nkambule?

I extended my hand to her..

Me: Nice to meet you

Her: Thank you very much for agreeing to see me I sat next to her..

Me: You welcome

She was holding a picture of her Daughter

Her: I knew that at some point you would agree to talk to me Me: It has been busy

Her: The case with the President and the Deputy president is a big one.. I don't blame you (Silence)

Me: Is that your Daughter? Her:

Yes.. This is my Daughter She handed me the picture..

Her: Look at her.. She was full of life, she wouldn't have killed herself

Me: I believe this is an old picture of her, before she was diagnosed with depression?

Her: I know how it looks like but my Daughter would never commit suicide, me and her have been through a lot together after her Father's death. She wouldn't have left me alone in so much pain

Me: Mrs Mthethwa I know that it's difficult to accept the passing of your Daughter but..

All evidence leads to her committing suicide

Her: I believe that I'm speaking to the best Detective, I don't care what everyone else is saying but Senzeni didn't kill herself. Her ex boyfriend did it, he killed my baby

Me: He took a lie detector test and he passed. He wasn't present when your Daughter leaped off that balcony he was with his current girlfriend she also gave out a statement and the tape proves it that she jumped approximately after an hour of him leaving. We had the tech team check the tape and it wasn't tampered with

She shook her head..

Me: I know how difficult it is to believe that-

Her: Why would my Daughter go to the most expensive hotel just to kill herself?

Me: Maybe something he said pushed her to do what she did.. I'm truly sorry and I wish there was something I could do for you but there isn't, I can't lock him up. He is innocent

Her: I know that he has everyone fooled. In my whole religious life I never thought that I could see the devil in a human form, until this boy came into my Daughter's life. He charmed his way into her life only to ruin her. It was very difficult for my Daughter to move on from what happened but she did.. She worked hard on putting her life back together after he had destroyed it. He once ran her over with his car and she survived, why didn't she kill herself then? Why not also attempt suicide after her Father passed on? Why would she commit suicide now that her life was starting to make sense again?

She took her picture from me..

Her: A child should outlive her Parents, A parent should never have to bury her child(Silence)

Her: When I had to identify her body...

She closed her eyes and exhaled..

Her: Her skull had cracked open. Traces of her brain tissue could be seen on the ground mixed with blood. Her eyes retained blood in them and her nose was bleeding too. I carry this picture every day to remind myself of how beautiful she was because I don't want to remember her how she looked when she was laying there on the ground dead.

She died a painful death, he finally killed her. He might have not done it himself but he had an accomplice

I swallowed trying to process everything..

Me: The staff that was on duty was questioned, they all took a lie detector test and they passed it. Even if I could pull a few strings and we do take it as a homicide case unfortunately you won't win. I checked his record and he has been doing well, prior to what happened between him and your Daughter he seems to have a hold on his life. He hasn't had any scandals after that. His lawyer will definitely say your Daughter was a trigger that sent him back, he would ask why she agreed to go with him to the hotel. On the other hand she was stalking his girlfriend, I don't wanna lie to you but you would lose in court...

I sighed..

Me: The best thing to do now is to just honour your Daughter's memory, cherish all those wonderful and happy moments that you two shared together.. I'm so sorry that I can't help you

When I said that she let it all out, she didn't hold any tear back..

—

ARMAN

I

Khethi came and stood next to me..

Her: Please sign here for me so we can start setting up for the items that are on sale I signed for her..

Her: Are you alright?

Me: I'm fine

Her: That's not true

(Silence)

Her: Yilento ka Mongz futhi? (Is this about Mongz) Me: I just don't know why I attract bad guys

Her: Huh?

Me: First it was Ndarha and now it's Mongz

Her: Ayi uMongz akafani nje naloya njandini (Mongz is nothing like that Dog)I

looked at her..

Her: uNdarha yilento abayibiza ngokuthi yi psychopath (Ndarha is a psychopath)Me: No

Ndarha is a sociopath and Mongz is a psychopath

Her: ukhona yini umehluko kanti? (Is there a difference)

Me: A sociopath knows that what they doing is wrong but they do it anyway then a psychopath is....

Her: Is?

Me: Let's just say Mongz has his own demons too

Her: Kodwa Armani it was proven njena ukuthi he didn't kill her, sekafela ukuthi mhlambe vele ulale naye lapha eMirage (His being crucified for possibly having sex with her at that hotel)

Me: Come to think of it now that you also say it, it makes sense. What kind of talking is done at a brothel?

Her: Mina I'm just thinking ukuthi she wanted more out of the situation, maybe a relationship again? uMongz refused and then she killed herself. He might have ended the sex affair, whatever it is that they were doing. We talking about someone who was stalking you remember? And I think her Mom is now lying about everything because they couldn't get Mongz

Me: Hai Khethi uyathetha Sana (You talk too much)

Her: Just let it go. He did a mistake but at least he came back to you and he was honest about it, do you know how difficult it is to find a good man these days?

Me: Poor Me

Her: Put on your big girl panties, this is life my dear.. Kusemhlabeni la

—

JOJO

Seeing my Father in a prison outfit was very unusual, seeing him under someone's authority was unbelievable. The powerful Ndarha having his life decided for him was

something I never thought I would witness.

Him: When I heard that I had a visitor, I couldn't believe itMe:

Why am I here?

Him: Jojo I didn't kill Bonza

Me: Same way that you were using him to ruin me?Him:

I know that I have done a lot of bad things-

Me: Tell me something, if he was still alive would you still be using him to bring medown?

Him: It's no secret that our relationship is rocky but..He

looked around..

Him: I'm not going to sit here and confess my sins busy speaking on how much I regret what I did, that won't help me with anything. I'm still going to wake up tomorrow lockedup

Me: So you don't regret anything?

Him: The only thing I regret is hurting my family. I've heard that the country is cruel towards you guys

Me: Things are not exactly a piece of chocolate cake

Him: I understand.. That's why I kept money for the whole family, for situations like thisMe: What do you mean?

He lowered his voice..

Him: I have an offshore account. I can't really access it because the authorities are on a lookout for anything tied to me. That's why I want you to access it, for you, your mother and your sisters. It's a lot of money and it can take you guys a long way up until all this mess blows over.. I'm going to give you a name and phone numbers, you will contact this person and he will know what to do. I long told him about you

Me: Wait.. What are you saying?

Him: I can't use that money on myself, It won't do me any good because the people who

are in charge of my case play by the rules. The only thing I am hoping for is a lesser sentence and the possibility of Parole, in the meantime I will use a bit of that money to buy this Prison. I need it to be under my rule until I get out of here

This was a surprise..

Him: I need a favour from you. The President got stabbed and he is in a bad shape. They're refusing for him to seek medical attention so I will have to bribe a few guards for the president to get help so he will be able to stand trial.. I need you to borrow me some money that I can depend on, until you are able to access the offshore account.. Please.

SEASON FINALE

–

78

XOLELWA

Later on Nomfundo volunteered to prepare dinner for everyone while I babysat baby Lonwabo. My Mom wasn't going to join us for dinner, she went out to meet a friend.

I was in the lounge watching TV when Xols and Lolitha walked in, Baby Lons was laying next to me on the couch. I like how quiet he is, he would only cry if he is thirsty or hungry. He is not a troublesome baby..

Me: I didn't know that you guys were going to join us!

stood up and hugged Lolitha..

Xols: Jojo called and invited us

Loli: Oh my word you getting big

Me: Ya she is growing

Loli: Or maybe you carrying twins?

Me: It's only one baby trust me Loli:

She's going to be big

She moved on to baby Lons..

Xols: How have you been?

She hugged me..

Me: I've been good and you?

Xols: I'm good

I sat down...

Xols sat on the coffee table..

Xols: How is the baby?

Me: The baby is fine, I'm going to the Dr tomorrow. For my checkup Xols:

That's good.. Should I come?

Me: No.. Master doesn't really like you and I don't want drama Xols: I

don't care because I don't like him too, I'm just coming to-Me: Rather not

Xols: What I don't understand is that, you came with me into this world but you always sideling me

I exhaled..

Loli: Just let it go Tiger, It makes all the sense in the world for her to go with him. He is the Father of her baby remember?

Xols: Yeah whatever

She got up and walked out..

Loli: Don't mind her

Me: I swear Xols is going to make me go into premature labour Loli:

Don't focus much on her, she has always been full of shit Me: With

everything that's going on she's the least of my worries

—

ARMAN

I

When we were talking about Senzeni this other time Mongz hinted where she lived, and

right now I should be home home but I found myself standing at her door step. I don't know what I was doing here, is my conscience going against me?..

The door was opened by her Mother, she was just as how she appeared in that video.

She held the door and looked at me, I looked at her not knowing what to say. Exactly what do I say to a woman that's hurting this much?..

Her: Good evening

Me: Good evening

She waited for me to probably introduce myself and state my reason of coming here. Me: I'm sorry, I shouldn't have come here

I turned and walked away..

Her: Wait!

I stopped..

Her: Please come in

I turned again and looked at her..

Her: Come in

I made my way into the house with her leading. She led me straight into the living. Her:

Have a sit

I sat down..

Her house was very clean and I liked her furniture..

Me: I'm sorry.. I shouldn't have come, I don't know why I'm here A moment passed without her saying anything..

Her: You here because you know that he did it

Does she know who I am?

Her: I once saw a picture of you together, Zeni showed me. She saw it on Facebook.. I didn't know what to say..

Her: Everyone believes that my Daughter killed herself, Senzeni would never kill herself in that manner

Me: I'm sure right now you think I'm evil, being with a man who killed your Daughter She shook her head..

Her: I never understood why my Daughter kept on going back to him even though the signs were there, I then realized what type of Person he was. He was and is still the devil in a flesh.. So no, I don't find you at fault for being with him

I let out a sigh..

Her: I admire your courage for coming here though it was a grave risk. Trust me, he knows that you here

Me: What happened between them? Why did he snap?

Her: Mongezi's love comes with an obsession. He will eliminate anything and everyone who stands in his way of being with the woman that he claims to love. I remember my Sister went missing and we couldn't find her, but Mongezi went to great lengths and found her for us. I thought then that my Daughter was truly blessed, he literally put her first in everything

This woman truly knows who Mongezi is, even with me he found my family for me..

Me: He is no different from an addiction, his love feels good but in all honesty it's toxic. I'm scared that he will snap some day and kill me too, It could've been me in Senzeni's place

Her: If that happens to you then my Daughter's death would mean nothing. I don't know how you feel about him but, you need to get out before it's too late. If he had changed, if he was stable again then he wouldn't have had my Daughter killed!. You need to get out while you still can

—

MASTE

R

I had a few days off so I decided to go and visit my Aunt.. Her:

Yazi I feel sorry for the Ndarha family

I ignored her..

Her: Phela they not used to living an ordinary life, Everything was over the top with them I still ignored her..

Her: Hau Master.. Ikhona inkinga? (Is there a problem)

Me: Iyang'dina lento ka Xolelwa (This issue with Xolelwa irritates me)

Her: Kanjani manje? Her family is going through a lot.. When last did you talk to her? Me: I think 2 days ago, I'll see her tomorrow when I take her to the Dr

Her: Niyalwa yini? (Are you two fighting)

Me: No.. Her Parents are going through a lot, she's not going through a lot. Akang'hluliu Xolelwa, she just went back home to stress herself and put my baby's life in danger

Her: You need to understand something, Xolelwa's Mother has a habit of drinking when she's going through something

Me: That's none of our business, A parent is the one that's supposed to worry about her kids not the other way around

Her: Not all Parents are like that Master.. Xolelwa loves her Mother and she wants to be there for her. Don't be too harsh on her

Me: She needs to get her priorities straight, the baby is supposed to be our first priority

Her: Still don't be hard on her, she's going through a lot and she just needs you to be there for her without contributing to her stress

—

NONTSIKELELE

O

Mabuza and I went out for dinner, the restaurant had us dine in a private area just the two of us. With everything that's happening it would be somehow if we were to be seen in public together, I'm glad that he

Asked for us to dine in private..

Me: Thank you for this.. I needed to be out and get some fresh air Him: You welcome

I was having an apple juice and he was having whiskey..

Him: How are you holding up?

Me: It's difficult but I'm hanging in there.. I need to be strong for the kidsHe
nodded..

Me: Jojo is the one who is currently helping us financially, I know he has a lot of moneyand he
really doesn't mind but.. I don't want him to carry all our financial problems onhis shoulders

Him: I can help you out financially if you want

Me: That's nice but thank you.. I just need to find somethingHim:

Well if you change your mind, give me a ring

I smiled and extended my hand to his..Me:

This is very nice

He retracted his hand back..

Him: I actually brought you out here so that we could talkMe:

Sounds serious

Him: It is serious

I laid back on my chair.. Him:

Nonts we can't do thisMe:

What do you mean?

Him: This.. Us.. We can't go on anymore

Me: If Ndarha is the-

Him: It's not him.. This should've never happened in the first placeMe:

Don't do this...

Him: I'm sorry

He stood up..

Him: I hope that you and your family get through everything.. I'm truly sorry

He made his way to the door..

—

MONG

Z

Monde: And I win again!

Me: Ya that's enough playing for the dayI

put the joystick on the table..

Me: You need to go and do your homework

Him: I need to eat first

Me: Maria was off today, maybe you can order something Him:

When is Armani going to visit again? She cooks nice foodMe: I don't

know, she's very busy

Him: I'll go and order something then

I took my phone and tried Armani again, her phone was off.. I looked at the time, sheshould be home by now

I put my phone on the couch next to me and thought for a while, when a notificationdisturbed me.. I checked and it was my PI..

"She was at Zeni's place"I

called him..

Me: I got your text

Him: She just got home, she was at Senzeni's placeMe:

Are you sure about that?

Him: Yes

Me: So much for dying with the secret

Him: So what's the next step?

Me: Are your guys available?

Him: Yes why?

Me: It's going to be an unfortunate house break in

Tonight?

Me: Yes

Him: Armani is going to be the target?

Me: No.. Her Grandmother is the target

I made my way upstairs to my bedroom..

Him: We will wait for your go ahead

Me: Okay

Him: Cool

He hung up. I threw my phone on the bed and went to get my medication..

—

MRS MTHETHWA

I was looking at the photo album. I was going through her pictures when she was still a baby up until now, when she met her untimely death. My Sister brought me a plate of food..

Me: Ngiyabonga kodwa angilambile (Thank you but I'm not hungry)Her:

You need to eat something Sisi

Me: I don't have an appetite

Her: Ngizokubeka ku microwave (I'll put it in the microwave)Me:

Ngiyabonga (Thank you)

I'm very thankful that my Sister is here with me, I can't imagine being alone right now..She came back..

Her: Can I discuss something with you?I

closed the photo album...

Me: Okay

Her: An old friend mentioned something to me

Me: Something like?

Her: His wife was brutally killed a long time ago and he knew who the killer was. Just like Senzeni's case the killer got away with it, until the guy went to see some woman who helped him a lot

Me: Helped him how?

Her: She took him to the wife's grave, she talked to her and then poured the soil from her graveyard into some water and told him to make the killer drink the water

Me: And then?

Him: The spirit of his wife haunted him, she haunted her killer until he confessed

Me: Let me guess, you want us to go and see the woman?

She nodded..

Her: The Police are failing us Sisi.. If we don't do it he is going to get away with it, and another girl might pay with her life. Let Zeni's death mean something

I took a deep breath..

Me: When can she see us?

Her: We will go tomorrow morning

Me: I hope it's going to work, I want him to confess that he is responsible for Zeni's death!

79

ARMANI

I couldn't sleep. I kept on tossing and turning with a lot on my mind to think about. I got my phone under my pillow and checked the time, it was 2am in the morning. I sighed and put it back under my pillow, I then laid on my back and stared at the ceiling while asking myself a few questions and answering them too on my own. I love Mongz a lot, but I hate the type of Person that he is. I had tried to call him back when I got home but he wasn't picking up, I don't know if he was mad or what.. As I was lost deep in my

thoughts I heard a little sound, like the door was being tampered with. I always leave the keys on the door to make it difficult for someone to access the key hole. I decided to let it go maybe it's just my imagination, after all this is a gated community that has a low number of break ins. Things only started to get real when I heard the keys falling, I got up and listened carefully.. I might call the cops only to find that it's my Grandmother, she does wake up every now and then in the morning and make herself a cup of tea. I listened again and it was quiet, so I decided to get my phone and got out of bed to go check what was happening.. I made sure to be as quiet as possible busy tip toing, and when I was at the passage I heard two male voices whispering..

Voice1: iliphi ikamera? (Which bedroom is it)

Voice2: Eyy Ntwana angazi.. Kanti kunama kamera ayingaphi? (I don't know how many bedrooms they have)

I quickly went back to my bedroom when I heard the voices nearing, I locked the door and that alerted them...

Voice2: Uzwile? (Did you hear that)

I then tried to call for help, but the 112 emergency number came with a lot of shit. They kept on asking me endless questions and the two culprits started to bang on my door which scared me to death..

Voice2: Ntwana she's calling the cops asivaye (She's calling the cops let's go)

Voice: Ungazoba yisididi wena, mele senze le job (Don't be stupid, we have to pull this off)

I hung up and called Mongz, his phone rang until it sent me straight to voicemail... Me:

(panicking) Please answer your phone someone is in my place and... And.. And.. Voice 2: Kick the door down!!

They started to kick the door down until it opened, and I dropped my phone on the carpet. They switched on the light and stood there while looking at me..

Me: Please ningathatha nomayini (You can take anything that you want) Voice 2:

Ntwana asambe (let's go)

I didn't see who they were because they had on ski masks..

Voice1: Wuye lo? (Is it her)

Voice 2: Angazi ntwana kanti you didn't get the instructions right?

They kept on arguing with each other and I bent down to get my phone, I quickly dialed the security downstairs. I don't know why my alarm didn't go off, we probably forgot to activate it...

Security: Hello?

Me: There's someone in my place, block 4 number 809

Voice1: Uyahlanya wena? Ucabanga ukuthi wenzani? (Are you mad, what do you think you doing)

I heard my Grandmother calling out..

Her: Armani?

Me: Gogo buyela ekamereni! (go back to your bedroom)

Voice 2: Ntwana asambe before beza labantu (let's go before these people come)

I thought that since I called the security, they would get scared and leave right away. Just when I was dialing Jojo's number I heard the gun going off. I looked at the leader and he had the gun aimed at me, the first time he had missed but the second and 3rd time he put the bullets through me. I heard my Grandmother screaming and her rushing in as I went down. They quickly made their way out while knocking her down in the process...

—

NOMFUND

O

I heard Jojo's phone ringing in the guest room. I wouldn't call it the guest room anymore since they made adjustments to accommodate me and Lonwabo. What used to be the closet, they turned it into a mini nursery.. I got out of bed and the light in the nursery was on, I put on my sleepers and went to check what was happening. Jojo was passed out on the nursery chair with Baby Lonwabo on his chest, it was an admirable moment. I made my way to them and gently got Lonwabo from him, he opened his eyes..

Me: I don't want you to drop him (whispering)

Jojo: What time is it? (Whispering)

Me: I'm not sure

I put him back on his crib, he was fast asleep while sucking his pacifier. Jojo got up from the chair..

Him: He was crying

I gave him a weird look..

Me: And you heard him all the way from your room while I didn't hear him, and I'm just next door

Him: You were sleeping, you didn't even hear me coming in

Me: Nice try Jojo, I breastfed him at 12am. If he woke up again I would've heard him

Him: clearly you didn't

Me: Don't wake him up when he's sleeping

Him: I didn't wake him up.. I just came in and held him he hardly even opened his eyes I looked at him..

Me: Your phone was ringing

Him: Who would call at this time?

Me: An insecure girlfriend maybe?

He chuckled and went to get his phone while I followed him. He checked it out..

Him: It's Armani

Me: That's weird.. He

called her back..

Him: She's not picking up

Me: Maybe her phone called you by mistake

Him: Yaa maybe

Me: You should get some rest

Him: I'm not sleepy

Me: You were passed out on the nursery chairHim:

Now I'm not sleepy

Me: Is everything okay?

Him: Why?

Me: Usually when you have insomnia it means something is bothering youHim: You still remember that? (Smiling)

Me: Yes I do

He tapped his phone against the palm of his hand..Me:

Wanna talk about it?

Him: No it's okay.. Get some rest

Me: Okay... Good night

Him: Night

—

NDARH

A

The next morning we woke up early as usual, we made our beds and then went to shower.

I have been here for approximately two months now, and I still haven't gotten used to this lifestyle. When we were done, we went to have breakfast. Things are very difficult here especially since the 27s are running this prison. They making life difficult for us.

I looked at the cook as he looked at me, he literally didn't put anything in my bowl..Him: Move

Rama pushed me forward and we went to our table and sat down. I looked at the general, he was sitting on top of the table with his feet balancing on the bench that he was supposed to be sitting on. I looked at them and I didn't see the President with them

Me: Something is wrong

Rama: What's wrong is that we won't have breakfast today

Me: Where is the President?

Rama: Maybe he's still sick Me:

No.. Wait here I'm comingI made

my way to the general..Rama:

What are you doing?

I stood in front of him and his goons stood up. He looked at the guards and then looked at his goons, they then sat down..

Him: Do you have a death wish or something?He

buried his spoon in the soft porridge..

Me: Where is he?

Him: I own him.. He is my bitch and I can do whatever I want with himRama

made his way to us..

General: Do we have a problem here Rama?

Rama: We don't

General: Good!

He got down from the table and hit me with his bowl on my chest..Him:

Enjoy

The bowl fell and they made their way out..

Me: I don't know much about gangs up in here but...

I unbuttoned my jump suit and tied the sleeves around my waist..Me: We

need to take him out.. Soon!

—

MRS MTHETHWA

Just as how we spoke last night, my Sister and I went to consult with that woman she had told me about last night. I wasn't very sure about this but it was worth a try..

She welcomed us in, lucky for us she didn't have any clients as yet.. She took us to her consulting room where I saw candles, they were red&white. I also saw 2 litre bottles of water, a grass mat and on the small table she had a Bible. I wasn't very sure what she was, and I didn't know how she worked.. We sat on the grass mat as she walked in with a basin, she placed it right in front of us. She then went out to get some candles, they were yellow in colour and she lit them up nicely placing them around the basin..

She took one of bottles and poured the water inside the basin, she was wearing all white with red beads across her chest.. She checked her setting and then realized that an incense was missing, she got it and set it on fire. The smoke made me cough a little..

Her: Uze la ngendaba yentombazana yakho? (You here because of your daughter) Me: Yebo

(Yes)

She ran her hand in the water that was in the basin..

Her: Ingane yakho ehambe la emhlabeni ngendlela ebuhlungu (Your Daughter who passed on in a very brutal matter)

Me: Yebo (Yes)

Her: Ngicela ukuthi ubheke la emanzini (please look into the water) I did

so..

Me: Ukhona la? (Is she is around)

Her: uhlala enawe (she is always with you) I

didn't see anything in the water..

Me: I don't see anything in the water Her:

qhubeka ubheke (continue looking) My

sister put her hand on my back..

Her: Ngalenga uMoya wakhe uhlukana nomzimba wakhe, ube kade ecabanga ngawe (When her soul departed from her body, you were the only thing that was on her mind)

I looked at her..

Her: Ngicela ungasusi amehlo akho kulawo manzi (Don't move your eyes from the water)

I stared at the water again..

Her: Ushone ethukile, ethukele wena (she was fearful when she died)Me:

Ngoba? (why)

Her: Ngoba ebengafuni ukuthi uzwe lobuhlungu obuzwayo manje (Because she didn't want you to feel the pain that you feeling right now)

I felt some hot feeling on my chest..

Her: Njalo ebusuku mowuhleli ubheke iTv then uzwa ngathi khona umuntu obambe ihandle yomnyango ofuna ukuvula, kusuke kuwuye (Every night when you watching TV in the living room and then you hear someone tempering with the door handle, that's her)How could she know that?

Her: Usuka ezile azokulalisa, yiko mowulele ebusuku uthi mhlambe uyajika uzwe kusinda ezinyaweni zakho. Kusuke kuwuyena olele ezinyaweni zakho (She comes everynight to visit you. That's why when you try to turn and feel some heaviness on your legs,that's her. At that time she would laying on your feet)

Tears streamed down and poured in the basin as she continued, what she was saying was very true...

Her: bekumele aziveze kodwa akafuni, ngoba kuye ufuna umkhubule ngale ndlela ebengayo hayi ngendlela eshone ngayo (She was supposed to show herself to you, but she you to remember her how she was and not how she died)

She paused...

Her: uthi kimi manje tshela umamami ukuthi izindla zombulali wami zazibanda kakhulu, not because bekubanda kodwa ngoba lento bekayenza kimi bekubonisa ukuthi kdala ayenza. Uthethe imiphefumulo eminingi (she is telling me to tell you that the person who killed her, his hands were very cold. They weren't cold because the environment was cold, but it was because he has done this a lot of times)

Me: Ohh kodwa Senzeni (Crying)

Her: uthi Mama bengazi ukuthi ngalelo langa bengeke ngibuye, uMongezi bekayongibulalisa (She is saying that she knew she wasn't going to come back that day, she knew that Mongezi was going to have her killed)

My sister was now crying with me..

Me: Why?? Why?? Why?? (Crying)

Her: uthi when that man walked in I already knew what was going to happen, even though he was wearing the sfatt uniform but deep down I knew that he had bad intentions. I begged Mongz, I cried and all he did was to just kiss me through my tears and bid me farewell he had the audacity to even utter the words "I love you sweetheart"

It was hard to listen to her..

Her: uthi yena he did love me but in his own sick and twisted way, that's why his love couldn't allow me to live freely without him in my life.. I wish I held on until help arrived, I wish I held on just for you but I couldn't, the Angel of death told me that my body is crushed to the point where it won't be able to carry my soul anymore. He saw it fit to relieve me from the pains that I was feeling by extracting my soul from my body

I believed everything that she was saying, it was like Zeni was next to her guiding her through on what she should say..

80

MRS MTHETHWA

We later on went to my Daughter's grave she carried a bit of that water, that was in the basin in a small bottle. The aim was to mix that water together with a bit of soil from Zeni's grave. All I want is for my Daughter to get the justice that she deserves, maybe the police cannot help us but that doesn't matter anymore. I want to hear him saying it that he killed her, I want him to confess and that will be enough for me. I hate that the rich always get away with everything, I hope that Mongz won't get away with this. He has to pay for what he has done!!!

Woman: Senzeni sesifikile endaweni yakho yokugcina, ngino mawakho noMamncane. Ubonile ubuhlungu abadlule kubo, manje sebayacela ke ukuthi uzilwele. (Senzeni we have arrived at your resting place, I am with your Mother and Aunty. You have witnessed the pain that they have been through, they are now asking that you fight for yourself

She took the red soil from her grave and poured it in the bottle, then she shook the bottle..

Her: Uma sowucedile umamakho uzoqala aphole entlizweni, kanti nawe uzokhona ukuya ko khokho bakho. Lamanzi ahlange ne nezinyembezi zika Nina, makube yiwo ayokukhumbuza ubuhlungu abuzwayo. Konke akucelayo uMa wakho ukuthi uMongeziaze avume ngomlomo wakhe ukuthi wuye okwenze nje (when you're done, your Mother

will find healing. You will also be able to move on to your ancestors. This water is mixed with your Mother's tears, let her tears remind you of the pain that she is experiencing. All that she asks for, is for you to haunt him until he confesses that he is the one who did this to you)

She gave me the water..

Me: Ngingakhona ukumfakela mhlambe Ku drink yakhe? (Can I also spike his drink with this water)

Her: Yebo ungamfakela wona Ku drink, plus mixing them with tea will be much better as he won't spot the soil (Yes you can)

Me: Ngiyabonga.. Ngibonga kakhulu (Thank you.. Thank you very much)

—

TASH

Tebza: Here you go

Me: Thank you Her:

You welcome

Me: Thank you for coming too

Her: It's a pleasure

I picked up the cup and drank..

Her: You not a heavy wine drinker.. What's happening? Me:

Jojo and I.. We not working anymore

Her: What are you talking about? Wasn't he the one begging you not so long ago? Me: That was before the baby came along

Her: What does the baby have to do with everything? Me:

Nomfundo is using the baby to get back with him Her: Are you sure?

Me: Very sure.. Can you believe that I'm not allowed to visit him when the baby and

Nomfundo are there?

Her: That's insane, you a part of his life Nomfundo has to find common ground with you
Me: I'm going to lose him.. After everything that I've done for him, I'm going to lose him
Her: Don't talk like that

Me: Do you even know that he really killed Bonza?

Her: What? (Shocked)

Me: He did

Her: Wait a minute.. We moving too fast here, let's slow down a bit
Me:

Jojo killed Bonza and we pinned it on his Father

Her: Tash!!

Me: I know.. How can I be so stupid right?

Her: I.. I know you love Jojo but you can't keep this from the Police

Me: I was involved.. I helped him to get rid of the body, if I go report now I will have to implicate myself too

Her: This is big

Me: I don't even think the Police will believe me, now they will see me as this crazy person. I don't have anything against him anymore.. I feel like he used me as always

Her: Jojo is a jerk ass! A big jerk ass! Me:

He should've let me skip the country I shook

my head..

Me: I'm such a fool.. I should've never let him in again with all his "I love you" lies
Her:

Don't do this to yourself

Me: I gave him my love, my loyalty, my body, my soul but still... It was never enough
She came and hugged me..

Her: Nomfundo just gave him a baby and everything changed, she won him.. That's all it

took.. A baby

Her: I'm really sorry Tash

I don't know how I'm going to get through this pain..

–

MONG

Z

I received a missed call from Armani and a voice mail. My mind convinced me that her Grandmother was no more, maybe that's why she called at around 2:15, she probably was scared.. I decided to go to her place and see what was happening but unfortunately I got a different story from the security guards, Armani was the one who got shot in the early hours of the morning. I was confused because my PI and I planned this whole thing perfectly, so I don't understand why he would instruct his People to go for Armani instead of the old hag...

I drove straight to the hospital after hearing the news and at the reception, I spotted her Grandmother. I made my way to her.. She was sitting on the bench with a styrofoam cup in her hands, she was holding it a bit tight...

I stood in front of her and waited for her to look at me but she didn't, she was looking down..

Me: Ma..

She raised her head and looked at me..Me:

Bathi unjani? (How is she)

She didn't say anything..

Me: Beng-

Her: Awamukelekile la (You not welcome here)How

can I not be welcome at a hospital?

Her: Ngicela ukuthi uhambe (Please leave)

Me: Khona mhlambe engikwenzile kuMa? (Is there something I did to offend you)

Her: ungasathane uqobo lwakhe, Ngeke ngamangala ukuthi wuwe owenze lokhu kuye (You're the devil in a flesh, I wouldn't be surprised to find out that you behind this)

Me: How can I be behind this? Why would I hurt someone that I love?Her:

Yey!!!

She got up..

Her: Ungalokothi nje uthinte indaba ka love (Don't you dare touch the word love)She was mad..

Her: Ubalale intombi yakho yakdala manje ufuna ukubulala uMzukulu wam' (You killed your ex girlfriend, now you wanna kill my Grandchild too)

Me: Anginacala Ma, Ubufakazi buphumile ukuthi angibandakanyeki ekufeni kukaSenzeni (I am innocent, evidence proved that I'm innocent)

Her: Anginandaba nobufakazi! Noma kungathiwani, wena uyibulalile ingane yabantu (I don't care about the evidence, you did kill that poor child)

The was no convincing this woman..

Her: ukusukela namhlanje angifuni ukukubona eduze koMzukulu wami uyezwa? (From today I never wanna see you anywhere near my Granddaughter do you hear me?)

Me: Ngiyezwa Ma (Yes I hear you)

Her: Hamba la! (leave)

I didn't say more I made my way out..

—

XOLELW

A

I was happy to know that my baby is doing well, after all the stress and everything I can't afford to lose her. Master was in a mood of his own, when we were at the Dr's office he was very quiet. Now we having lunch, he is still quiet..

Me: It was good hearing her heartbeat againHim:

*Silence *

Me: Master

He looked at me..

Me: What's wrong?

Him: What do you mean?

Me: You have been in a very bad mood today

Him: When are you coming back home?

Me: We talked about this

Him: Ifike ihluphe lapho ke (The problem lies there)Me: I

don't wanna fight

Him: We never spoke about anything Xolelwa, you packed up and leftMe: My

Mother needed me

Him: Kanti unangakhi umamakho? (How old is your Mother)Me:

Maybe you should take me home

Him: I don't have a problem with that because you always run away from arguments.. I'lltake you home!

I got my bag...

–

MRS MTHETHWA

After this whole consulting thing I wasted no time, I drove straight to his office. MySister waited in the car while I went in..

I made my way to the receptionist..Me:

Good day

Her: Good day Mam'

Me: How are you?

Her: I'm.. I'm good and you?

Me: I'm well

(Silence)

Me: I take it you know who I am

She nodded..

Her: I saw your video trending on Twitter,I'm so sorry for your lossMe:

Thank you.. Is Mongezi around?

Her: No Mam'

Me: When is he coming back?

Her: I can call him for you and find out

Me: Yes please.. I'll be in his office

I started walking to his office..

Her: I'm sorry.. You can't go in thereI

stopped..

Me: You calling him aren't you? So I'll wait in his office

Her: You will have to sit here at the reception

Me: Call him Dear, and tell him I'm waiting for him in his office.. Do bring me a cup of tea when you done with the call.. Thank you

I didn't hear her saying anything as I made my way to his office. I needed to act fast before she storms in here and orders me out. I spotted water on the small table right by the window, I quickly made my way there.

I took out the bottle and shook it, then I poured the water in there and checked if the soil was evident. The soil was evident but only if you look close enough you could actually see it..

I then went back and sat down, she walked in after a few minutes with the tea..Her:

Unfortunately his phone is off

Me: That's sadI

got up..

Me: He was the last person to see my Daughter alive, I wanted him to tell me about that

day

She didn't say anything..

Me: Thank you for your kindness my dear I

made my way out..

Her: You welcome

Me: I'll come back some other time

Her: Yes Mam'

—

NDARH

A

I was very worried about the President, I haven't seen him today and I couldn't help but wonder if he was okay..

Me: Why is it that the 28s are not dangerous?

Rama: We used to be until our General lost his position, then the 27s took the throne. What's the use of fighting each other? We need to be united and come up with a plan of how we can get our power back

I stood up straight and threw the spade on the ground..

Him: I know you worried about the President and I'm not gonna lie to you, the worst might have happened to him

I walked over and got the bottle of water, then I opened it and poured water all over my face.. It was damn hot..

Me: I will have to think of something, we need to run this Prison for our own safety before he comes for us too

—

MONG

Z

I was beyond pissed, how can he be so careless?? I passed my assistant Kholofelo as if like she didn't exist with my phone next to my ear..

Her: Sir..

Me: Not now..

Her: But..

Me: I said not now!

I got to my office and closed the door..

My P.I's phone just rang unanswered, I canceled the call and put the phone on the table. I walked over to have a glass of water while loosening my tie..

I gulped down the first glass, and then poured again. This time around when I raised the glass again I noticed what looked like soil in the water, I put the glass back down..

Me: Kholo!!!! (yelling)

She made her way in..

Her: Sir?

Me: My water has dust

Her: That's impossible..

Me: Come and see

She walked closer..

Her: But I..

Me: Now you can't get something so simple as getting me clean wa-Voice:

Ngezi

I recognized the voice, but it can't be. I slowly turned around and she was standing there at the door.. I dropped the jug of water on the floor and it shattered into pieces..

Kholo: Sir...

Me: It can't be..

I blinked a few times..

Me: It can't be

XOLELWA

When I got home I locked myself in my room and cleansed my soul by shedding a few tears. I was very hurt by how Master acted today, I truly thought that he was going to understand my family's situation and be there for me. I didn't expect him to act like a child.. We weren't the perfect family I know but now, things are worse than before and everything is weighing heavy on my soul..

Master was blowing up my phone and I kept on ignoring his calls, I didn't even reply to his texts because I was emotionally tired of all the drama that was happening. Even though the baby is okay but the gynecologist wasn't happy with my BP, I need to take things easy before I put my baby in danger.. I read his last text that he sent me:

"Please answer my calls, I'm sorry about how I acted today. I just wanna talk to you". I put my phone on silent mode and then closed my eyes hoping to sleep it off... Just forget about everything for a little while..

—

MONG

Z

It's been years since I last saw this woman, it scared me to the depths of my soul that I had to meet her again under these tragic circumstances.. I turned to Kholofelo who was trying to pick up the broken pieces....

Me: Please give us some space

Her: Yes Sir

She walked out while holding a few of those broken pieces.. Her: I

didn't mean to scare you

Me: It's okay

I walked over to my chair and she sat on the chair opposite mine. Mrs Mthethwa has always been a difficult person to get used to, she doesn't smile much and she has this strictness that glows on her. I tried to keep my cool but she was making me very nervous, although I need to constantly look her in the eye so she doesn't become suspicious of anything..

Me: Would you like something to drink?

Her: Yes please.. Maybe tea

I called Tsholo to bring us some tea..

Her: I was here earlier on and your receptionist told me that you were not around so mysister and I decided to go to some restaurant not far from here to get something to eat

Me: Yes I had errands to run

Her: I hope I'm not disturbing you

Me: No Mam' you not

I got my hands off the table because they were shaking..Her:

Ngezi I will be upfront with everything

She leaned forward and looked at me, putting more and more pressure on me..Me: Yes

Mam

Her: You were the last Person to see my Daughter alive, I need to know everything. Yesyou gave out your statement but I wanna hear it again, and I wanna hear it from you

I gave her a nod..

Her: You owe me that much

Me: I will tell you everything

She laid back and folded her arms, ready to hear what I had to say..

Me: My Girlfriend Armani once came home and told me that, her and her friend were being stalked. She gave me a description of the stalker and it matched that of Senzeni. I could've easily not believed her but I never told Armani about Zeni, she didn't know her. I didn't know how to perceive the news, considering the fact that I was told Zeni died from that..

Her: From that accident of you running her over with your carMe:

Yes.. That one

Her: Then what happened?

Kholo made her way in with the tea, I removed my tie. I am able to keep my composure at all times but Mrs Mathebula was making my heart beat very fast..

Me: Thank you Kholo

Kholo: I'll be at my station should you need anything

She made her way out whilst Mrs Mathebula poured tea for the both of us..

Me: That day of her death I actually stopped by at her place, to make sure that my sanity was still intact. I needed to see for myself that indeed she was still alive, and she was.

She let me in and we started talking. She was scared, she still had anger buried deep inside of her of everything that I did to her previously. For the life of me I couldn't believe that she was still alive..

I looked at her..

Me: I think it was unfair for everyone to convince me that she was no more, whilst she was still alive

Her: That was the only way we could've kept her safe from you. After everything that you have put her through, she tried...She tried to get her life back together again and trust me it wasn't easy. Therapy for her wasn't easy too but it ended up having some effect on her. You don't know how difficult it was to wake up every morning and see my Daughter broken like that, or what used to be my bubbly child broken like that. Everyday she blamed herself for her father's death, she attempted suicide a lot of times. There were times when I had to stay up just to watch her sleep, and made sure that she doesn't wake up and drink pills or hang herself. I had to put my hand on her chest to make sure that she was still breathing, that's how broken she was..

It was difficult to hear her say all those things..

Her: But then, we not here to talk about that.. Since your innocence has been proven, I wanna know what happened that day.

(Silence)

Me: As we were talking her Aunt knocked but Zeni was scared to let her in, scared that I would kill them both seeing that I wasn't supposed to be there in the first place, so she kept quiet and waited for her to go. She did go but she called her to find out where she was, and Zeni told her that she wasn't around

Her: My Sister did tell me that.. For the first time I can't believe that you going to tell me the truth

Me: When her Aunt had left, I decided that we should go to the Mirage hotel since it wasn't safe to talk at her house and she agreed. I don't think she wanted to go, she just agreed so that I wouldn't hurt her

I cleared my throat..

Me: She left the keys for her Aunt and then we leftHer:

What happened there?

Me: Old feelings came back again and this you might find hard to believe but.. We made love

She didn't say anything for a while, and then she shook her head..Me: Zeni

still had it for me

Her: She would never

Me: But she did, otherwise why would she have agreed to go to the Mirage with me. The Mirage hotel is known for it's shady business of accommodatin-

Her: My Daughter would never do that!! Just when I thought you were about to be honest throughout and this is what you do?

Me: Things didn't go well after that, I had confessed to her that I was now in love with someone else and we had a big argument, I ended up calling an Uber for her and then I left

Her: You just gonna lie like that?

Me: It's the truth

Her: Lies!!!

Me: It's the whole entire truth, Zeni killed herself because I came and reminded her of the past she desperately wanted to forget

Her: The autopsy report said nothing about sexual violation!

Me: I didn't sexually violate her and they didn't check because there wasn't any sexual violation in the first place. They were much concentrated on the cause of her death remember? That was the main reason for the autopsy

Her: You are going to burn in hell!

Me: I have no reason to lie

Kholo knocked..

Her: I'm sorry to interrupt but someone is here to see youMe:

Who is it?

Her: Your PI

Me: I'll be right there.. Thank you

It was obvious that Mrs Mthethwa needed some time to herself so that she can processeverything, So instead of her being excused I was the one to excuse myself..

—

TASH

I was at work, Jojo had gone out he didn't say exactly where he was going and how long he was going to take. I was at his office sorting out a few things when I heard a knock atthe door..

Me: Come in

The door opened and Nomfundo made her way in, with her baby who was nicelystrapped in his car seat..

Her: Ohw Hi

Me: Hi

Her: I thought Jojo would be in

Me: No he went out, didn't exactly say where he was goingHer: It's

okay I'll call him

She turned and headed for the door..Me:

Can I talk to you?

She reluctantly turned back and looked at meHer:

About?

Me: I understand that you and I never saw eye to eye and I'm sorry for whatever I did tooffend you

Her: Does that include sleeping with Jojo when you knew very well that he was in a

relationship with me? How would you feel if I did that to you?

Me: Obviously I wouldn't feel good about it but.. It's not my fault that he never loved youShe
chuckled..

Her: You are so full of yourself She
attempted to walk out again..

Me: I think we should be Adults about everything

Her: Exactly what is it that we should be adults about?

Me: We need to find common ground with this whole Jojo thing

Her: I don't think I understand what you saying because you with him and I just have ababy by him
that's all

I kept quiet..

Her: You shouldn't even be worried I mean, he never loved me.. Remember?She was
Patronizing me and I wasn't going to give in..

I gave her a wicked smile..

Me: Yes.. Of course

Her: I'll go and greet a few of the staff and then we'll leave

She walked out while playing with her son just to rub it in my face. Since Nomfundo gave birth,
she thinks she owns the whole universe. She feels very highly of herself..

—

MRS PHIRI

They were finally done with the operation, the Dr said the last bullet which is lodged on her right
hip they will remove it at a later stage as she has lost a lot of blood. The other two bullets they
were able to remove them. I didn't hear much of what he said but one ofthe Nurses tried her best to
translate for me, and I was saddened that one of the bullets went directly into her womb. They
told me that they have seen a lot of miracles happening in this hospital, and that miracle also
involves Armani surviving her fatal shooting. According to them she wasn't supposed to make it
..... When Armani's Mom

ran away, my Husband was the one who was mostly affected because all respect was lost for him in the village. He couldn't continue living with that shame so he killed himself and I was left all alone, I had lost both my Daughter and my Husband. When Armani came into my life I saw the reason to keep on living again, I saw Londeka in her. She is very much like her Mother.. I looked at her and I didn't like that she needed all those machines to help her breath, I want my Granddaughter back. I want her to get through this..

I held her hand..

Me: Ohh kodwa Ngane yam' (my poor Granddaughter) She didn't move..

Me: ilwa ngane yam', buya uphindele kithi (fight my child, come back to us)

—

JOJO

Me: R15 000 in cash

He took it..

Him: Thank you.. This means a lot to me I looked at the time..

Him: How is everyone doing?

Me: It's hard for them but they hanging in there He nodded..

Him: I'm glad they not coming to visit, especially Xolelwa and her Mother. They too fragile

Me: They are taking this hard He exhaled..

Him: Did you contact Osborne, about the offshore account? Me: No

I could see the disappointment on his face..

Him: Why not? We need to move fast we already running out of time
Me: We are not moving fast on anything

Him: I thought we agreed th-

Me: You definitely thought wrong, we didn't agree on anything
Him:

What is this now?

Me: I'm not going to do anything for you that will land me up in here too

Him: Nothing is going to happen to you.. I chose you because you already making a lot of money for yourself so you having an offshore account won't be so suspicious

Me: Why should I do this for you?

Him: You not doing it for me, you doing it for your Mother and Sisters
Me: I can financially take care of them

Him: You saying this now but along the way it will drain you, their lifestyle is very expensive

Me: I don't like this at all

Him: Why would I set you up while I'm already suffering for your sin?
Me:

What?

Him: You think I don't know that you killed Bonza? Then pinned the whole thing on me?
I looked at him confused..

Him: Come on Jojo I'm not stupid. You had motive, you somehow found out that he was double crossing you and you got rid of him

Me: You don't have proof of what you saying

Him: I don't need proof because I'm not trying to blackmail you. You my Son and already you have a family of your own. I want you to be there for your Son and the whole family, so do this for me and we will forget the Bonza saga. I doubt they have evidence against me unless you planted some, so it will remain a cold case again.. Just get that money, that's the only thing I'm asking from you

(no edits)

XOLELW

A

A FEW WEEKS LATER

Mam'G: How about this one?

Me: I like it.. It looks nice

Her: It would look more nicer in red

Me: Ya white won't do for me, it gets dirty very easyHer:

Red will be better

Me: I'll take red

I was out shopping with my Mother and Mam'Gabi, with my tummy getting bigger and putting on weight I needed to get new clothes. Things between Master and I are a bit better now, we've worked out a better solution that will satisfy both parties and that is me switching visitations between my place and his place. I will be going there next week and staying over for a month or so..

My Mom came back..

Mom: Did she finally choose?

Me: Yes.. Mam'Gabi chose this for me, what do you think?She
nodded..

Her: It's beautiful

Mam'Gabi and my Mom they get along very well, but then again it's not unusual because Mam'Gabi is a very kind soul, she gets along well with everyone.

Mom: You know Mam'Gabi I'm impressed with your Son, he is a responsible young manMe: Wow..

Never thought I'd hear you say that about him

Mom: Don't get ahead of yourself now We

continued looking at other clothes..

Mom: The way he takes care of my Daughter is very admirable, I am sure that even

when the baby is born he will still carry out his duties

Me: I feel sorry for him at times, I feel like I'm a burden to him

Mam'G: Don't ever feel like that.. You carrying his child and you can't find a job so it's his responsibility to step up and take care of you up until you get a job

Mom: After a few months of giving birth I think the baby should stay with me so you can look for a job again

Mam'G: Ahaaa! Don't do that, if you raise the baby you'll be giving them a reason to make another one. Let them raise the baby together so they can feel it, a baby doesn't only need financial stability

Mom: Now that you've mentioned it I think that's a good idea, they must stay up all night figuring out on their own why the baby is crying

Mam'G: And then when they finally get some sleep they will have to wake up and prepare for work (Laughing)

I stopped walking and looked at them..Me:

Is it that bad?

Mam'G: We not trying to scare you, you will see for yourselfMe:

But Nomfundo makes motherhood look so easy

Mom: I doubt she's having it easy, plus it's worse now since she has moved back to her place. She's no longer getting help from her Mother

We continued walking..

Mom: At least Master is going to be there every step of the way, unlike Nomfundo. Jojo only goes there to visit

Me: Those two look like they still have a thing for each otherMom:

I thought I was the only one who noticed

Mam'G: Isn't Jojo dating that white girl who used to be his assistant?

Mom: Don't even remind me, I'm not feeling that girl. Worse she's coming over for dinner tonight

Me: Jojo loves her Mom and you have to accept that

Mom: They should love each other far away, I really don't like her!

shook my head at that statement..

—

ARMAN

I

"Dear God if you're listening now

I need you do a thing for me. You see my baby, she done up and walked out I need you bring her back to me.. I know that I was wrong, I was guilty as sin probably not priority, But dear God if you're listening now Down here.. Dying.. Begging.. Crying

Somebody need to pray for me"

I wiped my tears as I watched the videos he sent to me via WhatsApp of him singing songs dedicated to me, while playing the piano. That's literally the only way that he can communicate with me after everything that has happened. My Grandmother is very adamant that Mongz was responsible for the shooting, mainly because those guys who broke into my place didn't take anything. One might say that it's because they panicked and ran out after shooting me but really if it was a house break-in then they would've held us at gunpoint, took everything that was valuable and left. It's not very often that house break-ins end up in bloodshed unless the criminals were provoked or felt intimidated..

I moved on to the next one..

"If you ever leave me baby, Leave some morphine at my door 'Cause it would take a whole lot of medication, to realize what we used to have, We don't have it anymore.. There's no religion that could save me, No matter how long my knees are on the floor.. So keep in mind all the sacrifices I'm making to keep you by my side, and keep you from walkin' out the door"

It was difficult to come to the realization that Mongz might be behind me being hurt this bad and almost dying, a part of me didn't wanna believe it but another part of me convinced me otherwise. I mean we talking about someone who hurt his ex girlfriend whom he claimed to have loved dearly..

"I'll never be your Grandmother's favorite

Your daddy can't even look me in the eye, if I was in their shoes, I'd be doing the something.. Sayin'
"There goes my little girl

Walkin' with that troublesome guy"..

Unfortunately my Father has sent out a warning to him that he doesn't want him anywhere near me, he is not even allowed to come and see me. It was hard, and it was very confusing. I didn't know what to think, I didn't know what to assume, everything is just a mess..

Jojo made his way in while carrying Baby Lonwabo, I paused the video and took off my earphones. A week ago I had my last surgery, they were removing the bullet that was lodged in my bone..

Jojo: And there she is

Me: Wooooow.. Baby Lonwabo

He put the basket that he was holding with his other hand on the table..Me:

They allowed him in?

Him: I snuck him in

Me: What? He shouldn't even be here

Him: You not sick, you got shot

Me: Still some diseases are airborne, it's not safe for him

Him: We didn't visit anyone else, we came straight here so he's goodMe: What did you even say to Nomfundo?

Him: I said I'm taking him out, so she could rest a littleMe:

Well I'm glad to see you guys

Him: You wanna hold him?

Me: I'd rather not

Him: Come on..

He walked over and gave him to me..

Me: Ohh my word he is so adorable

He wrapped his little hand around my finger..Me:

Hi..

Jojo: Maybe we should take this off for a second

He removed his pacifier, and he was left sticking out his tounge..Me: I bet he likes to eat a lot?

Him: He likes his milk a lot

Me: I can tell

He sat at the edge on the bed..

Jojo: How are you holding up? I exhaled..

Me: I'm trying to be strong so I can get out of this placeHim:

How many times did you get shot?

Me: 3 times.. One bullet went straight to my womb, another on my hip and the last one was also in my womb

Him: What the F**?

I looked at baby Lonwabo..

Me: The Dr said there's a possibility that I might not be able to concieveHim:

Exactly what happened?

Me: House break-in gone wrong, they panicked when I called security and they shot meHim: I wish I had picked up my phone when you called

Me: It's okay.. You didn't know

Him: I'm just glad you okay, that's all that mattersMe:

Ya I guess so

Him: Shouldn't you be traumatized by the whole thing?

Me: I've been through a lot that now I'm just numb to pain, I don't feel anything anymore
Him: I think you need therapy, this will catch up with you at a later stage

Me: I'll be fine... This is not my first traumatic experience, I've been through shit before and I survived.. I'll survive this too

—

NDARH

A

With the money that Jojo gave me I was able to bribe a guard and the president finally got the medical attention that he needed, I also threw in another 5k for him to change cells. As soon as he comes back, he will be in a cell with me and the 28s. At least he will be safe up until our trial starts.. Speaking of the trial, it'll be starting soon and I hope our lawyer will be able to get us a reduced sentence..

Some guard made his way to us, Rama and I we were sitting at our usual spot and minding our own business..

Guard: You have a visitor

That was weird, it was not visiting hours as yet..

Guard: It's your Son, he is requesting to see you.. He paid me for this so you better start moving

I looked at Rama and then I got up and followed the guard. Maybe Jojo finally gave in and decided to contact Osborne about the offshore account, if he did that then he would have helped me a lot.. To my surprise we didn't go to the visiting area, he took me to solitary confinement. I stopped and looked at me..

Me: What's going on?

Him: Keep on walking

He kept on flashing the baton stick at me to warn me that I will be dealt with violently should I start any trouble. We walked all the way and then he opened the door, and instructed me to go in...

Me: But I didn't do anything

Him: Ngena sboshwa (get in prisoner)

I made my way in and he closed the door behind me, I saw someone standing at the corner and facing the wall. He was smoking a cigarette.. It was a bit dark so I couldn't tell who it was until he turned around and walked closer to me, it was the general.. This won't end well..

Him: You think that you can come to my prison and do as you wish?I

swallowed..

He blew smoke on my face, I coughed..

He pointed at the other corner, and I noticed a body there..

Him: It's the guard you been bribing for favours, he didn't understand that I run this whole shit!!

I still held my peace..

Him: Since you took my bitch, then you will be my bitch!!

He walked closer and I stepped back, noticing his bloody vest..Him:

Tonight you will moving into my cell

He hit me a little on my cheek..

Him: We going to have fun you and me

On his way to the door he had the Audacity to spank my behind, I clenched my teeth..Him: See you later

He knocked and then the door opened and he walked out...

Me: Yeah I'll see you later, and one of us will be in a body bag. I'm not about to be someone's bitch around here

Guard: Woza! (let's go)

I don't know why the governor doesn't do anything with the violence around here..

—

MONG

Z

I felt someone squeezing my shoulder, I freaked out and opened my eyes. It was my

Dad..

Him: It's me

He walked over and sat on the other chair.. I was sitting at the dining table and having breakfast..

Him: You alright Son?I

rubbed my eyes..

Me: Yeah.. I'm good

He looked at me..

Him: Monde tells me that you've been struggling to sleep latelyI let
out a breath..

Me: I'll be fine

Him: You not going to be fine, I can see fatigue written all over your face.. What's wrong?

Lately I have been having this nightmare about Senzeni and it keeps me up almost everynight. I can't sleep through it because her appearance in the nightmare is very unsettling.. In the nightmare I find myself peacefully sleeping on my bed and then she steps out from the dark, to stand next to my bed. The drops of her blood on my face is what wakes me up, immediately when I open my eyes in the nightmare to look at her she strangles me. That's how the nightmare ends, then after that I wake up with my heart racing and sweat all over my pillow.. Lack of sleep has made me very paranoid and it brought about my anxieties, now I even think that my hallucinations are coming back. At times when I'm in the room I feel like she's standing behind me, when I turn back she's not there..

Me: Just stress at work that's all

Him: Maybe you should take a few days off you know just to restMe: I'll be
fine Dad

Him: Mongz I'll be leaving soon, I'm going to Cape Town. Remember we need to elect 2 individuals from our party so one can temporarily fill up the presidential position until the next national elections. So I need you to take care of Monde, You can't take care of him if you can't take care of yourself first

Me: Dad.. I'm good

Him: Later I'm going to come back with sleeping tablets, you need to rest

I looked at my mug and it was empty..

Me: Let me get a refill

Him: Do you really need caffeine in your state?

I got up from the chair and went to the kitchen to refill my caffeine intake..I put

the mug on the counter and closed my eyes for a second..

Me: Get yourself together!

I also placed both of my hands on the counter..Me: Get

yourself together Mongz

I took a deep breath and then let it out..

I opened my eyes and took my mug, just as I was lifting it up from the counter I heard an unusual sound. More like the "drip drop, drip drop" noise the tap makes when it's not tightly closed. I put the mug down again and listened carefully to the sound, then I heard a voice singing..

"My heart is pierced by Cupid I disdain all glittering gold ..There is nothing can console me but my jolly sailor bold"

The hair at the back of my neck stood up when I heard the voice nearing, and the sound of the water dripping got more and more louder too..

"My heart is pierced by Cupid I disdain all glittering gold.. There is nothing can console me But my jolly sailor bold"

As the voice was now very close I felt a cold breeze and for the life of me I couldn't move, it was almost as if like my feet were frozen to the ground..

Voice: My heart is pierced by cupid..

It stopped and then I had a lub-dub heart beat sound.. Voice: My

heart is pierced by cupid..

As if things couldn't get more weird, the most shocking thing happened, a bloody hand

placed a beating heartbeat next to my hand that was pierced by a lot of needles and bleeding profusely. It jumped a bit, the same way like a frog with each beat..

My own heart started to beat uncontrollably, as I was concentrating on it busy jumping around with every beat, I then saw several snake heads protruded from it heart and the snakes made their way to me piercing through my own heart. The feeling was intense, glancing down at myself my heart was visible. I could see my own heart and the small snakes eating it out, I felt excruciating pain with every bite the snakes took that I couldn't help but scream. Then the voice started laughing.. I couldn't even get the snakes off they were clinging to my heart pretty bad and eating it out, as the voice continued to laugh, I continued to scream in agony.....

I felt someone shaking me and calling out my name, I opened my eyes and it was my Dad..

Him: What's wrong? Are you alright?

Confusing enough I was sitting at the dining table.. He walked over to sit on the other chair opposite me.. I placed my hand on my chest all the way down to my left side feeling my heartbeat racing..

Dad: What's wrong Mongezi?

Me: I..

I looked around..

Me: Wasn't I getting coffee at the kitchen?

Him: No.. I found you passed out on the chair, looks like you were having a bad dream I must have been having another nightmare..

Him: Are you getting enough sleep? Monde says you hardly sleep these days what's seating you up?

This was not good, what exactly is happening to me?83

(Delayed insert)

MASTER

I made my way to my car, glad that my shift was finally over. All I wanna do is get home

and relax, then look forward again to my next shift... I heard a voice calling out to me, I turned and it was one of my colleagues Thobile. I sighed and waited for her next to my car...

Her: Thank Goodness I caught up with you, now I'll get a lift Me:

Where is your transport?

Her: Aii wena the transport is going to delay and I'm not in the mood to wait for others who will be busy doing God knows what

Me: As'vaye ke (let's go then)

I unlocked the car and she placed her hand on the door handle of the front seat.. Me:

Zibambe emuva (go to the back)

Her: Kunani uk'hlala phambili? (What's wrong with the front seat) Me:

Emuva (at the back)

She got in at the back..

Her: So tell me.. Why is the front seat off limits?

Me: It's reserved only for my woman, the only other female who is allowed to occupy it is my Aunt

Her: Whooooa! Hai shame she must be really special (Silence)

Her: This coming weekend we going to have a braai for Themba, it's his birthday.. Uyafuna ukuza? (Do you wanna come)

Me: No ngi ngrand

Her: Kanti ukudliseni usisiza? Ngangikuthanda uSingle (What did she give you? I liked you more when you were single)

Me: Izinto ziyashintsha (Things change) My

phone rang, it was Xolelwa..

Me: Skat

Her: Hey love.. Am I disturbing you?

Me: Not really.. I'm driving home from work

Her: Shouldn't you be at home already sleeping?

Me: I had a few things to do at work that delayed meHer:

Okay then should we talk when you get home? Me: Ya

we will talk when I get home

Thobile: Please stop at the garage I wanna use the rest roomMe: Why

didn't you go when you were still at work?

Her: It's only now I feel like going

Xolelwa: Who is that?

Me: It's just a colleague

Xolelwa: Ohw

Me: I'll call you when I get home

Xolelwa: Okay

Me: I lov-

She hung up..

-

MONG

Z

I looked at Monde holding my hand.. Me:

You don't have to do that you knowHim:

You not scared?

I chuckled..

Me: No.. I'm not scared

Him: I'll hold it just incase

Dr: for how long have you been having the nightmares?Me: It's

been a while now

Dr: They the reason why you can't sleep at night?Me:

Yes

I wasn't going to do this, but then my Father brought up Monde so basically I'm doing this for him..I need to get better for him

Dad: My son is clinically insane, could it be that his mental health is the reason why he is having these nightmares?

Hearing that I'm clinically insane still doesn't sit well with me, it's something that I've always been embarrassed about..

Dr: He is on medication right?

Dad: Yes

The Dr looked at me...

Dr: Do you also have hallucinations?I

swallowed before answering..

Me: Yes

Dad: Why didn't you tell me that you hallucinating again?Me:

Well I'm telling you now

Dad: So what's going to happen now?

Dr: We going to sedate him and put him on bed rest under close supervision, if the nightmares and hallucinations persist then I'll do a CT scan and refer to a psychiatrist

Dad: Is there a possibility that he might need to be locked away?Dr: Only

if he becomes a danger to himself and others

Dad: I understand

Dr: The Nurse will come and sedate you, you need to rest or else you going to start having seizures

I slightly nodded and he made his way out..I

turned to Monde..

Me: You guys should probably go home

Monde: No.. I wanna be here

Me: I'll be asleep

Monde: I'll wait for you to wake upI

looked at my Dad..

Dad: I'll get us something to eat then, it's going to be a long dayHe

walked out..

Monde: Are you going to be okay?

Me: Yes.. I just need to sleep

Monde: Why can't you sleep at home?

Zeni appeared behind Monde, she was dripping blood from her head to her face. The whole room suddenly felt cold, then she had bugs running on her body..

Her: Yes tell us.. Why can't you sleep at home Mongz?Her

voice echoed..

I closed my eyes..

Her: Why can't you sleep at home like a normal person?

I tried to retain my sanity for the sake of Monde, I didn't wanna act up with him around..Monde:

Mongz!

I opened my eyes and looked at him, Zeni had disappeared..Him:

You alright? You shaking?

Me: It's just a.. It's just a panic attack

The Nurse walked in, I felt somehow about being sedated. What if I sleep and still have those nightmares, if I'm sedated it'll be hard to wake up..

—

ARMAN

I

Zeni's Mom came to check up on me after she called and I told her that I was at the hospital..

Her: How are you feeling?

Me: I'm in a lot of pain but I'll get there

Her: This is unusual, yes I've heard of break-ins were they shoot people but.. I just don't understand why didn't they take whatever they needed and left?

I kept quiet for a few seconds..

Me: We both know who orchestrated the whole thing Her eyes widened..

Me: It happened a few hours after my stop at your place, I think he had me followed the whole entire time

Her: He needs to be locked away, he is not normal to live in a society with other people

Me: Unfortunately that won't happen, Mongz is a perfectionist. He never gets his hands dirty he has people doing it for him, and he also knows that the judge will order him for a psychiatric evaluation then he will be sent to a mental institution up until he is fit to function in a society with normal people

Her: Every bad thing that you do in life, it will always come back to you no matter what. His day is coming, all the pain that he has caused other people will come back to him 10 times more

Me: After this I'm done with guys, I'm done with dating.. There's people in life who aren't destined for such things and I think I'm one of them, As much as it hurts.. I'll have to move on from here

Her: I understand what you saying and I admire your courage but Mongz will never let you go. He would rather have you dead if he can't be with you, you need to be careful at all times

—

NDARH

A

I walked over to my lawyer and sat down opposite him..Him:

Good day

Me: Good day

Him: How is it going in there?

Me: Not so good.. Prison is not a good place to beHim: I understand

Me: How is the case coming along?

Him: Bonza's murder and Armani's kidnapping there's no sufficient evidence so the judge might dismiss them, unless of course Bonza's sister decides to take a stand and testify against you

Me: Wouldn't she be implicated too? I mean she willingly participated instead of doing the right thing and calling the police

Him: Not if they cut her a deal.. Those charges might be dropped if she testifies against you

Me: This is bad

Him: I can talk to Arma-

Me: No it's fine..

Him: I'm really trying my best to get you guys a reduced sentenceMe: I know..

Him: How is the President doing?

Me: He's going to make it

Him: That's good to hear.. Anything else you want me to do for you?Me:

Yes

Him: What is it?

Me: I want you to contact my Son and tell him that the threat is real now.. He will know what that means

Him: I'll do so I

got up..

Me: Thank you.. Guess I'll see you some other time

Him: Yes I'll come before the trial, the President must be present too Me: He
will be

Him: If you need anything else... Just give me a call Me:

Just contact my Son for me

Him: Yes Sir

—

MASTE

R

Just when I was about nap I heard a knock at the door, I tried to ignore at first but the Person kept on knocking..

Me: Ya ngiyeza! (I'm coming)

I went and opened the door, It was Shine.. Me:

You got to be kidding me!

He made his way in followed by some guy that he was with.. I
closed the door..

Me: What do you want?

Shine: Aii maan I was in the neighborhood ngathi Ithi ng'dlule fast fast before ngibuyelaemuva (I
was in the neighborhood and thought I should check up on you before I go back home)

Me: Ufike kabi ke, ng'gindlile (You came at the bad time, I wanna sleep) They
both looked at each other then the guy he was with laughed..

Him: Ya eyakini le straight (He is your brother no lie)

He looked a bit familiar like I've seen him somewhere before..

Shine: Kwaze kwakubi ke mfana omdala (That's bad then Brother)Me:

Konje ngik'cavela va? (Where do I know you from)

Him: You've probably seen me on TV once or twice

Shine: Awww' kanti nawe uyaz'bheka ezase mchurch? (You also are into the religiouschannels on TV)

Me: No maan is'Ola sakho no Xolelwa they used to watch him a lot on TV, umuntubekangasakhoni nok'lala 24/7 nje bowuzwa abo "Somebody shout Amen"

We all laughed..

Him: Naa that's not my channelHe

extended his hand to me..

Him: Nazo

Me: Master

He gave me a handshake..

Shine: Uva u Xolelwa? (Where is Xolelwa)

Me: She went back home

Nazo: So it's true that you dating the Deputy President's Daughter?Shine: Not

only dating.. Uze wasbeka (he impregnated her)

Nazo whistled..

Me: Vele nje why unga'tsheli I Witbank yonke? (Why don't you just tell the whole entire Witbank)

Shine: Ang'funi bazi (I don't want them to know)Me:

nihamba nini? (When are you leaving)

Shine: Nex ke, sizohlala (We not going anywhere, we going to stay)He

looked at Nazo..

Shine: Sizoziwisa Mo (we hear to party)

Nazo started singing..

Nazo: "we here to celebrate the good times of our lives"

Shine: "Gcwalisa I cooler box ufake ama ice, ende Unga khohlwa mfana ukubiza abonice"

Nazo: "yi Summer time bade, asikho iskhathi sok'dlala ama dice" They even
did a little dance with the song..

Shine: Ahhh ntwana those were the days

Nazo: Ya good times

Shine: Vele nex nama drinks? (You not even going to offer us anything to drink)

I looked at them and clicked my tongue, I walked to my bedroom and they followed me busy making
noise..

Them: "Gcwalisa I cooler ufake ama ice, ende ungakhohlwa mfana uk'biza abo nice"

Once upon a time my life was peaceful knowing that I was the only child, before I reunited with
my annoying half brother..

Shine: "chill a little bit, smile a little bit, baby bro loosen up a little bit" Nazo:

"Celebrate the good times of your life"

It was definitely going to be a long day..

—

TASH

Me: You late

Him: I have other clients too

I fixed my glasses and leaned against my car..

Him: You didn't have to wear any props, I'm a professional what I do for you will end up between
us.. You not my only client

I cleared my throat..

Me: Just that I've never done something like this before, and how can I trust you when

your profile says you a PI but in actual fact you do other shaddy thingsHim: Do
you want my help or what?

I handed him the pictures.. Me:

I got them from intagramHim: I

take both of them out?I took off
my glasses..

Me: No.. Only the baby, I want his Mom to suffer

Him: I understand

Me: So how are you going to do it?He
looked at me..

Him: Leave it to me

Me: I don't want anything coming back to me

Him: If you don't trust me we can just forget the whole thing, I told you that you not myfirst client

Me: Sorry I'm just nervous.. If my boyfriend finds out he is going to kill meHim:

Then relax don't give anything away

I nodded repeatedly..

Him: I'm going to need 50% now, then the rest when I'm done with the jobMe:

Okay.. Let me get the cash

For both our sakes, I hope he pulls this off perfectly or Jojo is going to kill us..

—

JOJO

I looked at the nappy and I looked at him...Me:

Xols!!

She walked in..

Xols: Yeah?

Me: Do you know how to do this?

Xols: Let me see

She took the nappy from me..

I got my phone and I had two missed calls from Nomfundo, I called her..Her: Jojo

where are you with my son?

Me: My Son too.. We at Xols place

Her: Is he okay? Did you feed him? Did you change his nappy?Me: He

is good Fufu

Her: You guys need to come back, it's been long now since you leftMe: Ya

we'll come back relax

Her: Now Jojo

Me: Yes we on our way

She hung up..

Me: I need to take him home, his Mom wants him..Xols:

Google how to do it Man, I have no clue

Me: Okay let's do that before he starts crying84

I was helping my Mom prepare the table since Jojo and his girlfriend were coming over for dinner, there's also a high possibility of Xols and Loli will be coming over too. As always my Mom kept on complaining, she doesn't like this Nataschi girl and it's not even funny..

My phone started ringing, I checked the caller ID and it was Master. I'm not very happy with him right now. I excused myself and went to the balcony, then I answered..

Me: Hello

Him: Hello?

Me: I don't wanna call you "Love" In case your girlfriend is around He
chuckled..

Him: Eyy ungaqali Xolelwa (Don't start)

Me: I just don't wanna be made a fool that's all

Him: Ya and I'm cheating on my pregnant girlfriend vele?

Me: I never said anything about cheating, you just indirectly telling me that you cheating Him: You
implied it angisho

Me: I don't understand, you were doing nightshift and you were supposed to be at home earlier,
then you telling me that you got "delayed". Then when you get home you don't even call me
back? I'm anything but a fool Master!

I heard him exhaling in frustration..

Him: I know how it looks like but trust me, I love you and I would never do you like that. I would
never risk my family for a fling.. So please, ngicela singalwi (Let's not fight)

A part of me believed that he would never hurt me like that, but another part of me convinced me
otherwise..

Him: Just wanted to check up on you guys before you sleep Me:

We are fine.. We doing well

Him: Okay I love you and I'll call you back tomorrow morning Me:

You better call

Him: I will

Me: Night

Him: Night

—

MONG

Z

"Now I lay me down to sleep,

I pray the Lord my Soul to keep, If

I should die before I 'wake,

I pray the Lord my Soul to take"

I slowly opened my eyes to the sound of that familiar voice. I turned my head and she was sitting on the chair next to my bed..

I don't know what was happening, and I don't know why Zeni was coming for me like this.

I rose up from the pillow and sat up straight, the coldness of the room really got to me that I was shivering..

Her: It's ice cold where I am

Me: What do you want from me?

Her: I want you to do the right thing and confess what you did to me! Clear your conscience and I'll leave you

I shook my head..

Me: I didn't kill you.. I loved you and I would never do that to you!

I don't know when she stood up, but it was a matter of nano seconds and before I knew it she was standing right in front of me. That freaked me out a little..

Him: You forgot to say your prayers before you sleep! Me:

What?

She pierced her hand through my chest, and I felt her cold touch on my soul.. Her: "Now

I lay me down to sleep,

I pray the Lord my Soul to keep, If

I should die before I 'wake,

I pray the Lord my Soul to take"

Me: Ahhhhhhh!!

She retracted her hand back..

Me: Zeni

Her: Confess!!!

Her voice echoed that it broke the window and the light bulb..Her:

Confess your sins!!!

Me: I didn't kill you

She pierced her hand through again and this time around, she got a hold of my heart and squeezed it..

Her: That's how your love felt!!

With each squeeze I got weaker and weaker..Me:

Zeni please..

Her: "Now I lay me down to sleep, I

pray the Lord my Soul to keep,

If I should die before I 'wake,

I pray the Lord my Soul to take"

–

NDARH

A

Warden: Ngena sboshwa!! (get in prisoner) He

pushed me in and then locked behind me

The 27s were sitting in circle and playing cards while singing.. "Izimali

zami Kade ngizidla nawe, aww sfebe ngiyay' funa imali yam'

They all looked at me and then I looked around for an empty bed, I slowly walked to the empty bed and put my staff there..

It was a risky situation, there was like 10 of them, and there was one of me. I sat down on the bed and saw the general whispering something to one of the cellmates, the cellmate nodded and stood up..

Him: Kukhala unombolo bani la? (What are we here)

All: inombolo u27! (we the 27s)

Him: Ang'nizwa Nina bo malala eveva (I can't hear you)All:

Inombo u27 (we the 27s)

He made his way to me..

Him: uphakamisa inombolo yiphi? (which gang do you belong too)I kept quiet..

Him: Bafwethu! Akaphakamisi u27 (he is not one of us)Two of the other cellmates got up and came to me..

Him: "Izimali zami kade ngizidla nawe, aww sfebe ngiyayifuna imali yam"

They got me up and then led me into the center of the circle, the other mates were surrounding us. They kept on singing while he got a sock and put a sunlight bar inside of it. The other two guys held me tight..

Him: Uzofa mawungana ngcondo!!

He started swinging the bar soap and hit me with it across my face, I am without a doubt that he broke my nose bridge..

—

TASH

Jojo parked at the driveway..He

looked at me..

Him: Are you alright?I

nodded..

He held my hand..

Him: I'm sorry that I've been distant lately, you don't deserve how I've been treating youMe: It's okay.. I understand

Him: I promise you that things are going to change from here on

Me: I hope so Him:

I love you Me: I

love you too

Him: Give me a kiss I

kissed him..

—

MR MABUZA

I walked in, Monde was still sitting on the chair and playing games on his phone..I looked at the time..

Me: He is still sleeping? Monde

looked at his brother..Monde:

Yes

I took the other chair and sat next to him..Me:

Let me talk to you

He put his phone away..

Him: Okay

Me: I know how much you love your Brother Son, and I know how much he loves you too I

looked at Mongz..

Me: Your Brother is not like you and me, his brain works differently remember I once told you?

He nodded..

Me: I want you to make a room for disappointment, your brother might not be going back home with us

Him: Why?

Me: If he doesn't get better, he will be forced to go and live in a place where they will

take care of him

Him: But he is not sick anymore, he drinks his medication

Me: I know Monde but at times his brain can overcome his medicationMonde:

I don't want him to go

He held Mongz hand..

Me: I don't want him to go either, but if the Doctors decide otherwise then there'snothing we can do.. They know what's best for him

—

TASH

He rang the bell while holding my hand and we waited, his Mother was the one whoopened..

Her: I didn't think that you guys were going to be on time, please come inWe made our way in while she closed the door behind us..

Me: This is for you

Her: Ohh flowers.. How sweet, thank you

She took them and placed them on the counter..Her:

I'll get them a vase later on

His Sister made her way in.. Her:

You guys are here alreadyJojo:

We right on time

Her: Hi

Me: Hi

There was a moment of silence..

Mrs N: We can go to the dinning room, dinner is ready

Jojo and I were the ones to walk to the dining room first and then they followed, Mrs

Ndarha mumbled something under her breath then her Daughter chuckled. I found that extremely rude..

—

NDARH

A

My face was battered and my body was aching. They had gone as far as to undress me and also hit me with the bar soap all over my body. My left eye was totally shut, and I had partial vision on my right eye..

I have always been a powerful man, and right now to have my life in someone's mercy that's something I thought I would never subject to.. Seeing how badly beaten I was, he put the bar of soap away and they stopped singing. The two guys were still holding me as General made his way to me, I was also bleeding from my mouth. I was very weak, and I didn't know if I was going to be able to go on anymore..

General: Put him on my bed

They dragged me and went to throw me on his bed, then they put a curtain around. General: Can someone start singing!

They started singing and he got in through the curtain, I knew from there on that I was screwed..

—

TASH

This was the most awkward dinner ever..

Me: Thank you for inviting me over for dinner Mrs Ndarha Her:

You welcome

She faked a smile..

Her: So how do you feel dating someone who has a baby with another woman? Me: It

happened before our relationship so I don't have a problem with it

Her: So if it happened while you guys were still in a relationship would you have a problem with the baby?

Jojo: Ma..

I didn't know how to respond to that..

Her: Fufu sent me a picture of Lonwabo sleeping, he is so cute and adorable She got her phone and put the picture on display, she handed Jojo the phone..Jojo: Why wasn't I sent the pic?

Her: I don't know

Jojo handed her back the phone..

Her: You don't wanna see the picture Tash?Me:

No thank you.. I'm sure he is adorable She gave me a weird look..

I found it rude that she would bring up Nomfundo and her baby in my presence, I just can't wait for the PI to take care of the little rascal so we can all get on with our lives!

85

JOJO

Nomfundo had sent me a video of herself playing with Lonwabo, Lonwabo couldn't stop smiling at the sound of his Mother's voice. I don't think I have ever loved any human being before as much as I love my Son, now I have a reason to wake up every morning and continue to grind because now my Empire has a rightful heir.

As I was smiling and watching the video my Mother's call came through, I answered..Me: Ma

Her: Good morning baby how are you?I

took my bowl to the sink..

Me: After what happened last night, do you think I'm okay?

Her: I didn't mean to sound rude but at the same time I was being truthful. I didn't sense any spark between you two, I don't think you love this girl

Me: I love Tash Ma

Her: I don't think you do, if you did.. You wouldn't have let me talk about Nomfundo and Lonwabo the whole night

I kept quiet..

Her: Your heart is somewhere else

Me: I can't keep on playing these girls. One moment I'm with Tash, the next moment I'm with Fufu.. It's not right

Her: I understand where you coming from or just take a break from dating until you have made a decision on who you want to end up with

Me: I love Tash Ma.. She has done a lot for me

Her: Don't be with someone just because you feel indebted to the Person, whatever she did.. She did because she loves you. She shouldn't hold it against you

Me: But still..

Her: Just take a break from dating. Focus on yourself, your company, and your Son. Stop wasting this girl's time because obviously you don't love her

Me: I hear you Nonts

Her: I don't like how she responded when we were talking about Lonwabo Me:

What do you mean?

Her: Nothing much maybe I'm just overthinking things but please, Most step parents are not good so always monitor her around the little one

Me: Tash would never hurt Lonwabo if that's what you implying Her: I

was just saying.. Anyway I have to go somewhere, keep well Me: I'll call

you later

Her: Okay bye

Me: Bye

I put my phone down and then the intercom went off, I went to check who it was. Looking closely I don't think I've seen this gentleman before..

Me: Good morning

Him: Morning.. Is this Jojo Ndarha?

Me: Yes and you're?

Him: I am your Father's lawyer

Me: Okay can I help you with something?

Him: I am just here to deliver a messageMe:

What message?

Him: He said I should tell you that the threat is real nowMe:

The threat is real?

Him: Yes.. He said you will understand

Me: Is that all?

Him: Yes Sir... Have a nice day

Me: Thank you

Ndarha is in no position to be pulling threats, especially threats involving something thathe cannot prove..

–

ARMAN

I

I had an unexpected guest this morning. Xolelwa made her way in..Me:

Ohh wow look at you!

She walked up to me and hugged me..Me:

It's been a while how are you?

Her: I should be asking you that

She sat on the chair..

Her: How are you holding up? I wanted to come sooner but I didn't wanna overwhelm you

Me: I'm still in a lot of pain

Her: I thank God that you survived, I don't know what I would've done if I lost youMe:

That's sweet, but I'm okay

Her: I'm glad to hear that

Me: Where is Master? I thought he would come and see me Her:

Master is busy with other females, he has time for no oneMe: I don't understand

Her: He has side chicks that take up all his attentionMe:

Are we talking about the same Person?

She nodded..

Me: Master is.. No that's not rightHer

eyes welled up..

Her: My life is falling apart, things aren't well at home and now my boyfriend is cheating on me

Me: I'll talk to him, he better have a good explanationHer:

Please do (Crying)

Me: Don't cry... Stress is not good for the babyShe

wiped her tears..

Me: Concentrate on yourself and the baby, everything else will work itself out. Leave Master to me that one I'll deal with him

Her: Thank you

I can't believe that Master would do this to Xolelwa..

—

MONG

Z

Even though I slept a great length yesterday but I still woke up tired and sleepy. For some reason my chest felt hot and my heartbeat wasn't normal..

Nurse: Here is your medication, the Dr also added some anti-anxiety drugs
Me: Thank you

I lifted the small cup that had pills in it, my hand was shaking very bad that it fell..Nurse: Don't worry about that I'll get you other ones

Me: Thank you

I closed my eyes and sighed, my heart was beating fast it also felt like my chest was closing up... I started to hyperventilate

Nurse: Okay calm down.. Breath in slowly, and then breath out

I could swear that my heart was going to beat out of my chest and break, that feeling made me paranoid..

Nurse: Okay Mongz calm down

Me: I need to get out of here... I'm suffocating, I can't breath
Nurse:

Mongz calm down.. It's just an anxiety attack

Me: I need to get out

I got out of bed and I saw Zeni standing by the door with her arms folded..Me: I need to be out

Nurse: Calm down

Zeni: Listen to the Nurse and calm down
Me:

You not real!

Zeni: I am real

Me: You not real!! You just in my head

Zeni: That technique won't work Sir, I am real

Nurse: Who are you talking too?

I pointed at the door and then looked at the Nurse..Me:

She's not real.. Tell me she's not real!

Nurse: I don't see anyone

Me: You a professional.. Make her go away

Nurse: Mongz there's no one there

I grabbed the chair and threw it directly at the doorway, the chair went through her..The Nurse screamed..

Zeni: Oops!!

Me: You are not real!!

The Nurse rushed and pressed the button..

Her: Code black.. I need assistance in ward 5B! I repeat Code black, I need assistance inward 5B

Me: She is not real.. She can't be real, she's in my head

Zeni: Calm down or else they going to sedate you again and strap you on the bedMe: You a figment of my imagination! You not real

Zeni: I am real

Nurse: Mongz calm down

I saw the Dr walking in followed by two other male Nurses. One of the Nurses washolding a tray..

Me: You not real..

Dr: Mongz it's me.. Do you recognize me?

Me: She's not real

Dr: Mongezi??

Me: She's a figment of my imaginationDr:

Who?

I pointed at the door..

Me: Her

Dr: He is hallucinating

Me: Make her stop Dr:

Who?

Me: I didn't kill her.. Make her stop

The two male Nurses slowly walked up to me..

Dr: It's okay Mongz.. It's okay, we not going to hurt you

Me: I didn't kill her.. Make her stop, she's driving me crazy.. Make her go away!!!

—

NOMFUND

O

Mom: We going to be fine

Me: Are you sure?

Mom: I have two kids Fufu.. I know how to look after a baby, plus you going out for a few hours

Me: Thank you Mama for coming over

Her: It's okay

Me: I would take him but.. I'm doing serious shopping going from shop to shop
Her: Go already before he wakes up

Me: Okay... I'll see you guys later

Mom: Okay

I took my bag and walked to the door..Me:

I'll be back soon

Mom: Bye Fufu

I opened the door and made my way out, if Jojo bought the nappies as how I instructed him too then I wouldn't be going out.. When I walked down the stairs I bumped into the maintenance man, I'm talking about literally bumping into him..

Me: I'm so sorry

Him: I should be the one apologizing

He had on a cap, glasses, and his hair was a bit long. It was blonde..Me:

Are you new?

Him: Excuse me?

Me: I don't recognize you

Him: I'm just filling up for the usual guy, he will be back next weekMe:

Ohw

Him: While we talking.. What's your flat number?

Me: Uhm

Him: I have the list with me, I got it downstairs and I have all the spare keys. Since yougoing out I might as well start with your flat

He showed me the list..

Him: Here are my credentialsHe

showed me his card..

Him: You can even call the manager downstairs to confirmMe:

What maintenance are you doing today?

Him: Just changing light bulbs.. I won't even take that longMe:

Okay.. Let me sign next to my surname

He handed me the pen..

Him: Thank you very much Mam'

Me: Please call me Nomfundo

Him: Thank you very much Nomfundo

I signed next to my surname and flat number

–

NONTSIKELEL

O

I felt somehow being here, jail is scary even when you here for a mere visit. I looked at the time, I don't know what was taking Ndarha so long because most of prisoners were already interacting with their visitors.

I didn't think I would ever come to visit, but he is my husband and I vowed that I'll be there for him in good and bad times.. The door opened and the Warden walked him out, I stood up as they slowly made their way to me. My heart sank as I saw him in that state, the Warden was even holding him in a rough manner as he led him to me. Looking at him from a close range, I was overwhelmed by sadness. My heart broke into a million pieces. His one eye was very swollen, the other one wasn't so impressive either. His face was bruised and swollen too, he had a cut on his lower lip and visible bite marks on his neck that were red. The guard let him go and then he left us, Ndarha took his time when it came to sitting down. I sat down while still looking at him. He leaned forward while groaning in pain, somehow it was very uncomfortable for him to sit comfortably on the chair..

I tried to keep calm but I couldn't, my tears fell.. Him:

Don't.. Don't.. Don't.. Don't do that

I extended my hand to him, I didn't even have any words. My chest moved up and down as I tried very hard not to cry, my lips were trembling..

I saw tears gathering too in his other eye, he extended his hand to wipe mine... They were breaking my husband inside there, I didn't know that Prison can be this difficult..

Him: I need you.. I need you to be strong for the kids, I don't think I'm going to make it

He coughed up blood and put his hand on his ribs, I think he caused himself pain when he coughed..

I shook my head no..

Me: Don't say that

I gently wiped off the blood from his lips as tears fell on his side. He laid his head on my hand.. I heard him sobbing..

I put my hand on his hand and sobbed too..

Guard: No touching!!

86

MR MABUZA

I received a call from the hospital with regards to Mongz. I dropped everything that I was busy with and drove there to find out what's going on. I don't understand my son's sudden relapse, he was doing so well I don't know what caused him to go back to that dark and disturbing state.. When I walked into his ward I was not happy to see what they did to him, he was strapped to his bed..

Me: What is going on? Why is my Son strapped?

Dr: I understand your confusion Mr Mabuzza and please allow me to explain
Me: He is not an animal

Dr: That he is not, but your son is currently a danger to himself and others
Me:

What?

Nurse: When I brought him his medication earlier on this morning, he had an episode
I looked at her..

Nurse: He was hallucinating, he literally threw a chair at an open door
Me:

What are you talking about?

Nurse: It was more like he was seeing someone and he kept on repeating the statement "I did not kill you, you not real, please make her go away"

This was all confusing..

Dr: He was at the verge of hurting himself so we were forced to sedate him
I looked at him..

Dr: We going to need your permission to have him transferred to a mental facility
Me: No..

Dr: Sir Please. He will get the help that he needs, he needs psychiatric intervention
Me: My son has been doing well.. What could've caused his relapse?

Dr: He kept on uttering the word "Zeni" do you know any person by that name?

Me: Yes I do.. Zeni is his ex girlfriend that passed on. She leaped off from the balcony at the Mirage hotel

Dr: Her death might have caused him to relapse, I think it was too much for him

Me: That's a bit of a stretch. Zeni and Mongz weren't together anymore, they long broke up and he was happy with someone else

Dr: That's why we suggest that he should be transferred to a mental facility, so that a psychiatrist can get to the bottom of it all

Putting my Son in a mental institution was not something that I wanted to do..

Dr: I know it's tough but it's for the best. His behaviour is no longer normal, he is a threat to himself and others.. He might do a lot of damage

(Silence)

Me: Where are the forms? The

Dr looked at the Nurse..

Dr: Please get the forms so Mr Mabuza can sign The

Nurse went to get the forms..

—

TASH

The PI had contacted me and told me to meet up with him at the usual spot. I was very nervous, I couldn't stand still I kept on pacing up and down.. From a distance I saw his car approaching, I let out a sigh of relief. He didn't say much on the phone but whatever it is, I know that involves Jojo's baby. I wonder if he managed to pull out this job perfectly, I don't want any loose ends.. He parked next to my car and I waited for him to make his way to me. I wonder what he did to the baby, and I hope nothing comes back to us. I won't be able to deal with Jojo's anger..

Him: How are you? I

looked at him..

Me: So did you do it?

My heart was on my knees..

Him: Come here for a sec

I followed him to his car.. Me:

Did you do it? Yes or no?Him:

You will see

He opened the door at the backseats and then leaned over, he came back with babyLonwabo who was sleeping..

Me: What is this?

He fixed his blanket..

Him: When you contacted me and then we met, I saw it in your eyes that you weren't sure about what you were asking me to do. Usually when a client is like that, I back offbecause when things get heated you will easily give us up..

Me: So you decided to kidnap him?

Him: Yes

He handed him to me..

Me: Are you insane?

Him: I want you to think about your request, after spending maybe a week or two with him then you can contact me again and I'll do the job for you. I want you to be sure first

Me: I can't keep him at my place I am in a relationship with his Father

Him: Who said anything about keeping him at your place? Find a relative that you can trust. A relative who will look after him

Me: Do you know that I am going to be the first suspect? Me and his Mom don't get along

Him: volunteerarily take a lie detector test

Me: Sometimes I ask myself if you really smart or you just taking chances?

Him: I will give you pills to help calm your nerves, you will drink them 30min before the test

Me: Won't they test me for drugs?

Him: That's your problem.. I'm just helping you to pass the test

I looked at baby Lonwabo..

Me: This is not good

Him: His Mom is in town, so you still have time to drive to a relative's place and then create an alibi for yourself

I noticed a green stain on his polar fleece..Me: Did

you make him drink something?

Him: Panado syrup to knock him out

Me: What?

Him: That's nothing compared to what you want done to himMe:

This was not part of the plan

Him: I'm making it a part of the plan.. I'll get his things from my car, they should carry you through for a few days. Buying baby stuff now would give you away

He went to his trunk to get Lonwabo's things.

Him: You will have to move fast before they go to the police..

—

NDARH

A

Everyone was out as always getting on about their business. Some were carrying out chores, some were selling cigarettes, drugs, and weed. Some were just getting a bit of sunlight and fresh air. Due to the nature of my bruises I wasn't fit to be out so I was locked inside the cell....

I was laying on my bed and thinking about my wife, If I knew it was her I wouldn't have went. I didn't want her to see me in this state.. She has always known me as a strong and powerful man, I had no idea that jail could break you like this. I thought this situation would be easy, I thought that it would just be me against the general fighting it off. Never did I think that going against him would be going against the whole gang.

Tears streamed down at the sides of my face when I dated back to every cruel act that I

did. The pain that I have caused others. I remember how scared and unwilling Armani was when I had that first sexual encounter with her. I remember she tried her level best not to make noise, she fought back tears and despite seeing her in that state I carried on. I pressed my hand harder against her mouth to prevent her from screaming.. I can't forget the day when I found out that my Sister was sexually abusing Jojo, it was easy for me to brush it off because he wasn't my blood. I didn't care and looking back I should've cared, he trusted me to protect him as his Father.. Xoliswa's case is the most hardest to remember, beating my Daughter as if like she had no soul. I was so angry when I found out about her being lesbian, I thought beating her until her flesh peeled off would change her but it didn't. Instead, it destroyed her..

Maybe I do deserve everything that's happening to me right now, but I would rather die than to keep on having another man do this to me... It makes me weak and I am anything but weak..

—

ARMAN

I

I moved on and checked another picture, then I checked the next and the next until I stumbled on the one that I liked the most. I looked at it for a very long time until tears started falling. It has been a while since he last posted anything on social media. Our relationship was nice and Mongz seemed perfect, why did he have to go and do this to us? Why did he ruin something that was so beautiful. I was surprised at the fact that he hasn't called nor forced his way in and demanded to see me, has he moved on to the next victim? Is this what he does?

I heard a knock at the door, It was my Father. I put the phone away..Him:

Thando

Me: Baba

Him: Unjani namhlanje? (how are you today)

Me: ak'fani nak'qala (It's not like how I was a few days ago)He

took off his hat...

They have been staying at my place ever since the shooting, he told me that they would leave when I get discharged and ready to run my supermarket again..

Him: uMadlamini no MaPhiri bakwenzele naku ukudla (Your Grandmother and your step

mother prepared something for you)Me:

Ngiyabonga (Thank you)

He sat down..

Me: Baba

He looked..

This was difficult for me to ask..

Me: Bendicela torho ukuba Umongezi a- (I was asking that Mongezi sho-)Him:

Besikhulumile ngalo mfana (We spoke about this boy)

Me: Kodwa what if he is not behind the shooting? I would like to see him so that we cantalk

Him: Angeke kwenzeke lokho Thando (That won't happen)

My Father is very protective when it comes to me, to him it doesn't matter that he foundme at a later stage but... He still carries out his Fatherly duties..

—

NOMFUND

O

My Mother wasn't picking up my calls which got me very worried. Usually she picks up when I call so I decided to leave the mall right away to go and check on them. I am veryparanoid when it comes to my baby, that 9 months and lengthy hours of labour were nota walk in the park.. I parked my car at my spot then quickly made my way to the elevator,I tried her again but still her phone rang unanswered.. When I got to my flat the securitydoor wasn't locked, the door wasn't locked too. I made my way in..

Everything seemed to be in order, except for my Mother who was laying unconscious onthe floor in the lounge. I dropped everything that I was holding and made my to her..

Me: Ma?? Mama?

I checked her out and her breathing was very shallow..Me:

Lonwabo!

I got up and made my way to the bedroom, Lonwabo wasn't there. I checked the other

bedroom and he wasn't there either, some of his things were even missing..Me:

Noooooo!!!!

It felt like the world was closing in on me..Me:

Where is my Baby??

I made my way back to the lounge confused as ever..Me:

Ohh my word Jojo is going to kill me!

All of this seemed unreal, this cannot be happening...

—

TASH

I rang the door bell..

Baby Lonwabo was still fast asleep. I rang the door bell again while looking around..Tebogo: I'm coming!

This was a mess, things were not supposed to go this way.. The door opened, and I quickly forced my way in..

Tebogo: Whoa! What has gotten into you?

She closed the door and then turned around and looked at me..Her:

Tash.. What's going on?

Me: You have to help me

Her: Help you with what?

Me: I.. Please

Her: Whose baby is that?

Me: It's Jojo's Son

Her: What are you doing with his Son? I thought the baby Mama hated your gutsMe: I had him kidnapped Tebz

Her: You did what?

Me: I need you to take care of him, maybe for a week or soHer:

Are you even hearing yourself?

Me: Tebz please I'm begging you.. Please help me

—

NOMFUND

O

Me: Please pick up.. Please pick up.. (whispering)Jojo:

Hello

Me: Jojo it's me..

Him: I know it's you

I tried to collect myself..

Him: Is everything okay?

I shook my head with tears falling..

Him: Nomfundo??

Me: Someone..

I closed my eyes and swallowed..

Me: Someone came into the flat and took LonwaboHim:

What? What are you talking about?

Me: I.. I left him with my Mom because I needed to go to town, when I came back myMom was on the floor and then.. I.. I checked everywhere for Lonwabo and he is not around. Some of his things are missing too.. Someone took him (Crying)

Him: What do you mean that someone took him? Nomfundo where is my Son??Me: I'm sorry... (Crying)

87

ARMANI

I did not expect to see Mr Mabuza walk into my ward, just after approximately 10min of my Father being gone. The last time we spoke I made it clear to him that I wanted to be with his son, now that everything is not going according to plan I am a bit embarrassed to even look him in the eye..

Him: Good day

Me: Good day

Him: May I?

He pointed at the empty chair and I nodded, he sat down..Him:

How are you?

Me: I'm getting there, and how are you?

Him: I'm well

(Silence)

Him: Mongz told me a while back that you were admitted because you got shot. Failed house break in?

Me: Sort off

Him: I'm sorry about that

Me: It's okay

Him: Honestly speaking I'm here for other reasonsMe:

Okay?

Him: Has Mongz been here to see you?I

shook my head no..

Him: That's because he hasn't been himself latelyMe: I

am not following

Him: Mongz is going to be transferred from the hospital to a mental facilityMy eyes widened..

Me: Why? What happened?

Him: Honestly I don't know Armani, I don't know what triggered his hallucinations I was hoping that maybe you would tell me you know, if you know anything

I didn't say anything..

Him: The Dr said it had to do with Senzeni's suicide, he has been saying things that don't make sense.. I need clarity

Me: I seriously don't know anything

I wasn't going to tell him about what I know with regards to Senzeni's passing, If Mongzis indeed in a mental facility then Mr Mabuza has to be there for him. I'm not about to create tension between them

Me: I did notice that Senzeni's passing was a bit hard on him

Him: What I don't understand is him breaking down like this.. Mongz and Senzeni broke up a long time ago and he survived the break up, why would he break down now when he has definitely moved on.. It doesn't make sense

Me: That's true.. It doesn't make any sense I

cleared my throat..

Me: I would really like to visit him when I get discharged Him:

I will have you jotted down on the visitor's list

Me: Thank you

Him: I do appreciate you being there for him, maybe seeing a familiar face might help Me: I'm sure it will

It was shocking to hear that Mongz was losing it, he seemed perfectly fine to me the last time I saw him..

—

NOMFUND

O

The Police were now in my flat, The building manager was here and so was Jojo. My Mother had been taken by Paramedics, apparently she was injected with some substance. Her breathing was very shallow so Paramedics wasted no time and rushed her to the hospital.. The Police questioned me, I told them everything that I remembered

including the maintenance man that I bumped into when I was making my way to my car. Jojo kept his eyes on me all the time as I was busy giving out my statement..

Officer: Sir please clarify something, how often does the maintenance guy?

Manager: We have a contract with some company that sends us their employees for maintenance around here. Maintenance is done twice a month, unless if there's an emergency. Tenants are not supposed to give out their information to the maintenance crew and the crew does not access any flat without my permission. I need to go with them to each and every flat to make sure that they don't steal anything and also that they do a proper job. I always inform the security downstairs with a walkie-talkie about every flat that we enter, and I hold the keys to the flats. We usually take out a notice 2 weeks before and let all our tenants know about the maintenance, this for those who won't be around they sign a form that they giving us permission to access their flat. The guy Nomfundo saw is definitely not one of the maintenance guys, I wasn't around today so such cannot be carried out in my absentia

I closed my eyes and let tears streamed down as he said that, how can I be so foolish?

Jojo: If I understand this correctly you literally gave this guy your identity and easy access to take my son? He didn't know who you were but you gave yourself away when you signed next to your name on the form that he was carrying?

I nodded...

Jojo: Where the any other signatures there? Me:

No.. Only mine

Jojo: You live on the 4th floor, it didn't strike you that maintenance starts from the ground floor all the way up?

Me: I didn't-

Jojo: You indirectly gave this guy permission to kidnap our son because of your stupidity

That was uncalled for..

Officer: What I don't understand is how did he get the list of all the flat numbers and their owners?

Jojo: What I don't understand is how stupid and careless you were in this situation

Nomfundo!

The officer turned to him..

Officer: Sir do you perhaps need some fresh air?Jojo

clicked his tongue and walked out..

Manager: Obviously he bribed the security downstairs to give him the listOfficer: How many security guards are on duty today?

Manager: 3

Officer: We will talk to them

I wiped my tears as I looked at his elephant teddy bear..

Officer: We going to do everything that we can to find him.. I promise youMe:

Thank you

Officer: Let's go down and talk to the security

Manager: Okay

They walked out while the Forensics team stayed behind dusting for fingerprints andchecking for other evidence..

Jojo came back and didn't say anything to me for a while.. He buried his hands deep inhis pockets..

Him: You better pray that we find him and when we do, I am going to fight for solecustody

I looked at him..

Me: You can't do that

Him: Obviously you not fit to look after my Son

Me: I didn't do this on Purpose okay?

Him: You know the protocol of maintenance around here but still Nomfundo..

Me: Jojo please I don't wanna fight with you, My son is somewhere out there probablycrying and wondering why he is not feeling his Mommy's presence. Yes I do blame

myself for his disappearance, I should've been more cautious. I shouldn't have trusted that guy but he seemed legit at that moment. Lonwabo is my life you don't understand how broken I am right now, so please I don't wanna do this with you or anyone..I just want my baby back home, I want him back in my arms were he belongs that's all (Crying)

–

NDARH

A

I wasn't expecting to see the President back so soon, and I also wasn't expecting for him to come back to the same cell. I rose up and sat up straight as he made his way in, the Warden locked behind him..

Me: What are you doing here? Him:

I was in this cell remember?

Me: I paid the Warden for you to be moved to a different cellHe
looked confused..

Me: Forgot that he's dead, The General killed him

Him: What are you doing here? Shouldn't you be with the 28s?Me: The
General obviously wants my soul

He shook his head and sat down next to me..Him:

Let me guess? He did this to you?

I nodded..

Him: I never thought jail would be this messed up, I mean once upon a time we werevery
powerful.. If our foes could see us now

(Silence)

Him: Mabuza might be made the acting presidentMe: I

still can't believe he did this to us

Him: There's no use crying about it now, what needs to happen is for us to plan on howwe going
to take down the General.. This cannot be our everyday life

Me: Especially if we get a harsh sentence

Him: You and I ran the country down, we cannot be defeated by one Person

Me: We need to come up with a plan, and we need to come up with one very fast

—

TASH

Everything made me jumpy, if something falls I would literally freak out. I was back at work trying to get everything done, but it was a bit difficult with everything that was going on.. My phone rang, It was Jojo. I took a deep breath and then answered...

Me: Hello

Him: Hey are you at work?

Me: Yes.. Where are you?

Him: Lonwabo was kidnapped earlier this morningMe:

What? You joking right?

Him: No I'm not..

Me: What happened? How did it happen?

Him: Nomfundo happened.. She's the reason why my Son got kidnappedMe: What did she do?

Him: I don't even wanna get to it, talking about it will just make me more mad

Me: I don't think she intentionally did anything to have her son kidnapped, she is Lonwabo's Mother. She cares about him more than anyone and anything else

Him: When we find him.. I'm going to fight for sole custodyMe:

Jojo that's extreme

Him: I don't trust her with my Son anymore

Me: So what did the Police say? Are there any leads so far?He exhaled..

Him: No

Me: I'm sorry.. I wish that I could do something

Him: Just run my company for me in the meantime and also inform the staff
Me: I'll definitely do that

Him: I love you Tash

Me: I love you too

Him: I call you later

Me: Okay.. Know that I'm here for you

Him: I know

Me: Bye

He hung up.. I put the phone down and let out a sigh of relief..

—

TEBOG

O

As much as I love Tash but she has always been a bit dangerous. Tash is very smart, and at times she uses her brains for Sinister purposes and I don't like that.. I looked at Baby Lonwabo still passed out and the human part of me just wanted to call the police, but another part of me didn't want to betray Tash like that. A solution to this has to be found, because my Husband is coming back home in a week's time. I cannot hide a baby here..

88

NOMFUNDO

My Father thought that it wouldn't be safe for me to be alone. I was confused, I was emotional and I blamed myself for what happened. I should've been more vigilant, I should've known better than to give a stranger such information. My Sister came down to be with me up until there's progress in the case. The pain I was feeling was beyond me, every time when I closed my eyes and tried to sleep I swear I would hear him crying. Is he fed wherever he is, are they taking good care of him, and who would do this? A lot was running through my mind..

Social media was buzzing with this issue,

#BringBackBabyLonwabo was even trending on Twitter at first I thought maybe Jojo turned to the public for help, until my Sister showed me some video which made me more and more upset. It was Tash giving out a statement about my son to the press, the video was uploaded on Twitter..

Tash: "It is with great sadness that I should inform the public about the abduction of my Step Son, Baby Lonwabo. Unfortunately both his Parents are devastated to even come forward and talk to the media about this, so as the next closest person to them I was asked to give out this statement. Baby Lonwabo was taken from his home earlier today, we don't know by who and we don't know why. The police doesn't have any suspect in custody so we pleading with the public to come forward should you know something.

His picture has been uploaded on social media platforms so please be on the lookout. If the abductor is watching, please bring Baby Lonwabo back home. He is just a baby and he needs his Mom. Thank you"

Me: What the hell?

Sis: Did she talk to you about this?

Me: No! Of course not!

I looked around..

Me: Dammit where is my phone? Sis:

What do you wanna do with it? Me:

Where is it?

I spotted it on the couch then I went and got it..I called the office, the receptionist picked up. I didn't even wait for her to finish greeting..

Me: This is Nomfundo please put me through to Tash

Receptionist: Yes Mam! Please hold on a sec I'll call and find out if she's in the office and then connect you

I waited..

Tash: Hello Nomfundo, I was just on my way out- Me:

Who the hell do you think you're?

Tash: Sorry?

Me: The statement you made to the Press, who gave you the permission to do that?

Her: Jojo called earlier and told me to inform everyone about this.. I'm sorry if I've offended you I was just trying to help. Maybe someone out there has information ab-

I chuckled in disbelief..

Me: I cannot believe you right now! For all I know you might be behind this!

Her: Okay I feel bad that you going through such but, accusing me of such a horrific act now that's not right.. I would never hurt Jojo or you like that. I know that you and I we have a bad history but I wouldn't do something like this

I hung up..

Sis: That was a bit harsh

Me: What? Tash is capable of such, you don't know how conniving that woman is! I'm telling you she is behind this

My Sister shook her head..

Her: Why?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I don't know yet

Her: She knows that it would ruin her relationship with Jojo, why would she risk it? Me: I

don't know okay.. I don't know

—

JOJO

I waited for him to be brought in, and I didn't expect to see him in such a state. I looked at him as he sat down slowly. My Father has always been a powerful man, we have feared him most of our lives and to see him like this.. It was very weird..

Him: I was wondering when you would show up Me:

What happened to you?

Him: I think it's self explanatory

(Silence)

Him: Why haven't you contacted Osb-Me:

My son got kidnapped today Him:

What?

Me: I need to know that you not behind it

Him: Excuse me?

Me: You sent your lawyer to my place, to tell me that "The threat is real"

Him: I was talking about the threat of you killing Bonza not kidnapping your babyI

looked at him..

Him: I am penniless, how can I orchestrate a kidnapping while I don't have money to paythe person and if it hasn't dawned on you, I am in Prison!

Well what he was saying made sense..

Him: Xolelwa is pregnant with a baby girl, you the only one currently with a boy. He isgoing to continue with the Ndarha legacy why would I wanna ruin that?

I exhaled.. He had a point..

Him: How did it happen?

Me: Nomfundo happened. She left Lonwabo with her Mother and went to town, she bumped into someone who posed as a maintenance guy and he tricked her into givingup her identity. Nomfundo being stupid she gave him all the information

Him: She's not stupid, such things you never prepare for them I'm sure she was caughtoff guard

Me: I don't know what to do, with every passing moment my Son's life remains in dangerHim: Was there any forced entry?

Me: No.. I think Nomfundo's mom opened for him willingly when she thought it was theguy doing Maintenance

Him: This sounds like a crime of passion, whoever did this is close to you two

Me: You think?

Him: A total stranger would've done a sloppy job, this person knows you and Nomfundo personally so it's someone who's within your circle

Me: I never looked at it that way

Him: Look within your circle, it'll be much faster

I nodded..

Me: I'll contact Osborne and see what we can do

Him: Concentrate on finding your Son

Me: Obviously you having a tough time in there

Him: I'll survive

I shook my head no..

Me: I'm suspecting it's gang related?

Him: Sort off

Me: kill the leader, in that way you will gain respect

Him: It's not that easy, he always has people around even when he goes to the bathroom for security reasons

Me: Then do it in front of everyone when he less expects it

Me: That's too dangerous, his gang is going to kill me

Him: That's the only way to gain respect, it's not the brightest idea but doing it in front of everyone will definitely gain you respect.. Think about it

—

MONG

Z

I slowly opened my eyes to a room that was very bright. The wall didn't look like the one at the hospital, it was pure white.. I was still feeling a bit over the edge, I was feeling drowsy and some type of way.. I turned my head and I saw some gentleman sitting on the chair holding what looked like a file, when I tried to move my hands they were tied to the bunks of the bed..

Me: What is happening?

Him: Good day Mongezi.. I am Dr Shai, I am a psychiatristMe:

Where am I?

Him: You're at the St Anne psychiatric hospital

I tried freeing myself but the straps were very tight..Me:

You can't detain me here without my permission

Him: I understand that very well but since you not in any state to make rationaldecisions your Father signed for you to be adm-

Me: My Father would never do that to me

Him: Mongezi I understand how scary this is for you but trust me, I'm here to help youMe: I don't need help, I don't need a psychiatric hospital

Him: Yes you do need help Me:

This cannot be happening

Him: When they brought you in you were still out, you were mumbling a word "Senzeni" is she of any significance to you?

Me: Look I had an episode okay, it happens once in a while

Him: You were hallucinating Mongezi and it wasn't a once in a while thingI stole trying to free myself..

Him: Talk to me.. Who is Senzeni?

—

ARMAN

I

Dr: You doing very well, I'm happy with your progressMe:

Thank you.. When can I go home?

Dr: It's too early, I still wanna monitor your recovery and progressI sighed..

Me: Can I ask you something?

Dr: Yes

Me: Where you serious about me not being able to conceive anymore? Dr:

There's a high possibility that your womb won't carry a baby full term That was disappointing..

Dr: I'm sorry

Me: It's okay

Dr: I'll get the Nurse to come and change your bandages Me:

Thank you

He walked out..

–

TASH

The burner phone started ringing, I looked around and answered. I bought two burner phones for me and Tebza to communicate, they untraceable..

Me: Hello?

Her: He's awake and crying

Me: Well give him his bottle I

heard Lonwabo crying..

Her: I tried he doesn't want it

Me: Check his nappy or something

Her: I did all that Tash.. I think he misses his Mom

Me: He is just a baby! Surely there's something that can be done to keep him quiet Her: Tash

Nomfundo was breastfeeding, I heard breastfed babies are a problem Me: Think of something Tebza

Her: Think of what? I'm not qualified to take care of a baby and so are you, we're taking a big risk here

Me: He is just a baby!!!!

I turned around and Jojo was standing at the door, The phone slipped from my hand and it fell..

Him: Who is that?

All of a sudden, my throat raised no words..89

ARMANI

I remembered Xolelwa coming here the other day and crying, so I decided to call Master. Him: Dali

Me: Yazi wena

Him: Unjani? (How are you)

Me: I'm getting there

Him: I'm glad to hear that, I'll check up on you when I come there Me:

You should

Him: I will

Me: Anyway I wanted to talk to you about something Him:

Ya?

Me: Xolelwa came to see me the other day and she broke down, she said you cheating He laughed..

Me: It's not funny Master, she was truly broken

Him: Uyahlanya u Xolelwa (Xolelwa is crazy) Me:

What's happening?

Him: Nothing I just gave a female colleague a lift, then things went left from there

Me: It's probably hormones

Him: Xolelwa uyatefa these days (Xolelwa is a cry baby these days)

Me: But try not to upset her because she told me that her BP is unstable
Him: She's stressing herself about useless things

Me: Master don't upset her

Him: I'll try not too

Me: Alright

Him: ube grand yezwa? (Be well)

Me: I will

Him: Sharp

Me: Bye

—

TASH

He made his way to me and then picked up the burner phone, he looked at it..Him:

What are you doing with a burner phone?

I cleared my throat..

Me: Since I gave out a statement to the press earlier on about Lonwabo, I got one to receive calls from the public you know if someone has an information. I didn't want to use my phone because some other calls are a waste of time

He went through it for a minute..

Him: Only one contact?

Me: So far only one Person called

He redialed the number and put it on louder speaker..Tebza:

Hello?

He looked at me..

Tebza: Hello?I

swallowed..

Jojo: Hi.. Who is this?

The line went dead..

Me: She called me, I was actually speaking to her now now before you cameHim:

Yeah?

Me: Yes though she was just venting that you deserve what's happening, hence I kept on saying "He's a baby" why would she wish such evil on an innocent baby

He nodded..

Him: I'm gonna hold on to this, maybe she will call againMe:

No problem.. You can hold on to it

Him: I don't know why you didn't get a normal phone

Me: It was a quick thing, I needed to get a phone right awayHim: I

understand.. Thank you for trying to help us

Me: You welcome

Him: I was actually going out to the police station to see the progress of the caseMe: Of

course..Please keep me updated

Him: I will

He came up to me and kissed me..

Him: I'll call you later

Me: If you forget I'll call.. I know you have a lot on your mindHim:

Yeah this whole situation is messed up

I put my hand on his cheek..

Me: We will find him

He held my hand and kissed it..

Him: I know

I faked a smile..

Him: Let me be on my way.. I love you

Me: I love you too

He kissed me again and then made his way out. For a moment there I felt extremely bad, seeing him this broken and knowing that I'm the reason behind his pain really made me feel bad about myself...

—

NDARH

A

Rama came to us, we were sitting outside. The general and his hooligans were at their usual spot..

Rama: It's been a while since I last saw youMe:

Things have been crazy

Him: He did this to you?

Me: Something like that

Him: You need to come back to the old cell, we can work something out with the Warden

Me: They won't allow, The general runs this place remember

President: His word is final

Me: Tell me something Rama, are your men prepared for war?Him:

My Man are always prepared for war

Me: Then this means war.. I'm going to need them

Rama: Give me the word and we will come throughMe:

Good..

—

XOLELWA

Mom: She's not picking upI
sat down..

Me: I can only imagine how she feels, I would literally die if someone kidnapped my baby

Mom: I don't know what dark cloud has fallen on our family but... This is not funanymore

Me: Maybe we should drive up to her place and see how she's holding upMom: I'll
go.. You will stay here

Me: I wanna come with

Mom: You already having problems of your own health wise, I want you to focus on thebaby

Me: Now I feel bad that I have to leave when everything is this messed up

Her: Don't feel bad, it's a good thing that you'll be leaving for Witbank. You'll be awayfrom all
this stress and that's exactly what you need

Me: I just hope that they will find him soon

Her: Me too

–

MONG

Z

I wasn't strapped anymore, the Dr took my straps off..Nurse:

Here is your medication

Me: Thank you

I drank the pills..

Me: You look a bit young to be a Nurse

Her: What kind of Nurses have you been meeting?Me: Old

ones

She chuckled..

Her: I am not that young

Me: But you younger than the ones I've had an encounter withHer:

That's sad for you then

Me: I'll survive

At that instant I saw Zeni standing at the door, this was becoming tiring for me now..Zeni: Made a new friend?

I closed my eyes for a sec..

Zeni: I'm not going anywhere MongzI

opened my eyes again..

Zeni: I'm not going anywhere

Nurse: Hey look at me

She put her hand on my chin and made me to face her..Her:

Have you ever asked her what she wants?

That shocked me a little..

Me: She's.. She's not real

Her: If you seeing her, then she's real to you

Me: Why are you doing this? Why are you trying to convince me that she's real whileshe's not?

Her: That's not what I'm trying to do

Me: Then what are you trying to do?

Zeni made her way in and closely looked at the Nurse..

Her: If she keeps on coming back then there's something she wants, instead of blockingher from your brain how about you face her and ask her exactly what she wants

Me: I'm not comfortable with this

Her: It's the only way you can be rid of her

Me: Is what you doing even allowed?

She chuckled..

Her: I don't think so but then I don't think you crazy, I don't think you hallucinating. I think she is haunting you in a sense

Me: I see

Her: We should go outside so you can get some air just like everyone else I got out of bed..

Her: Maybe fresh air will do you good

Me: Ya maybe

I put on my sleepers and then I heard a knock at the door..Me:

Come in

The door opened and the Dr made his way in..

Him: How are you feeling now?

Me: better I guess

He nodded..

Him: Going somewhere?

Me: We getting fresh air

Him: "We"

Me: Yes.. Me and the Nurse

Him: What Nurse?

I looked around and it was just me and him in the room..

Him: Mongz.. I haven't assigned you a Nurse as yet, no one has come to your room other than me

Me: No.. I was talking to.. I had a Nurse up in here

Him: No you didn'tI

kept quiet..

Me: What is happening to me Doc?

—

JOJO

I drove straight to Xoliswa's workplace, she excused herself so that we could talk..Her: Hey

Man

Me: Hey

Her: How are you holding up?

Me: It was difficult at first but now.. I think I know who is behind my Son'sdisappearance

Her: Who?

Me: It's Tash

Her: What?

Me: Tash had my Son kidnapped I'm very sure about thatHer: How

did you.. I mean.. Tash?

I handed him the Burner phone..

Me: We need to track down this number, I think she's working with this personHer: I'll

see what I can do

Me: Thanks Man

Her: You very calm about this

Me: She has my Son I don't wanna piss her off and I don't want her to suspect anything,one mistake she might have him killed.. I'll deal with her after

Her: I get you.. I'll try to track down the number and get back to youMe: I'd

appreciate that.

NOMFUNDO

Jojo came later on with takeaways, I was still laying on the couch and thinking about Lonwabo. I actually had cried myself to sleep and then when I woke up, the pain was still the same. Nothing had changed.. He pulled the coffee table closer to the couch and then sat on top of it, he put his hand on my thigh.

Him: When was the last time you ate something?Me:

I'm not hungry

Him: You need to eat something

Me: Why do you even care?

Him: I'm sorry about this morning

Me: You practically made me sound like a horrible Mother

Him: I know and I'm sorry.. I was mad and I needed someone to blame, it seemed fitting at that moment to shift the blame on you

Me: I would never put my son's life in danger like that (Crying)He got up from the table and then crouched in front of me... Him: I'm truly sorry

He wiped my tears..

Him: I'm going to find him and bring him home to you... I promiseMe: I want my baby home (Crying)

Him: I know.. It's going to be okay

He kissed me on my cheek..

Him: I need you to be strong.. I need you to hold on, It hurts me to see you breaking down like this. You have been crying the whole day. I think you need to take a bath, eat something, and then rest a little.. Can you do that for me?

I nodded..

He stood up straight..

Him: I'll run the bath for you Me:

What if Tash took him? Him:

Why would you think that?

Me: She hates me and in her mind she's convinced that you and I are hitting it off

Him: I don't think Tash would go that far, she wouldn't risk our relationship like that and she most definitely wouldn't risk her life

Me: Risk her life?

Him: She knows I would kill her

He held my hand..

Him: Come on.. Let's prepare a bath for you

—

XOLELW

A

I drove to my Sister's place to go and see her, Xoliswa is scarce these days she doesn't even visit home. She hugged me for a while...

Her: Are you okay? I

nodded..

Me: I'm good

Her: Do you want something to eat or drink? Me:

Maybe something to drink

Her: Okay I'll pour you some juice

She poured me juice..

Me: Thank you

Her: What's been happening? Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is okay just wanted to check up on you

Her: You could've called me instead of driving all the wayMe:

I don't mind because I needed some fresh her

Her: If you say so

Me: Where is Loli?

Her: She's at school

Me: Okay

Her: How are things between you and your boyfriend?Me:

Things are okay between us

Her: That's good to hearI

drank the juice..

Me: I was actually thinking

Her: Thinking about what?

Me: How about we go and see Dad?

She raised one of her eyebrows..

Her: Are you sure about that?

Me: Yes I'm sure

Her: we will go and see him when I get time, it has been busy at the shop latelyMe: I

understand

Her: I'll try and make time

Me: Okay.. That'll be good

Whatever happened, despite his behaviour he is still our Father..

—

TASH

Tebza: Were you followed?

Me: No I wasn't

Her: Thank God

She looked drained and tired..

Her: I finally got him to sleep again, he has been in a mood the whole dayMe: He

will get used to the environment and you

She yawned..

Her: Tash what is your plan? And what happened to your burner phone?Me: I

think Jojo is on to us

Her eyes widened..

Her: What?

Me: He is suspecting me

Her: This is getting out of hand now, you need to figure out something or Jojo is going to kill us. If he doesn't then my husband is going to kill us, he is coming back home soon

Me: Maybe we should have him cremated and dropped his Ashes at Nomfundo'sdoorstep

Her: Are you insane?

Me: Nomfundo will learn to get off her high horse

Her: Tash whether you kill the baby or not it won't change anything

Me: I just want her to get off her high horse and be humble. Ever since the baby she hasbeen acting like Miss Universe. What if their closeness because of him, becomes morethan "Co-Parenting". I won't lose him to Nomfundo! That will never happen

She exhaled...

Her: We are not killing the Baby Tash, that's not going to happen he is innocent! Whatever it is that's happening between you and his Mom is not his fault. If you trulylove Jojo then you won't do this, Period!

—

MONGZ

I was laying on the bed facing up and lost deep in my thoughts. I didn't understand what was happening to me, I didn't understand why all of this nonsense was happening to me..

Voice: Hey

I tilted my head and she was standing at the corner of the room..Me: You

not real

Nurse: I know.. I'm only real to you

Me: I usually have hallucinations of People that I know, People I've had an encounter with before. I don't know you, I've never met you before

She made her way to me..

Her: May I?

I sat up straight and she sat next to me..

Her: Unlike others, you've never met me before because you created meMe: I did

what?

Her: When Senzeni started to haunt you, your brain created me as a place of safety for you to run too. The reason why you see me, the reason why I exist to you is because your hallucinations are vivid. It's no different from someone who creates an imaginary world to escape a harsh reality

Me: What is your name?

Her: I don't have one because you never thought of a name for meMe: You

look very real

Her: Remember only to you.. As long as your brain still believes in my existence then I am the sane part of you that's always going to chase Zeni away

Me: What exactly does she want from me?Her:

She wants you to confess

Me: I didn't kill her

Her: Physical no, but emotionally yes. Her spirit is haunting you because of the guilt you have, the blame, and regrets. She wants you to confess so your conscience can be clear

Me: I can't do that.. If I do that I'll be locked up in here for a long time

Her: Her Mother doesn't have proof, no matter what she says it'll be considered as hate towards you. You were proven innocent remember?

I kept quiet..

She stretched her hand to mine..

Her: You need to do this so that you can be free of her, so your brain can start healing I looked at her hand..

Me: Your touch feels real

Her: I know (Smiling)

Me: And you very beautiful

Her: I know that too

I stretched my hand and put it on her cheek.. Me: I

feel very much connected to you

Her: Don't do this to yourself, I am not real. When we have to part ways it will affect you a lot

Me: As long as I believe in your existence then you won't go

Her: That is true but part of your healing will make me disappear

Me: We will cross that bridge when we get there.. Alana.. The name Alana suits you best

My hallucinations have always been somewhat disturbing but her presence was very peaceful..

I leaned over and kissed her, the kiss felt real too. Nothing about her felt unreal, nothing about her felt out of place..

[REMOVED]

—

NOMFUNDO

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: come in

The door opened and Jojo walked in..

Him: You done?

Me: Yes I'm done

He looked at me while I still had the towel covering my naked body..Him: That was a long ass bath

Me: I know.. The water felt relaxing at some point

Him: That's good to hear... I'll warm something to eat for youMe:
okay

He turned and walked up to the door..Me:

Why you never loved me?

He turned and looked at me..

Him: What?

Me: Why you never loved me?

He made his way to me..

Him: It's not that I never loved you, I just didn't appreciate having you in my lifeHer:

Tash seemed better than me at that time?

Him: In a way yesI

nodded..

Me: Okay

Him: I'm sorry for everything that I've put you through beforeMe:

It's okay.. It's all in the past

There was an awkward silence for a while..

Him: I should give you som-

I moved closer to him and kissed him, he broke the kiss after a few seconds by gently pushing me away from him...

Him: We can't do this.. You don't wanna do this, you hurting Me:

I'm sorry

Him: It's okay.. I don't want it to look like I'm taking advantage of you because you vulnerable

Me: I want it to happen.. That part of me that still loves you, wants it to happen He

pulled me closer and kissed me..

[REMOVE

D]91

XOLELWA

1 MONTH LATER

Master and I we were driving to the mall to get a few things for the baby, I was excited because baby clothes are very adorable.. Things between us have been good, he is really trying hard not to upset me and he is always there for me since, this pregnancy was weighing heavy on me. I thought that pregnancy wasn't this hectic, I thought that maybe they were over exaggerating but in all honesty it has it's ups and downs.. I turned and looked at him as he concentrated on the road, a few questions were raised in my head

Our sex life is okay but, it's not always the best because we limited in doing other positions since my big tummy is always getting in the way... Right now I'm not sure if Master really enjoys having sex with me or he's just doing it for the sake of doing it, I wonder if he's still sexually attracted to me. I decided to test him out, I took off one of my sandals and then stretched my leg to him. He turned and looked at me..

Him: Wenzani? (what are you doing)

Me: I'm just stretching out my leg, my ankle is aching

He kept quiet. I couldn't keep my leg still, I kept on moving it just to create an

uncomfortable environment for him..

Him: Xolelwa putting your leg on me won't help with the aching ankleHe
looked at my exposed thick thigh since I was wearing a dress...

Him: Skat I'm driving

I got my leg off him and he shook his head..

Him: You should've told me before we left and I could've given you a massage(Silence)

Me: Do you still find me attractive, do I still turn you on?Him:

Why do you ask?

Me: I'm just wondering

Him: We have been having sex almost everyday.. Manje ukhuluma ngani? (What are you talking about)

Me: I'm just asking because I don't feel sexy anymoreHe
chuckled..

Him: I enjoy having sex with you, if I didn't then bengeke ng'shaye ingquza yakho so (If I didn't find you sexy then I wouldn't be tearing your pussy like that)

Me: I'm sorry.. I just get horny a lot these days, even now I'm very horny and wet.. Youwanna feel?

I took his hand and directed it under dress..He

pulled over and looked at me..

Him: Do you want us to continue going to the mall noma vele nje sibuyele emuva? (Do you want us to continue going to the mall or to turn back)

Me: I just want you to feel that's all

Him: Then after I have felt that you wet, ufuna Senzeni ke? (What do you want to do)Me: Never
mind

I let go of his hand..

Him: Mara Xolelwa I don't understand, do you want us to have sex here?Me: I

didn't say that

Him: Okay yazini..

He joined the road again and we drove a short distance then he took a different turn..Me: Where are we going now?

Him: You'll see

To my surprise he drove to some bush that was a bit isolated from the busy road, he parked under some tree..

Me: Master I didn't sa-

He removed his seatbelt.. Him:

backseat... Manje! (now)

-

MONG

Z

The Dr allowed to have my piano delivered for me at the facility. Since music is a big part of me he reckoned that it might play a huge role in helping me with my recovery and he was right. Singing and playing the piano takes my mind off toxic thoughts, it distracts me a little.. Alana and I were now very much connected both emotionally and sexually. As crazy as it sounds, she does keep me sane and makes me happy. I have been able to keep her a secret, and I hope it will forever remain that way.. Senzi doesn't really torture me that much these days, it's like Alana's presence chases her away.

Alana is an angel that I've been long waiting for, I'm glad my brain created her..

Me: "Please me, baby Turn around and just tease me baby.. You know what I want and what I need, baby.. "

I stopped playing..

Alana: What's wrong?

She sat next to me and laid my head on her shoulder, with her hand on my forehead..Her: You've been distracted today

I sighed..

Me: It's nothing

I raised my head from her shoulder..

I started playing a few Keys again, but the rhythm wasn't coming together perfectly..She leaned over and whispered in my ear..

Her:"I'm gonna ride it, do it just how you like it tonight and after that.. Let's do it onemore time"

She gently bit my ear as I chuckled. She placed my hand on her breasts..

Me:"Girl, I ain't one for beggin', but now you got me beggin'... Please me baby.. Turnaround and just tease me baby.. You know what I want and what I need baby.. "

Her:"Let me hear you say"

Me: Pleaaaseee...

I placed both my hands on the piano and started playing..Her:

You see now, I wanna see that sexy smile

Me: "Please me baby, Turn around and just tease me babh.. You know what I want andwhat I need baby..... " (Smiling)

Voice: Ziyakhipha neh? (It's going down)

I stopped playing and turned, it was Rebecca..Me:

We don't knock these days?

Her: The door was wide open, how do you knock on a wide open door?

I shook my head, Alana stood up and then folded her arms while looking at Rebecca..

They allow me to play the Piano during the day when everyone is out, I don't play it atnight 'cause then I'll make noise for others when thy supposed to be sleeping..

Ribs: You didn't call me for practice today.. Why?Me:

I am not practicing

Her: Ohw then I must be deaf or something because I heard you playing!

Me: That doesn't even make any sense

Her: It don't matter.. What matters is that you are not doing me right when you know very well that we supposed to record a song together

Me: That song is not ours, it's a song from another artist

Her: Ahaaa! Now I see.. If you don't wanna play with me then just say so don't come up with lame excuses

Rebecca is a nuisance, she's always bothering me about something..

Her: You don't wanna record a song with me, you don't wanna sleep with me.. Exactly what's wrong? Don't you find me attractive?

She took off her dress and laughter seized from Alana..Alana:

What is she doing?

Me: Ribs put on your dress

Ribs: No I want you to tell me if you don't find me attractive

I got up from the chair and walked up to her, I picked up her dress from the floor..Me: Put it on

Her: No tell me that you find me attractive

She took my hand and placed it on her big breastsAlana moved closer..

Alana: What the fuck??

My Nurse made his way in..

Him: What is going on here?

He looked at Rebecca..

Him: Dress up Rebecca, you supposed to be outside with everyone else Ribs:

You disturbing us we were about to have a moment

Alana: No you weren't!!

Alana raised her hand..

Me: Babe don't

Rebecca: Ncooo he even called me BabeShe

squeezed both my cheeks..

Rebecca: You so sweet

Alana pushed Rebecca and for some weird reason Rebecca fell, That shocked me..Alana: You

wanna try me bitch?

Rebecca crawled to the Nurse while looking around frantically..Her:

Did you see that? I felt someone pushing me

Nurse: Get up

The Nurse helped her up, I noticed a hand print on Rebecca's shoulder were Alana had placed her hand and pushed her..

Nurse: Put on your dress and let's go

She quickly put on her dress and looked at me..Her:

Something is not right here

Me: Bye Ribs

The Nurse shook his head..

He escorted Rebecca out, I looked at Alana..Me:

How did you do that?

Her: I don't know.. I don't know what came over me, all of a sudden I felt jealousMe:

Really?

Her: Yes.. Is it normal?

Me: I never put the jealous trait in you, that was all youShe

held my hands..

Her: I think something is happening to me, I think I'm falling for youMe:

Huh??

Her: I think I love you

That was very unexpected..

—

TASH

I looked at them..

Jojo: Where are you keeping him?I

folded my arms..

Jojo: Tash where are you keeping him??

Me: Here's what I don't understand, your Son is missing... It's what now? A month? Instead of looking for him you and your baby Mama are busy indulging in sex then sheposts about it on social media! Both of you are a disgrace you don't deserve him!!

Him: Where is he???(shouting)

He charged at me then Tiger stopped him..Me:

Let him do it.. Let him do it please!!

Tiger: Calm down... If you hurt her then we won't find LonwaboHim:

Nomfundo is broken Tash

Me: Really? I don't think so! Nomfundo is just enjoying your dick!

Tiger: Why don't you just give him up? Admit it! We getting closer and closer! You were keeping him at your friend's place and you moved him when we found out, where is he now?

Me: Both of you should stop harassing my friend, why don't you just go to the police?They kept quiet..

Me: Ohh yes because you don't have proof! All you have are just assumptions(Silence)

Me: Lonwabo is happy with me, Jojo and Miss universe can make another baby
Tiger: Are you hearing yourself right now?

Jojo: You not working alone are you? Someone smarter than you is helping you! You wouldn't have gotten this far all on your own

Me: Don't underestimate me Sir.. Remember I'm the same person who helped you with Bonza?

Him: Tash please..

Me: You see Jojo.. You should've let me skip the country

Tiger: I hope you won't be skipping the country now with Baby Lonwabo be-Me:

Please don't insult my intelligence Tiger!

I turned to Jojo..

Me: How are you supposed to find your Son when you surrounded by such foolishness? I put on my glasses..

Me: This was a waste of my time.. I have a baby to get back too I got my car keys..

Me: Ohw you can tail me again as always and still you will come up with nothing!

Jojo: When we find him.. I'm going to kill you with my bare hands and I'm going to make it a slow painful death

Me: How sweet

I unlocked my car..

Me: Before I forget, if you were recording this conversation and I get arrested you will never see your son again, and if something happens to me forget about him..

Remember Jojo I'm the one who knows where he is, if anything happens to me then something is going to happen to him too

I opened the door..

Me: Please do send my love to your baby Mama

Jojo: You sick!!!

Me: "Well, I had me a boy turned him into a man, I showed him all the things that hedidn't understand Whoa.. Then I let him go"

I got in my car while still singing..

Me: "My Ex's and the oh, oh, oh's they haunt me.. Like ghosts they want me to make 'emall.. They won't let go.. Ex's and oh's"

—

ARMAN

I

I glanced down at my hands and they were shaking terribly, I probably shouldn't have came here. The door opened and the guard came out first, Ndarha followed. The guard pointed at me then he looked at me, my heart skipped a beat. He looked at me for a while and then he made his way to me. He was wearing orange pants, blue denim sneakers, and a white muscle vest. Looking at his body it's like he was doing nothing here but exercise everyday, his biceps had picked up from the last time I saw him, and his shoulders were a bit broader.. His facial hair wasn't that much anymore..

He sat down opposite me with his eyes glued on me.. He didn't say nothing, I also didn't say anything for a while..

Him: Hi

I cleared my throat..

Me: Hi

He leaned forward..

Him: You look good

Me: You look different

He smiled a little..

Him: Prison can change a man

I looked down, his eyes were piercing through me.. Him:

What are you doing here Mani?

I took a deep breath..

Him: With the case going, you shouldn't be here it's going to jeopardize your case..

I looked at him and something was off, he seemed calm and considerate for the firsttime ever...

Me: I came here to tell you that, I forgive you.. I forgive you for everything that you did tome. I'm letting go of all the anger and hurt I've been holding on too.. I forgive you Ndarha.. I'm setting myself free

He stood up and fixed the chair..

Him: Go home Armani..

Me: I..

Him: Go home..

He walked away, I watched him walk up to the door then the guard opened for me. Heturned and looked at me, then he walked through. The guard closed the door..

I stood up and took my crutches, I walked to the exit..

—

MONG

Z

It was visiting hours now, the Nurse came to my room to inform me that I had a visitor..Me: Who is it?

Him: Your cousin, Nokhanya

Alana: The one you always talk about? I would like to see her

Nurse: Can I trust you to go to the visitation center without causing any trouble?Me: Yes

Nurse: Good.. I need to sedate RebeccaMe:

Is she okay?

Him: She's going to be fine.. Come on, let's go

I made my way out with Alana following me, I looked around and only started talking

when we were alone in the corridor..

Me: I still need to know how you did that, if you only exist to me then you not supposed to hurt anyone

Her: I also don't know how I did it

When we got to the visitation center she stopped, her expression changed as if like she had just seen a ghost..

Her: I can't believe this

Me: What?

I looked at where she was looking and I saw Dr Shai standing with what looked like a priest, the gentleman had on a clerical collar

Her: I can't go with you

Me: Why?

Her: I don't wanna get you into trouble, You will find me in your room

She turned back and walked away, I also saw the gentleman shaking Dr Shai's hand and making his way to the exit. I walked up to Dr Shai..

Him: Hey Mabuza.. How is your Music coming along? Me:

Who was that?

Him: That was Dawn Baker

Me: Is he a Priest?

Him: No.. He is an exorcist

Me: A what?

Him: He exorcizes d-

Me: I know what an exorcist is, what is he doing here?

Him: He has a show so he wanted to find a charge here for his show

Me: You telling me that some of the patients here are not completely mad, they possessed?

He pulled me aside...

Him: Listen.. What Dawn Baker does we don't believe in it, there's nothing like Possession. Possession is a false procedure that was inverted to mislead people who are mental unstable in no longer taking their medication and believing in what doesn't exist. I don't want you going around freaking out others here about that, Dawn just wanted a charge for his show so he can make money and feed his family.. It's a job to him, possession doesn't exist..

92

MONGZ

It was good seeing my cousin again. Nokhanya and I we were very close when we were young then as we grew up, we weren't so close anymore. We both had our own lives to live and that killed the close bond that existed between us...

Her: It's soo good to see you

Me: It's good to see you too

Her: When your Father told me that you were here, I got very worried because you've made a tremendous change from how you used to be when your Mother passed on

Him: Ya I know.. It's nothing serious, I'm better now

Her: How is this place?

Me: It's not soo bad, I've met and made friends with wonderful People
She laughed..

Me: Who am I kidding, it's a serious looney bin

Her: Well they will release you as soon as they feel that now you okay to live in an environment with other People

Me: Yaa.. I wanna be out of here and go back to my life, I wanna start running my company again

Her: I do believe that you will get out of here, maybe even sooner than you think (Silence)

Her: How are things between you and your girlfriend? What's her name again?

Me: Armani

Her: Yes Armani.. How is she taking all of this? Me:

Armani and I, I don't think we going to make it

Her: Don't tell me she left you because you in here?

Me: She has a tendency of running away when things get tough. When I had an accident and I was in a coma, she never came to visit. She found comfort in Jojo's arms. When that didn't work out, she came back to me and because I loved her I took her back, and here we are again

She shook her head..

Her: Honestly speaking when I saw her pictures I just knew that she was a trip, she does look like uthanda abafana.. She is loose isn't she?

Me: Not exactly.. A lot has happened to her so I think she's masking her pain by always being in a relationship no matter how toxic the relationship is

Her: So she can't be alone?

Me: It looks that way

Her: Hai Mongz, you sure know how to pick them

Me: Look who's talking, shall we bring your relationship to the table? Her: Let's rather not

Me: I thought as much

She looked at the time..

Her: I have to go

Me: Thank you for coming

Her: You welcome sweetie maybe next time I'll come with the kids Me: I do wanna see him

Her: "Them"

Me: Him, the other one holds no relation to me

Her: Well I've practically raised her from when she was still a baby so she's my Daughter
Me: If you say so.. Do greet them, and also greet what's his name again?

Her: Don't be like that

Me: You know I don't like him and I'm not going to pretend

Her: He's no longer that old Gesh that was troublesome he is very mature now
Me: For his sake I hope so

She stood up..

Her: Come and give me a hug

I stood up and gave her a hug.. Her:

Be good... I love you soo much
Me: I

love you too Cuz

—

JOJO

We drove up to Tebogo's place, Tash's best friend to talk to her again. She was a bit surprised to see us, but then she let us in..

Her: I told you guys everything that I know

Xols: No you didn't

She folded her arms and looked at us..

Me: Tebogo there is no way that Tash wouldn't tell you about where he moved my Son, if she trusted you enough to have you look after him then she would trust you enough to tell you about her plans

Her: I swear I don't know where she is keeping him

Me: My Son is 4 months old now and Nomfundo is dying slowly inside. Literally what's keeping her alive is therapy and antidepressants. She doesn't deserve what she's going through and I'm disappointed in you that you would take such a situation very lightly.

Obviously it has been proven that Tash is unstable, she could hurt my son wherever she is.. Do you want that on your conscience? I don't know you but I know that you a human

being, somewhere deep inside of you.. You have a heart

Xols: Tash needs help, what if this becomes a dark obsession for her? What if she hurts Lonwabo and then she kidnaps another baby? Is that what you want?

Me: We can end this now.. Tell us where my Son is and Tash will get the help that she needs

Xols: If you a good friend then you will do this for her.. She needs help
She sighed..

Her: I just don't wanna get hurt

Me: You scared of Tash?

She shook her head...

Her: Not her, but the Person that she's with now
Me:

What do you mean?

Her: Tash is currently seeing a very dangerous guy, his name is Matthew but they call him Matt.
He is the one helping her hide the baby

Me: Wait a min... So she accuses me of being unfaithful whilst she's been fucking someone else too?

Xols: Your relationship with Tash is way too messed up

Her: I don't know where they keeping him, I just know his name and that he is a very dangerous man.
He is putting on a PI facade but in actual fact he is a killer, a cold blooded killer. He has done a lot of work for a lot of high profiled people

Xols and I looked at each other..

Xols: How did Tash get a hold of him?

Her: People contact him online

Me: What is his profile or website?

She shrugged her shoulders..

Her: I don't know

Xols: Thank you for the information

Her: I do hope you find him, he deserves to be with his MotherMe: I

hope so too

–

NDARH

A

Rama: What's on your mind? You finally agreeing with me about killing the general?I shook my head no..

Me: We not going to kill him until my trial starts, after my trial then we can kill himRama:

Worried about the President?

Me: Not really.. He's proving to be tough

Rama: He's being humiliated

Me: There's nothing I can do, he has to hold on

I went back to my old cell, Those were the general's orders and he has taken it upon himself to torture the president more in hopes to get to me. He knows that's an itch tomy brain and unfortunately I can't do anything about it, for now..

He has went too far as making the President wear a dress and a doek, I don't know howthey got those items but he is being humiliated throughout the whole entire prison. I wish I could do something but I can't, I can't do anything that's going to jeopardize mycase..

Me: The girl I once told you about, came to see me earlier todayHim:

The Armani girl?

Me: Ya..

Him: Doesn't she have a case against you?Me:

She does, I'm surprised she came Him: What

do you think she wanted?

Me: I don't know what's happening with her current relationship but she seems lonely,

she probably came here to get something from meHim: So

what's going to happen?

Me: She needs to play around with her peers, I have a lot going on. I should be focusing on serious matters than to help her deal with her loneliness

Him: And you might be here for a very long time

Me: Yes.. If she keeps on coming here she's going to lose her caseHim: She

already lost the case

Me: Probably

–

TASH

I looked around and the Chinese waitress came up to my table with an empty tray..She started clearing my table..

Her: You clear

Me: Thank you

I stood up and made my way to the back. I punched in the code and the door opened, I made my way in and walked through the corridor that connected the restaurant to Matt's secret apartment. I kept on looking back hoping and praying that I wasn't followed. The reason why I haven't been found yet it's because of Matt. I was stranded after moving Lonwabo from Tebza's place not knowing where I'm was going to take him,so I turned to Matt for help and he agreed to keep Lonwabo at his apartment for the time being.. I opened the door and walked in, it wasn't a big apartment but it was very beautiful..

Me: Hey

He was watching TV while lifting weights

Him: Hey

I looked around..

Me: Where is baby Lonwabo?

Him: In his crib

I went to the bedroom and he was in his crib indeed..Me:

There's my little Angel

I picked him up..

Me: Hello..

Matt walked in..

He didn't have his t-shirt on, he just had his trackpants on..Me:

Didn't he bother you?

Him: No.. I have one of the waitresses come over and babysit every now and thenMe:

Okay.. That's good

Him: Tell me something.. What are you planning to do with him?Me: I

don't know

Him: I can't keep him here forever

Me: I know... But this place is safer for him

Him: Tash maybe just return him back

Me: No..

Him: You don't want him hurt, obviously you care about him but how are you going to raise him with all this hit on you?

Me: I'm going to find a way okay? For now just help me.. Please, I just need some timeHe shook his head and walked out..

—

NOMFUND

O

Nonts: Here you go

Me: Thank you

Her: How is your Mom holding up?

Me: She got discharged and she's recovering very well.. She's still concerned about Lonwabo, she blames herself

Jojo decided that I should temporarily move in with him so that he can keep an eye on me with everything that's going on, Lonwabo's disappearance has taken a serious toll on me healthwise..

Nonts: I am losing faith in the justice system, it's been a month now and still no sign of my Grandson

I drank the pills..

Me: Whoever did this, is very smart

She took the glass from me and I laid my head down..Her: Are

you sure that you don't wanna see a Dr?

Me: No.. I think this dizziness and nausea has been brought about by stress, I'm trying to relax but still.. I can't relax knowing very well that my Son is out there

Nonts: Don't lose hope.. Jojo is going to find himShe

fixed the duvet..

Her: I will cook for you guys before I leave, you can relax a bitShe

brought the remote control closer to me.

–

MONG

Z

On my way to my room I noticed Rebecca sitting alone, I went up to her..Me: Hey

Her: Hey

I sat next to her..

Me: I thought they were going to sedate youHer:

I'm fine

Me: I'm sorry about the song

Her: I'm not worried about that anymoreMe:

You not?

Her: No.. I'm worried about Nurse Alissa

Me: Who?

She looked around and then looked at me..

Her: A few years ago one of the patients around here murdered a Nurse by the name of Alissa. Alissa had been placed to care for the patient and he fell in love with her, when Alissa was meant to be transferred to another facility the Patient couldn't accept losing her so he murdered her. Since from then Alissa has been haunting this institution

Me: No one has said anything about this, you have started making things up right?Remember we talked about this

Her: I'm not making this up (Whispering) Alissa is back and I think it's her who pushed me

Me: Okay maybe you need some time alone

Her: Ask anyone, they will tell you about her. If you don't believe me, at 00:00am go and check the staff showers. You will hear her singing and hear the water running, if you lucky you might just see her.. Tonight put pillows under your sheets and then when they lock the bedrooms we will go wait by the showers to see Alissa, I'll prove to you that I'm not crazy

93

XOLELWA

Master prefers that I cook when he is around because the last time I cooked alone, I made the stew very spicy. So much that he couldn't eat it. It's actually safe to say that I cook to satisfy my cravings. If he knocks off late, he comes with takeaways.. I am in a much better place now compared to how things have been before. Although we are struck by the tragedy of baby Lonwabo missing, I am happy to say that our family has been doing a bit better now. My Father's absentia is no longer breaking us apart, we have accepted that we have to go through life without him and we have learned to be independent. I'm really proud of my Mother's hustle, she decided to do what she knows

best and that is to cook. She is starting her own catering company, I have no doubt that it will be a success especially with all the media scandals that our family has gone through, it will give her more exposure. She has cooked a few dishes at home and uploaded them to her Instagram account, she has about 50 000 followers on Instagram..

Master tried to sneak his hand under my dress but I stopped him..

Me: Babe stop.. I'm tired. We were at it most of the time today, not forgetting the shopping that drained me. I just wanna bath, eat, and then sleep..

He smiled..

Him: My first time hearing you refusing sex

Me: Today it was a busy day

Him: I'll make you something to eat while you go and bath
He stood up..

Him: You really need that bath

Me: Excuse me? What are you trying to say?

Him: I've nudded in you a lot today, so you do need that bath
I took a cushion and threw it at him...

Me: Are you indirectly saying my cookie smells?
He laughed..

Him: Azange ng'khulume izinto ezinjalo (I've never said anything of that nature)

Master likes to joke around a lot, and some of the things that he jokes about used to offend me. Now I just let it go, I know he means no harm..

He helped me to get up from the couch..
Me:

I was thinking

Him: when I'm not around who helps you to get up from the couch?
Me: I get up on my own

Him: Which means mawubona mina uyatefa neh? (That means when I'm around you a

cry baby)

Me: I thought we were in this together

Him: Ngiyaz'khulumela nje (I'm just talking)

Me: Anyway I was thinking

Him: About?

Me: This coming Sat-

Him: Aren't your feet aching?

Me: No.. Why?

Him: They look very swollen

Me: Now they not aching since you have me that massageHim: Aii

Maan Xolelwa Yo-

Me: Are you going to let me finish talking? (annoyed) Him:

Okay.. Askies, bowuthini? (what were you saying)We made
our way to the kitchen..

Him: This coming Saturday they're having a family day at the Prison. My Mom won't go,Jojo is going through a lot I doubt he will go, and Xoliswa won't go too.. I was thinkingthat we should go

He gave me a weird look..

Me: It's time that both of you meet

Him: Are you sure about this?

Me: Yes... Plus it'll be sad if no one shows up from his side while the other inmates arewith their families. Things between me and him weren't good.. I wanna see if we can reconnect again and forget about what happened

Him: I hear you.. We will goI

smiled..

Me: Thank you

I just wish that my Father will respond better to me, after the whole drama of merefusing to marry Lukhele I hope he has let it go..

—

JOJO

I turned to one Person that I trust the most, a very dear friend of mine who might be at the same level of intelligence as Matt. My friend MJ... MJ is also a Private Investigator, the reason why I never turned to him with the whole Lonwabo saga is because he moved to the United States of America. He is currently working there on the new and improved season of cheaters, he is the one tailing and gathering information about the cheating partners and I watch the show. He seems to be doing a very good job. When he hit me up and told me that he was in town, I knew that I had to turn to him and hope that he will help me find my son...

Me: I am glad to see you again China

Him: I was catching up on the local news and I read about your son, I'm sorry..Me: No need to be sorry because that's why I'm here.. I need your help China Him: Of course..

You and I go way back, I wish you had contacted me soonerMe: You were out of the country so..

Him: Ya but I would've tried something

Me: We can try something now

Him: Talk to me..

He went over to pour us some whiskey..

Him: Where is Tash? Is she not helping you? I know Tash is smartI cleared my throat..

He looked at me..

Me: Tash is the one who kidnapped my sonHe put the glass back on the table..

Me: She is working with some PI by the name of Matt?

Him: No ways.. I know Matt

Me: You do?

Him: Yeah me and that bastard have a historyMe:

A good one?

Him: Not at all.. We used to work together until he fucked me over, I taught him what heknows

Me: I am happy to hear that.. We need to find my Son, Nomfundo is close to having a break down

Him: How is she holding up though?

Me: I've asked her to move in with me so I can keep a close eye on her and..Him: And?

Me: She has been very sexual demanding ever since she moved in with meHim: She's

using sex to escape the harsh reality of her son missing?

I nodded...

Me: I think so, not that I'm complaining but I want her to get better.. What if her new obsession becomes a problem, what if she ends up going out and having sex with random guys?

Him: I hear what you saying

Me: You need to help me

Him: I will.. I hope that he still uses the same technique, I know how he operates. So let's hope that he still operates the same way

Me: I hope so too

—

MR MABUZA

Monde was busy playing Fifa in the lounge, I think he plays fifa a lot to make himself forget about Mongz..

Me: Monde did you do homework?He

ignored me..

Me: Monde!!

Him: Pa?

Me: Did you do your homework?

Him:....

Me: I'm not going to-

I heard the intercom going off, I left him and went to check who it was..Me:

Hello?

I couldn't see exactly who it was on the monitor because it was dark..Voice:

Good evening Sir

Me: Who is this?

Voice: My name is Dawn.. Dawn Baker. looking for Mr Mabuza?Me: I

don't know anyone by the name Dawn Baker

Voice: I know Sir, but it involves your Son

Me: My Son?

Voice: Yes the one who is at the institution

Me: How did you get my address? And what do you know about my son? Who are you?

Voice: Maybe it will be better if you let me in and we talk face to face, it's a seriousmatter

I pressed the button and the gate opened.. I hope this is not one of Ndarha's guys..

-

ARMAN

I

This was very frustrating..

When I got discharged, my Dr suggested that I see a therapist. He said that although the shooting is not affecting me now but it will affect me at a later stage. He said it was a traumatic experience and I need therapy to help me deal with the whole thing. Instead of referring me to a therapist of his choice I told him that I was comfortable with the psychiatrist that I was seeing before, the psychiatrist that Mongz got me. She understands me better and I trust her more than anyone. Earlier today I called the office and they told me to come at 18:00 as the psychiatrist was not in the office the whole day, the assistant squeezed me in for a 1 hour session.. When I got to the office I was very upset to hear that the old psychiatrist was no longer practicing, she had given her practice to a new psychiatrist. I wish the Assistant could've told me over the phone then I wouldn't have bothered making an appointment..

Me: I am in pain, do you know how difficult driving is for me? Her:

I know Armani and I'm sorry, but the new Dr is also good Me: I

don't care Felicia! I trusted the old Psychiatrist

Her: The previous psychiatrist referred all her patients to him and so far most of them are happy with the new psychiatrist

Me: I don't care about the other patients! I have built trust with the old psychiatrist, do you know how long it will take me to trust this one? Do you know how expensive these sessions are? I wish you told me over the phone about this new guy

Her: his name is Kwame Addo, he is not "this new guy"

All along she's having this argument with me while writing something on some file.. Me: What kind of name is that? He doesn't sound South African

Her: He is originally from Ghana

Me: Wow!! Just wow! Those people are said to be crooks! I wouldn't be surprised to hear later on that he faked his qualifications. You want me to trust a "Psychiatrist" from Ghana? Aren't those men only good in bed satisfying a woman with their big dicks? I ain't never heard of a Ghanaian who is a specialist in so-

She lifted up her head and looked at me.. Her:

You know Armani I am di-

I saw her eyes widening. She quickly closed the file..

Her: Doc..

My heart started to beat very fast..

Voice: Sorry that I'm late Felicia, the hospital took up most of my time.. Is the patient around?

His accent did prove that he wasn't from here, but it wasn't funny it actually sounded good. Not forgetting how good he was smelling at this time of the day when everyone is from work, sweating and tired..

Her: Yes sir.. This is her

Him: File please

She quickly checked my file from that pile of papers on her desk and I dared not to turn back, that deep voice was really intimidating especially after everything that I've said..

Her: Here you go Sir

His arm crossed over my shoulder with a very eye catching watch around his wrist.. Him: Thank you

That "Thank you" sounded a bit close to my ear..

Felicia and I kept quiet as we heard footsteps, then after a few seconds he called out.. Him: Excuse Me?

I slowly turned to my side and he was standing at the door of his office.. Him:

Shall we? Unfortunately I don't have the whole night

I looked at his serious self standing there, he had on a blue suit and the tie was hanging over his shoulder. His right hand was holding my file, and on his left hand he was holding his phone and car keys.. He opened the door and walked in, I looked at Felicia..

Her: Go.. Know that I'm disappointed in you, I never thought of you as one of those People (Whispering)

Me: I was just talking what I heard

Her: Go (whispering)

I took my crutches and made my way to his office, he was sitting on the table with his

one leg touching he floor..

I went and sat down as he opened my file..I

cleared my throat..

Me: I'm sorry about what you heard.. That is definitely not me and I-Him: Why are you here?

He closed the file and looked at me..

Me: I.. Well I used to see.. The thing is my-

Him: Why are you on crutches?

Me: I got shot.. Housebreaking gone wrong

I was literally shaking, his seriousness made me very nervous..He shook his head..

Him: You need to see a psychologistMe:

Sorry?

Him: my fake qualifications allow me to see serious mental cases and you not one. You need to see a psychologist, not a psychiatrist

Me: Sir..

Him: Dr Addo

Me: Dr Addo I don't think you understand

Him: I don't need to understand Mam', you not my case so I cannot help youHe got up and threw my file on the table..

Him: Felicia will see you out... Thank you for wasting my timeHe walked out..

-

MONG

Z

I was laying on the bed and Alana was laying on top of me.. My hand kept on rubbing herback.. She lifted up her head and looked at me..

Her: Something is on your mindI

sighed..

Her: Talk to meI

looked at her..

Me: Just a lot is happening and the thought of you departing from me at some point is abit stressful

Her: Really?

Me: Yes

Rebecca is a mental case, I literally asked one of the Nurses and he had no idea who Iwas talking about...

Her: What else is bothering you, and don't lie to me.. I know when something isbothering you

Me: Rebecca said something about youHer:

Something like what?

Me: It doesn't matter..

Her: I wanna know.. What is it?

Me: She told me that there was a Nurse here who was killed by a patient a while back,and how she told the story the Nurse matched your description

She shook her head..

Me: I asked one of the Nurses and they don't know any Alissa

Her: That's because there's no Alissa, she probably made that whole thing up just likeevery other story that she makes up

I chuckled..

Me: Ya probably

She kissed me..

Her: Maybe it's time we just be together foreverMe: I

thought it was impossible

Her: Yeah I lied.. There's actually a way for us to be together foreverMe:

Yeah?

Her: You will have to kill yourself.. You need to die by suicide.94

MR MABUZA

Since this was about Mongz, I asked Monde to excuse us. I didn't want him to hear anything that might be bad about his Brother, and a strange man coming to your house late at night definitely doesn't bring good news..

Me: Would you like something to drink?

Him: No Sir.. I'm good

Me: Who are you again?

Him: I am Dawn Baker

Me: What business do you have with my Son again?Him:

Can I ask you something?

Me: Yes?

Him: Do you believe in the supernatural?

Me: I believe in the existence of my ancestors as spirit beings, I don't know if that counts as "Supernatural"

He slowly nodded..

Him: Not to waste much of your time, I'll get straight to the pointMe:

Sounds serious

Him: It is

He paused a bit..

Him: I am an Exorcist. It's a gift that I was given or rather blessed with, it's something that I didn't go to the school of theology for

Me: An Exorcist?

Him: Meaning I exorcize demons

Me: I see.. I'm hoping you not here to tell me that my Son is possessed. My Son is not possessed, he has a mental illness.. What is it with you Pastors always thinking about possession when someone is in a mental institution?

Him: As I have already stated. I am an Exorcist, not a Pastor. To answer your next question yes, your Son is not possessed.. He has a demon attached to him, in simple terms Sir, your Son is a victim of a female demon known as Aziza the succubus

Me: I don't think I'm following

Him: A succubus is a female demon that engages in sexual intercourse with sleeping men, as time goes on she sucks the life out of them. They grow tired and weaker everyday until they can't wake up anymore

Me: Exactly how did you come to that realization of my son being followed by that demon?

Him: The succubus broke free from it's chains, it's my duty to keep her away again. I believe that she's operating in the same mental institution as your son, she now takes advantage of Men who are not mental stable. She confuses them, seduces them and then after she kills them

All of what he was saying didn't make any sense..

Him: The succubus in it's true form is not appealing, she takes on the image of a beautiful woman that once existed but is no more, right now she could be anyone.

Me: How did you come into a realization that this demon is following my son? You didn't answer that

Him: I've been searching in most mental institutions for her, and the last one I visited when I was heading out I saw your Son. When I saw him I didn't know who he was, until I asked the front desk for his information and that's why I'm here

Me: So the institution gave you my Son's information?

Him: I know how it looks like Sir but please believe me your Son is in danger. When I laid my eyes on him I could feel her presence attached to him, your Son's life is in danger a succubus is very dangerous

Me: I don't know who you're and quite frankly I don't care who you're! I'm not going to have you poison my son with this nonsense. He is already going through a lot, I could even sue the institution for giving you such personal information about my son

I stood up..

Me: Did Ndarha or the President send you?

Him: Pardon?

Me: This is not going to work.. Tell them that this is not going to workHe placed his business card on the table..

Him: When it gets worse, do call me. I hope it won't be too late by thenHe stood up..

Him: Good night Sir

–

MONG

Z

Me: What did you say?I

got her off me..

Her: I know how it sounds but trust me, that's the only way that we can be together forever

Me: Are you hearing yourself?

She tried getting ontop of me again but I pushed her, then I got out of bed..

Her: I am not going to be around forever! If I go she's going to come back for you, she won't stop until you confess. Right now I'm the energy that's keeping her away from you!

She got out of bed too and made her way to me...

Her: What good life are you going to have? Being locked up in here? Always losing your girlfriends because of your condition. I can make you happy.. Plus, if you come with me

you will be able to see and talk to your Mom everyday on the other side. Isn't that what you want?

She got closer to me and placed her hand on my crotch.. Her: We could make love everyday and it will be magical She kissed me on my cheek and then whispered on my ear..

Her: Come with me.. You will be more safer and happier with me

She kissed me again on my cheek, then she got down on her knees.. There's just something about Alana, something that I can't explain. Having sex with her has been amazing, more amazing than all the girls that I've had sex with previously. She lowered my pants and then a certain voice disturbed us..

Voice: Pssssss!

I opened my eyes and Rebecca was standing over me..Me:

What the hell?

I rose up from my pillow and looked at her.. Me:

What the hell are you doing in my room?

Her: I want to prove to you that Alissa is really a ghost

Me: Just drop that shit okay? There is no Alissa! There was never a Nurse here by that name

Her: Alissa existed and I wanna prove it to you I yawned..

Me: Rebecca go to your room, I wanna rest.. I'm tired

Her: Fine then! Be like that, but if you change your mind I'll be in the showers.. The staff showers

Me: Good night Rebecca

Her: The showers, don't forget.. 12am

She walked out and I closed my eyes, while clicking my tongue..

–

MJ (JOJO'S FRIEND)

I saw the headlights, I really didn't think that he was going to come when I hit him up..

I waited for him to park his car while I leaned against mine, he got out and then made his way to me..

Matt: I thought I was dreaming when you hit me up, aren't you supposed to be overseas? He stretched his hand out for a handshake, I just looked at it..

Him: Okay

He retracted it..

Him: How are you China?

(Silence)

Me: This is not a social call.. I'm here with regards to Jojo's Son.. I know you have him He looked around..

Him: Who did you bring?

He took out his gun...

Him: Are you trying to fuck with me? Is this a set up? Me: I am here all by myself

Him: And I'm supposed to trust you?

Me: You came didn't you?

He pointed the gun at me..

Him: If you didn't bring any company then I can smoke you right now and no one will ever know what happened to you! After all, we in an abandoned building aren't we?

I raised my hands up..

Me: I wish it was that simple for you.. See Matt I'm not Naive anymore, I won't let you dome like how you did me last time

Him: What do you want?

Me: Nothing much really.. Just return the baby back to his ParentsHim:

You kidding right?

Me: I still have dirt on you, I have your dirty files and videos. If they land in the wrong hands you will go to jail for a very long time

Him: You bluffing

Me: Am I?

I moved closer to the gun..

Me: You can kill me now and you will still land in jail, see Jojo and I we supposed to meet tomorrow and if I don't show up he will know that this meeting didn't go well and then he will hand over everything to the cops. So the question is.. Are you ready to go to jail for a cunt? A cunt that will probably forget about you when this whole shit is over

(Silence)

He lowered the gun..

Me: I'm guessing we have a deal?He

turned and walked away..

Me: I'm guessing not

He got in his car. Honestly speaking I don't have anything on Matt anymore, I got rid of everything when I moved to the states. He probably saw right through me that I was bluffing..

—

NOMFUND

O

I was woken up by Jojo making his way in, I had passed out on the couch...Him: Hey

Me: Hey

He put his things on the dining table..

Me: What time is it?

Him: I'm not sure..

He took off his watch..

Him: Where is Mom?

Me: She left

Him: She what?

Me: She left after cooking

Him: She left you all alone?

Me: Yes

Him: Let me call her

Me: You don't have too

Him: I asked her to stay with you until I got backMe:

Jojo I'm not a child

Him: I didn't say you were a child, I just don't want anything happening to you

Jojo is overprotective that at times it's a bit annoying, I wish he could just let me breath..He came and sat next to me..

Him: We already going through a lot with Lonwabo, I don't want anything happening to you too.. It would really hurt me deeply if you could harm yourself. You hurting and confused. I'm scared for you to be left alone

He fixed my hair..

Looking at him he seemed sincere, I have never seen him this worried about me..Me: I

won't hurt myself

Him: I'm going to find him.. I promise

I put my hand on his cheek and gave him a faint smile..Me: I

know

He kissed my hand..

Him: Did you have something to eat?

Me: I can't process anything

Him: You still feeling sick?I

nodded..

Him: Maybe we should go to the Dr tomorrow morningMe: It's

just stress.. I'll be fine

Him: You said that a week ago Me:

I'm tired of seeing the Dr nowHim:

Well you don't h-

His phone rang on the table..He

got up and went to get it..Him: I

need to take this..

He walked out..

Him: Hello

My first mind convinced me that it was Tash who called him, she has been acting crazylately. Things she says about me on social media are awful, just because I posted an innocent pic of me, Jojo, and Lonwabo with the caption "Wherever you're baby, Know that we always thinking about you" she took that as if like Jojo and I are fucking. She has really lost her mind..

—

ARMAN

I

"Isabella.. Isabella.. Isabella.. Isabella..

O meu amor e tudo, tudo o que tenho p'ra ti È o

amor. Mais belo e sincero que nunca vivi"

He was busy singing and slowly dancing to that song. I didn't know what it was saying,

and it had a slow smooth beat to it. In the video he was in his kitchen, standing at the stove busy frying eggs and singing along. I couldn't see what he was wearing on his lower body as the table blocked the view.. The song really sounded nice all I heard was "Isabella" the rest I couldn't understand what was being said. Addo's body reminded me a bit of Jojo's body, it was clear that he was also obsessed with going to the gym. I moved on to his pictures and other videos, I can't believe that I was stalking him on Instagram. How is he this fine looking and also a specialist? I mean I'm used to old and grumpy specialists.. Before I left his office I had asked Felicia to set up another meeting for me tomorrow, and the meeting was going to be early in the morning.. I can't wait..

95

XOLELWA

I woke up the next morning a bit later than usual, Master had already gone to work. I tidied up around the house a little, took a bath and made myself something to eat. All I'm going to do is just laze around the house as always.. I tuned in on the faith ministries channel and Nomvelo Buthelezi was on, though I caught the whole sermon in the middle but I still watched..

Her: A dear friend of mine called me a few weeks back. She has a tendency of giving up hope when things don't go the way that she wants them too. When she called me she said and I quote "I have decided to work on my spiritual life, and this time around I am prepared to grow spiritually and not let life challenges defeat me". I was happy to hear that and I assured her that I'll pray for her too, pray that through it all may God always give her the strength that she needs to carry on even when life gets tough.. She kept on calling me and telling me about situations that came her way and could've possibly swept her away but she still remained standing, she remained strong in the presence of God. It was very good to hear that her faith was picking up, until a few days ago when she called me again. She was devastated, she told me that her Husband impregnated his mistress. This friend of mine has been having marital problems for a while now, there has been a lot of infidelity from her Husband's side that led her into depression. She gave up on her marriage and gave up on God. Though her husband promised to change and they started counseling but still, she was very broken..

Her husband tried to regain her trust, and when it all seemed to be working again for them, the mistress is now pregnant. You might be sitting there and asking yourself, why exactly is she boring us about this story because some of us aren't even married..

The congregation laughed..

Her: whether married or not, trust me you going to relate to this story very much.. Here's what you don't understand, as much as God works in mysterious ways the devil works harder too. The devil has different weapons fashioned against you, and he always saves the best for last. The best for last being that weapon that he knows will destroy you and the little hope that you had..

The first weapons that he's going to throw at you might scratch and hurt you a bit, like a stone will scratch you, a brick might hurt you but you will still get up. He knows that his last weapon, that he will throw at you will destroy you. That weapon being a grenade.

Take for instance a Young Person who is unemployed and facing a lot of negativity at home. You send out your CVs but the report comes back saying "We regret".

Considering how strong your faith is, Yes you going to be hurt but you will get up again and keep on fighting. You will keep on applying. That brick (we regret) it did hurt you but it didn't break you, that's when he will bring out the grenade. The grenade being your Mother who will tell you how useless you're, your Mother who will compare you to your siblings or relatives who have already made it. He knows that such words from someone who is supposed to be your biggest support, those words will kill you and kill the faith you had. When that happens you lose all hope, and your trust in God ceases to exist.. Rationally speaking you cannot survive a grenade, but when you have faith in God you can conquer anything and everything the devil throws at you soldier. When that grenade is thrown at you, and you have no will to carry on. Search deeper spiritually and see beyond your Mother saying those things, see the devil or the entity that's standing behind her and using her to kill you. You know your Mother, and you know she loves you. In that situation you need to know and understand that the devil has used that one last weapon against you. Sometimes he doesn't use strangers to destroy us, he uses people who are very close and dear to us. When that happens, rise above that pain. No matter how bruised you are, stand on that one leg that is still willing to give you balance and face him, like a true soldier. When blood is dripping from your head, and when pain says "Throw in the towel, you done" face him fearlessly with prayer. Face the devil and tell him that you can only hurt my flesh, but never my spirit. Always conquer the last weapon that he has fashioned against you, and see him shaking at your presence. For God has given you authority to trample on snakes, scorpions, and to overcome all the power of the enemy.

—

JOJO

I was woken up from a deep sleep by a phone call. I turned and Nomfundo wasn't sleeping next to me. I stretched my hand and got hold of my phone, it was a private

number that was calling me. I canceled the call and the person called again. Usually when I get a call from a private number it's a crazy fan trying to stalk me, I don't even know how they get my number..I picked up..

Me: Hello?

There was silence on the other end of the line..Me:

Hello???

Voice: I dropped off your son at Grace memorial hospitalMe:

Excuse me?

Voice: I left him with a note of your details, the hospital will call youMe:

Who is this?

The Person hung up..

Nomfundo walked in..

Her: Good morning She

wiped her mouth..

Her: I think I have a stomach bug or something, I've been vomitingMe: I

have to go somewhere

Her: It's an emergencyI

got out of bed..

Me: Make sure that your phone is on I'm going to call you, Tiger is going to come and fetch you

Her: Fetch me for what? What's going on?

Me: I have to go.. Just be next to your phone, I'll call you

—

MONG

Z

We saw Medics and pathologists making their way in, the police were already here. Everyone was scratching their heads wondering what was going on, we were all

summoned to the relaxing room without being told anything.. Dr Shai and the rest of the staff were standing in front of us waiting to inform us about what was going on..

This morning I woke up very tired, my body was aching too. It's almost as if like I was doing hard labour the previous day..

Dr Shai: Good morning everyone

We all kept quiet and fixed our eyes on him..

Him: My deepest apologies for disrupting your morning schedule

The Nurses started walking around trying to keep order, to those who were finding it hard to listen..

Him: We come bearing sad news.. One of our own is no more He ran his eyes around...

Him: We all know Rebecca. She was full of life and got along with everyone He looked at me..

Him: I know some of you were very close to her and.. It is unfortunate for me to let everyone know that Rebecca is no more

Voice: Rebecca is dead????

That was shocking..

Him: Yes. She was found dead this morning in the staff showers

Everyone was shocked, I mean this was news to me. I was with her last night..

Him: We don't know exactly what the cause of death is, they still yet to perform an autopsy

We saw the pathologists pushing the stretcher that had a body bag resting on it.. Dr: We can all now go back to our rooms

He looked at me..

Him: May I please have a word with you in my office? I

watched as Rebecca's body was taken out.

–

ARMAN

I

I made my way to the reception as Felicia seemed to be a bit occupied, I looked at DrAddo's office and the door was wide open..

Me: Morning

She looked at me..

Her: Morning

She got my file and handed it to me..

Her: Today we only using one crutch, what a quick improvement

Me: If I wanna walk on my own again without any crutches I have to exerciseHer:

That's good.. I wish you a speedy recovery

Me: Thank you.. Is he in?

Her: Yes.. He doesn't have a patient so you can just go right inMe:

Thank you

I made my way to his office and I felt pain arising from my womb, and my hip. Maybethis was premature, I should've used both crutches..I stood at his door and looked at him, he was busy writing something on some document. He didn't even realize that I was standing there nor even rose up his head to look at the door. I knocked..

Him: Come in

He was still looking down..

I made my way in and stood next to the chair, as I didn't know what to do next. When mysilence got to him that's when he rose his head up and looked at me, I got nervous right away..

Him: Good morning

Me: Morning

He narrowed his eyes..

Him: Didn't I make myself clear yesterday?

Me: I'm really sorry about what I said yesterday, that was rude of me. I am not like that at all, just that I.. I was very stressed and frustrated upon hearing that my previous psychiatrist was no longer practising here

Him: What you said yesterday doesn't faze me, quite frankly I don't care what you think of me. I am not refusing to see you because of what you said yesterday I'm just trying to help you save your money and seek help from the right person. You need a therapist, not a psychiatrist

I kept quiet and put my hand on the armrest of the chair..Him:

What happened to your other crutch?

Me: I didn't bring it along

Him: Why not?

The seriousness in his eyes gave me chills down my spine. The way that he wasn't scared to look at me gave me goose bumps

Me: I'm trying to exercise

Him: Don't you need a physio for that? What you doing is not called an exercise you just straining your already weak muscles on the injured leg, it could do more harm than good. You need a physiotherapist to recommend the right way of exercising

Me: Thank you.. I'll keep that in mind

Him: You welcome

He went back to what he was doing..

(after 10 seconds)

Him: anything else?

Me: Uhm.. I paid for this session

Him: That's my business because?

Me: So my money is just going to be wasted?

Him: Felicia will give you a refund

Me: Okay

Him: Have a good day Mam'

Me: You too

I turned around but I didn't walk out..

Me: I have Stockholm syndrome, I don't think there's a therapist that can help me with that

I turned and looked at him...

Me: Maybe there is one that could try but I think a psychiatrist would be more effective in this case.. My previous psychiatrist was very helpful and that's why I trust psychiatrists more than psychologists in this situation. I'm not undermining psychologists but...

He still remained quiet..

Me: Yesterday I went to see my abuser, he is in jail now. I thought that facing him would help bu-

He leaned back on his chair and opened the drawer, he came back with earphones then he connected them to his phone..

I chuckled while shaking my head..

Me: Wow!

I made my way out..

—

NOMFUND

O

I waited for Jojo to call but he never called, instead I got a call from Xoliswa...Me: Hey

Her: Hey how are you?

Me: I'm sick and you?

Her: I'm good.. What's wrong?

Me: I don't know.. I think I have a stomach bug or somethingHer:

That's bad.. Will you be able to travel?

Me: Travel? Travel where?

Her: I'm coming to get you.. Lonwabo has been foundMy

heart almost stopped when I heard that..

Me: Wha.. Wait what do you mean that Lonwabo has been found?Her:

Someone dropped him off at the Grace Memorial hospital Me: Who

dropped him off there?

Her: Jojo didn't mention but the Person who kidnapped him was.. It was Tash, that'swhy
Lonwabo survived for this long

My phone slipped from my grip and fell on the floor..

—

TASH

It is very unlike me to sleep this much. I couldn't even wake up in the early hours of the morning to check up on baby Lonwabo as always. I got out of bed and went to check hiscrib, it was empty. I started to panic..

I looked around and got my phone then I called Matt.. "The

Number you have dialed does not exist"

Me: What???

I made my way out of the bedroom to the kitchen and the door was wide open..Me: What
is happening?

I tried calling Matt again but I still got the same result.. I was confused, I didn't knowwhat
was happening. As if things couldn't get more weird, I saw one of the Chinesewaitresses
making her way in, she was followed by some police officers..

One of the officers made her way to me..

Him: Good morning

Me: Morning

Him: Are you Nataschi Gobbler?I

nodded while swallowing..

Him: Nataschi Gobbler.. You're under arrest for the kidnapping of baby Lonwabo Ndarha. You have the right to remain silent, anything you say can and will be used against you in the court of law. You have the right to an attorney, if you can't afford one.. One will be appointed to you

One of the officers came to cuff me..

Me: I didn't do anything!!!!.. You have the wrong Person!Officer:

Check the place

The other officers walked around..

Me: I didn't do anything.. Please you have to believe me, someone is setting me up! It'sMatt, he is the one who kidnapped the baby

They led me out...

Me: Please.. You have to believe me, I didn't do it! (Crying)96

MJ (JOJO'S FRIEND)

Matt: And what do you know, the baby has been reunited with his Parents. It made headlines

He passed me his phone and I checked the videos that were trending..Me:

That's good

I gave him back his phone..

Him: Just between you and me, there was never any files and videos to begin with right?I cleared my throat..

Me: No

Him: You Son of a sea biscuit!

Me: Look on the bright side, I helped you with this because you were obviously losing control. You were going to get caught

We were at the OR Tambo airport, Matt has decided to leave South Africa. He was going overseas but since it's short notice, he will have to settle for a lot of connecting flights until he gets to Australia..

Me: Why do you wanna leave now?

Him: Obviously that bitch is going to rat on me, and I didn't get rid of all the evidence
Me: See what happens when a bitch comes your way? You can't even think straight
Him: I can't believe I almost crucified myself like that

Me: Just be careful Australia is not South Africa the law enforcement there is very alert..At all times

Him: I'll be good

(Silence)

Me: I'm glad we could sit like this, have coffee and talk without wanting to kill each other
Me:

Things of the past are forgotten now, I'm glad you came to your senses

Him: Me too

—

MONG

Z

Dr: Don't be scared you not in trouble I

relaxed..

Him: I called you in here to see how you were doing? I know that you and Rebecca were very close

I walked around his office checking a few things..Me:

It's a bit of a shock.. I was with her last night

Him: Did she look depressed? Did she say anything odd that might've made her to feel the need to commit suicide?

I turned and looked at him..

Me: What do you mean?

Him: It seems like she committed suicide. There were no visible bruises on her body, no sign of strangulation. She was found inside the shower, naked with water still running. Her head was under the water, she might've passed out and drowned

Me: It doesn't make sense.. How does one pass out and drown in the shower? I went through some old stack of newspapers..

Him: It seems like she might've overdosed on her medication, which doesn't make any sense considering that all doses are monitored by the Nurses. I can't seem to put my finger on what really happened to her

When I lifted one of the newspapers, I stumbled upon an obituary. An obituary of the late Alissa Brown.. I looked at her picture and she was in her Uniform, she looked exactly like Alana..

Dr: Mongezi?

Me: Who is this?

I took the obituary to him..

Him: Ohw this is Alissa Brown.. She used to be a Nurse here until her untimely death a few years ago

Me: One of the Nurses said they didn't know her

Him: Most of the new Nurses don't know her, they came when she was already gone (Silence)

Him: So you've heard about her?

Me: Yeah.. Rebecca told me about her I thought she was just being crazy Him:

Rebecca was with us for a very long time, she knew Nurse Brown This didn't make any sense, so Rebecca wasn't lying..

—

TASH

Detective: We going to start all over againMe:

I told you everything

Him: No.. You haven't told me everything

This was starting to become very frustrating..

Him: The apartment had video cameras, and we retrieved those tapes.. The tapes onlyshow you and the baby

I shook my head..

Me: Matt is the one who kidnapped the baby and forced me to take care of himHim: You and this Matt were dating so you say?

Me: Yes

Him: Didn't you say that you were in a relationship with the baby's father? So meaningyou were in a relationship with these two men?

I exhaled..

Him: I'm trying to help you here, so work with me.. Tell me the truth Me: I loved Jojo, why would I kidnap his Son? It doesn't make senseHim: So you cheat on People that you love?

The interrogation was getting a bit harder for me. I searched through my brain and Icouldn't find anything that can help me get out of this situation..

Me: Can I call my lawyer now?

Him: Very well

—

ARMAN

I

I didn't go home, I waited at the reception up until the session finished. It was meant to be a 1hour session.. Dr Addo made his way out of the office, he was holding some files and very much surprised to still see me hanging around. He made his way to Felicia..

Him: Do I have any appointments?

Felicia: You were meant to see some Patient but she called and canceled.. You don't have any other appointments for the day

Addo: Okay.. Thank you

He made his way back to his office and my eyes followed him. He opened the door wider and looked at me..

Him: You can come in

I stood up and took my crutch, then I slowly made my way to his office.. He closed the door behind me..

I stood next to the chair..

Him: You may sit down

Me: Thank you

I sat down..

He sat on the small couch that was opposite me, before saying anything he fixed his tie.. Him: What makes you think that I can help you?

Me: You a professional and you take pride in your work

Him: I read your file and I had a talk with your previous psychiatrist, she told me about all her Patients including you

Me: Ohw

Him: If I'm not mistaken you were involved with your perpetrator's Son when you were still a teenager?

Me: Yes

Him: Then he moved away and the relationship came to an end? Me: Yes

Him: Then a few years later his Father started to see you in a different way? I nodded..

Him: Then he started a sexual relationship with you?

Me: Yes

Him: It went on up until a new man made his way into your life, what's his name again?Me:

Mongezi

Him: He came into your life and you guys started dating?

Me: Well we didn't start dating right away but I could tell that he was feeling something for me

Him: Okay and somehow your closeness with him faded after he had an accident and you tried things out again with your Perpatrator's Son?

I nodded..

He crossed his legs and laid back on the small couch..

Him: Stockholm syndrome is when you keep on going to the same person who has held you captive for a long time and convinced you that you better off with him than anyone else, so in your case as much as Stockholm syndrome has been evident but..

He thought for a while..

Him: It seems like you can't be alone.. You always want to be in a relationship, you always want a man in order for you to be complete.. Why is it hard for you to be alone?

I kept quiet..

Him: The reason why you didn't give up coming here despite my rudeness to you is because I'm a man, had I been a woman you would've taken my advice and gone to see a psychologist... Why can't you be without a man? Why can't you take time out from dating and focus on you?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I don't know

Him: You know..

(Silence)

Him: See we won't get anywhere if you can't be honest with me. For me to help you get through whatever it is that you struggling with, you need to be honest with me.. So talk to me

He leaned forward and looked at me, while his elbows balanced on his his thighs..I

swallowed..

Him: If you can't be honest with me then I won't be able to help you. You might as well just stop coming to this sessions because it'll be a waste of your money and a waste of my time, so I suggest that you be honest

I haven't really searched that deeper, and this moment was making me emotional because then I'll have to dig deeper to the depths of my pain..

—

NOMFUND

O

Social media was buzzing with Nataschi's arrest and Lonwabo being found, we still didn't know the Angel that found him for us and dropped him off at the hospital. They ran a lot of tests on him, so much that he ended up falling asleep after crying for a long time. The Dr said that he was okay but we will wait for the validation of the lab results to see that no toxic substance was injected to his bloodstream. I still couldn't believe that Tash kidnapped my Son, I mean why would she put me through so much Pain? Worse she was even supporting us and releasing statements to the media knowing very well that she had my Son all along..

Xols: Hey

Me: Hey

Her: I got you something to eat

Me: Thank you

Lonwabo's hand was wrapped around my two fingers, even when he was fast asleep I still didn't wanna let go..

Me: I'm not going to leave until he gets discharged, I'll ask my Sister to get me clean clothes and some toiletries

Jojo made his way in..

Him: How is he?

I turned to him..

Me: Please leave

He was stunned..

Me: I never wanna see you anywhere near my Son, ever again!He
didn't say anything..

Me: Leave Jojo, and leave us alone!! From hereon you dead to us!!Him: I
didn't know that Tash woul-

Me: I don't care!! (yelling)

Xols: Let's keep it down or else you going to wake the baby

Him: I understand that you mad but you can't keep me from seeing my Son

Me: Just sit back and watch.. You will never be a part of Lonwabo's life, ever again..

—

MONG

Z

I looked at her..

Me: You killed her didn't you?

Alana: I didn't

Me: Yes you did!.. Tell me something, exactly who are you or what are you?Her:

Mongz what are you on about?

Me: Rebecca starts talking about Nurse Alissa Brown then all of a sudden she dies amysterious
death?

Her: I didn't kill her Mongz

Me: Then what did you do?

Her: I did nothing! A spirit cannot physically harm a human being, it's impossible! Wecan scare
you by absorbing energy from the light bulbs and shifting things but we cannot physically harm
you

Me: You killed her!

Her: I did not kill her!!! (Yelling)

The light bulb in my room burst..

Me: I don't know what you're.. You definitely not anything that I have created. I want you to stay away from me!

Her: You overreacting

Me: Or I'll be honest with Dr Shai about you and he will give me medication that will stop my hallucinations and you'll be gone forever

Her: You making a very big mistake

Me: We'll see about that

Her: I hope you will have a good life with your dead ex who is going to haunt you!Me:

Rather the ghost I know!

She didn't say much anymore, she just disappeared.. I sat on my bed and rubbed my face with my hands

97

TASH

A FEW MONTHS LATER

I made my way to her and sat down opposite her..

Tebza: Hey

Me: Hey

Her: You look well, better than I expected

Me: Apart from our living conditions, this place is not entirely bad

I was sentenced to 15 years in Prison, without the possibility of Parole..Me: I'm

teaching acting

Her: That's good.. I'm proud of you

Me: Thank you

(Silence)

Me: How is Jojo and Nomfundo after the whole Lonwabo incident?She
sighed..

Her: I follow them on their social media platforms, they seemed to be doing wellMe: Are
they together?

Her: Not entirely. They don't post any pictures of them together, although Nomfundo ispregnant
again and-

Me: She is what?

Her: Her tummy is quiet big

Me: So I wasn't crazy.. They were sleeping togetherI
shook my head..

Me: Jojo is a dog, I should've never and I mean never let him in.. Look at where I am now.
Everything that I have worked hard for just disappeared like a puff of smoke. Where will
I get a job with a criminal record? 15 years is a lot too Her:

I'm sorry friend everything will work out, don't worry

Me: Definitely it won't work out for me, I have ruined my life for someone who was noteven
worth it.. I wish that I could rewind time, Loving Jojo is my biggest regret in life..

-

XOLELW

A

Mom: Are you nervous?

Me: Just a bit

I looked at Yonela busy sucking her fingers...Mom: It's
going to be okay

That time when we had to come and see my Father on family day, I got scared and decided
otherwise. My Mom also told me not to visit him and just concentrate on my pregnancy since
my Dr was not impressed with my blood pressure.. So now that I've delivered a healthy and
beautiful baby girl a few months ago, I decided that it was timeto face my Father.. His trial took
longer than expected, and a few weeks ago he was

finally sentenced. He was sentenced to 30 years in Prison, he was eligible for Parole when he has served at least 15-20 years of his sentence. Armani's case and Bonza's case were dismissed due to lack of evidence. If they found sufficient evidence pinning him to those two cases, then he probably would've gotten a harsh sentence.

My heart started beating very fast as the guard led him to where we were sitting. We hear a lot of things with regards to prison, and I thought that maybe Prison would be difficult for him but it wasn't, he actually looked good.. He looked at us before sitting down..

Mom: You look good, better than how you were the last time I visited you He sat down..

Him: I'm trying

He looked at me and Yonela..

Him: What's her name?

Me: Yonela

Him: Can I hold her?

I stood up and took her to him, but Yonela cried when he tried to take her from me.. Me: I'm sorry she's not used to People

Mom: She's only used to her Mother and Father I went and sat down..

Dad: She doesn't look nothing like you

Me: She looks like her Father

Dad: Was he denying her?

My Mother laughed..

Me: No he wasn't

Dad: Must be sad carrying a child only to have her look like her Father I chuckled..

Mom: I know the feeling very well since Xolelwa and Xoliswa look more like you
Me: It's okay I've accepted

Dad: At least he can make adorable kids

Me: Now the conversation is getting awkward
Dad:

How old is she?

Me: 5 months today

Dad: Happy birthday to you young Missy

Yonela did her swearing face..

Me: Ohhh Lord.. (Embarrassed)

Dad: She learned that from her Father too?
Me:

I'm not sure

Mom: She's very adorable though

Dad: And big

Mom: She's better now, You should've seen her when she was 1 month old. I still can't believe Xolelwa had a natural birth.. This little rascal was very big

Me: Giving birth was hell.. I don't think I'll have another baby ever
Mom:

Don't say that

Me: Plus I got a job.. I'm starting next month

Dad: That's good.. I'm really proud of you
Me:

Thank you

This was going better than I expected, for the very first time my Dad is being civil about everything. Maybe jail can indeed change a Person..

—

NOMFUND

O

I heard an unusual sound, followed by Lindi's cry..

Lindi: Ouch!!

I looked at her, and Lonwabo had hit her with his bottle on her face..Me:

Ohh my.. Are you okay? (laughing)

Lindi: Dammit! I thought we were over this hitting thing

Lindi was putting on his shoes, and Lonwabo wanted to get down from the counter, I think that's the reason why he lost it..

Me: Here.. I'll help you, you can just check if his bag has everything

It was very disappointing to find out that I was pregnant again, and this time around I was pregnant with twin girls.. After putting on his shoes, I got him off the counter and put him down. I gave him his bottle..

Me: Here you go baby

Lindi is my live in nanny, with my pregnancy weighing heavy on me I need all the help that I can get with Lonwabo. She doesn't only help with Lonwabo, she helps around the house too and we have since become good friends..

We heard the door bell ring, we looked at each other..Lindi:

Get the door

Me: You get the door

Her: It's your apartment you get it

Me: You work for me, so you get it

She shook his head and went to open..Me:

Come here baby

Lonwabo made his way to me..I

forced myself to pick him up..

Me: You be a good boy for mommy right?

Jojo took me to court because I was forbidding him to see his Son. The court granted him visitation rights every weekend. Lonwabo goes to his place every weekend.

Jojo: Hey Lindi

Lindi: Hey

Lonwabo: Dada!!!

I put him down and he ran to Jojo.. Jojo:

Hey champ.. Are you ready to go?

Lindi: I hope he is ready because he hit me with his bottleJojo:

Again?

Lindi: This young man has anger issuesJojo

looked at me..

Him: Hey

I looked at Lindi..

Me: Did you get his everything?

Lindi: Yes I did

Lindi gave Jojo the bag..

Jojo: Thank you

She walked them to the door and opened..

Lindi: Bye Lonz

Lonwabo waved goodbye with his other hand..Me:

Bye Baby

Lindi closed the door behind them and looked at me..Her: For

how long are you going to punish him?

Me: Jojo is the one who brought that crazy woman into our lives

Her: He didn't know what she was capable of, what if the tables were turned. What if it was your boyfriend who kidnapped Lonwabo?

Me: It isn't because unlike him I would never bring a crazy person next to my kidsShe exhaled..

Me: Look at me.. I'm pregnant again. My Parents are disappointed, everyone is mockingme calling me a baby making machine. Some are saying my career now is to make babies.. All of what's happening is his fault! If his crazy girlfriend didn't kidnap my son,we wouldn't be here today

Her: I'm sorry

Me: He should thank the court. If it wasn't for the court, Jojo wouldn't even see Lonwabo.I don't want anything to do with him, he brings me a handful of bad luck

—

ARMAN

I

Dr Addo really helped me, or should I say the sessions are very helpful. I realized thatbeing alone is actually not that scary, I now enjoy being on my own than being in a relationship..

Me: What do you think?

Khethi: It's a big space how much is it going to cost you?Me:

I'm not really sure

Her: Are you sure about this? Seems like building the orphanage is going to cost you alot of money

Me: I'll find sponsors

Her: Why do you wanna do this?

Me: Not all orphans are lucky to have someone else step up and take care of them afterthe passing of their Parents. Some of them are left to care for themselves, while they suppose to be at school they taking care of each other it's really painful. After the passing of my Mother I became an Orphan because I didn't know my Father and that made People to take advantage of me. I don't want to see another kid having to go through what I went through, it will scar you for life

Her: I understand what you saying

Me: I've been saving up, the money that I have might only buy this space. Building the

orphanage and what not, I'm going to need more money

Her: We will try and look for sponsors, plus you know People in high places

Me: I'll see what I can do, I really want this to workout

–

MONG

Z

My father knocked at the door while looking at me, he shook his head..

Him: Know that I'm very disappointed in you. You just got discharged from the facility not so long ago and now you wanna go back?

I didn't say anything to him..

Him: What where you thinking?

Me: I wasn't thinking that's the problem

He knocked again..

Mrs Mthethwa opened the door, she was a little surprised to see us..

Dad: Good morning

Her: Morning

Dad: May we please come in?

Her: I guess so

She opened the door wider and we made our way in.. She led us to the living room and then we sat down. No one said anything for a while..

Her: May I offer you anything to drink?

Dad: No thank you

My Dad cleared his throat..

Dad: Sorry to just show up at your house announced

Her: It's okay

Dad: I have accompanied my Son, he has something that he wants to tell you

She looked at me.. I think this is the hardest thing that I had to do in my whole entire life..Me: I came here today to tell you that..

(Silence)

Dad: We didn't come all the way for you to keep quiet, tell her the truth

Me: Your Daughter has been haunting me for a while now, she's mainly the reason why I was admitted to a mental institution

Her: I don't understand.. Why would she haunt you?Me:

Because I..

I exhaled..

Me: Senzeni didn't kill herself, I paid someone to push her off that balcony

If she got up from the chair and came to strangle me, I wouldn't be surprised nor defend myself..

Dad: I only found out about this a few days ago when he confesses to-Her: Mr

Mabuza are you proud of your Son?

My Dad didn't answer that..

Her: Are you a proud Dad? You know there's boys who grew up without their Fathers who turned out to be good.. For the life of me I will never understand why your Son does the things that he does whilst he had a good childhood and a Father figure

Dad: My Son has been through a lot, as much as People might think that he grew up well but there's things that happened, things that affected his sanity.. Like the death of his Mother

Her: So that's an excuse for him to be a monster? If every child whose parent died behaved like your Son.. This world would be a mess, and it's so sad that you sitting there busy defending his behaviour

Dad: I'm not defending him.. What he did was not right

(Silence)

Her: If so then we should go to the Police

We both looked at her..

Her: If you regret what you did, let's go to the Police and then you confess what you did so that you can take responsibility for your actions... This thing of you always getting away with everything is not right

This was definitely not part of the plan..

—

LOLITH

A

I heard a knock at the door, I checked my phone for any missed calls or text messages but there wasn't any. Who would just show up announced? Tiger didn't tell me that she was having a visitor today..

The person knocked again..

Me: I'm coming!

I was alone just lazing around on a Saturday morning, watching my favorite series. I needed this type of relaxation last week I had a hectic schedule at school. I got up from the couch and went to see who it was, I opened the door and I was a bit stunned to see Tiger's Father standing at the door step.

Me: Mr Ndarha?

Him: Good morning

Me: Good morning Sir

I let him in, I was very confused..I

looked at him..

Me: I.. I'm sorry but I thought you, I don't understand I was watching your trial and you were sentenced to 30 years in Prison..

He chuckled..

Him: You talking about my Brother

My eyes widened..

Me: Your.. Ohh I forgot that.. Wow uhm..

Him: I'm Jacob, Jacob Ndarha

Me: I'm Lolitha

Him: I hope I got the right place.. I'm looking for Xoliswa?

Me: Yes she lives here.. Right now she's at work, I can call herHim:

Please do

I went and got my phone to call Tiger..

Her: Babe

Me: Hey Babe.. You need to come home

Her: Why? Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine.. You have a visitor, your Uncle is hereHer:

My Uncle?

Me: Yes your Father's twin Brother

Her: That's not possible

Me: What do you mean?

Her: My Uncle died a very long time ago, he is the twin that didn't make itMe:

That's insane.. He is here at our place, very much alive

Her: Okay I don't know what's happening but Call the cops I'm on my wayMe:

You scaring me now

Her: Call the cops.. I am on my way

Me: Okay.. Hurry

I hung up and he walked into the lounge..

Him: Is everything okay?

He took off his glasses and looked at me..98

TIGER

I was very worried about Loli because the Person who was at our place, was definitely not my Uncle. We were told that my Uncle died during childbirth, and we have never seen any Picture of him and my Father together.. I opened the door and stormed in, Loli walked into the kitchen..

Me: Hey are you okay?

I met her halfway and put my hands on her cheeks..Me:

You okay?

Her: Yes I'm okay

Me: Where is he? What happened?

Her: He left

Me: He didn't hurt you or anything like that?She
shook her head..

Her: No he didn't.. He just leftI

hugged her..

Her: He looked exactly like your Father

Me: Let's go to Jojo's place because this doesn't make any senseHer: Okay

let me get my phone

I don't know what was happening but someone will have to clear up this confusion for us..

—

XOLELW

A

My Mom dropped us off at Mam'Gabi's place, Master was already waiting for us so that we could go back home. The initial plan was to have him go with us to visit my Father but, since things weren't really good between us I opted for him to stay behind until I was sure that my father was still not holding any grudge with regards to the Lukhele situation, and me having a child out of wedlock..

Me: Here you go

He took the bottle from me..

Him: This bottle appears to be a bit smaller than the usual ones we use

Me: Ya that's actually my breast milk, I pumped my breast milk into the bottleHim:

Why? Are your nipples painful again?

He touched my nipple..

Me: No.. I'm trying to wean her off from sucking my boobsHim:

Huh?

Me: I wanna stop breastfeeding

Him: Ngoba? (why)

Me: I'll be going back to work remember?

Him: Ya but won't that happen when she's at least 2 years old or so?Me: 2

years old? Master I'm starting work next month

Him: askies? (Pardon) Me:

We talked about this

Him: Eyy Xolelwa azange ukhulume izinto za next month (You never mentioned thatnext month you going back to work)

Yonela cried for the bottle, he put it in her mouth..Me:

Well I'm starting next month

Him: Angeke kwenzeke lokho (that won't happen)Me:

I wasn't asking njena

Him: Mina ke ngiyak'tshela.. Angeke kwenzeke lokho (Well then I'm telling you that it'snot happening)

Me: Why not?

Him: Remember what happened to your nephew? Yonela is still a baby for you to be

thinking about leaving her with a total stranger, nannies are not trustworthy anymore

Me: I have an idea.. Why don't you become a stay at home Dad while I go and work forus?

He chuckled..

Me: I really wanna be financial independent, I also wanna help

Him: This might be offensive but I don't want your help.. Ang'funi mali yakho Xolelwa (I don't want your money)

Me: Just because you got a promotion doesn't mean that yo-

Him: It means I can take care of you guys and you don't have to worry about going backto work, at least not for now

Me: Too bad then because next month I'm starting

Him: Then since you'll be financially independent wenze ke and move out.. Your very first day at work make sure that you have packed all your shit and got yourself a placeto stay

Me: That's not fair

Him: You said you wanted to be independent.. So ke sisi omdala you'll get your ownplace and leave my Daughter behind

I sighed..

Him: Ende masezikuhlula(when it gest tough) Don't even think about coming backHe

walked out with Yonela in his arms..

Me: Wow! What a childish behaviour

Him: Askies? Uyakhuluma? (Are you saying something)I

shook my head no..

Him: I didn't think so too

Master was being very unreasonable..

—

JOJO

I was on the phone with my Mother..

Me: I don't know what to do anymore.. When I send her money, she transferred it back to my account. Right now I'm thankful that I cover her rent, because if I didn't. They would be homeless.. She was never this difficult when she was pregnant with Lonwabo

Mom: She's being unreasonable, most women would appreciate that R10 000 a month. I mean you already covering her rent, you paying the stay in nanny, you covering her medical aid expenses, the pregnancy classes and you also covering Lonwabo's expenses. All she has to do with that 10 000 is to pay her accounts, buy groceries and anything else that she needs. Most people who work don't even earn that much, Nomfundo is being ungrateful..

Me: She didn't even tell me about the Doctor's appointment last week, she doesn't want me to accompany her to the pregnancy classes. She doesn't even talk to me when I show up at her place

Her: I will talk to her! Who the hell does she think she is??

Lonwabo ran into the kitchen and stretched his hand so that I could take his bottle from him..

Him: Dada!!!

I took it..

Me: Thank you

He tried to climb the high chair, with no success..Me:

You going to hurt yourself stop that

Mom: I can't even believe that you had to take her to court just so you could see your son! Does she even know how many ladies would appreciate having a supportive babydaddy? Nomfundo is now taking us for granted

Me: Lonwabo stop it!!

I gave him my car keys, then he ran to the door..Me:

Mom I'll call you later

Her: Okay baby.. I love you

Me: I love you too

Her: Kiss Lonwabo for me

Me: I will

Her: Bye

Me: Bye

I put my phone on the counter..

Me: No we not leaving

I went and got him then he threw my car keys on the floor..Me: It's

going to be a long weekend with you.. As always

I got his bottle and then we went to the lounge, I connected my laptop to the plasma sohe could watch the kiddies videos. At least those videos keep him occupied for a very long time..

I went to get my phone so that I could check my Emails..

—

MONG

Z

My office has the best view. The window is situated exactly where you have a clear viewmost of the buildings around the area.. I still can't believe that Zeni's Mom wants me to go to the cops and confess, confessing to her was even difficult..

Voice: I never thought you had in you to do that

I turned around and it was Zeni, she looked rather different this time..

Her: Her heart is at ease, despite what she expects you to do next.. Now I can move onto the other side because there's nothing holding me back anymore

Me: I'm sorry for everything

She smiled..

Her: I should tell you that Aziza is more dangerous than you think, she is an evil spiritand you should never let her in

Me: Aziza?

Her: The female demon disguising herself as Nurse Alissa. She tends to retain the image of beautiful women who have passed on just so she can seduce Men

I sighed..

Her: Armani was a better partner to you, she is kind hearted, loving and she made you a better person

Me: Ya I don't think it's going to happen anymore Her:

You wouldn't know until you try again

Me: Yeah I don't know Zeni

Her: If you don't get Armani again, I do hope that you find her equivalent Me: We will see

Her: Bye Mongz

Me: Bye

She disappeared..

—

ARMAN

I

I knocked at his office, his eyes moved from his laptop to the door.. Him: Come

in

I made my way in..

Me: I'm sorry.. Are you busy?

Him: What did my assistant say to you before you decided to knock? I

laughed..

Me: You will never change

He closed his laptop..

Him: I thought we were done with our sessions

Me: Yes we are

Him: I'm confused

Me: I just came here to thank you

Him: for?

Me: You really helped me.. The sessions helped me a lot
Him: I was just doing my job

I put the bottle of whiskey on his table..Me:

I know and I'm really grateful

Him: Thank you.. I guess

There was an awkward silence between us..Me: I probably should go

Him: Thank you again for stopping by and the whiskey ofcourseMe:

You welcome

I made my way out..

—

NOMFUND

O

It's very boring around here when Lonwabo is not around and Lindi left about an hour ago. On weekends she usually visits her family.. I was busy picking up his toys when my phone started ringing, I went and got it. It was Jojo's Mom..

Me: Hello

Her: Hello Nomfundo how are you?

Me: I'm well and you?

Her: I'm good.. Are you at your place?

Me: Uhm Yes..

Her: Okay I'll stop by later to see how you doing

Me: Ohw

Her: I'll bring dinner

Me: Okay..

Her: See you later

Me: Later it is Her:

Bye

Me: Bye

That was weird, she doesn't usually stop by unless Lonwabo is around..

—

NDARH

A

When the guard told me that I had a visitor, I wondered who it was. I mean, I already had visitors today. This visitor must've paid a lot of money to be allowed to see me after visiting hours..

Guard: 30 minutes

He was standing at the corner of the room, his back was facing the door. I somewhat knew who it was, but.. It wasn't possible, it can't be possible. I stopped halfway and observed him thoroughly..

Him: I see that you even Mastered my signature walk It was

him, my mind wasn't playing any tricks on me.. He turned around and took off his glasses..

Him: Hello Brother

Me: Isa.. Isaac?

Him: Jacob

I shook my head..

Me: It can't be

Him: You really thought that you could impersonate me forever?

Me: You supposed to be dead

Him: Wouldn't you like that?

(Silence)

Him: We have a lot to talk about.. I would really like to know how my wife is doing, and my Son

He sat down and then pointed at the chair opposite him..Him:

Please do sit.. We have a lot to catch up on

He put his glasses on the table...

Him: By the way how is my old friend David (President) holding up? Prison can be quite cruel to a Person

Me: This cannot be happening.99

JOJO

I had an unusual visit from Tiger and her girlfriend. Tiger hinted that they had something important to discuss with me, it was good that Lonwabo had passed out..

I let her lead the conversation and what she revealed was something that didn't make any sense..I looked at both of them..

Me: Didn't his twin die a long time ago?

Tiger: That's what we were told but..

We both looked at Lolitha..

Loli: I am not crazy.. I swear he came to the apartment and said he was your Uncle Jacob Ndarha

Tiger: I've never told Loli about Uncle Jacob, there's no way that she could know that name unless he really showed up at the apartment

Me: Did you see him?

Tiger: No.. He was already gone when I arrived there

Me: How did he look like?

Loli: Exactly like your Dad.. At some point I thought it was him, I almost had a heartattack

Tiger: Should we call Mom and find out what's going on?Me:

No.. We not going to Mom about this

She looked at me..

Me: Obviously something is not right here, if it's his twin then why would Mom and Ndarha lie about him? Why would they be busy be telling us that he died a long time ago when it is pretty clear that he didn't die

Tiger: Good point.. Why would they lie if they know that he is going to resurface at somepoint?

Me: I just say we wait on them to tell us what's going on.. Right now let's just play it coolTiger: I still can't believe they lied

Me: I know.. But why?

–

NDARH

A

Him: How are you holding up?

Me: Where you been all these years?

Him: Don't spit on my face.. You know where I've been because you put me there!Me: You couldn't have possibly been in jail for this long?

Him: According to you I should've died in Prison, just like how you wanted. You kept on getting hits on me but I survived! Wanna know why?

Me: Intrigue me

Him: Because I've always been better than you, that's why you stole my lifeMe: I hardly think so

Him: My Woman, My Son, My political career.. You killed that political rival of mine to set

me up remember? You wore my clothes, made sure that you leave a personal item of mine next to his body! Which was my diary where I wrote how much I despised him.. The footage that the police obtained showed "me" killing him when in actual fact it was you, disguised as me!!.. Nonts was devastated, she was pregnant when I got locked up and I never had a chance to see my Son

Me: You smart Isaac.. I don't believe that you've been in jail for this long

He leaned back on his chair..

Him: I was plotting my revenge against you

(Silence)

Him: What did you tell him? Did you tell him that you were his Father?

I didn't say anything..

Him: You told him that I was dead didn't you? How did you convince Nonts to fall for your lies

Him: Look Jojo is old now, what are you expecting? That you guys will bond as Father and Son? He has a Son, and he has two girls on the way.. He is in his mid 30s for crying out loud! You want him to hate his Mother?

Him: Why should I care? As soon as I was locked up she jumped straight into your bed! She kept this whole lie with you of you stealing my identity and everything that I worked hard for..

He leaned forward..

Him: We were very close.. I always looked out for you. I was more of a big brother to you than your twin, Sometimes I even took the fall for you! Remember when you drank Dad's wine? The one he uses for holy communion at church.. I took the blame for you! I knew that I would handle those beatings better than you did. I took you to every political meeting that I attended, only to have you monitor everything that I was doing.. Then what did you do? When I finally got the woman of my dreams and my political career was about to take off you.. You fucked me over!

Me: Isaac look

Him: No you look!!.. I was arrested a few times during the apartheid era. I was put on the electrical chair a lot, then when I came home Dad would beat me because he wanted

me to stop being a comrade.. I sacrificed my life for what I believed in only to have you eat the fruits of my labour? You pathetic useless bastard!!

He got up and went to the window..

Him: I never saw that coming.. My own Brother, my own blood!

He folded his arms and had his back against me, I gently got up from the chair. I looked around and we were alone in the room..

I slowly walked up to him, all I wanted to do was to strangle him.. He didn't move an inch nor said anything, and when I was ready to make my move he said something..

Him: I will smash your head against the wall and decorate the floor with your brains, if you try that shit on me!

He turned around and looked at me..

Him: I've been planning my revenge on you for a very long time and what do you know? You managed to fuck up on your own as always.. So now you have two options. Either you kill the general that's going to make your life a living hell, and add a murder case to your already existing sentence then get life. Or you can just tolerate being his bitch for the next 30.. Your choice, either way you screwed

He walked closer to me..

Him: What is it going to be?

Me: Stay away from my family

Him: What family? Because when I walk out of that door, you no longer have a family! And congratulations on the twins by the way, almost had the privilege of meeting one of them today

I grabbed him by his clothes..

Me: You stay away from my Daughters!!!

Guard: Hey!

I don't even know when he walked in... I let go of him.. He walked up to the table and got his glasses..

Him: Greet the General for me

Me: What?

He took off his jacket and raised his short sleeve a little to reveal the number 27 tattoo on his shoulder..

Me: You got to be kidding me!

Him: It's not like the olden days Brother.. You on your own now, I survived jail. I hope you do too

He put on his glasses and shook his head..Him:

Shame

—

ARMAN

I

Me: Put that right there I

noted it down..

Me: 1..2..3..4..5

Gentleman: Should I shift it?

Me: Yes please.. Put it in the back with the othersHim:

Yes Mam'

My phone vibrated and I got it out from my jeans. I didn't recognize the number but I answered anyway, could be one of the suppliers..

Me: Hello?

(Silence)

Me: Hello?

Voice: Mani

It was Mongz.. I dropped the board that I was holding..Him: I

hope I didn't catch you at the wrong time

I walked around checking ailes..

Him: You still there?

Me: What do you want Mongz?

Him: Was wondering if we could go out for dinner tonight so that we could talkMe: I

don't wanna have dinner with you and I definitely don't want to talk

Him: Come on you being unreasonableMe:

Don't ever call me Please

I heard him exhaling..

Me: Leave me alone! I

hung up..

—

XOLELW

A

Mam'G: I'm going to miss you guys

She made her way in..

Her: Are you okay?

I was putting Yonela's things in the bag making sure that I'm not leaving anything behind..

Me: I'm okay

She sat on the bed..

Her: Kwenzekeni? (what happened)

Me: It's nothing serious.. Master and I just had an argumentHer:

About what?

I turned and looked at her....

Me: I want to go back to work next month, he told me that if I go back to work then I must move out and leave Yonela behind

Her: Why?

Me: He doesn't want me to go back to work anytime soon.. Not until Yonela is at least 2years old

Her: Well he has no right to tell you what to do and what not to do.. He hasn't even paid Lobola for you

Me: Exactly my point

Her: On the other hand.. Yonela is still young, are you sure that you will be comfortable with being away from her for what? 8 hours or so a day?

I looked at Yonela sleeping on the bed... Her:

You going to be very paranoid at work

Me: I just don't want to be a stay at home Mom, changing nappies and breastfeeding every day

Her: I understand where you coming from but.. Maybe just think about going back to work when she's a bit older, then you can take her to a day care. You don't want to have another woman close to your Daughter and your man trust me. Your shifts and his shifts are not always the same, sometimes he will be around while you at work and it'll be him, Yonela, and the nanny around the house.. You guys will hardly see each other, sometimes when he comes home you will have to go to work, when he goes to work you will be coming home

I thought about what she was saying..

Her: But what do I know, maybe times have changed.. You guys are a new generation and you do things differently, I just hope that it won't backfire

–

NONTSIKELELE

O

I was folding some napkins and putting them in a basket. My Catering business is not doing so bad, but then I'm thinking of selling the house and getting myself a small house since I am alone most of the time..

I felt hands covering my face, that was weird.Me:

Xoliswa?

Xoliswa is the only one who would do something like this, she's way too playful..

Me: how did I not hear you walk in?

I moved my hand up and felt the hands, they definitely weren't my Daughter's hands..Me: Wait a minute..

I got the hands off me and turned around, I could swear that my eyes were deceiving me.We stood there and looked at each other, we stared deep in each other's eyes and that'swhen I realized that this was not my Husband.. I tried taking a few steps back but the table blocked me...

Me: It cannot be

I don't think I've ever been this scared in my life before..

He buried his hands deep in his pockets, the same way that Jojo usually does. He ranhis eyes around..

Him: What a beautiful place

Me: You.. How did you get in?

He smiled a little and walked away from me, I looked around and spotted my phone onthe small table. I made my way to get it so I could call the cops, Just when I was aboutto pick it up. A golf stick just passed my hand by a few inches and smashed the glass table, I screamed.. He walked closer and smashed my phone repeatedly..

Me: Please stop..

Him: All of this is mine!!!!

He went and hit the plasma tv repeatedly..

Him: My blood and sweat created this life for you!!!

He just went around breaking things and I sat on the couch, crying and screaming..

Him: Everything in this house is mine!!!! This is the kind of dream that you and I weresupposed to be living!!! (Shouting)

Me: Please stop (Crying)

Him: What did you do? You wormed your way into his bed? Not even once did you visitme in jail!!!

This was not happening.. It felt like a dream..

I tried to get up from the couch but he pointed the golf stick at me..Him:

Move again.. I dare you!! I dare you to move again

Me: What do you want?

He parted my weave with the stick..

Him: You lucky that he came out looking like you, that's why you were able to keep this shame of a lie for all these years!

He put the stick under my chin and lifted my face up so I could look at him..Him: You going to take me to my son

I shook my head..

Me: No.. Please..

Him: I'm not asking you

Me: Jojo won't understand.. He is going to hate me IsaacHim: Do you think I care??

Me: I'm begging you don't do this

Him: You going to take me to my Son, or else.. I'm going to burn this house down with you in it!!.. It's your choice Nono..

100

NDARHA

This thing with my Twin Brother Isaac bothered me a lot that my mind was very far away, far from engaging with anyone in anything. The President was back in my cell, literally it's back and forth with him. He is getting a bit of break since the General found someone new to torture and humiliate..

He was sentenced to 35 years, he's only eligible for Parole when he has served at least 10 years of his sentence...

He came and sat next to me on my bed while the guys were playing cards..

Him: You good?

Me: Yeah I'm good

Him: Tell me something.. How is it going with the offshore account?Me: Jojo is being stubborn about it

He sighed in frustration..

Him: Does he know that some of us have to buy protection around here?Me: I'll talk to him again

He looked at me..

Him: What is wrong?I sighed..

Me: I have to tell you something, but I don't want you to freak outHim:

Okay? What is it?

(Silence)

Him: I am not Isaac Ndarha

He didn't say anything for a few seconds and then he burst out in laughter..

Him: Don't do that man.. I know jail is difficult but don't lose your mind, don't let it get into your head

Me: I'm serious...I stole my Brother's identityHe looked at me..

Him: I don't understand

Me: I am Jacob Ndarha

He didn't seem to be comprehending..

Him: No..

Me: When my Brother went to jail, I stole his identity

Him: No.. This not true, if you weren't my old time friend I would knowMe:

Listen..

Him: Tell me something.. When the cops invaded my Mother's place back in 1979, where did we hide our tshirts? So that the cops couldn't see that we were comrades?

Me: I don't know

Him: Other than being put on the electrical chair, what other techniques did they use totorture us?

Me: I don't know that either

Him: Let me see your victory scar on your back?I

took off my vest..

Me: I don't have any scar on my back

Him: Son of a b*****

The guys looked at us as I put on my vest again.. He got up..

Him: No wonder why we here.. You fucked up! Isaac would've never fucked up like thatMe: I

know how bad it looks b-

He pushed me..

Him: You a sick bastard do you know that?

Rama: Gentlemen what's going on?

Him: I knew the story about Isaac killing that guy didn't make any sense! You imitatedyour Brother all these years? You a psychopath!

Me: Look it wasn't my intention I j-

Him: You psycho!!

He charged at me and then we started fighting..

Rama: Hey...Hey!! Knock it off!

The guard hit the bars..

Gaurd: What's going on in there?

Rama held the President..

President: Now I'm starting to believe that you were behind the Killing and your Brothergoing to jail!, you framed him!!! Why? Why would you do that to your own blood?

The guard unlocked and made his way in...

Guard: You..

He pointed at me..

Him: solitary confinement.. Now!!

He grabbed me by my vest..

President: You a sick bastard!!!

—

NONTSIKELELE

O

My hands got weaker busy grabbing on to the sides of the basin. He got my head outand I started coughing..

Him: Let's try this one more time

He had a tight grip on me at the back of my neck...

Him: Are you going to take me to my Son and then tell him the truth?Me: You don't understand (Crying)

Him: I guess not

He dipped me in again.. This time, a bit longer than the last time. He pulled me out..Him: We can do this all night I don't mind

Me: Jojo is.. He won't forgive meHe yelled next to my ear..

Him: I don't give a damn!!!! (shouting)

His phone rang, then he let go of me..

He took it out and answered..

Him: What??..

He looked at his wrist watch..

Him: I forgot about the meeting... Yeah I can still make itHe
then looked at me..

Him: I'll be right there... Bye

He put his phone away..

Him: I have to go somewhere, we will continue with this later

He grabbed me by my arm and dragged me across the floor from the bathroom to the main room..

Him: I don't have to tie you up now or do I?I

shook my head no..

Him: Good!!

He walked up to the door and made his way out, then he locked me inside the bedroom..

—

XOLELW

A

I kept on stealing glances at Master as he was driving..I cleared my throat..Me: I
thought about it and I won't be going back to work anymore

Him: What changed your mind?

I turned and looked at Yonela who was still passed out in her car seat..

Me: I don't think I'll be comfortable with anyone babysitting Yonela, especially after what happened
with Lonwabo

I didn't wanna tell him the truth about what Mam'Gabi said. I don't wanna give him any ideas..

Him: Okay

Me: I thought you'd be happy?

Him: I'm just exhausted

Me: I can drive

Him: Naa it's cool

I'm starting to think that Master is a sexist..A

call came through, it was Xoliswa..

Me: Xols?

Her: Hey.. Where are you?

Me: I'm on my way to Mpumalanga

Her: Have you spoken to Mom?

Me: No.. Why?

Her: A certain Uncle of ours has resurfaced

Me: Is it Uncle Archie? Did you guys manage to find him again?Her:

No.. It's.. It's Dad's twin brother

Me: What? That's not possible.. We were told that he died a long time agoHer:

Yeah that's not true.. He just showed up from nowhere

Me: Did you see him?

Her: No I wasn't around.. Lolitha did see him thoughMe:

He was at your place?

Her: Yes.. He left before I got there, Loli swears that he looks exactly like Dad Me:

This makes no sense.. Why would Dad and Mom lie to us all these years?Her: Good question

Me: So what's going to happen now? Should I come back?Her:

No.. We will keep you posted

Me: Okay do so

Her: Okay.. I love you

Me: I love you too.. Bye

Master: What was that all about?

Me: My Family can't seem to catch a break!

–

ARMAN

I

I heard someone knocking..I made my way out of the bedroom to the kitchen door while fixing my robe..

Me: Who is it?

Voice: It's Me

I stopped and immediately went into a panic mode..Me:

Mongz what are you doing here?

Him: I just wanna talk to you that's all

Me: I did say that I don't wanna talk to you

Him: Please open the door

Me: No!.. Mongz if you don't leave I'm going to call the cops

Him: They will find me sitting here then, on your door step.. I'll even keep myself busy by playing music on my phone and singing along

I let out a sigh... I grabbed the keys and went to open the door, but I didn't let him in..He looked at me..

Him: Hi

Me: I want you to leave

Him: If you could let me in and then we talk, I promise that I'll leave right after without giving you a hard time

I didn't say anything..

Him: I promise

I opened the door wider and shifted a little, then he made his way in. I closed the door..

He took off his Jacket. It was good to see that the Mental institution didn't devour him,he was still handsome and very much attractive...

Me: I'm only giving you 5minutes

Him: 5min is fine

I folded my arms.. Me:

Start talking then

—

NOMFUND

O

I kept on changing channels and I still couldn't find anything interesting to watch. I put the remote next to me and looked at my phone, I was missing my boy already..

I took my phone and went to my contacts, I went to Jojo's contacts and called him..Him: Am I dreaming?

Me: I wanted a video call with Lonwabo

Him: He is sleeping

Me: Ohw

Him: I'll video call you when he wakes up

Me: Okay

Him: Are you good?

Me: I'm fine.. I just wanted to see my baby that's all. I'll be waiting for your video call later when he wakes up.. Bye

I hung up and put my phone away..

—

NDARHA (THE OG)

Osborne looked at me for a while before saying anything..

Me: So when can I expect the money from the offshore account?

Him: You not getting it.. Your Brother clearly stated that only his Son should be the oneto have access to that money

Me: I understand but my So-I

cleared my throat..

Me: My Nephew is going through a lot right now and I don't even think he will contactyou anytime

Him: How did you even know about this account?

Me: My Brother told me about it when I visited him in prison

Him: Even so.. I can't just give you the money, he has never mentioned you to me.. I'msorry

I've been tailing my Brother for a long time now, ever since I got out of jail. I made it myjob to study him, and the life that he stole from me..

Me: I understand that you mainly doing your jobI got up..

Me: Thank you for your time

Him: My pleasure

I picked up the photo of his Daughter from his table..Me:

Your Daughter?

Him: Yes

Me: She's adorable.. How old is she?

Him: 8 years old

I nodded..

His landline phone started ringing, he picked up the phone..

Him: Osborne hello?

I put the photo down..

Him: Karina??

He then looked at me..

Him: You bastard!!!

Me: I'll leave my contacts incase you change your mindHim:

Karina??. Karina sweetyy??

He put the phone down..

Me: Good night Sir

I walked away..

Me: I'll leave my contacts at the reception, Incase you have different news for me

—

NDARH

A

When you in solitary confinement, the silence and the darkness forces you to interactwith your thoughts. Right now I had a lot of things to think about..

I heard the door opening, I stood up..

The General walked in followed by two of his goons..Guards:

Make it quick

General: We will

His two goons made their way to me and held me, The General made his way to me. Hewas even smoking a cigarette..

Me: The day that I'm going to kill you, you won't see it coming and you won't evenbelieve it

Him: Unfortunately for you, that day won't comeHe

forced through a knife in my chest..

Him: This is the end for you.. Apparently there could only be one Isaac Ndarha, and It'snot going to be you

He retracted it and stabbed me again, repeatedly..Me:

Ahhhhhhhhhhhhh!!!

101

NDARHA (THE OG)

Before heading home I decided to make one last stop and see how one of my Men, Nyathi was holding up with the little brat. One thing I like about jail is that, you make family inside there. The loyalty you get from there will still be the same even when youout..Nyathi had blindfolded her, and tied her hands together. She looked scared...

Nyathi: What are we going to do with her?I

looked at her..

Me: We don't hurt kids.. We gonna hold her off until her Father gives inHe
nodded..

Me: I have to rush home an-

My phone vibrated, I looked at it..

Me: I have to take this

I moved away..

Me: Hello?

General: It is done

Me: Are you sure? Did everything go well?

Him: Everything went well

Me: Good

Him: I don't understand.. Didn't you mention that you wanted to revenge? you wanted him to suffer for everything that he has put you through? Make him suffer the same waythat he made you suffer for all those years?

Me: Well Karma got to him before I could.. There's nothing I could've done that was going to make him suffer more than he already had. Even if the truth was out, his twins weren't going to be affected. His relationship with them was still going to be safe.

Maybe his relationship with Jojo was going to be bruised but they could've worked on fixing things along the way, then everything was going to be good again between them. Worse, he was going to kill you and run the Prison, possibly be the next General. He was going to serve his sentence peacefully with his wife and kids still visiting him, he was still going to win and I would have to go tooth and nail again with him. The kids were obviously going to side with him. It's their father and they have known him all their lives, and my Son would probably prefer him more than me.. I have serious things to handle than engaging in constant petty fights with him

Him: I understand, and thank you for hinting that he had it for me..

Me: He is my Brother, I know him. He is like a snake, he was going to strike when you least expected

Him: Again, thank you chief

Me: We will always look out for each other

Him: I have to go

Me: I'll be in touch

Him: Perfect

He hung up..

—

ARMAN

I

He leaned against my kitchen counter and looked at me..Me:

Mongz what do you want? It's late

Him: I couldn't sleep knowing that things were rocky between us.. The honest truth is that I miss you

He pulled me closer to him by my robe, but I yanked his hand off...Me: I don't have time for this

Him: I don't even know why you worked up, I don't understand why you hate me when I

didn't do anything wrong

Me: You didn't do anything wrong?

Him: Yes

Me: Look me in the eye and tell me that you weren't behind my shooting? He got closer and put his hands on my cheeks..

Him: I wasn't behind your shooting I swear

Looking into his eyes, he seemed sincere.. Him:

I love you and I would never hurt you Me: You

hurt your ex

Him: You not my ex, and by then I was in a really bad state. I'm not saying that I'm now perfect but I'm not like how I used to be and with Senzeni you won't understand the motive behind what I did

Me: Still..

Him: I would've hurt you that time when I was in a coma and you never even visited me, instead you got back with your ex Jojo. Recently I was locked up, you didn't come. Quite frankly those are enough reasons for my insanity to take over, but I didn't hurt you because I love you. Senzeni's mom is talking about the old me, I am not like that anymore.. I'm really trying to change and right now it hurts me deeply that you think I was behind that shooting.. You could've gotten killed, you really think I want you dead?

This was hard to process.. I was getting confused

Him: I wish you could see how much I love you, and how happy I am with you.. I would never hurt you like that, you know me

Me: Mongz I'm really working on finding myself a-He

leaned over and kissed me, unexpectedly.

With his forehead still attached to mine, he broke the kiss.. Him: I

love you sweetheart, and I would never hurt you like that..

NOMFUNDO

The following morning I woke up and took a long bath. Sundays are a bit of a drag, so I have decided to go out and do a bit of shopping.. I heard someone ringing the door bell,dressing up was going to take a while so I went to open with a towel wrapped around my partially wet body..

Me: Who is it?

Jojo: It's me

That was strange, I wasn't expecting him to drop off Lonwabo so early..I unlocked and opened the door..

Lonwabo: Mama!!!

Me: Hey Baby

I let them in, Jojo put him down..

Jojo: Good morning

Me: Morning.. I didn't expect you to bring him back so earlyHis eyes widened..

Him: You actually talking to me?

Me: Is everything okay? I'm worried why did you bring him back so early? Him:

Actually I didn't bring him back I was just taking my changes with youMe: Huh?

Him: Thought we could all go out for a family picnic, if you up for itMe: A

family picnic?

Him: You called me a lot last night so I figured out that you might be boredMe: Jojo

what do you think this is?

He exhaled..

Him: I don't wanna fight.. I'm tired of fighting, aren't you tired of always fighting me?

Well he was right, it was a bit exhausting and emotionally draining being mad at him..

Him: I'm sorry for everything that you went through. If I knew that Tash was that crazy I would've long left her. I even respected your wishes of not wanting her anywhere near Lonwabo. I take the blame, it's my fault. That's why I haven't even been able to move on, I don't want to fall for another crazy human being again. Now it's not only Lonwabo but the girls too, I don't want to repeat the same mistake again when they arrive.. I'm really trying to be a committed Father to my kids, I wanna be there for them at all times

I tried to hold my tears back, despite everything that happened. He is still a good father.. Lonwabo came back running to us with a bag of cheese curls..

Me: How did you get those?

He handed them to Jojo, so that he could open..

Me: I'll go and get dressed.. I don't know about the picnic but I wanted to go out shopping

Him: We can do that I

cleared my throat..

Me: Uhm.. I don't have money He

raised one of his eyebrows..

Him: How where you going to do shopping if you don't have money? I

shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I was planning on calling my sister so that she could borrow me some money.. Even a thousand rand because I really need new clothes, I'm getting bigger and bigger it's frustrating

I made my way to the couch and slowly sat down.. He picked Lonwabo up and then they came and sat next to me..

Him: I sent you money and you sent it back to me, when you were feeling yourself Me: That was in the past, now we starting afresh

Him: I'll send you some money

(Silence)

Me: What am I going to do with 3 kids? You'll be very busy soon since the new drama is starting that you won't be around

He put his arm around my shoulders and pulled me closer to him, I laid my head on his shoulder..

Him: I'll hire 5 nannies if I have too, just to make everything easier for you Me:

After giving birth, I no longer wanna have sex with you

He laughed..

Me: I'm serious

—

NONTSIKELELE

O

I felt something cold being poured over my face. I woke up frightened and gasping for air..

Isaac: It's time for you to wake up I

looked at him..

Last night when he locked me inside my bedroom, I got in bed and cried myself to sleep.. Him: I want you to pack everything that belongs to you and move out

Me: This is my home

Him: No.. This is nothing of yours! You didn't buy this house and you certainly didn't work hard for it, so trust me you don't deserve it to live here

Me: Ndarha bought this house for me and the kids

I don't think I'll ever forget the cruelty that I saw being reflected by his eyes..

He walked closer to the bed and I moved back... He pulled the duvet down and then got a hold of my leg. He pulled me out of bed, as much as I tried to grab on to the sheet for support. It came out, and found its way to the floor with me. Since my bed is high, the fall wasn't pleasant.. He dragged me to the balcony..

Me: Isaac wait!!.. I'm sorry (Crying)

He let go of my leg and unlocked the sliding door, I tried to crawl to the door but I didn't

get that far. He got a hold of me and he was pretty strong, I couldn't wrestle with him..Me: I'm sorry!!! (Crying)

I grabbed on tightly to his shirt as we were getting closer to the edge of the balcony..Me: Okay I'll move out!!! (screaming)

He stopped and looked at me, I was even shaking like a leaf.. He put me down with his hands around my waist.. I put both my trembling hands on his chest..

Me: I'll move out (Crying)

He moved his other hand up and parted my weave from my face..Me: I'm sorry (Crying)

He went on to lay my head on his chest..

—

JOJO

I looked at the time, Nomfundo was taking forever. I looked at Lonwabo who was laying next to me and enjoying his milk, with his short leg raised up..

Me: Let's go and check on your Mom, what do you say?He ignored me..

My phone rang and I answered, I didn't recognize the number..Me:

Hello?

Voice: Hello is this Jojo Ndarha?

Me: Yes.. Who is this?

Voice: This is Governor Sithole from the *****Prison.Me:

Yes how can I help you?

Him: I'm calling you with regards to your father Mr Isaac Ndarha... There was an accident last night and we requesting you to come over tomorrow morning

Me: What accident?

Him: Unfortunately your Father has passed on earlier this morning.. I'm sorryI immediately got up from the couch..

Nomfundo came through..

Her: Okay I'm done now we can go..

102

ARMANI

I usually go to church on Sundays, it's not far from my apartment but today I bailed outbecause I woke up a bit late. Mongz left late last night. Nothing happened, and his presence just confused me a lot last night...I heard a knock at the door..

Me: I'm coming

I went to open and it was him..

Him: Good morning

Me: Morning

Him: Wanted to take you out for breakfastI let

him in..

Me: We can't carry on as if like something is happening between usHim: You right..

Me: I am?

He looked at me..

Him: Yes

I didn't know how to respond..

Him: That's why I'm proposing that we should get marriedMe:

Excuse me?

Him: Let's get married

Me: You not making any sense

He held my hand..

Him: Let's stop with all these games and running around when we know that at the end we always going to get back together.. Why don't we just make it official?

Me: I don't think you hearing yourself right now

Him: I am..

A moment of silence came between us..

Him: You deserve to be happy too, and I've seen you happy with me. I'm probably not going to be the best husband, but I'll always make sure that you happy and feel loved at all times

Me: Mongz we can't just get married.. You know how my Grandmother and my Father feel about you

Him: That's why we should do it at home affairs in the meantime. If we get married at home affairs, they'll be forced to accept our relationship. When they do accept our relationship then I'll pay Lobola and we can finally have a white wedding or traditional wedding, whatever you feel comfortable with

Me: This is very sudden and it sounds crazy I

shook my head no..

Me: As much as you want me to be your wife, but I can't He

gave me a confused look..

Me: When I got shot, a bullet went through my womb. The Dr said that my womb won't be able to carry a baby full term. The bullet scarred me

He exhaled...

Him: I'm sorry to hear that

Me: It's okay

(Silence)

Me: So you see.. We can't be together, at some point you'll want kids and.. He

cleared his throat..

Him: Honestly speaking I've never thought about that.. The whole idea of having kids,I've never really thought about it

Me: Why?

Him: Most mental illnesses are hereditary and the idea of having kids with my condition worried me a lot

Me: I'm sorry

Him: It's okay.. It's something that I've come to accept I nodded..

Him: We are way too fucked up

He started laughing and I laughed too..

Him: So what do you say?

I took a deep breath..

Me: Okay I accept but only on one condition

Him: What is it?

Me: If you promise that you will take your pills everyday Him: I promise

Me: And we going to attend therapy every week, if we going to try again with marriage involved.. Then we will have to be serious and make it work so that our families can see how serious we are with each other

Him: I agree

This is a huge step and I do love Mongz, I just don't know if what we doing is wise or stupid... He pulled me closer to him and hugged me..

Him: We going to make it work

Me: And no sex until we get married He broke the hug..

Him: Then can we go to home affairs tomorrow to enquire and hopefully get a date?

Me: We'll go tomorrow morning

Him: And I think we going to need witnesses.. I can ask my cousin
Me: I can ask my friend Khethi

Him: So we doing it?

Me: We doing it

He leaned over for a kiss but I stopped him..

Me: Ohw and on Sundays you will be going to church with me
He frowned..

Him: Fuck it.. Do I have too?

Me: Yes if you don't wanna go then we can just forget ab-
Him:

Church every Sunday it is

I laughed and shook my head..

Him: I love you soo much

Me: I love you too

He kissed me

—

NONTSIKELELE

O

Jojo and Xoliswa randomly showed up at the house, I'm sure they've called me a few times but they couldn't get through since Isaac broke my phone. It was an awkward moment because they ran in on me and Isaac having breakfast. They both looked at him without saying anything..

Me: Jojo.. Xolelwa? What are you guys doing here?

Xols: We tried calling you b.. I'm sorry who is this?

I got up from my chair, my knees immediately got weak..
Me:

This is.. This is your Uncle, Jacob.. Jacob Ndarha

Isaac gave me a weird look..

Jojo: You and Ndarha told us that his twin Brother died, during childbirth

Me: We lied, only because Ndarha and his twin never got along so.. We didn't want him to a part of us

Xols: What else have you guys lied about?Me:

Huh?

Xols: What else have you two lied about?

Jojo: This doesn't make any sense.. Ndarha's twin suddenly rocks up from nowhere and then Ndarha mysteriously dies

Me: What do you mean by your statement?

Xols: That's why we here.. They've been trying to get a hold of you with no avail, Dad is gone

I held on to the table to prevent myself from falling..Me: I

don't understand.. Ndarha is dead?

Jojo: Yes tomorrow morning we need to go and find out what exactly happened, we also have to identify his body to make sure that it's really him

I sat down slowly..

Me: Ndarha is dead

Xols: What happened around here? Almost everything is brokenJojo:

And you don't look like your usual self

Xols: Not forgetting that cut on your lower lip Jojo:

Something that Ndarha would definitely doMe: Guys

not now please

Xols: You can't tell us "Not now" what happened?

Jojo: Are you okay?

Me: Can we not get into this, at least not now

Xols: We are going to g-

Isaac: She said not now

Isaac stood up...

Isaac: If it's true that my Brother is no more then we need to stop with this petty fights! This is not the time for you kids to be disrespectful to your Mother, this is the time that we all should come together as the Ndarha family and show a united front

Jojo: We not going to acknowledge anything that you say Sir until we have confirmed tomorrow that indeed Ndarha is dead! Because right now you might be playing us, as wespeaking you might be Ndarha!

Xols: You might have faked your death and came back as his "twin".. I know my Dad, and he is very tricky

Isaac: I am not your Dad.. I am your Uncle! Your Father's twin brother! Jojo: As

I've said.. We are not going to ackno-

Him: And I'm saying that there's no time for this!!.. When we go to identify his body tomorrow a lot is going to change around here! Starting with the other twin what's hername again?

Me: Xolelwa

Isaac: That one needs to come back home!! And you too! He

pointed at Xoliswa..

Isaac: Both of you need to move back home!

Xoliswa: okay if you indeed our "Uncle" Then you have no right to control us sir! You our Uncle and not our Dad!

Isaac: Tough luck because now it seems like I'm the only thing closest to being a Father to you.. I am big on family, and I am going to fix this one! I don't care who says what, I don't care who disapproves but.. We are going to be a united front, at all times

His phone rang.. He looked at it..

Him: I have to go.. This conversation is not over He

walked out..

Xols: Who the hell is that? Jojo:

Nonts.. What's going on?Me: Jojo

I need to talk to you

–

NOMFUND

O

I asked Jojo to drop us off at my Sister's place, my Sister will drive us back home laterwhen Lindi has arrived..

Sis: Lonwabo.. Please stop what you doing, put that back

We haven't been here for long but Lonwabo was already driving her crazy..Sis: See why I'm not ready to have kids? They a lot of work

I laughed..

Me: They are a handful

Her: Why are you guys here?

Me: Jojo got a call that his Father is no moreHer:

Huh?

Me: I also still can't believe that he's gone.. Just like thatHer:

Isaac Ndarha the deputy president is dead?

Me: Yes.. Apparently there was an accident last nightHer:

What accident?

Me: Not really sure

Her: Wow I.. I'm shocked

Me: It's really sad, I know he was having problems with his kids but.. Losing a Parent is very devastating

Her: It is.. I can only imagine what they going through

Me: Their family is already broken, this is going to make matters worse

Her: It's like that family has a dark cloud hanging over them

Me: Tell me about it.. Once upon a time I admired them a great deal, but now..

Her: This proves that rich families can also be broken, money is not everything after all

Me: I'm just glad that even though our family is not financially blessed but there's always been love and support

Her: And less drama

Me: And I had to go and give them Grandchildren.. 3 of them She laughed..

Her: You and Jojo should just get married already, I mean 3 kids?

Me: Jojo is a confused human being, tomorrow he might fall for someone else.. Commitment is not really his thing

Her: He is old now to be messing around with different women. He is a father of 3, he needs stability in his life.. He needs to grow up

Me: Let's hope he will but I'm definitely not getting back with him.. Maybe I'll be single for the rest of my life I mean, who would want to date someone with 3 kids?

Her: You will find someone

Me: I don't think so

Her: You Jojo's baby Mama most niggas would wanna get it with you for bragging purposes.. Like "Yeah I'm dating Jojo Ndarha's Baby Mama and I'm a step father to his kids"

We both laughed..

Me: Don't say that.. I want someone who is going to genuinely love me for me Her:

Yeah good luck with that

—

ISAAC NDARHA (THE OG)

Osborne finally hit me up that he wants us to talk and possibly cut a deal so that I can give him back his Daughter. I met up with him at some restaurant..

Him: I have the documents that you need to fill up and then the money will be yours, Doyou want it wired into your account?

Me: Are you trying to fuck with me? That much money wired into my account will get me screwed! Is this a set up that I don't know about?

Him: No.. I'm failing to think rationally with my Daughter kidnapped! Me:

Well you better start thinking rationally if you want to see her againHim: Okay

I'm sorry...

I saw a few people taking pictures and others were starring at me..Me:

Excuse me

Him: Where you going?

I stood up and went to stand by the counter.

Me: Excuse me?? May I please have everyone's attention for a few seconds..They looked at me...

Me: Thank you.. I have noticed that most of you are taking pictures of me probably thinking that I'm someone else.. Just to clear the confusion.. I am not Isaac Ndarha theDeputy President, I am his twin Brother Jacob Ndarha. As you all know, my Brother is inprison and unfortunately this morning we were informed that he is no more

They all seemed shocked..

Me: I know how it seems, but trust me I am not my Brother.. The news of my Brother'spassing hasn't made it's way to the news yet, so speaking for the Ndarha family we would really like to be given some privacy so that we can mourn in Peace.. Thank you

I went back to my table with them still having their phones out..

—

XOLELW

A

I heard Yonela crying..

Me: Babe she is crying..

Master didn't respond..

Me: Babe??

I was doing the laundry and Master was supposed to be babysitting Yonela..Me:

Master??

He made his way into the bathroom..Me:

Where were you? Yonela is cryingHim:

Yeah I heard her I'm just..

Me: Just what? You know that her crying is going to get louderHim:

Have you been on social media today?

Me: No.. Why?

Him: I don't know if I should be showing you this..Me:

What is it?

I wiped my hands with the towel..

Him: This video was uploaded a few minutes ago on Twitter.. Eish Skat, Kuyanyiwa (It'sugly)

He handed me his phone..

Him: I'm going to check on Yonela, please don't drop my phone out of shock He

kissed me on the cheek.. I read the caption first before playing the video "Man claiming to be the former deputy President's twin Brother"

I played the video..

Him: "I am not Isaac Ndarha the Deputy President, I am his twin Brother Jacob Ndarha.As you all know, my Brother is in prison and unfortunately this morning we were informed that he is no more"

Me: What the hell????

—

NONTSIKELEL

O

Jojo: What is it?

Me: I really don't know how to tell you this

Jojo: It sounds serious.. Are you okay?

He held my trembling hand, he was sitting across me..Him:

What is it?

I exhaled..

Him: That's Ndarha isn't it? He faked his own death didn't he? How did he escape jail?Me: What?

No.. It's not him.. It's really his twin

Him: It doesn't make sense.. Obviously it shows that there was a lot of struggle around here, and only that bastard would raise his hand on you!

Me: It's not him

Him: Stop defending him! You've been doing that for a long time now, don't you think it's time you stop defending him? How did he pull it off?

Xoliswa walked in..

Xols: What the hell????

Me: Xoliswa I asked you to give us some privacy

Xols: You guys wanna see this

Jojo: What?

She played a video for us.. It was Isaac at some restaurant talking..Jojo: Are you kidding me?

He looked at me..

Jojo: This is him right? This is Ndarha!

Xols: Only Dad can pull a stunt like this!

Jojo: What is he exactly playing at?

Me: It's not Ndarha

Jojo: Mom stop fronting this is serious!!

Xols: Xoks is calling..

She answered..

Xols: Hey

Jojo: Naa fuck this.. I'm calling the cops!Me:

Jojo wait..

Me: This is bullshit!!

He took his phone and dialed 10111Me:

Don't call the cops

He put it next to his ear..

Me: Jojo!!

Jojo: Leave me alone..

He stood up and walked away...

Me: He is your Father!

He stopped..

Me: It's Jacob Ndarha.. He is Ndarha's twin Brother and your Father

I think telling the kids about their Father stealing his twin's identity is just going to sound more bizarre to them..

Jojo lowered the phone and looked at me..Him:

What the fuck did you just say to me?

Me: haven't you wondered why Nomfundo is carrying twins? Your Father is a twinHim:

You told me my Father died before I was born

Me: I lied.. I'm truly sorry, you weren't supposed to find out about him.103

MONGZ

After seeing Armani I drove back home to talk to my Dad about this whole marriage thing. As much as the whole idea seems premature but, I would rather work it out with her everyday than to start over with someone else. Honestly speaking people like me, or rather guys like me are not afforded the chance to be in a stable relationship with anyone because of our unstable behaviour. I love Armani and I know that we can somehow make it work..

My Father was busy going up and down, taking a few calls..Me:

Dad I need to talk to you

Him: Can't it wait?

Me: No.. It's serious

Him: Is it about your health?

Me: No

Him: Then it can wait

Me: Unfortunately it cannot wait

Him: Mongz I'm busy sorting out a few things, very important things. If it's not about your health then it can wait

Me: I've asked Armani to marry me

He looked at me, I knew that was going to get his attention. He put his phone on the table and then walked over to close the door.

Me: It's just u...

Him: What did you just say? Me:

I know that it sounds crazy

Him: It is crazy!!.. Later on I'm flying to Cape Town. Tuesday we going to parliament, my party has elected me to be an acting president until the next elections

Me: What? Why didn't you tell me?

Him: I was going to tell you I just didn't have the time..

Me: They voted for you?

Him: It was supposed to be Ndarha, if he didn't fuck up he was going to get more votesMe: Wow..

Congratulations I guess

Him: Look Mongz.. Already there's a scandal making rounds that Ndarha faked his own death

Me: Yeah I saw that.. It's pretty messed up

Him: I'm already facing a challenge with that, I don't need you to be stressing me out too.. Plus, didn't you say her family hates you?

Me: That's why we have decided to go to home affairs, if only you could just let me explain

Him: You my Son Mongezi and I know you to be very smart, this is not smart.. You not marrying this girl I forbid it!

We heard a knock at the door..

Dad: Who is that now?

The door opened and Monde made his way in..

Monde: Dad have you given any thought to the skateboarding park? Dad: For

the 100th time Monde.. You not getting any skateboarding parkMonde: But

Dad..

Dad: You boys are going to drive me crazy!!

(Silence)

Dad: You not getting a skateboarding park, and you not getting married!Monde: You

getting married?

Dad: Let me leave before I die of a heart attack, I already have enough problemsHe

walked out..

Monde: I can't believe you getting married

Me: I can't believe you want a skateboarding park.. Come on let's go..

–

ARMAN

I

"K'dala Ndilindile, to say how much I love you.. I got this message for you ndithi "I Do Ng'yavuma I" K'dala Ndilindile, Nhliziyo yami yonke I got this message for you ndithi " I Do Ng'yavuma I"

Khethi: Awusho.. Why do you keep on repeating this song over and over?

I went to Khethi's place just to spend the day with her and also tell her about the marriage proposal. We were sitting outside on the stoep and listening to music. She was drinking brutal fruit, and I was having a cool drink..

Me: Where did you buy alcohol on a Sunday?

Her: I bought these dumpies yesterday but never finished them Me:

Okay.. So I want to talk to you about something

Her: Something like what?

Me: I'm getting married

She looked at me without saying anything.. Her:

Angizwa kahle (I don't understand) Me: I'm

getting married

Her: Okay aren't you supposed to be in a relationship first before you can get married? Me: Well..

I.. Mongz proposed to me

Her: I thought you guys broke up because he was behind your shooting Me: I

thought so too but it was not him

She shook her head..

Me: I know how this sounds but.. I love him a lot and I'm happy with him. Mongz is the only guy who has ever genuinely loved me after the Ndarha saga, he has done so much for me and he always puts me first. I was a mess and he helped me a lot, this supermarket that I now own it's because of him. He supported me and allowed me to be independent, he wants to see me succeed. He is.. He is almost perfect

Her: Armani he is crazy and dangerous, it doesn't end well with guys like him
Me: So just because he has mental issues he doesn't deserve to be loved?

Her: I didn't mean it like that but.. Didn't you say that he is a psychopath?
Me: I love him Khethi and I wanna marry him..

She exhaled..

Her: I just don't want to read about you that you were killed by your lover. We losing a lot of our Sisters lately in the hands of the people who were supposed to love and protect them, I don't want the same happening to you

Me: It won't happen to me, Mongz is not like that..
Her:

You a fool in love

I laughed.. Her:

Be careful

Me: I'll be fine.. I promise

—

JOJO

After what my Mother told me, I didn't say anything much but just walked out to my car and drove home. I have been confused in my life, but not like this.. My phone rang I looked at it, it was a call from Xols. I switched it off, I wasn't in the mood to talk to anyone..

I don't understand my Mother at all, sometimes I wonder if she truly loved me. She has lied about my Father, then watched her husband abuse me all those years until I moved out. She saw the pain I went through, the cruelty of her husband towards me and she just kept quiet to everything. Acted like nothing was happening, then today she tells me that my Father is alive. He has been alive.

Why didn't she just give me to him? Maybe I would've had a different childhood. Is this why Ndarha hated me all those years? Now it makes a bit of sense. I didn't know what to think and believe.. I opened the drawer and took out my cocaine, I never thought that I could still turn to the white powder for comfort..

—

NONTSIKELELO

Xoliswa tried him again..

Her: His phone is now off

Me: Can't you call Nomfundo?

Her: No we not going to call Nomfundo, we not calling anyone Mom! I sat down..

Her: How could you do this? What else have you been hiding? Is he our Dad too? Me: No

Xoliswa.. Your Dad is your Dad

Her: How could you play two brothers? What is wrong with you? I never imagined my Mother to be a whore!!

Isaac: You better watch your mouth child He walked in..

Him: She might've made a couple of mistakes but she is still your Mother and if you can't respect her, at least respect the fact that she gave birth to you!

He looked around..

Him: Where is Jojo?

Xols: He left

He looked at us for an explanation.. Me:

I told him the truth.. He's upset

Xols: If something happens to him, it's all on you! You know how he gets when he is angry!!

Isaac: I said that's enough! He

looked at me..

Him: Is he taking any calls? I

wiped my tears..

Me: No..

Him: Can I get directions to his house?

Xols: I'll go with you

Him: No.. You stay here with your Mother, I wanna talk to him just the two of us..

—

XOLELW

A

I went through the WhatsApp messages again between Master and some lady, just from their conversations it's like they work together...

*****WhatsApp*****

Her: Can't you sneak out or something?

Him: Don't do that.. K'dala sikhulumile ngalento (We have spoken about this)

Her: I know ukuthi izindaba zok'dlana k'phela (I know that we just fucking), I was just asking if you don't wanna come and chill with us.. Sunday chillas so, bese later sizibamba eBackseat as always

Him: Awume kancane tuu (wait a minute)

She had also sent him explicit pictures, meaning that this has been going on for a while now. I forwarded the pictures to myself

I don't really go through his phone, just that while I was watching the video, a WhatsApp message from this lady came through and I ended up going to his WhatsApp only to be greeted by things that were heartbreaking.. He walked in while holding Yonela.. I got up from the couch..

Him: I thought you were finishing up with the laundry

I was way too shocked to even cry, I never thought that Master could do this to me.. I handed him his phone and then took Yonela from him..

Me: I need to go home

I saw him getting a bit irritated..

Him: Ungaqali (don't start)

Me: I'll finish up the laundry and then pac-

Him: Xolelwa you not going anywhere! This thing yokuthi whenever ekini kune ndaba uthuthuke uye mayiphela (Stop running back home whenever they experiencing drama)

What I have noticed also is that he gets ticked off easily with me..

I walked away and went to the bedroom because I knew that I was going to break down in front of him, and I didn't want that.. I put Yonela on the bed..

Me: We going home baby...

As much as I tried to hold back my tears but I couldn't, they just fell...

I got the luggage bag and started packing, Master walked in after a while..Him:

Where is your phone?

I looked at him..

Him: Where is your phone?

Me: I don't know

Him: Ungang'kwatishi Xolelwa! (Don't make me angry) where is your phone?I

ignored him..

Him: What are you going to do with those pictures you forwarded to yourself? You going through my phone now?

I acted like he didn't exist and continued with what I was doing, until he made his way to me then I picked up Yonela.. He stopped..

He threw his phone on the bed..

Him: Skat bheka.. It's not what it looks like okay?

Me: Take a good look at your Daughter, because this is going to be the last time that you see her

Him: Xolelwa don't do this.. Put Yonela down and let's talk about thisMe: I

don't wanna talk.. I just want to leave

Him: I can't let you drive in this state

He walked up to us and touched my arm..

Him: Put her down so we can talk

Me: I want to go and I don't wanna see you ever again (Crying)He moved his hand to my waist and got very close to me..

Him: Don't leave.. Let's talk about this

Me: I don't wanna talk about it.. I just wanna go homeHim:

But you got it all wrong

Me: So you didn't sleep with her? Tell me you didn't sleep with her?He bit his lower lip and didn't say anything..

Me: You can go be with her I promise you that me and my Daughter won't bother you

I pushed him a little and then put Yonela on the bed, he went and locked the door thenput the key in his pocket..

Me: Don't do that..

Him: Angisho sisakhuluma (we talking)I

went up to him..

Me: Give me the key

Him: Let's talk

Me: Give me the key

I tried to reach out for it but he stopped me...I started hitting him..

Me: Give me the damn key!!!! (Shouting)

Yonela started crying..

He held me tight..

Him: Don't do this.. You upsetting Yonela

Me: How could you do this to me? (Crying)

Him: I'm sorry

Me: How could you hurt me like this?? (Crying)He

sank down to the floor with me..

Him: I don't love her I swear.. It was just about sex, it was all about sex.. You will find this hard to believe but I love you, ngik'thanda MakaYonela and I'm sorry.. Ng'flopblind, hade skat (I've messed up and I'm sorry)

104

JOJO

Cocaine would've been easier to do if it was a few months back. I have always used it as my comfort, I've used it to get over what it was that I was going through. Doing it now is a total different story. The last thing I want is to overdose, or have a prolong effect of using it that can cause health problems along the way. I can't die such a stupid death and leave my kids to grow up without a Father, or have my Daughters be abused by a Step Father. Now I can't just do dumb shit I have 3 people to think about.. I was at the kitchen looking for my bottle of whiskey after sitting in my study for hours busy debating with myself not to do coke.. I took my phone and decided to check up on Nomfundo and Lonwabo..

Her: Hey

Me: Hey

Her: How are you holding up? Me:

I'm good.. How are you guys?Her:

We still good

Me: Still at your Sister's place?

Her: Yes

Me: What is Lonwabo doing?

Her: He is sleeping, after driving my sister crazy. When he wakes up she will drive us

back home

Me: Why don't you guys come this side

Her: At your Parents house?

Me: No.. I'm at my place

Her: I thought you would be at your Parents place with your father passing on and everything

Me: No I'm at my place

Her: Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine I just wanna spend some few days with you guys

Her: Well it's going to be difficult because I will need Lindi to help me with Lonwabo Me: I'll

be around I'll help you out, Lindi can have a few days to herself

Her: Are you sure?

Me: Yes I'm sure

Her: Okay then but we'll have to go home and pack Me:

Should I come and get you guys?

Her: It's okay.. My sister will drive us

Me: Okay.. See you guys later

Her: Okay bye

The intercom went off, I checked who it was. It was my Uncle or should I say my Father.. Me: What do you want?

Him: We need to talk

Me: I don't wanna talk

Him: We need to talk Jojo, I'll answer every question that you have

I really didn't wanna see anyone except for Nomfundo and Lonwabo, but then he was right. I need answers, I need to know what happened..

–

ARMAN

I

After spending a day with Khethi I decided to stop at the cemetery first before heading home. The Ndarha's did right by my Mother. She had the best funeral and her tombstone head cost a great deal, it was 15 000..

Despite everything that has happened to me I know that she would be proud of me and my achievements. All that she's ever wanted was to see me successful and not have my success be supported by a man..

Me: Hi Mom.. It's Me

Kneeling down was a mission, though I have recovered but my leg gives me problems at times..

Me: It's been a while since I last came here I

looked around, it was quiet..

Me: I didn't come here for much but just to let you know that I'm getting married, I'll be marrying Mongezi Mabuza. He made it possible for me to reunite with Grandma and Dad. I don't think there's ever going to be any guy who is going to love me as much as he does.. I had initially told myself that I was going to take a break from dating but.. I really love him Mom, and I want to marry him

He makes me happy, I am happy with him.. I

sighed..

Me: I just want your blessings and your approval from the grave.. Please bless our marriage

–

XOLELW

A

I opened my eyes and I was nicely laying on the bed. I must've passed out from all that crying. I got up and saw the luggage bag, it all came back to me. This wasn't a nightmare, this is real. Master cheated on me.. I got out of bed and made my way out of the bedroom, he was in the lounge holding Yonela. He had on his work clothes..

Him: I was about to call in sick, I'm already late

He went and put her on the high chair. I looked at him while questioning myself if he was really going to work at this time, or just making me a fool..

Me: Where is my phone?

Him: I took your phone

Me: Why? So you could delete those pictures and protect your side chick? It has gotten that serious?

Him: Izoba yinde ke lento (This is going to take long)

Me: I'm going through a lot currently and I don't need this stress that you giving me

Him: I did something foolish, just a stupid mistake and already you wanna leave me? Awume kancane Xolelwa

Me: Cheating is not a mistake.. It's a choice

Him: Yazi nalento beyingekho deep (this wasn't even deep)

Me: It was about sex so you say.. Obviously I am not longer satisfying you sexually Him:

Xolelwa since you had Yonela you lost all interest in sex

Me: I gave birth naturally and it wasn't a red velvet cake with cream! I had stitches and needed to heal

Him: For 5 months? We only had sex I think twice when you moved back in, and even those times it wasn't the best. You seemed uninterested, you weren't engaging and you just wanted to get it over and done with

Me: I had just started preventing. That injection was giving me unpleasant side effects. I have a low sex drive, there's too much vaginal irritation and dryness.. It's really taking a toll on me even emotionally! I take care of Yonela everyday she's a lot of work on her own and I'm always tired, come night time I just wanna sleep

Him: You talking as if like I don't help you when I get back!

Me: This is tiring okay? I don't wanna do this with you.. You chose to cheat on me than to be honest with me. We would've went to my gynecologist and I'm sure she would've came up with a solution or a better form of contraception for me!

Him: We were in it just for the sex, she's in a stable relationship and I'm in a stable relationship

Me: Not anymore

Him: So you leaving?

Me: Yes! I wanna leave.. I wanna go back home, get a job and raise my Daughter. I wanna focus on me and my daughter

Him: That's not happening.. Awuyi ndawo Xolelwa, you not leaving me to start a new life with someone else and have him play step daddy to my daughter.. I made a mistake I don't love her, I love you!

Me: Cheating is not a mistake! It's a choice.. You slept with her more than once, that was a choice

He got closer to me..

Him: Awuyindawo Xolelwa (you not going anywhere)

Me: So what now? You going to lock me inside the house? Him:

That's exactly what I'm going to do..

Me: Are you insane?

Him: I'll see you guys tomorrow morning He

walked up to Yonela and kissed her.. Him:

Bye munchkin...

This was absurd!!..

I followed him to the kitchen..

Me: Master you can't do this!

Him: Bye skat, I'll see you tomorrow morning

He unlocked and I walked up to the door to wrestle him for the keys.. Him:

Xolelwa..

Me: You not going to lock me inside the house, I'm not your prisoner!!! He forcefully threw me on the floor..

Him: Awuyi ndawo kanti awuzwa na? (You not going anywhere)

He clicked his tongue and then walked out, he locked us in..

—

NONTSIKELELE

O

Xols: Xolelwa's phone is still off

Me: Do you think she saw the video?

Her: Maybe

Me: Call Master

Her: I don't have his number

Me: Ohh Xolelwa wam'

Her: I'll try her again later

She looked at the time..

Her: I have to go Ma

Me: Okay

She looked at me..

Her: Are you going to be fine?

Me: I'm going to be fine

Her: Are you sure?

Me: I'm sure

Her: What happened to your phone?

Me: I'm not sure where it is

Her: I'll call the landline

Me: Okay

She hugged me..

Me: Check up on Jojo for me

Her: I will

We broke the hug..

Her: Bye

Me: Bye baby

—

JOJO

Him: I would like a glass too

I poured him a glass of whiskey..

Me: Thank you

(Silence)

Him: I got arrested before you were born.. I was into politics and I had a fight with an enemy and I killed him, then I got arrested

He gulped down the whiskey..

Him: When I got released it was too late.. Your Mom had already moved on with my Brother and you guys seemed to have a secure life. I didn't wanna come back and confuse you, I didn't have anything and I wouldn't have been able to provide for you and your Mom the same way that my Brother did. Not throwing your Mother under the bus but.. Nontsikelelo always wanted a good life, I don't even think she was going to leave him for me. She was in it too deep

I didn't say anything..

Him: I'm sorry that I showed up now just to confuse you, I'm sure that you and Ndarha had a good father and son relationship and I don't wanna take away the memories you had with him

I chuckled..

Me: Good Father and Son relationship

Him: Am I missing something?

Me: Ndarha was an abusive sick fuck! He abused us when we were young up until I left

to live with Mom's family in the transkei then came back to Johannesburg a few years later to start my acting career

Him: What?

Me: He was a sick bastard! He never loved me, never loved Mom or even his kids

Him: I don't understand.. He was never like that growing up, he was an introvert. He was shy and people used to walk all over him. I always protected him even from bullies and our Father used to call him a weakling

Me: Clearly we not talking about the same person, If he is really dead. Then death was easy for him, that bastard needed to suffer for everything that he has put everyone through

Him: I can't believe what I'm hearing

Me: Despite the money and the public picture perfect family image, behind closed doors a lot of shit was going on.. Especially with me, he hated me with all his heart

Him: It had nothing to do with you, he hated me so he was taking out all his anger and hate on you.. If only I knew, I swear..

(Silence)

Me: I have a son, and my girlfriend is currently pregnant with twins Him:

That's good... Wait, 3 kids and she's still your girlfriend?

Me: It's complicated

He poured whiskey again, and then sat down on the floor.. Him: We

have the whole night

I took the bottle and sat down next to him.. Me:

Where do I even start?

—

AT THE HOSPITAL

Dr 1: I can't believe he survived the surgery

Dr 2: I have never seen such a case before, he should be dead

Dr 1: he lost a lot of blood on the operating table, I thought he was going to have a cardiac arrest

Dr 2: we need another satchel of blood

1: I'll inform the Nurse

Dr 2: Do you think he is going to wake up or we just fishing for the impossible? Dr 1:

The prognosis is not bad but... We'll just have to wait and see

Dr 2: I would like to present this case to my 5th year students, they'll be interested Dr 1: it is

a fascinating case, the devil behind this fellow is truly with him..

105

(bonus)

XOLELW

A

I was crying and Yonela was also crying. I didn't know how to calm her down, my mind was just everywhere. I have seen my Father treating my Mother very bad for a very long time, sometimes it would go as far as him being physical. Witnessing that and how broken my Mother was, I made a promise to myself that I'll never let a man treat my like that. I'll never tolerate abuse and comfort myself with being an alcoholic just like my mother, and most importantly. I don't want Yonela growing up and seeing how her Father is treating me, because then that will make her think that abuse is okay.

Eventually she will also stay in an abusive relationship just because she saw me tolerating it and think that it's okay for a man to cheat on you and treat you like shit!!

Me: Come on Xolelwa.. Think

He has taken my phone and all the house keys, including mine. There was no way out.

I put Yonela down and searched through, when I opened the drawers my car keys were there. It would've been useless for him to take them with because he made sure that I wasn't going anywhere, he was holding me hostage. As I was busy searching through for something, anything that could help me I stumbled upon my sinus pills and an idea hit me. Sinuend pills are very strong for a sinus infection, colds & influenza. Most of the time they recommended for you to take them at night because they can make you very drowsy and knock you out. If I can somehow drug Master with 4 or 5 of them, that will give me enough time to drive back home. The recommended dosage is 2 pills, so 5 pills

will definitely do the trick. All that I have to think about now, is how I can drug him when he comes back without him noticing.. Then I will be able to take my Daughter and leave. There's no mistake in what he did, If Master truly loved me he wasn't going to hurt me like this. You cannot hurt someone that you love..

–

NOMFUND

O

My Sister drove us first to my place so that we can get a few things, then after that we went to Jojo's place. There was another car in his driveway, it's late for him to have a visitor unless it's a woman. My heart sank a little, and I don't wanna lie I was a bit jealous.

Me: Seems like he has a visitor, maybe we should go back
Her: Go back?

Me: Ya.. I don't wanna interrupt whatever it is that is going on inside there
She chuckled..

Me: What?

Her: You think the visitor is a female? Are you jealous?
Me:

I'm not jealous I just don't want to interrupt People
Her: Stop being a baby, let's go in

Me: I'll hold Lonwabo
Her:

I got him don't worry

Me: No it's okay I wanna hold him

I took Lonwabo from her and then we walked to the door. She rang the doorbell.. She turned to us and squeezed Lonwabo's cheek..

Her: Your Mother is jealous.. That's a good sign
Me:

Don't say such things to him

The door opened, it was opened by Jojo and he was holding a glass of whiskey. I could hear music from the background, it was jazz...

Him: Hey guys

My Sister greeted him backHe

looked a bit tipsy..

Lonwabo: Dada!!

Jojo: Hey Champ

He took him from me..

Me: You look surprised to see us

Him: No I'm not

Me: Yes you're.. You the one who invited us remember?Jojo:

And nou?

Sis: Don't mind her.. She's jealous

Me: Are you for real?

Jojo: Jealous?

Sis: We saw a car when we got in, she thinks you have a female visitorJojo:

Ohw

Me: I'm not jealous We

made our way in...

Jojo: I do have a visitor but it's n-

Ndarha walked into the kitchen, from the lounge..Him:

Jojo I have to g-

I was so shocked that I literally screamed a little..

Ndarha: I wondered when someone was going to do that when they see meI looked
at Jojo..

Him: This is my Dad's twin.. Jacob Ndarha

Me: Your what?

Him: My Dad's twin, and also my Dad

Me: Wha.. I don't understand

Jojo: Ya it's a confusing situation

Ndarha: Is that Lonwabo?

Jojo: Yes

He walked up to us, even his walk was the same as his "twin brother" Ndarha:

Can I?

Jojo: Sure

He took Lonwabo from Jojo

Ndarha: Ohh Man.. He is very adorable This

was.. I don't even know what to say..

—

ARMAN

I

I found myself in a park, looking around it was the same park that my Mother and I used to go to when I was young. Even though it changed over the years, but at this moment. It looked exactly like how it was when I was young..

Voice: It's beautiful isn't it?

I turned around and it was my Mother.. Me:

Maa??

She smiled at me..

Her: Sthandwa sam

Me: How is this possible?

Her: This is the only way I could contact you after your visit earlier Me: Am

I dead?

Her: No you not

She started walking and I followed through..Me:

You look better than..

Her: I know.. I'm sorry you had to remember me like that, I didn't want you to see me like that

The last time I saw my Mom at the hospital before she passed on, she looked scary. She had lost a lot of weight, and she was wearing a nappy. Though I was very young but I remember hiding behind Nontsikelelo because I couldn't recognize her anymore, I was scared of her..

Me: I miss you a lot

Her: I know and I want you to know that I've been watching over you at all times Me:

More like my Guardian Angel?

Her: Well.. Something like that

(Silence)

Her: I'm proud of you.. Ukhule wabayilento ebengifuna ube yiyo (You grew up to be a woman that I wanted you to be)

Me: I try

Her: You have proven that you don't need a man to be successful Me:

Let me guess.. You also don't approve of Mongz?

Her: Yazi sthandwa sam, umuntu uyinto le ayiyo. As long as yena angafuni ukujika abeumuntu ongcono, then angeke ajike (My Love he will remain what he is. As long As he doesn't want to change then he will never change)

Me: No one understands him, he is not bad

Her: That statement killed a lot of women. You can love him Armani, you can play by his rules but if he doesn't want to be a better person then your love won't change him. If his ex girlfriend couldn't change him, you won't change him.. You just digging yourself an early grave

Me: Ma he did a lot for me

Her: I believe that he did all those things for you because he loved you, not for you to be indebted to him. Angels can come in human forms, maybe he was meant to reunite you with your Father and your Grandmother but that doesn't mean you have to marry him

I sighed..

Her: I know ukuthi my passing affected you, because after that people started using you. All the People who genuinely loved you eventually left you, and now you trying to find someone to fill that emptiness inside of you. Manje uze wazinikela ngisho nakusathane uqobo (You have given yourself to the devil)

Me: Maaa

Her: Armani if he sincerely loved you, he would have told you the truth. If he loved you he wouldn't have done what he did, this boy is without a soul and a heart. Igazi lomuntu liyashisa futhi liyakhuluma, yena ubulala bese angabi nawo no nyembeza (it's not easy to kill a human being, but he is doing it without having any mercy)

We stopped and she put her hand on my cheek..

Her: You deserve to be loved and you deserve to be happy. Don't go around searching for love, love will find you. Love is genuine when it finds you but when you go around searching for it, you will get hurt.. Focus on you, focus on Daddy and his family, Focus on Mama, your business and then I promise you.. When the time comes, love will find you. That is my promise to you, and don't quit therapy. Therapy will help you realize that being alone is not as scary as you think it is. It will help you heal and deal with a lot of thing. I am your Mother and I would never mislead you

Me: I know

Her: I love you and I will always watch over you

I opened my eyes and realized that I had passed on the couch while watching some movie. I looked around and I was alone..

I exhaled and took the remote to change the channel to Manzi magic when something caught my attention. The movie that was playing I heard a mother saying something very interesting to her Daughter..

"You deserve to be loved and you deserve to be happy. Don't go around searching for love, love will find you. Love is genuine when it finds you but when you go around

searching for it, you will get hurt"

The Mother put her hand on her Daughter's cheek..

—

NOMFUND

O

My Sis had left, and also Jojo's father had left. I was still surprised at what I heard..Me: Wow.. I

can't believe your Parents lied to you all these years

Him: This was expected from Ndarha but my Mom.. How can she do that to me?I passed

him the nappy..

Me: Maybe she had her reasons

Him: Still... She had no right to keep this from me

Me: Ya it's sad, especially considering how much you suffered in the hands of your stepfather

Lonwabo threw the aqueous cream that he was holding at me, it hit me right on mytummy.. Jojo hit his thigh a little..

Jojo: Eyy wena!!!

Lonwabo started crying..

Jojo: Are you okay?

Me: I'm fine

Jojo: Maybe we should take him to the Dr and see if they can't get us a childpsychologist or something

I felt the twins moving..

Jojo: This violent behaviour of his is a concernI put

my hand on my tummy..

Me: Ahhh..

Jojo: Are you okay?

He helped me to sit down on the bed..Me:

I'm fine just that

I put his hand on my tummy..

Me: I'm still not used to their movements

Jojo: Wow they... Is there even enough space in there for both of them to move around?

Me: I'm not sure but they do kick at times, once in a while.. After this it will take a while for them to move again, they a bit lazy.. Unlike Lonwabo who was active

Him: We need a 3D scan.. I wanna see themMe:

We should do that

I put my hand on top of his..

Him: So were you jealous for real?

Me: Ohh my word!! (rolling eyes)

I yanked his hand off me.. Him:

I'm just asking (laughing)

Me: I'm going downstairs to make myself something to eat.. Leave me alone

—

NONTSIKELELE

O

I looked at the wine bottle and the glass that was in front of me.. Drinking would be very fatal for me, but right now I don't know what to do. I don't know how to deal with these emotions and stress..

Isaac: Jojo is fine

I don't know how he does it, he can walk into the room without me hearing him..Me: You talked to him?

Him: Yes.. I just didn't tell him about Jacob stealing my identity, and we not going to tell him.. We won't tell the girls either

I swallowed..

Me: I thought you wanted everything to be out

Him: Let him be buried with the little dignity that he has left, plus I don't want People thinking I'm a fraud. I will attain my own success by using the current identity that I have "Jacob Ndarha"

I nodded..

Me: I'm planning on going back to politics I'll see how I work through that, I want to spend more time with the kids and their kids.. Build this family together again in my own terms, my brother traumatized these kids and you did nothing

I kept quiet as he shook his head..

Him: After the funeral I want you to move out.. I want you to be alone, die a miserable death like a whore that you are! What you did was horrible, gambling with these kids to please a man that didn't even love you

He spat on me..

Him: You make me sick and you certainly don't deserve to be a Mother!!106

ARMANI

The following morning I decided to ambush Dr Addo, I went to his office and hoped to find him before he went to the hospital. Lucky for me he didn't have a patient, and he was at his office a bit earlier than usual..

I knocked.. His eyes made his way to me before he could even say "Come in" Him: I thought you were done with therapy?

Me: Clearly not

I made my way in and sat down on the chair.

Him: Is everything okay?

He got up from his chair and came to sit on the chair opposite me, where he usually sits to talk to the client..

Me: My ex is back

Him: Which one?

Me: Mongezi Mabuza

Him: And?

Me: He asked me to marry him

He looked at me without saying anything at first..Him:

Let me guess.. You said yes?

I looked down and nodded repeatedly, when I looked at him again my eyes were full of tears..

Me: We were supposed to go to home affairs today, I even switched off my phone so he doesn't reach me

Him: What changed your mind about marrying him?Me:

It's not what.. It's who changed my mind

Him: Who changed your mind?

Me: It was my Mother

Him: Your Mother?

Me: Yes

Him: Didn't you say your Mother passed on?Me:

She came to me in a dream

Him: She came to you in a dream?

I nodded with tears falling.. I looked at him waiting for him to respond but he didn't, I know what was going through his mind so I laughed first and he laughed too..

Him: That was awkward for me, I didn't know what to sayHe

went and got the box of tissues and handed it to me.. Me:

Thank you..

Him: Maybe it's your conscious that went against you.. Maybe you have been seeking for your mother's guidance so much that your subconscious mind started to believe in

that fantasy and it made it seem real

gave him a serious look..

Him: Or it could've been your Mom.. In a dream

Me: Why are you nice this morning?

Him: You cried.. I didn't wanna be an Insensitive bastard and probably offend you more with my words

Me: Nothing you say will offend me, I don't get offended by certified bastards
He chuckled..

Him: Excuse me?

Me: offended?

Him: By someone who sees her dead Mother in a dream? We laughed again..

Him: Do you really wanna talk?

Me: No.. I think I'm fine

Him: Since I'm a certified Bastard.. Can I ask one more thing (laughing)
I looked at him..

Him: Or maybe not (Laughing)

I have never seen him laughing like this, I didn't even know that he was capable of laughing like any other normal person..

Me: I'm glad that I made you laugh

His laugh was contagious I don't wanna lie..Me:

It's not funny (laughing)

Him: Ya you right.. It's not funny, it's actually a call for concern.. See now you definitely need psychiatric evaluation since you seeing dead People

Me: This is my Mother we talking about

Him: I apologize.. My bad

(Silence)

Him: How is your plan of starting an Orphanage coming along?I

shrugged my shoulders..

Me: Since I don't have enough money, I'm starting to lose hopeHim:

That's sad

Me: It is

Him: Hold that thought

He stood up and walked to his desk, I took my phone out and checked. I had a lot of missed calls from Mongz, I had put my phone on silent because I was avoiding him.. I don't know how I'm going to break it down to him..

Addo: Here

He handed me a cheque for R40 000..Me:

What is this?

He sat down opposite me again..

Him: I'm making a donation.. To the OrphanageMe:

I can't accept this

Him: Why?

Me: You my Doctor and this is Inappropriate

Him: I am not hitting on you with a cheque, I'm just simply helping you out because you want to do something good

I looked at it..

Him: I believe in what you want to build, giving those children a warm home.. You have a good heart and you a selfless person

Me: I don't know what to say

Him: You can say thank you

Me: Thank you (smiling)

Him: You welcome

–

XOLELW

A

I had crushed the pills last night and kept them in a small container that I hid in the cupboard. Master loves Oats, and he doesn't take it with milk. He takes it with honey and a bit of butter so I will put the pills in his Oats and hope for the best. I kept on taking a deep breath to calm myself, I don't want him noticing anything odd about me today. I gave Yonela panado when she woke up in the early hours of this morning to prolong her sleep.. Master walked into the kitchen just as I had finished cooking the Oats..

Him: Good morning

Me: Morning

He went and had a glass of water..Me:

I made Oats

Him: Beng'cabanga ukuthi mina nawe siyalwa Moss? (I thought you and I were fighting)

Me: Cooking Oats doesn't mean I have forgotten about everything, I always cook for you even when we are not in good terms

Him: So awusavayi? (You no longer leaving)

Me: Honestly speaking this house is suffocating me, seeing you makes it hurt even worse.. I want to be anywhere else but here

He folded his arms and hung his head in shame..

Me: You the last Person I thought could hurt me this bad

Him: I'll do anything just so you don't leave, please.. I'm even ashamed of what I did, this whole thing nje iyang'yanyisa (this whole situation gets to me)

Me: I thought long and hard about this last night and.. Home is just another depressing environment, there's a lot of drama there and I don't want Yonela being in such an environment so I don't think we will go home for now

His face lit up..

Me: I would appreciate it though if you could sleep in the guest room starting from today

Him: I'll do that

Me: I don't wanna fight about this anymore, it's affecting Yonela. Last night she didn't sleep, she cried almost the whole night

Him: I don't wanna fight too

He got closer and put his hands around my waist..Me:

Please don't..

He kissed me on my forehead..

Him: I'll be in the lounge

Me: I'll dish up the oats for you

Him: Ta (thank you)

When he walked out I was able to breath..

I opened the cupboard and took out the crushed pills..

—

JOJO

I drove by to fetch my Mom and Jacob so that we could go and identify Ndarha's body and also find out what really happened, and what led to his premature death. We needed to get this done in order to proceed with the funeral arrangements. The media is already eating us for breakfast with Ndarha's death, especially since Jacob announced it publicly like that in a restaurant. We started at the prison and then we were taken to the hospital, my Mother didn't seem well..

Me: Are you okay?

Her: I'm fine

Jacob: I'm even surprised you woke up, you had a lot of wine last night I

stopped and looked at her..

Me: You were drinking last night?

She didn't say anything..

We made our way in and went to the reception to enquire, what they revealed to us there was shocking. Apparently Ndarha is not dead, they took us to his ward and there were 2 guards standing at the door.. This was weird, why would they tell us that he is dead while he isn't? No wonder why the Governor didn't want to see us nor talk to us..

Me: Why would they tell us that he is dead?

Jacob: We will deal with that later, right now let's go in and see him

We made our way in and he was laying on the bed with a lot of tubes attached to him. He had bandages wrapped around his chest.

All my doubts about Jacob being an imposter disappeared, Ndarha does have a twin brother indeed. We made our way closer to him and my mom went and held his hand..

Mom: It's a miracle

Jacob seemed irritated by the whole scenario..

Mom: We need to sue the prison, why did they lie to us? Jacob:

When you say "We" am I included?

There was definitely bad blood between Ndarha and his Jacob.. Nontsikelelo

kissed him on the cheek..

Jacob: This is making my stomach turn in, I'll be outside He

walked out..

Jacob: Makes me wanna start smoking again I

looked at my Mom..

Me: Are you serious?

The Dr walked in..

Him: Good morning We

greeted him back..

Mom: Dr how is my husband holding up?

He shook his head..

Dr: Unfortunately it doesn't look good

Mom: Meaning?

Dr: He sustained deep stab wounds on his chest and heavy bruises on some parts of his body

Mom: But he is alive.. Meaning that he will make it right?Dr:

Right now I don't know and I don't think so

Mom: I don't understand

Dr: He is breathing by the help of machines, and his right lung is collapsing because the knife pierced through it and we also think that his heart also suffered a bit of trauma..

For the life of us we don't know how he is still alive because his vital organs are seem to be shutting down one by one

He walked over to him.. Him:

You see these marks?Mom:

Yes

Him: That's Hematoma.. There is no doubt that he is still bleeding internally. We need to operate but another surgery would end his life but at the same time if we don't operate he can still die.

Mom: Ohh my word

Me: Is there a possibility that he might wake up as time goes on? Will he ever make it out of this?

Dr: Yes but he won't be the same anymore. He won't live a normal life. He will constantly need medical intervention, he will need more surgeries that his body cannot sustain. He will constantly need help with things that he used to do for himself but can no longer do on his own and that's if he makes it... Quite frankly right now him living is the greatest suffering for him because his body is giving up on him

My Mom shook her head..

Mom: My Husband was the strongest and powerful man that I have ever known.. He wouldn't want this, I know that he would rather die than to live his life as a vegetable. His

pride won't allow him

Dr: I don't think I understand

Mom: Dr please.. Switch off any machine that's keeping him alive

Dr: He cannot breath on his own, switching off the machines he will die

Mom: I know and as his wife I'm giving you the permission to do so.. I'll sign any formthat needs to be signed

Dr: You can go home and think about this, you don't need to decide this now
Mom: I've already made my decision

She looked at him..

Mom: This is what he would want

Tears streamed down her cheeks..Dr:

I'll get the forms

He walked straight to the door..I

looked at Ndarha..

Me: No

The Dr stopped..

Me: No.. Don't switch off the machines

Mom: You heard what he said.. He is suffering, we need to put him out of this miseryMe: The

Dr also said that he might make it

Mom: What good life will he have? Jojo don't do thisMe:

Death would be an easy way out for him

Mom: This is no time for revenge

Me: I want him to live through pain everyday. I want the judge to grant him a medical discharge and put him on house arrest. I want him to witness us living our lives that he tried so hard to break. I want him to struggle to even go to the toilet without being helped, I want him to go through each day with his body giving up on him. I want him to

see his Grandkids growing up and knowing very well that he won't be a part of their lives, I want Xolelwa to get married one day and Ndarha failing to walk her down the Aisle. I want him to see me connecting with my Father, and I want him to see Xolelwa and Xoliswa being more closer to their Uncle. I want Ndarha to break down, I want to see tears in his eyes.. I want him to be dependent on someone else, the mighty Ndarha having to be bathe and taken to the toilet.. That will break him, I want to see him that broken...If you have them switch off the machines, I will never forgive you and you will never have any relationship with my kids! You will be dead and buried too

I walked out and left her crying..

—

ARMAN

I

I could've done this over the phone but I owe it to him, to look him in the eye and be honest with him. I called him and asked him to meet up with me at a restaurant, it's a public place and I don't think he will be that stupid to try anything..

Mongz: I've been calling you This

was harder than I thought..Me: I

know

His look sent shivers down my spine..

Him: What's wrong?

I extended my hand across the table to touch his..

Me: I love you.. I love you soo much and I'm grateful for everything that you've done forme

He narrowed his eyes..

Me: I'm sorry Mongz.. I can't marry youHe

retracted his hand back..

Me: I don't think I'm ready for marriage, I had a chance to think about this and I think you and I.. We will be more happier with other people

Him: Is there someone else?

Me: No.. I just wanna be alone for nowHe

didn't say anything..

Me: I'm truly sorry

He stood up and walked away..

Me: Mon..

He walked to the exit and made his way out..I

wiped my tears..

—

XOLELW

A

Me: Master??

He was passed out on the couch..Me:

Babe?

I shook him a little but he didn't respond, he was still breathing though..Me:

Okay.. I can do this.. I can do this

I was very nervous. I did pack most of our things overnight, what was left now was to move everything to my car..

I searched for the house keys and I found them inside his backpack, together with my phone. I also took my car keys and started moving things out to my car. Since I haven't used my car for a while now, it was blocked by his car. So I will need to move his car first in order to access mine. I decided to put everything in the car before moving it, it will be easier that way.. When I was done putting everything inside I looked at him and he was still in the same position..

I searched for his car keys until I found them, now this was going to be the toughest one but then it's now or never..

I opened the gate wider and moved drove his car out. Without going back inside to check up on him, I got in my car and drove it out too out too. Then I drove his back in the yard. I left the gate still wide open and made my way back into the house, my heart started beating fast when I opened the door... I passed him in the lounge and went to

get Yonela.. She opened her eyes when I picked her up..Me:

Shhhhhh baby.. We going home

I held her tight and then made my way to the kitchen door, I opened and got the keys outfrom the door..

Master: Xolelwa??

Me: Shit!!!!

My heart skipped a beat..

I quickly made my way out and closed the security door, I inserted the keys and locked it.. He stumbled his way into the kitchen..

Him: What are you doing??

I tried to get the key out of the security door and somehow it got stuck..He made his way to the door and held my hand..

Me: God please no... (panicking)

Him: Kahle kahle uzama ukwenzani? (what are you trying to do)

The key was stuck, maybe I didn't turn it the right way but the security door was still locked.. I could see that he was fighting the drowsiness.. He finally overpowered me bytwisting my hand and I let go of the key..

Him: When I open this damn security door!! You better pray that your ancestors will bewith you, ubabize abakini wena sfebe!! (call upon on your ancestors)

My mind froze as he fought with the key to open, when he failed to unlock it he startedshaking the security door in frustration.. Yonela's cry brought me back into reality. I hadeverything, all I needed to do was to run and get into my car..

I started running while turning my head to check if he wasn't out yet, in the mist of running out of the yard to my car I tripped and fell. Yonela slipped from my arms and fella distance from me, my knee landed on a brick. I felt something snapping..

Me: Ohh my God please no!!! (shouting in agony)

Master: Xolelwa!!! Yewena Xolelwa!! Ngizok'nyathela namhlanje uyang'zwa? (I'm going to deal with you today)

Yonela was crying and I tried to get up but my knee wouldn't let me walk, I felt an excruciating pain arising from there as I tried to stand..

Me: God please don't fail me now.. Please if he gets out he is going to kill me(Crying)

My car keys were next to Yonela, the sun was even blinding her and that made her cry even more.. I glanced at my knee and I could swear that my kneecap had shifted. It wasn't in its right position..

107

(Excuse any errors)

NONTSIKELELO

When Jojo and Isaac left I opted to stay behind and be by Jacob's side on his dying hospital bed. No matter what anyone can say nor think of me, but at the end of the day I am married to this man. I need to Honour my vows (In sickness and in health).. I looked at him and I dated back to how he was before he became this ruthless man that he is today

Jacob lived a few streets away from mine, unlike his brother he was shy, he was an introvert, he was intimidated very easily and he was also book smart. Wherever you see him, he always had a book with him that he was reading. Jacob was the one who took an interest in me, but because of how shy he was he never made a move. We just became good friends and he used to help me a lot with my school work. At the time of our friendship I was very much taken by Isaac. Isaac was the opposite of what his Brother was. He was very confident, well spoken, charming, and obsessed with politics. There was a way that he was getting in trouble because of politics no Parent wanted their daughter messing around with him. Anyone who was close to him had Police invading their privacy every now and then, I can just come out and say my house was invaded a few times when my relationship with Isaac was made known... Surprisingly, Jacob seemed okay with the whole idea of me dating his brother and Isaac wasn't even bothered by my friendship with his Brother. He was way too full of himself and knew very well that I wouldn't fall for Jacob. Although they looked alike, but they were different people.. Life went on and my relationship with Isaac got serious, despite how my family felt about it. It got to a point where I fell pregnant, and things changed from thereon. Isaac got arrested for murder, I was torn. I didn't know how I was going to tell my Parents about this, I knew very well that my strict Father was going to put me out. I was pregnant by someone whom according to my father had a "broken dream". Now that he was arrested for murder it made the situation worse. In the midst of my confusion and pain,

Jacob came to me with a solution. He told me that he would give me and my unborn baby a good life if I agreed to marry him. At first I thought he was crazy, but after he let me in on what he had planned I sort of agreed because of desperation. I don't know how he did it, but it was him who killed that man and then he let his Brother take the fall for it so that he could steal his identity. By then Isaac's future in politics seemed bright he was at the verge of making it. When Isaac went to jail, that was Jacob burying himself as Jacob and taking on his new identity as "Isaac"...His Brother's name and struggles paid off, Jacob made it in politics and that's how he managed to afford this life for me..

I think he took imitating his brother way too far. He let the power and respect that he was getting both as a politician and as a minister to get to him, in a blink of an eye he turned ruthless. He became a different human being, he even told my Parents that someone impregnated me and then left me, being a good man that he is he will take care of me and the baby. My Parents believed him and they called me all sorts of names, like how can I be pregnant by someone whilst I was in a serious relationship with Ndarha..

I let him be and then Jojo was born, that's when Ndarha's evil side surfaced. Jojo kept on reminding him that he was my second best, Jojo reminded him of what me and Isaachad. He didn't even want my son knowing that his Father was alive, so we lied to him and said he died. He displaced the anger and the hate he had towards his twin brother to Jojo, and what killed me more was that I couldn't save my son from him. I couldn't save any of my kids from him. Ndarha felt good being in control since he spent most of his life with everyone pissing on his head and treating him like a doormat. For a change it felt good to him when everyone treated him like a God.. He forgot one thing though, that yes Isaac was difficult at some point, but he was never ruthless. Ndarha overdid it....

I held his hand..

Me: At the end of the day your sins caught with you, jail showed you that you not a God after all..

—

XOLELW

A

Looking at my Daughter laying there and crying, then also thinking of Master and what he will do to me when he is finally out of the house is what made me to draw strength from deep within. I don't want Yonela growing up and then finding out at a later stage that her mother was brutally killed by her father. I don't want my daughter to have a mere picture as a memory of me.. I saw 2 girls who were in their school uniform

approaching us, their school t-shirts displayed it to the public that they were in matric.. One of them picked up Yonela and my car keys then the other one came to help me get up..

Girl1: Sisi uright? (Are you okay)

Me: Please help me to my car

Girl1: Shouldn't we help you to get inside the house?Me:

No!.. Just help me to my car please

Girl1: okay

She helped walk me to my car..

Girl1: Will you be able to drive?

Me: I think so, I'm lucky cause my car is automatic

The other one brought the key to me and I unlocked, Yonela was still crying hysterically. She strapped Yonela on her carseat while the other one helped me to get in..

Girl1: There we go

I literally bit my lower lip as I forced myself to sit in a manner that exerted excruciating pain on my knee.. The friend closed the backdoor and then came to join her friend, who was helping me to put my seat belt on..

Girl2: Are you sure that there's nothing else that we can do for you?Me: No

thank you.. You girls helped a lot, thank you

When I heard Master's voice nearing, I quickly pulled the door and closed it without any warning. I think that I hurt one of the girls in the process. When he made his way out of the gate, I had already locked all the doors and the windows were rolled all the way up. He pushed one of the girls out of the way and started banging on my window. He didn't have a t-shirt on, he just had his chain hanging around his neck..

Him: Open the bloody door!!!!

I turned and looked at Yonela..

Me: Hold on baby

With my hands shaking I started the car, He stepped back and looked around. I knew very well that he was looking for a brick, that's when I took off and drove like a mad Person.

—

ARMAN

I

It's been a while since I last saw Jojo so I called him and asked if we could grab something to eat, honestly speaking another reason why I wanted to meet up with him was to see if he can't contribute into making my dream of building the orphanage a reality.

Him: It's good to see you Me:

It's good to see you too

We broke the hug, and then we sat down..

Him: Where have you been hiding yourself?

Me: I should be asking you that question

Him: Damn.. It's been a while and you look good

Me: Thank you, and thank you for making time to meet up with me Him:

How can I ever say no to you

Me: Aren't you a flirt?

Him: So what's been happening with you? Are you still with that fool? Me: He

is not a fool and no we no longer together

Him: What happened?

Me: Long story.. Congratulations on the twins by the way He

chuckled while rubbing his face with his hand..

Me: How is Fatherhood treating you?

Him: It's not bad, but at times it has it's own challenges when it's my turn to have Lonwabo for the weekend

Me: How is he doing after, you know..

Him: He's doing well though he is very naughty

Me: That's good to hear I should stop by at Nomfundo's place and see him againHim: Ya

you should so he can get to know his Auntie

He called one of the waiters..

Him: Why this restaurant?

Me: It's closer to where I attended my therapyHim:

How is that going?

Me: I have a session in about 30 minute's time and so far it's going good Him: Then

you won't be surprised when you find out about the Ndarha dramaMe: What drama?

Him: You know my family has a lot of drama as always

Waitress: Good day..

I wonder what drama he was talking about..

—

XOLELW

A

I drove straight to the nearest mall and all the time I've been checking if his car wasn't following us. I only stopped here because it's a public place, there's a lot of security around and I needed to make a phone call. Yonela had cried herself to sleep, I took my phone and switched it on. My knee was still aching very bad.. I dialed Xoliswa's number and she picked up after the first ring as if like she was long waiting for my call..

Her: Xolelwa??

Me: Hey

Her: Wtf dude I've been trying to get a hold of you Me:

Xols I need to.. I need you to meet me halfwayHer: What

are you talking about?

Me: I'm scared (Crying)

Her: Scared? Xolelwa what's going on?

Me: If Master finds us.. He is going to kill us

Her: Okay calm down.. Where are you?

Me: I drove to our nearest mall

Her: Is Yoyo with you?

Me: Yes she's with me

Her: Okay you need to keep on driving, I am getting in my car right now and keep your phone on I'll track you with it

Me: I can't drive anymore my knee hurts, Its injuredHer:

How bad is it?

Me: It's pretty bad

Her: You need to be on the road, you can't stop anywhere incase he's following you guysMe: Xols

I can't (Crying)

Her: Yes you can.. You can, do it for Yoyo and do it for meI

wiped my tears..

Me: Okay.. I'll try

Her: I'll meet you halfway I promise

Me: Okay

Her: Don't switch your phone off

Me: I won't

Her: I'll see you shortly

Me: Okay

Her: I love you

Me: I love you too

—

NONTSIKELELE

O

I looked at him one last time..

Me: I know that Jojo is going to hate me for this but it doesn't matter, he will come around. Things will never be the same again, Isaac is back and I don't see you coming back from this. If you do recover, you will go back to jail and the same thing is going to happen again. I can't have you living like that, you have come a long way to be a weak man. You done Ndarha and you not coming back from this.. I heard a knock at the door..

Dr: Are you ready?I

nodded..

Me: I'm ready

He walked in with two Nurses and handed me the form..

Dr: As soon as you sign the form, I'll switch off the machines

The Nurse handed me the pen, I glanced down at the form and the tears that formed in my eyes made everything to appear blurry.

I read through everything and signed where I needed to sign. I closed my eyes and tears fell..

Me: Goodbye my love

—

ARMAN

I

After meeting up with Jojo I made my way back to Addo's office for my therapy session. Him: Can't get enough of me?

Me: Ohw please

He sat down on the chair..

Me: Thank you again for the donation

Him: You welcome

He opened my file and read through.. Him:

Let's see where we ended last time

As he was trying to refresh his memory I heard his receptionist calling out..Her: Sir you can't go in there!

The door opened and then Mongz walked in, I stood up..Me:

Mongz?

Felicia: I tried to stop him Sir

Addo stood up too..

Me: What are you doing here?

Addo: It's okay Felicia

Mongz took out his gun, Felicia screamed a little..

Mongz turned to her..

Him: Why don't you call the cops and tell them that..He looked at me..

Him: We might have a dead body

Felicia looked at Addo..

Mongz: I am in charge so you might wanna listen to me

Felicia walked away then Mongz closed the door and locked it..Me:

Mongz.. Please

Him: I killed Zeni for you

Me: M..

Addo: Let him talk

Mongz: Listen to the Dr

I kept quiet..

Mongz: Actually I don't wanna talk.. I don't have much time Felicia:

He's in the office

We heard footsteps and then we heard a someone knocking after a few seconds.. Voice: It's security.. Open up!

Mongz: Useless

Voice: Open up sir!!

Felicia: I have already called the Police

Voice: Don't you have an extra key to the office?

Felicia: I do.. Let me search in my bag

Mongz: Before they put me down with a taser He pointed the gun at me..

Him: Goodbye sweetheart

Me: Mongz please.. Don't do this

As he was about to pull the trigger, Addo pushed me out of the way. Both of us fell down, but on his way down he took a bullet for me.. He then crawled his way to me and got on top of me as Mongz took shots at him again, and again..

108

ISAAC NDARHA

Nontsikelelo walked in looking like the world was on her shoulders, I was sitting at the table having lunch..

Me: How is he holding up?

I was being sarcastic with that question, quite frankly I didn't care about what happened to him..

Her: I had the machines switched off, he is gone Me:

That's brutal and sad

Her: There was no normal life that he was going to haveMe:

I'll alert the family

Her: You not mad that I had the machines switched off?Me:

No.. Why would I?

Her: I thought you were also one of those who wanted him to sufferMe: I

really don't care

(Silence)

Her: Can I ask you something?

Me: What is it?

Her: How did he steal your identity? Because that day when you got arrested. You got arrested as Isaac Ndarha. How then did you change from Isaac to Jacob?

I wiped my mouth with the napkin..

Me: Police said more evidence was found in the crime scene including my ID of which the ID was Jacob's ID. I think he planted it there, so now it seemed as if like I was Jacob Ndarha and I was framing my Brother. My Father for some reason, I don't know how Jacob convinced him but he also testified that I was Jacob Ndarha, that's how I went from Isaac Ndarha to Jacob Ndarha because of the bloody ID

Her: I'm sorry.. I'm sorry for everything that you've gone throughMe: I

don't need your pity party

Her: In that case then, I'll go upstairs and relax a bitMe:

When are you leaving?

Her: This is my house, I'm not going anywhere.. My husband bought it for me and our kids, why don't you leave?

After saying that she made her way upstairs..

—

ARMAN

I

Mongezi's gun only had 4 bullets. The first one went to Addo's ribs, then the other 3 went to his back. As soon as it was calm and quiet that's when security unlocked the door and got in, they restrained him up until the cops arrived. Addo was still conscious so the Paramedics confirmed when they checked him, they rushed him to the hospital and I went along. All the love that I once had for Mongz vanished, I felt nothing but hate for him now..

–

XOLELW

A

After that long drive I finally met Xoliswa halfway. I was relieved to see her.. She was with her girlfriend and some guy..

We broke the hug..

Her: I'm proud of you

Me: I just wanna get home

Her: Okay let me take you home

The guy that they were with was the one who drove Xoliswa's car, then Xols drove my car. I was at the back with Yonela, she was still fast asleep. I was so glad that now we were safe..

–

COUSIN NOKHANYA

I got to the Police station and some officer attended to me..Him:

Nokhanya Skhosana?

Me: Yes.. Is my cousin alright?

Him: Wait here, I'll be back

I had received a call from the police station letting me know that my cousin was arrested and they needed me to come over because he was shutting down, they had gotten my number from him.. The officer came back with another Gentleman..

Officer: This is Detective Van Merwe, he is in charge of this case He extended his hand to me..

Merwe: How are you Mam'?

I extended mine to meet his halfway for a handshake..Me: I'm well and you Detective?

Him: I'm good

Me: What's going on?

Him: Your cousin was arrested earlier today for attempted murder and intimidating another civil with an unregistered firearm

Me: What?

Him: It's still attempted murder for now, if the victim doesn't make it then it'll be murder Me: How did that happen?

Him: That's what we trying to find out but he is not saying anything we will also begetting statements from the witnesses. The only thing he keeps on singing is this message

He handed me the paper and I read through..

Me: "I've dug two graves for us, my dear can't pretend that I was perfect leaving you infear. Oh man, what a world the things I hear If I could act on my revenge then would I?

Some kill, some steal, some break your heart And you thought that I would let it go and let you walk.. Broken hearts break bones, so let's break up fast but I don't wanna let it go,so in my grave I'll rot.. "

Him: We gave him a pen to write that down since he kept on singing it over and overagain

Me: Where is he? Can I see him?

Him: Yes you will.. Actually we wanted to know if he has any mental illness orsomething like that because the way that he is acting, doesn't seem normal

Me: Yes he does

Him: Do you perhaps have his Dr's number?

Me: uhm no.. His Father has that information, I'll call him and find out

Him: Thank you Mam'

—

NOMFUND

O

Since Jojo was busy, my Mother came over to help me with Lonwabo for a while. She still feels bad for what happened that day when Lonwabo got kidnapped, she thinks it's all her fault..

Me: Dad is still angry?

Her: He is not angry, he is just disappointed. He thought after Lonwabo you would go back to work and get your life in order but you fell pregnant again, worse he feels like Lonwabo is still young for you to be pregnant again

Me: I didn't ask for this, I was going through a lot and then this happened

Her: I get where he is coming from Fufu, I hope you won't keep on popping babies for Jojo like this.. I don't even understand the nature of your relationship with him, didn't you say you guys broke up? But now you pregnant with his twins

Me: It's a complicated story

She shook her head.. Honestly speaking I've never seen my Parents this disappointed

—

ARMAN

I

I kept on pacing up and down in the corridor, they were still busy with him. I had his blood on my clothes, I also had his blood on my hands but I washed it off. Just to think that his heroic act might send him to an early grave broke my heart into a million pieces.

I swear on my Mother's grave, I'll never forgive Mongz for this. To even think that I was going to marry him, made my stomach to turn in..

—

XOLELW

A

We got home and Xoliswa helped me to the couch while Loli was holding Yonela.. Xols: It looks bad Xoks, I think you need to go to the hospital

My Uncle made his way in, at first he confused me as he looked exactly like my Father..Him: What happened?

Xols: Xolelwa hurt her knee pretty bad

Him: So this is Xolelwa?

He looked at me..

Him: I'm your Uncle, Jacob Ndarha

Me: I've heard about you

Xols: What exactly happened?

Me: Master cheated and then he didn't want me to leave so I drugged him and ran awaywith Yonela... I injured myself in the process

Xols: He did what?

Me: He even locked us in the house, that's why I drugged him so that I could escapeUncle: Can I ask something?

I nodded..

He sat at the edge of the couch and gently put the cushion under my leg...Him:

How much does that fool love you?

Me: Pardon?

Him: How much does he love you? Me:

I don't know because he cheatedXols:

How is that relevant?

Him: It's relevant because he can report her. He can say you drugged him and ran offwith his Daughter, he can make you an unstable person

Me: I was fleeing for my life

Him: I know but the court might not see it that way, it would be a messy custody battleXols: I never liked that guy one bit, and I'm going to kick his ass!

Uncle: How much do you love him?

Me: Why?

Uncle: The second option is for me to kill him.. Did he put his hands on you?

Me: No.. Not exactly.. I'm sorry but no one is going to kill anyone, at the end of the day he is still Yonela's Father

Uncle: For all it's worth, I'm glad that you back at home Me:

Where is Mom?

Uncle: She is sleeping... Girls your Father is no more Xoliswa and I kept quiet..

Him: Did you both hear what I said?

Xoliswa: We heard you

Him: Normal people would cry

Xoliswa: I'm glad he's dead

Me: I'm trying to feel sad and broken but I can't Him:

That's how he damaged you guys?

Xols: You have no idea

Him: We need to take you to the hospital

Loli: I'll stay behind and watch Yonela

I don't know what the future holds for Master and myself but, I don't see us getting back together ever again..

—

COUSIN NOKHANYA

I was taken to the interrogation room and Mongz was sitting at the table. He was handcuffed and kept on running his fingers on the table as if like he was playing the piano while singing..

Him: I've dug two graves for us my dear, can't pretend that I was perfect leaving you in

fear.. Oh man, what a world the things I hear, If I could act on my revenge now would I?I pulled the other chair and sat close to him..

Me: Hey cuz

Him: Some kill, some steal, some break your heart and you thought that I would let it go and let you walk.. Broken hearts break bones, so break up fast...

I put my hand on this cheek..

Me: Hey Mongz

He ignored me and continued with what he was doing, he was out of touch with reality..

Detective: That's the only thing that he does, even getting your numbers from him wasn't easy

I hated seeing him like this...

109

NOMFUNDO

A FEW MONTHS LATER

Jojo: Again.. Which one is Khanyi and which one is Khanya?I

laughed..

Me: Khanya is the one that's always crying and Khanyi is always sleeping
Him: So when they sleeping like this how do you tell them apart?

Me: I'm their Mother.. I know how to tell them apart

About a week ago, I gave birth to the girls. Even though I had given birth before but this time around it was very scary. I kept on praying that they both make it, and they did.

Jojo's family were the ones who gave Lonwabo his name. This time around my Parents wanted to name the girls, they named them Nokhanya and Khanyisa. Although my Father has been difficult on me throughout the whole pregnancy, I'm just glad that he decided to come around. When he came to see the girls for the first time he just fell in love with them..

The last months of my pregnancy also had an effect on my relationship with Jojo. We

didn't talk things through, our dead relationship spontaneously revived itself..Me: Don't wake them up please, they a lot of work

Him: I thought newborn babies just sleep all the timeMe:

Definitely not the Ndarha twins

Him: Are you excited about going home tomorrow?

Me: I'm excited.. I've missed my first born so much, how is he holding up?Him:

He is doing well and he is enjoying the daycare

Me: That's good to hear

He came and sat next to me on the bed..

Me: I honestly thought that they were going to have health problemsHim: Why would they?

Me: I don't know.. I just assumed and I'm glad that they healthy

The Dr kept us here this long to make sure that the twins were healthy, and so far theyhaven't had any problems..

Him: I'm glad that they healthy tooHe

leaned over and kissed me..

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

I wiped his lips with my thumb..

—

ARMAN

I

I rang the doorbell and waited for the Nurse to open. She opened after a while..Her: Good morning

Me: Morning

I made my way in..

Me: Is he up?

Her: Yes he is up.. He is by the pool

Me: Thank you

Her: Would you like something to drink?

Me: No thank you.. I won't be staying for long

I made my way to the pool through the sliding door. Addo has some chairs and a table in his backyard, he was sitting at the table and busy on his laptop. I made my way to him..

Me: Good morning

Him: Good morning

He didn't even look at me..

Me: Aren't you supposed to have a pillow supporting your back? Him:

I'm fine

I threw my bag on the table..

Me: I hardly think so!! Regina knows that if you not on your wheelchair you supposed to have a pillow supporting your back, I can see it from here that the chair is not comfortable

He closed the laptop and looked at me..

Him: You wanna talk about it?

Me: Talk about what?

Him: I'm the one who is supposed to be mad, I'm the one who got shot.. Remember? Me: So what? I don't have a right to be mad?

Him: definitely not here.. Maybe go and be mad somewhere else I pulled the chair and sat down while exhaling..

Me: I'm sorry..

Him: You need to stop blaming yourself. It was my choice, I took those bullets for you.. You didn't ask me too, if the situation was repeated I would do it again

Me: I just can't get over the fact that you have a Spinal Cord injury because of me and my stupidity, I should've been more alert. I should've known that he would do something like this.. I'm truly sorry Addo

Him: For the 100th time

He extended his hand to me..

Him: I forgive you

Me: He didn't even pay for what he did

Him: At least he is going to be in a mental institution for a very long time.. That way he won't hurt others

Me: Everything played in his favour.. I'm sure now that his father is the president, he pulled a few strings for him

He opened his laptop...

Him: You have an interesting taste in Men

Me: Trust me he was not like this when I first met him(Silence)

Me: What are you working on?

Him: Some new drug that was introduced in the market, I'm researching it and reviewing it before recommending it to my patients

Even after his fatal accident, Addo still goes to the office every now and then to see a few of his clients. He denies to just sit at home and be useless..

Me: Do you go to the gym?

Him: No I lift weights here at home

Me: You just refuse to be useless don't you?

Him: That's not me.. What do you want me to do? Be depressed and be mad like you everyday of my life? How will that change the situation? It won't change the fact that I

got shot by your unstable boyfriend that you wanted to marry at home affairs a few months back

Me: You have the most sweetest things to say Him:

And that's why you love me

Me: I don't know if I wanna do this relationship anymore Him:

You only realized that now? Now that I'm a paraplegic? I laughed..

He closed his laptop again..

Him: I never even got a good morning kiss.. You right this relationship is not going to work

I got up and went to sit on top of him.. I sat in a position that made us to face each other and I had my arms around his neck, he had his hands on my waist..

Him: I know that this part of our relationship is difficult but..

Me: But I'm glad that you alive, that's all that matters... The Dr said you making good progress, you won't be on the chair forever

The recovery process has been slow, and because of that we haven't been really sexual. The shooting brought about a C5 Spinal Cord injury, and part of that is him not being able to perform.. The Dr said it's something that we shouldn't really worry about, he will go back to his normal self pretty soon..

Me: We going to get through this

Him: Yeah I know

I kissed him..

Me: I'm always going to here

Him: It's not like you have a choice

Me: Again you have the most sweetest things to say (sarcasm) Him: I

try

We kissed again..

–

XOLELW

A

Him: Here you go

Me: Thank you

I sat down..

He went and sat opposite me..

About 2 months ago I got myself a job at Eskom as HR. Well Jojo called in a few favours for me, but nevertheless my experience from the hospital also came in handy. I met this guy at work Alex Langa, he is an electrical engineer and we have been friendsever since until this morning when he called me and asked me out, I really didn't know what to make of that.. Things between me and Master are still rocky, we not in good terms and I only communicate with him when it involves Yonela.. I haven't forgiven him and honestly speaking after what happened, I don't think we will ever get back together.My knee that troubles me very often even after the surgery is a constant reminder of why I shouldn't get back with him..

–

MONG

Z

I started playing the piano..

Me: "I've dug two graves for us, my dear Can't pretend that I was perfect, leaving you in fear.. Oh man, what a world, the things I hear If I could act on my revenge, then, oh, would I?.. Some kill, some steal, some break your heart And you thought that I would let it go, and let you walk.. "

A knock disturbed me, I stopped playing..

I turned around and it was one of the Nurses..Him:

You have a visitor

I exhaled and got up from the chair..He

led the way and I followed..

Him: Over there

I looked at the lady and I didn't recognize her, it was actually my first time seeing her..Me: I don't know her

Him: Are you sure?

Me: I'm sure

She raised her hand signaling that I should go to her..Him:

If you don't know her then I will ask her to lea- Me: No it's

okay.. Let me find out who she is first

I made my way to her and she stood up..Her:

Hi

She looked at me as if like she knows me..Me:

Who are you?

She looked around and cleared her throat..Her:

It's me Mongz... It's Alana (whispering)Me:

Wait.. What?

—

NONTSIKELELE

O

My Husband had a very big funeral. Everyone who knew him attended his funeral, especially most of his fellow politicians... After his burial everyone else moved on like nothing happened, I was the only one left to mourn him.. Jojo wasn't kidding, he really doesn't want anything to do with me..

I heard someone ringing the door bell..

Me: Come on Yoyo.. That's probably your Dad

I picked her up and we went to open the door, indeed it was her Father. Yonela is very fond of her Father, she gets excited everytime when she sees him..

He made his way in and took her from me because she was busy jumping and making a lot of noise..

Master: Hello munchkin

Me: One of this days she's going to slip from my arms and fall Master:

How are you doing?

Me: I'm doing well and you?

Master: I'm good

Me: I'll get her bag.. Xolelwa said you can bring her back tomorrow because your Aunt called her and asked if Yoyo can sleepover

Master: Uva yena u Xolelwa? (where is Xolelwa)

Me: She is.. She went out with a friend

Him: A friend?

Me: Yes a friend from work

Him: It's good that she's making friends Me:

It's actually a male friend

He raised one of his eyebrows..

Me: They just friends

Him: If they going out then it's more than just "friends"

Me: Master I know that things between you and Xolelwa are not good but please don't start any trouble, you even lucky that she allows you to see Yonela after what you did.. Just let her be okay?

He didn't say anything..

Me: Okay?

Him: Ng'cela iBag ka Yoyo (Can I have Yoyo's bag) I

sighed...

Me: You and Xolelwa are a headache, yazi we are old to be busy getting involved in stupid things.. Hai maan niyadika!! (you annoying)

I went to get the bag for him..

SEASON FINALE

—

110

MASTER

Auntie: Woza Nana.. Woza. Umntwana ka gog'wakhe yena

As soon as she saw that I was taking a video she stopped crawling..Auntie:

Woza phela (come)

She just sat up straight and looked at me.. I put my phone away and she crawled herway to me. I picked her up..

Auntie: Yonela is very fond of you

Me: Wish I could spend more time with her

Auntie: Unjani u Xolelwa? (How is Xolelwa)

Me: Xolelwa is not talking to me

I underestimated Xolelwa, I thought that by now we would've sorted things out...

Auntie: uXolelwa was raised to be independent, her Parents did everything for her that's why it was easy for her to go back home without even thinking twice when you messed up. Akancengi (she doesn't beg). She comes from a financial stable background, there'snothing that her family can't do for her financially that's why she will never tolerate nonsense.. She got a rich brother and uncle as her backup and a good job

I tried to use intimidation but it only made matters worse.. It did more harm than goodHer: After

how you acted, you even lucky that her family still allows you to see Yonela Me: Sbonge

uMalume wakhe (We thank her Uncle for that)

Her: Just be patient with her.. Don't push

Me: She's out on a date as we speaking.. I can't lose her

Her: Master angizingeni (don't involve me) it's your mess, you sort it out.. Uyenze njeizinto zobulima (You did some stupid things)

She tried taking Yonela from me but she resisted..Her: Hai

asazi (we don't know)

She forcefully got her from me and Yonela cried while pulling my t-shirt..Me:

Ang'hambi sthandwa sam'(I'm not going anywhere)

Auntie: I just wanna make you something to eat

Yonela wasn't buying that, she started fighting her off by scratching her... I took her back again while laughing..

Auntie: When will you get used to me?

Me: She must start spending more time with us

I went and sat on the couch, I put her next to me but she didn't want..Me: Yini

kanti? (What's wrong)

I sat her on my lap and wiped her tears..

Me: Why utefa so namhlanje?..(You full of it today)She rubbed her eyes..

Me: You wanna sleep?I

got up..

Me: Let's go get your bottle and then put you to sleep

—

ARMAN

I

I kept my eyes glued at him as he tried to keep himself busy with work. I was lost in the moment, deeply taken by his concentration as he silently read through the document that he was holding..

Him: Something on your mind?

His eyes never left the document to even look at me..

Me: I don't know why I need to change my psychiatrist I'm very comfortable with you

I took the mugs to the sink..

Him: We spoke about this.. I am not allowed to be romantically involved with my patients, I could lose my license

Me: Why is that?

Him: Well for general reasons I'm a psychiatrist and it will seem as if like I'm taking advantage of you. It will come across as if like I manipulated you, and brainwashed you into being with me. For professional reasons it's against my working ethics and against the oath I took.. I'm supposed to protect you as a patient and not take advantage of you

Me: Are you taking advantage of me?

Him: I'm the one who is stuck in a wheelchair so who is taking advantage of who?I

chuckled and made my way back to the table..

(Silence)

Me: I am really feeling you and this relationship, I don't wanna get hurt in the endHim:

Hurt?

Me: I don't want it to look like you taking advantage of me just because you in a wheelchair, then when you finally get better you leave me for someone else

He sighed and put the document on the table..Him:

I'm not going to get this done

Me: I'm sorry I didn't mean to be insecure

Him: I took bullets for you, I don't know the type of guys you've been with before but I'm not going to suffer for their sins

Me: Honestly speaking what do you even see in me? I'm just a damaged soul that is very confused an-

Him: I'm not going to have a therapy session with you Amor (Love)He

passed me the piece of paper to me..

Me: The therapist I recommend for you

I looked at the paper, and then I looked at him to make the situation awkward and have

him find it really hard to work..

Him: Ok let's talk then

He looked at me..

Me: Or we can just listen to Passada

Him: You don't even understand what they sayMe:

So? I love the songs.. They very relaxing

I sat ontop of him, and went through his laptop..Me:

Ohw I like this one.. Foi só...

Him: Foi só 1 dia.. Just for one day

Me: I listened to it this other time and it was niceHim:

Do you even know what it means?

Me: Of course not..

Him: Okay

Me: You going to tell me right?

Him: That's a lot of work Amor

He pat me a little on my thigh..

Him: Come on.. Get off

Me: Thought we were going to listen together

Him: I'll be right back

Me: Okay

I got off him and he wheeled himself out of the room.. If I was in his shoes I'd be depressed everyday of my life in that wheelchair, I don't know where he finds the strength to keep going everyday acting like nothing happened..

—

MONG

Z

I sat down..

Her: How are you?

She tried touching my hand but I retracted it back..Me:

Wtf Alana?

Her: I know what you thinking but...

Me: Everyone can see you.. You human, what is going on?Her: I..

She cleared her throat..

Her: This is a body of some troubled soul who hung herself. If I leave her body she won't make it.. Trust me no one knows she committed suicide, I'm using her body as a vessel no one will suspect

Me: What the hell are you talking about? Her:

Mongz I am a succubus, I'm a demonMe: You

a what?

Her: Don't believe everything you hear about us, I am harmless just full of lustI laughed while shaking my head..

Me: I know that I'm crazy but I'm not this crazyHer:

I did this for you!!!

Me: Leave me aloneI

got up..

Me: Stay away from me

I started walking away and as if like shit couldn't get any crazier I felt her jumping on myback..

Her: If only you could listen to me!!!

She bit me on my shoulder, and I threw her down..

Me: Are you insane?

She totally lost it that the Nurses rushed to her and held her down, another Nurse came to me..

Nurse: Are you okay? I

took off my t-shirt..

Me: She fucken bit me!!

Him: It's pretty bad.. You bleeding, let's go.. I'll get the med bag Her: I

did this all for you!!!

They took her away to one of the rooms.. Nurse:

Do you know her?

Me: No I don't

I followed him to get the med bag..

—

NOMFUND

O

I looked at the twins and they were sleeping.

I closed my eyes too and tried to get some sleep, but I kept on tossing and turning until my phone started ringing. I looked at the called ID and I wasn't familiar with the number..

Me: Hello?

I didn't get an answer..

Me: Hello??

Voice: Nomfundo... It's me

I freaked out and immediately got out of bed.. Her:

Nomfundo.. Are you still there?

I went to the door and checked the corridor, I didn't see anyone suspicious other than the Nurses..

Me: What do you want Tash?

I made my way to the window..

Her: I just wanted to talk to you

I went over to the the twins and looked at them....

Me: You have a nerve calling me after what you've doneHer:

Nomfundo please..

Me: Don't ever call me!!

Her: Wait..

I hung up..

–

XOLELW

A

Well our breakfast outing didn't last for that long, Alex was called in at work so hedropped me off at home...

Mom: And?? How did it go?

Me: He was called in at work

Her: That's sad

Me: It's actually not

She folded her arms..

Her: What do you mean?

Me: It's nothing

Her: You found him boring didn't you?

Me: I didn't say that

She smiled a little..

Me: Fine.. Yes he was a bit boring, we good as friends

Her: I thought as much

Me: How did you know?

Her: I've been around, I've dated a ghetto guy before.. They crazy but after you've been with one it's a bit difficult to find ordinary guys interesting

I rolled my eyes..

Her: Roll them all you want girl but you know I'm right Me:

Anyway.. Did Master fetch Yonela?

Her: Yes he did

She looked at me like she still had more to say.. Me:

What?

Her: Don't you think you have punished him for far too long now? Me:

Who?

Her: I don't know maybe the heavens Me:

Mom please.. Not now

Her: He has been trying Xolelwa, and I know that you miss him Me: I'm going to my room

She raised both her hands up..

Her: I didn't mean to hit a nerve.. Let me rather leave She left me in the kitchen..

I took out my phone and checked my messages, I had one from Master which read: "Uze uzolanda uYoyo later" (come and get Yonela later)

I called him..

Him: Umuntu uyaphupha moss kanje (A person is dreaming) Me: I got your text.. Is everything okay?

Him: Everything is okay

Me: I thought you guys were going to have her for the nightHim:

Ya Skat izinto ziyajika (Skat things change)

My heart jumped a little hearing him calling me that, it's been a while..

Him: My Aunt is going to some church meeting later, and I have to drive back to MPMe:

Ohw.. You can drop her off, I can't come

Him: Uzobe ukhona? (will you be there)

Me: Huh?

Him: Phela mang'fika bathe uhambe nenye ibhari nje (When I got there this morning, I heard you went out with some fool)

Me: I'll be around later Master

Him: Angazi niyibizani lento yenu Mara kusho ukuthi ibhedile moss (I don't know what you call it, but whatever it was then it was bad)

He laughed after saying that..

Me: Master bye

Him: Ngisak'thanda yezwa (I still love you)

Me: Bye

I hung up and blushed a little..

SEASON FINALE

—

111

ARMANI

Later on that day I was on the phone with my Father while preparing dinner..I had told him about the shooting, but I haven't told him about Addo. I know that my father hasn't been there for most of my life but I do respect his word and his opinion when it comes to such situations, I don't think he's going to be happy with my sudden moving on from

Mongz to Addo. I'm just waiting for time to pass a bit before I tell him..

Him: Kudala sakukhuza ngalo mfana (We have long reprimanded you when it came to that boy)

Me: Ndiyazi Tata.. Ndicela uxolo (I know Dad and I'm asking for forgiveness) Him:

Akusenani, sibonga nje ukuthi usaphila (We just thankful that you okay) Me: Unjani

uMakhulu? (how is Grandma)

Him: Uyaphila yena, nje ufuna uze ngapha next week ngoba siyozenza umsebenzi (She is well, she wants you to come for the ancestral ceremony that we going to do)

Me: I'll come

Him: Ngibonga ukukhuluma nawe futhi ngizwe nokuthi usaphila.. Uze uziphathe kahle, uyazi ukuthi wuwe kphela ingane enginayo noLondi (I'm glad that we spoke and you doing fine. Please take care of yourself, you the only child that I have with Londi)

Me: Ewe Tata

Him: Sizophinda sikhulume futhi.. Bye (We will talk again.. Bye) Me:

Bye

I just hope he won't have a problem with Addo..

—

XOLELW

A

Master did stop by to drop off Yonela, it was good seeing him again. I have been going all out to avoid him, when he comes to fetch Yoyo I would have my Mom hand her over to him.. I won't lie I was a bit nervous, and I went all out to make myself look good. I didn't overdo it though, and I also wore PJs to not make the situation look obvious..

Master has always been a snack, he more handsome when he is wearing a cap.. He gently laid her down..

Him: Tshela Mina (Tell me something) He

looked at me from head to toe..

Him: Nimenzani uYonela la kini? (What do you guys do to my Daughter)

Me: What do you mean?

Him: Beka tefa one way namhlanje (She was very clingy today) Trust

Master to ruin the moment with tension..

Me: I think she is tooting again, I'll take her to the Dr

Him: I forgot the medical aid card, so ngizok'fakela imali (I will send you money) Me: No
don't worry I got it

He laughed while shaking his head..

Him: Yiko isimo sethu sinje (That's why things are like this between us) Me:

But what's wrong with me wanting to pay?

Him: asiyiyeke ngoba izos'xabanisa (let's rather not discuss it, because it will make us fight)

(Silence)

Him: Umuhle (You look beautiful)

Me: Thank you

Him: And I miss you I

didn't reply to that..

Him: I'm sorry for everything that I've put you through

Me: Tell me something.. That day if I failed to make a successful gateway, what were you going to
do to me?

Him: Eish..

Me: Where you going to kill me?

Him: Ihaba MakaYonela (You exaggerating)

Me: I'm just asking

Him: Ang'keni (I don't know) my mind was all over nje... I was seeing red I
nodded while folding my arms..

Me: I fell with my Daughter and I hurt my knee. I had to get a knee surgery and I'm grateful that Yonela is okay, she didn't get an injury from the fall

Him: Why mele sikhulume ngale ndaba vele? (Why should we talk about this)

Me: I just want you to know how much damage your actions caused that day.. I had to run away from you

Him: You told me.. I know

Me: I'm glad you know

Him: MakaYonela ufuna ng'thini noma ngenzeni ke to show you how much I regret my actions that day?

Me: I don't want you to do anything

Him: I don't want us to talk about it because it upsets you and I hate myself for putting you through that

I fought back my tears and reached for my arm..Him:

Askies sthandwa sam' (Sorry my love)

He pulled me closer to him and kissed me..

Him: Hade San (I'm sorry)

—

MONG

Z

Since my father runs the country now, I see less of him. He is always busy and I was surprised to have him come and visit me. He had to show up at this time way after visiting hours to protect me from journalists who would've invaded my space. If I didn't know better I'd say he is embarrassed by me, but he's not. He has been open about my mental illness to the public from the word go, ever since the Senzeni issue.. Seeing him with bodyguards is something that I'll never get used to..

Him: How are you holding up?

Me: It's a mental institution

Him: They told me that a crazy lady bit you?

Me: Ya I'll survive

There was an awkward silence..

Me: I wanna come home

Him: You've never had any problem being here

Me: I've accepted that this is my second home but I don't see why I have to be around here this time around

Him: Mongezi you shot and almost killed someone

Me: The gun was not aimed at him, he took bullets that were not meant for him.. Uzifakile (He involved himself)

Him: Are you even sorry for what you've done? Me:

No.. He should take this as a lesson

Him: What is that lesson?

Me: That he should quit playing the saviour because next time he might not be so lucky

Him: Unfortunately Mongz you will have to stay here for a while until I am certain that you won't go after Armani like you did with Zeni.. Remember?

Me: I was provoked!

Him: It's your word against hers, you shot her boyfriend Doctor, whatever he is. Who do you think they going to believe?

Me: He is a psychiatrist, he is trained to deal with such situations. Instead of using his knowledge to neutralize the situation he played James Bond and tried to save the day

Him: You can't keep on doing this I

stood up..

Me: Just get me the hell out of here okay? Thank you.. Good night and greet Monde forme

I walked away..

—

JOJO

I handed him the beer..

Me: I wanna pay both the damages for the girls and I also wanna pay Lobola forNomfundo

He looked at me..

Him: You wanna marry her?

Me: Yes I don't see why we shouldn't, I don't wanna lose her again this timeHim: I'm

proud of you

Isaac had stopped by at my place and we were drinking beer, just having a chilled nightMe: So

what are you planning to do? Do you wanna go back into politics?

Him: Not exactly.. Still fighting this offshore account thing, I didn't know it would dragthis much

Him: It will come through and exclude me from his moneyThe

intercom went off..

Me: let me check who it is

I went to check and it was Detective King, this was weird..Me:

Detective?

He waved a paper..

Him: I have a warrant of your arrest for the murder of BonzaMe:

What?

Him: New evidence has surfaced and your ex girlfriend has sung like a bird, we alreadyhave your sister in custody

This was not happening.. Him:

Please open the gate Sir.

SEASON FINALE

[Excuse any errors]

–

112

XOLELWA

Since things aren't well between my Mother and Jojo, My Mother exhausts all her energy on Yonela. Jojo has forbidden her from seeing his kids, she won't even get a chance to see the twins. She just saw them from the pic that Jojo sent me..

Me: Master wants us to fix things again

Mom: What do you say about that?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I really don't know

Mom: Most people say listen to your heart

Me: I do want us to fix things but I don't know if I can ever trust him again.. How is our relationship going to be without trust?

Mom: It will take time but eventually you guys will get there.. He will have to prove himself harder so that you can trust him again

Me: But I'm not going to move in with him again

Her: I think that's a good idea, he should pay damages first and pay Lobola too if he wants you guys to live together again

Me: How are you holding up with everything that's happening?

Her: It's life my child, you just have to pull up your stockings and keep on moving
Me: What about Jojo? Has he contacted you yet?

She shook her head..

Her: Not yet..

Me: Give him time.. He will come around

Her: I hope so

—

TASH

I knew that a visitor this late, meant nothing but trouble.. When I walked into the room he was standing there facing the wall, the guard closed the door behind us..

I didn't go close, I waited for him to say something.. He turned around and looked at me.. Him: Good evening

My best friend Tebogo comes here almost everyday to see me, so she keeps me updated about everything that's happening out there. Especially when it comes to the Ndarha family. She had told me about Ndarha's death and funeral, then she also told me about his twin brother who just surfaced from nowhere..

Him: Nataschi right?

Me: Yes.. Isaac Ndarha's twin?

Him: Yes and Jojo's father Me:

Jojo's father?

That was news to my ears..

Him: That's a story for another day.. Hopefully He walked closer to me..

Him: I want us to understand each other very well This was definitely not a friendly visit..

Him: See how easy it was for me to get to you? Me:

Can I help you with something?

Him: I want you to leave my son alone

Me: If you haven't noticed.. I'm in Prison, I'm isolated from him and the world Him: The Detective stopped by, with regards to the murder case..

Me: I told him the truth, I told him exactly what happened that night Him: You will get in touch with him, and you will tell him a different story

Me: I don't think so

Him: Do you know what I'm capable of?

Me: What can you do to me that jail hasn't done to me? I lost everything so really I don't care. Matter of fact, please kill me and end my misery

Him: Wouldn't you like that? I

laughed...

Me: Jojo will never change, still wants everyone to fight his battles for him.. When is he ever going to man up?

Him: I don't care what you think of my son, what I care about is you rectifying your mistake

Me: I'm not going to do that... Forget! I

turned around and walked away..

Him: That beautiful small house that your parents live in, would be a great tragedy if it could burn down with them inside

I turned around and looked at him.. Me:

Excuse me?

Him: I can already see it in the news.. "House burns down with a couple inside of it" what a tragedy

Me: You stay away from my family

Him: change your statement again so you can become an unreliable witness. A bitter ex that doesn't want to see him happy with another woman

Me: How did you find me?

Him: I have friends too behind those bars He

fixed his hat..

Him: Do the right thing, for the sake of your Parents

—

JOJO

Detective: Your girlfriend told me everything. She told me the whole truth and how your sister altered the security footage. Your best bet right now is to tell me everything and hopefully when you plead guilty the judge might be lenient

I didn't say anything..

Him: You had the motive and the means.. It was good pinning it to your father though, I give you that

The door opened and then my lawyer walked in..

Him: Detective you know better than to interrogate my client without his lawyer present He sat down..

Him: How are you?

Me: I'm good

He looked at the Detective..

Him: The next time you waste my client's time like this, we going to sue.. No let me rephrase, my clients

Detective: Your client is a cold blooded killer and his sister is an accomplice

Lawyer: What proof do you have other than a statement from an unstable woman, the same woman who is doing 15 years for kidnapping my client's son

Detective: His story fits perfectly and the case has been reopened again

Lawyer: How many statements has this woman given you? She is not even fit to be a witness because she has a personal vendetta against my client. Do you know that the same woman called my Client's baby Mama earlier today from jail?

I looked at him a bit shocked..

Lawyer: She continues to harass my client and his family behind bars My

lawyer looked at me..

Him: Rest assured.. There is no case here, the Detective only wanted to manipulate you until you crack. He was using intimidation

I looked at King again..

Me: If you show up at my house again, I am going to lay charges of harassment against you

Lawyer: Let's get your sister and go, there's no case here

I stood up and followed my Lawyer as he led the way out..Me:

Tash called Nomfundo?

Lawyer: Yes.. Nomfundo called me and told me about this, asking if we can't get a restraining order or something

Me: Tash is proving to be a problem over and over

Lawyer: Don't worry.. They don't have a case. King uses intimidation and manipulation most of the time to make clients crack

Me: I was a bit convinced that he has built a strong case against me He stopped and pulled me aside..

Him: Are you trying to tell me that you did it? You killed him?

Me: Not intentionally.. Then Nataschi and my Sister helped me to stage it as a hijack that went wrong

Him: Thank your Ancestors that Nataschi is considered as unfit witness in this case, because you would be going straight to Jail by now

–

MONG

Z

I closed my eyes a few times trying to fall asleep but, sleep eluded me. A lot was going through my mind and the bite that I got earlier was starting to make my whole shoulder numb. I sat up straight and thought about what she said, I needed answers. None of what she was saying made sense to me... I got up from the bed and made my way out, at this time everyone is in their room. I went to the room where they restrain and isolate you if you act in a violent manner or cause disruption, I looked around to make sure that no Nurse showed up and then I tried to open the door but it was locked. I didn't know the code. I gave up and walked away, before I could even get far I heard the door opening on its own. I turned and made my way back to the room, I quickly made my way

in before anyone showed up in the corridor. The door closed behind me, she was restrained to the bed.. She turned her head and looked at me..

Her: I don't like to be restrained, they used to restrain me a lot when they performed an Exorcism on me

Me: Like I said before, I am not that crazy as to hallucinate about demons.. Very attractive demons for that matter

She chuckled..

Me: I thought demons didn't exist

Her: Just because you don't believe in certain things, it doesn't mean that they don't exist

I moved closer to her..

Her: It can work out between us

Me: How? Aren't demons evil?

Her: I still have good in me

Me: I don't understand

Her: I was an angel Me:

An angel?

Her: Yes.. I was Angel Helena before I became Aziza the succubus, I am prepared to tell you the whole story if you willing to give me a chance.. You can be my redemption

SEASON FINALE

—

113

JOJO

[YEARS LATER]

We all looked at her and waited for her to say the line. 10 seconds elapsed, we were recording and she wasn't coming through..

Me: Yoyo (Whispering)

She looked at me..

Me: Remember what I told you to say? (Whispering)

I have never seen her in this mood.. She broke down into tearsMe: Cut

Today she wasn't having any of what we were doing, I don't blame her because we don't work on weekends. Her Saturdays are mostly spent with her cousin Khanya. They best of friends.. Khanya is usually at the studio during the week when we are shooting to make it less tense for her cousin Yonela, today she didn't come she decided to be with her Mother while they prepare for her launch tonight. I am very proud of Nomfundo, she has done very well for herself. She started her own cosmetic line under the brand name "NN cosmetics" which is short for Nomfundo Ndarha. Yes we got married, though it wasn't a big wedding but it was very elegant and expensive. The budget for the wedding was 2mill, I allowed her to go all the way out and have her dream wedding. She deserved it. It was a wedding that even the media and the public still talks about every now and then. The wedding actually delayed because she was still working on her cosmetic line, then when she finally had everything figured out we had our white wedding. My sister actually got married before us which was not the plan.. Life is very good, the kids have grown and they are doing well. Khanya is showing interest in what her mother is doing, she's always playing around with her make up and what not. Whilst the other twin Khanyi is more reserved. She likes being indoors most of the time, when she gets home from preschool she watches tv. She mostly like those kiddies educational channels or doing her puzzles. We often read story books together, she's very interested in reading and when she comes to the studio she would be more occupied by her colouring book and disengages from everything that's happening. I have no doubt that she's going to be a nerd. My son Lonwabo is different. He has been having problems at school, when we had him checked we found out that he is dyslexic. When Lonwabo was young, he started walking first and delayed in talking. It took him a long time and a certain age for him to be able to talk because of the dyslexia, and now it has also affected him academically. He has problems when it comes to reading, even reading simple words for someone his age. He finds it difficult to spell and write certain words. For example, instead of writing "Dry" he would spell it backwards and write "ryD"

We not sure about the severity of his condition we will just have to see as time goes on how bad it affects him and if it's going to get worse or better with treatment. This has become an emotional strain on him, he has substituted his love for school with soccer.

He loves soccer with all his heart and he would rather play soccer and video games than learning or going to school. I do hope that we can overcome it, I don't like seeing my sons suffering like this.. My Father wasn't joking when he said that he was going to work on rebuilding the Ndarha family, we are now closer than we have ever been and were our surname is concerned especially when it comes to the media they mostly have good things to say about us. The offshore account finally kicked in, the money was shared between our family and the president's family since it was Ndarha's and the president. I didn't want nothing to do with his money but my father forced me to take it, so I used some of it for the wedding and the rest I started a trust fund for the kids. I also gave Nomfundo some to start her own cosmetic line...

Out of all the kids in our family, Yonela is a child star. Our new drama "The Servant's Daughter" is making waves. The drama is based on Armani's life, how our relationship started and how we lost each other. Since Usapho took the political route, I excluded that from this one and mainly focused on her life, her pain, her struggles and our failed love. We have signed a contract and she gets a certain amount of money every month, she will be getting that money until we done with the drama. So far I'm working on 3 seasons, depending on how much the fans are obsessed with it, I'm prepared to take it far.. Since Yonela is part of the drama, she had to move down here, she is staying with Lolitha and Xols. She stayed with them before we even started shooting just so she could get used to them and the new environment. I was initially going to have her stay with us but I thought that if she could see Tiger's face on a daily basis it would help her when she misses her Mom. So far it worked, they raised her from when she was 2 years old until now and she is very fond of Xoliswa and Lolitha..

Me: Come here pumpkin

She made her way to me and I sat her on my lap..Me:

Okay guys let's take 5

I wiped her tears.. Me:

What's wrong? Her: I

wanna go home

Me: You will go home when we done I

took my phone out..

Me: You wanna call T?

She nodded..

Me: Okay let's call her

Xoliswa decided to improve her tattoo shop with her share of the money, she also opened her own nightclub and got herself a nice apartment...

We video called her..

Her: Hey Man

Me: Hey.. Are you busy?

Her: Ya I am a bit busy.. What's wrong?

Me: Well baby girl right here is not feeling the shooting this morning
Her: Is that so?

Me: Yeah she doesn't want

Her: What's wrong Yoyo? Talk to T

Yonela: I wanna come home.. I want Loli

Xols: You don't wanna shoot today?

Yonela nodded while crying..

Xols: I'm sad to hear that doll, If you don't shoot then I won't see you on Tv. That's going to make me very sad

She wiped her tears..

Xols: That means we won't sit on the couch, eat marshmallows and watch you on Tv
Me: This is probably the last time we going to shoot on a Saturday, she's not used to it
Xols: I'll ask Loli to come over

Me: Isn't she helping Fufu?

Xols: She is but I'm sure she won't mind coming over
Me:

No let's not disturb them.. I'll see what I can do
Xols: Okay cool.. Call me if she still resists

Me: I'll do so

Xols: Bye doll.. I love you

Yonela: I love you too

I think since everyone is busy, my only best bet is to call my mother and have her comeover. Things were now good between us, I decided to move on from the Ndarha situation..

—

TASH

I saw my friend standing there and waiting for me, like a little kid seeing an ice cream truck I ran to her.. With everything that has happened, I'm grateful that Tebogo still stood by me. The judge had reviewed my case and he granted me Parole, my good behaviour inside and being a positive influence to the other prisoners is the reason why the governor had my case reviewed again. I was very happy, though jail wasn't that much of a nightmare but I'm glad to be out of that isolation. After everything that I've done, I'm very ashamed to go back home and face my parents so I opted to live with Tebogo. Tebogo and her husband had divorced, he left her the house and they checked it out. My Parole officer concluded that it would be a good environment for me. Another condition of my Parole is that I have to get a job, it will be very difficult getting a job with a criminal record but I'll try..

I hugged and squeezed Tebogo for dear life with tears streaming down, I was grateful to be out..

—

XOLELW

A

I heard the toilet flushing. I closed my eyes and let out a huge sigh, then I made my way to the toilet. I stood at the door and looked at her busy flushing the toilet..

Me: Wenza ntoni? (What are you doing)

She freaked out and looked at me, she pointed inside the toilet.. She started talking a lot of gibberish that I didn't understand so I made my way to check and she had dropped her feeding cup inside the toilet..

Me: Sbahle!!

Master and I we married but we didn't go for a white wedding, we were both comfortable with a traditional wedding. We in a good place now, he hasn't given me any reason as to question him again ever since that cheating scandal. He is a bit mature from how he used to be and he no longer works at the mine. He quit when his Brother and Nazo asked him to join their team since they have two companies which deals with plumbing and other things but their primary focus is plumbing. I never knew that a plumbing company could be this big and since Nazo cannot fully run this one here they brought in Master.. Before he could start working he had to do some course for a year first, and I can safely say that he is doing well as a supervisor at work. He even earns better than what he was earning at the mine, that's why he was able to pay lobola and the damages for both our girls. Yes, we have another daughter. Her name is Sbahle and she just turned 2.. It was difficult having Yonela move down to Gauteng permanently because of acting but I am happy with how my Sister and Lolitha are taking good care of her. I wanted to have her back when her character siezes to exist but she seems to be enjoying being that side so I don't wanna be busy moving her a lot..

Jojo and Xols they still don't like Master, despite how much he has changed and owned up to his mistakes they still not very fond of him.. They only tolerate him because he is my husband..

—

ARMAN

I

"uma ngibuk' esbukweni

ngibon' usizi nezinyembhezi..

I can't help but wonder, how such a beautiful face goes through so much and still smile. Themba awubulali, themb' uyaphilisa.. Ukuba wawu bulala, ngabe kade safa"

I felt someone wiping my tears, I opened my eyes and it was Addo's Mother. I took off my earphones and she helped me to sit in a comfortable position with pillows behind my back.. She put her hand on my cheek..

Her: I'm so sorry

Those are the words that I didn't want to hear, they brought more tears in my eyes.. She hugged me..

Her: I'm truly sorry

We hugged for a while before she broke the hug..

Her: This was supposed to be a happy moment for all of us

Addo and I we still together, and very much in love. After a long time of taking things slow, he finally popped the question a few months ago and when we got engaged we also found out that I was pregnant. My pregnancy was coming along well until I miscarried, this is the second time I've miscarried. The first time was when we were still taking things slow, it was an unexpected and unplanned pregnancy..

Our families both met for the very first time when we broke the news to them that we engaged, his family came down from Ghana and we all had a big feast. Addo has 5 siblings all together but 3 died, so now he is left with his 2 sisters. His Mom is the only surviving parent that he has she has raised them all alone, after their father passed on when they were very young.. Addo's Mom is a darling, we clicked from the very day of meeting each other and I was happy to see my family also accepting Addo and approving our relationship..

She held my hand..

Me: This is the second time

She shook her head..

Me: This time around Addo was really looking forward to us having a baby Her:

Have you called him?

Me: No I haven't.. I don't even know where to start, I feel like I have disappointed him Her:

Don't ever think like that.. It's not your fault and I know my Son, he is not like that Me: I can't

lose him just because my womb is failing to carry a baby full term

Her: I don't wanna hear that negative talk anymore, God will see you through. Don't lose faith

Addo has been very good to me and I love him so much, I don't wanna lose him because of this.

—

ALANA THE SUCCUBUS

Him: What about this one?

Me: I don't know.. It's too bright

Him: Demons don't like bright colours?I

stopped and looked at him..

He held my hand..

Him: I'm just kidding (laughing)

Being an angel is the most difficult thing ever, you have to be perfect at all times. An angel that disobeys, an Angel that no longer has good in it, is either sent to Purgatory foreternity or it's thrown down on earth. I was a Guardian Angel, I had to guide those who had a calling of being prophets, healers, etc.

I unfortunately made one mistake with one of my charges and I was sent straight to Purgatory. As hard as it was, I escaped Purgatory and fell down on earth. Now since my righteousness was taken from me, living on earth as a fallen angel was going to be difficult for me. Hell would capture me, torment me, and then use me to fight off my own heavenly family. So I resorted to something else, and that was possessing a humanbeing. As much as I thought that living as a human being would be better but the spirit of a succubs found me and it became one with me that was after one of my charges Rev Nazo turned against me after realizing that I had possessed a human being. If Dawn the exorcist finds me and performs an exorcism on me, I'll go straight to hell for eternity or back to Purgatory since I no longer have good in me. To revoke the spirit of the succubus in me I need to find love and substitute it with the lust of the succubus, when there's no evil attached to me I might be able to live on earth peacefully without having to be exorcized. Mongz has to infect me with love, as love is a powerful tool andpray that things workout for the best.

SEASON FINALE

—

114

ISAAC NDARHA

Sgaza: I hear where Ndarha is coming from but that will take a lot of time, there's a lotof students who are at tertiary

Me: I didn't say we should try it with all higher learning institutions, I was talking about Universities. Colleges they do face such but it is not as severe as Universities

Sgaza: Still..

Me: I think this would be a great opportunity if we want to win the coming elections

Sgaza: We cannot just interfere with the system that has long been running. There's a reason why universities get the NSFAS money so their financial aid offices can do all the work

Me: I was going through the complaints, there's a lot of students who never got funding because the system that's currently in play is not being fair. The officials who are responsible for every student to receive funding in the financial aid offices take some of that money and use it for themselves. If you could go right now to the place of their employment and just stand at the parking lot. Most of them drive expensive cars that cost more than their salaries. When they receive the money some students are excluded just so they can split the money amongst themselves, I read that not so long ago a student received 14mill? How is that possible?

Sgaza: Ndarha this has been going on for a long time. We have more pressing issues than focusing on something that won't even gain us much votes. Our main focus should be on our elders, we get them to vote for us then we win as always

Me: This is a pressing issue. A disadvantaged child deserves the same education as a child who comes from a well off financial background. Fixing this issue will open doors for more kids to go to school. If we could focus on housing, education funding, and job creation we would make a difference in the lives of black families and we are going to win most hearts

Sgaza: I'm just saying this is the waste of time We

all looked at Mabuza..

Mabuza: We are going to try it Ndarha's way

Sgaza: I cannot believe you supporting this ridiculousness Mabuza:

He is definitely up to something

I am back at doing what I love and that is Politics. I fought my way back into politics and I made it, Mabuza put me on probation as a deputy president to see how my knowledge in everything that I know is going to help us win the next coming elections.

Mabuza: So far the housing projects are going well, they have created more jobs. The importing and exporting of goods is working in our favour too, so we will run with this

idea of his.. I believe he is on to somethingSgaza:

This is madness

He stood up and walked out.. I took my glasses from the table..Me: I

commend you for making the right decision

Him: You are way too different from your Brother. Ndarha was very selfish, he wanted things done only to benefit himself and his family financially

Me: I know.. He has done a lot of damage, he didn't influence the president in a good way

Mabuza: Thank you.. Our political party needed someone like youMe: I'm

glad that I could help

I put on my glasses...

Me: Now if you could excuse me.. I have to be at my Grandson's soccer gameMabuza:

Very well..

Me: Have a nice day

Mabuza: You too

–

ARMAN

I

I turned my head and Addo was standing at the door.. He had his arms folded and his eyes were on me..

Me: For how long have you been standing there?Him:

Long enough

He made his way in..

Addo was not around, he went to Cape Town at UCT to hold in for a friend. He was teaching qualified general practitioners those who want to specialize in psychiatry. He was supposed to be there for a month I'm even surprised to see him here..

Me: Thought I was going to see you month end

He sat down on my bed and took off his shoes..

Him: My mom called me Wednesday and told me about what happened, I flew in lastnight. Couldn't come and see you because it was already late

My mother in law is sleek, she acted like Addo doesn't know anything about this.. Heheld my hand..

Him: Why didn't you call me?

I shrugged my shoulders.. I shifted a bit and he laid next to me, I laid my head on hischest..

Him: That's why I opted for contraception because I didn't want you to go through thisagain, I saw how it hurt you the last time

He wrapped his big arms around me. He is literally my big teddy bear, I enjoy being in hisarms..

Me: What are we going to do? We engaged and supposed to be getting married soon.How is our marriage going to survive this?

Him: I told you that I would rather have that part of my life be non existant than to see you go through this, each time when it happens it takes away a piece of you. You havebeen through a lot and I don't wanna see you hurting anymore

Me: You still wanna go through with the wedding? Even after this?

Him: I am not going to leave you for something that you had no control over. That incident of you getting shot was not your fault.. I love you and we going to work throughthis together, I'm sure there's other alternatives.. I'm sorry that you had to go through this again

Me: Doesn't it affect you?

Him: Just because I don't show it, it doesn't mean that I am not hurting over this. One ofus has to be strong for the other. I am more hurt, to see you hurting

He played with my fingers and my ring..

Me: Are you going back to Cape Town?

Him: I'll go back on Monday.. How are you surviving with my Mother?

Me: She's a sweetheart I'm blessed to have her as my Mother in law, or my second

Mother because she treats me more like a daughter than someone who is sleeping with her Son

He laughed..

Me: I'm glad that you two are hitting it off, if you guys didn't get along with each other it was going to affect me

(Silence)

Him: Wanna give me a kiss?

I rose my head up and kissed him, his hand squeezed my butt..

Him: Maybe from hereon we can practice not getting pregnant by using any form of contraception that you comfortable with?

Me: Maybe

I wiped his lips..

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

Him: I'm here if you wanna talk always remember that Me: I

will

He kissed me again..

—

MONG

Z

Alana and I we have a twisted relationship. As twisted as it is but we madly in love with each other. Everything about her is amazing. I love her smile, her laugh, she's very beautiful, caring and loving. The body that she used as a vessel the lady had committed suicide following the death of her family in a fatal car accident. We haven't located her surviving relatives as yet...

I thought that Zeni and Armani were the only women that I truly loved, but I was wrong. I love Alana and whatever it is that is happening with her I hope we get over it soon so that we can have peace in our lives and also in our relationship.. Surprisingly my father approves of her, maybe that Angelic side of her is the reason why she's loved..

She got out of the pool and made her way to me, I wrapped the towel around her body.Me: Seems like you enjoyed swimming

Her: I did.. I'm really enjoying some of the things that you human beings doMe:

That's good to hear

Her: Now I feel a bit cold

Me: Maybe we should go inside and I'll run you a warm bathHer:

That's a good idea

We made our way back into the house, to my bedroom...Her:

Here.. Use this

She gave me the Oh so heavenly body washHer:

It smells really nice

She's also a very good influence on me. She makes sure that I drink my pills on time everyday, and she has also suggested therapy. Maybe that's why my Father approves of her, she is an Angel for real. Despite the demon spirit that's also attached to her..

I pulled her closer to me..

Me: I love you

She smiled..

Her: I love you too

I leaned over and kissed her..

—

TASH

I sat down and watched TV as Tebogo made us something to eat. As I was trying to find the right and entertaining channel, I bumped into this other show and Nomfundo was on.

Presenter: So what can we expect from this launch?

Her: I am launching our new airbrush foundation from "NN cosmetics". It is a refined poreless finish, weightless cover, and light diffusing. It also has SPF 25

I shook my head, Tebogo made her way in..

Tebogo: Here we go.. I made your favourite

(Silence)

She took the remote from me.. Her:

You shouldn't be watching her

Me: I just wanna know what Jojo saw in herHer:

Don't do that to yourself

Me: She is not his type. Jojo prefers smart women

Her: Maybe it's because they have 3 kids together, that's why

Me: They can get on with their lives while I'm left here to pick up the pieces of my broken heart and fix my messy life. I have a criminal record, I'm probably never going to get a job. My parents are disappointed in me, when I walk down the street. People are going to look at me like; "Here's that psycho". Jojo ruined my life.. I loved him and did everything for him, then Nomfundo fell pregnant and it was over for me

Her: Tash don't do this to yourself

Me: I don't even know why I'm out on Parole, it's useless

Her: Just promise me that you won't bother them anymore, don't do anything stupidMe: Let's

eat

Her: I'm serious.. If you violate your parole by doing something stupid, you going back in for good

Me: I know

—

XOLELW

A

Master doesn't usually work on Saturdays, today he went to the office to sort out a few things and then came back. He didn't come back alone though, he came back with RevNazo. I don't think I'll ever get used to this man, his presence will forever make me tremble.. Master took Sbahle from me..

Him: Nazo would like to have a word with you
I nodded repeatedly..

Nazo: How are you?

Me: I'm fine thanks and you?

Him: I'm good

We made our way to the living room.. Me:

Would you like something to drink?Him:

No thank you.. I won't be long

It seems like there's something important that he wants to discuss with me, and it made me more nervous..

Him: Uhm Master told me that you know a lady by the name of Armani?I
swallowed and looked at Master..

Me: Yes I do.. Armani was our Servant but we took her as family, she was like a big sister to me

Him: I see.. Is there a way that I could see her? I need to talk to herMe: I
think so.. I'll call her

Him: I would appreciate that a lot

Master: Is everything okay?

Him: No.. Everything is not okay

We kept our eyes on him waiting for him to explain further..Him:
my ears bleed from time to time

Master: Shouldn't you see someone about that?He
shook his head..

Him: It's actually not a medical condition

(Silence)

Him: The painful cries of her angel are the ones that my make my ears bleed, when a Guardian Angel cries like that it has usually carried over the pain and hurt of it's charge

Me: Armani has been through a lot in her life

Him: I need to see her as soon as possible before I become permanently deaf from thecries of her Guardian Angel.

SEASON FINALE

—

115

ARMANI

Addo did the most beautiful thing for me today. He went home to freshen up and then came back with dinner, the dinner was accompanied by two Jasmine candles. He set everything up on the small bed-side table and put the bench close to the table with the lights off and only the candles providing light whilst also dispensing a very nice smell inthe atmosphere. I had gone to bath and came back to this beautiful setting..

Him: I can't take you out for dinner, so I brought dinner to youMe:

Wow.. I.. How did they allow you to do all of this?

Him: My medical license came in handyI

walked in..

Me: It's very beautiful He

put the lighter down..

Him: Not entirely a comfortable seat but..

He put a pillow on the bench.. He stretched out his hand to me and I went to give himmine, he gently helped me to sit down and then he sat down next to me..

Me: I don't even know what to say.. This is beautifulHim: I

got your favourites..

Me: I can see that

I have never met such a gentleman before, I still can't believe that guys like him do exist.

Addo is good to me, he has been good to me from the start of our relationship until now. I keep on asking myself when is he going to turn against me? When is he going to show me his true colours? I mean that's what they do. They start out perfect until they show you who they truly are, and I wonder how many skeletons he has in his closet..

He put his hand on my chin and made me to look at him..Him:

Where is your mind at?

Me: Nowhere I'm just...

Him: Talk to me

I exhaled..

I cannot make him pay for the sins of my Exes..

Me: How about when I get discharged we focus on other things that can make us happy?He kissed me on my cheek and then my neck..

Him: Like?

I giggled because it was ticklish..

Me: Like planning our wedding and finally starting the orphanage that I've been talking about?

Him: I think that's good

Me: Then after that we can think of other alternatives of having a babyHim: I

think that's a good idea

I put both my hands on his cheeks..Me:

I am happy with you

Him: We have been seeing each other for a long time now you don't have a choice but to be happy with me

I laughed..

Him: Imagine if you not happy with me and we already engaged to be marriedMe: That would be bad

Him: Tell me something

Me: What is it?

Him: Your family doesn't want us to pay dowry

Me: They feel that they don't deserve because they never raised me. They say I went through what I went through and they were never there, it wouldn't be right for them to accept it knowing well that they never raised me and cared for me

Him: I understand.. I'm sorry that you had to go through what you went through, without your family being there

Me: It's okay.. It made me a strong person

Him: Indeed you are a strong person

He kissed me..

—

TASH

Me: Hey

Tebza: Hey

Me: Can I borrow your car?

Her: My car?

Me: Yes.. I wanna go out

Her: Where too, at this time of the night?

Me: To my Parents place

Her: To do what at this time?

Me: To talk to them

Her: About what?

Me: I see what you doing, don't do that

Her: We can drive there together

Me: Don't treat me like that

Her: I'm sorry but the last time you were this mad at someone you went and did something stupid, you kidnapped his baby

Me: I am not going to do something stupid, I'm just going to see my Parents. Jojo is not worth it, I would never do something to jeopardize my freedom I just wanna go home and see if I can't plead my case with my Parents

Her: Fine.. You can have my keys but please don't do anything stupid.. I don't want drama

Me: I won't

—

MONG

Z

I know for a fact that my relationship with Alana is not normal. As much as we trying to make everything seem normal but the truth of the matter is that nothing is normal. We have spent the whole day together and I could tell that something was bothering her, so after my Father and Monde had retired to their bedrooms I prepared some hot chocolate for us and decided to talk to her and see if we can't find a solution to this problem..

Her: All of this can just turn badly

Me: How so?

Her: If Dawn or Nazo finds me then it's done, especially Nazo

Me: What's special about him?

Her: He is a healer and he has the best warrior angel on his side.. Archangel Ramiel

Me: We were having this conversation while sitting on the couch, she had her legs on top of me..

Her: You can't fight that Angel off?

Me: Her: No.. Ramiel has the sword that can kill me, her sword is fashioned to kill anything

Me: This Ramiel of an Angel.. Is she/he the only powerful warrior angel?

Her: No.. Her and Michael are

Me: Can't they leave you alone?

Her: I no longer have my righteousness so I'm not considered pure anymore, worse I have the succubus in me so..

Me: I won't let anything happen to you, I will take this Nazo out before he can even get to you

She laughed..

Her: That's sweet but Ramiel will strike you dead before you can even get close to Nazo
Me: Nazo is human right?

She put her mug away..

Her: Promise me that you won't go after him?
Me:

I'm not going after him I was just asking

Her: Mongz listen this is not just another one of your situations that you can take care off, this is dangerous and if you act stupid you will die!

Me: I'm not going after him

Her: Promise?

Me: I promise

—

XOLELW

A

I watched Master putting Sbahle down to sleep, he balanced her bottle with a towel so she could continue drinking her formula milk.. He then made his way to me at the door, we never close the door so that we can hear her when she's crying. Master has really come a long way, I never thought that he could change his ways and attitude towards me..

Me: You missed the video call with Yoyo

Him: Unjani uYoyo? (how is she)

Me: She's doing well

We walked to the bedroom..

Me: I still can't believe you allowed for her to move down and live in Gauteng

Him: Sizothini Skat ngoba vele beng'na choice. Ngizothi ngiyala ung'shaye nge divorce (What can we say it's not like I had a choice.. I was going to say no and get served with divorce papers)

I chuckled..

Me: Don't say that

Him: Ahh phela wena awuncengi (You don't beg)I

put my arms around his neck...

Me: Thank you for changing and becoming a better man

Him: I didn't become a better man just that ngiyak'saba (I'm scared of you)Me: I'm

not that bad come on (laughing)

Him: I won't answer that, I don't wanna say anything that might make you leaveMe: Don't

be like that

Him: What can I say

He picked me up and balanced my butt on his hands, then he walked backwards until he made it to the bed and then sat down. I sat on top of him and he kissed me..

—

TASH

This was a very ratched and dangerous place to be. Though I was inside the car but I kept on checking if no unsavory character was approaching the car other than the one I'm supposed to meet.. I had called this guy earlier and we agreed to meeting up but now he is late and I'm not even sure if he's going to show up. I exhaled and took my phone, when I was about to call him I heard a knock next to my window.. I freaked out. I rolled the window down a little..

Me: Yes?

Him: It's me.. It's Ace

Me: You can get in

He walked around to the passenger's seat..Me:

What took you so long?

Him: I have the parcel.. Uyayifuna noma cha? (do you want it or not)Me:

Huh?

He took out the gun..

Him: I got it

Me: ohw the gun

Him: Are you sure about this?

Me: Yes I'm sure

I took out the money and handed it to him..Me:

I made it when I was in jail

Him: Add another 1000 and I'll do the whole job for youMe:

No I'm fine... I'll do it myself

I took the gun and checked it out, it had a police batch attached to it..Me:

Where did you get it? Did you kill a cop to get his gun?

Him: Ask no questions.. Just buy and Voetsek!!He

opened the door and got out..

Him: Nice doing business with youHe

closed the door..

—

MONG

Z

Alana had fallen asleep. I kissed her on her forehead and took the mugs to the kitchen. While in there I took out my phone and tried to call Matt but his number wasn't going through, his number hasn't been working for a while now. I have tried calling it several times without any luck.. This was frustrating because I had a job for him, now I'll have to find someone else to do it for me, I can't carry it out on my own because I no longer

want any problems with the law..116

TASH

That Sunday morning I had already woken up but I was just in bed up until 10:00am. The reason why I was still in bed was because of checking Nomfundo's Instagram and Twitter. I try to keep it all in, I try to act fine, I try to make it seem like I don't care but deep down it was killing me. It was killing me to see her living my dream like that. Have you genuinely loved someone so much that you would do anything for that person? I did everything for Jojo and not in a million years did I ever imagine that he was going to love and have a future with someone else, someone other than me. Nomfundo and I might have different dreams and aspirations in life career wise, but marriage wise she is living my dream. It should've been me there, and not her.. I must admit that I have never seen Jojo this happy, he looked very happy with her. More happy than he ever was with me. With my heavy heart I forced myself to get out of bed and prepare for the day ahead. I don't even know where I was going to find a job let alone where to start looking for one, my reputation has been tainted very bad all in the name of "Love".. I don't even think that it will get better with time..

—

ARMAN

I

I really enjoyed spending time yesterday with Addo. He stayed over up until I fell asleep. With everything that's happened, I'm grateful that he came into my life because now I am able to wake up with smile on my face than a broken heart..

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Come in

I don't know if my eyes were deceiving me or what but.. The gentleman that walked in, he looked very familiar. Not only that but somehow even the atmosphere changed when he made his way in, I could feel his presence. It wasn't heavy, it was just peacefully intimidating..

Him: Good morning

Me: Morning

I looked at him once more trying to figure out where I knew him from..

Him: Armani?

I nodded..

Him: It's good to finally meet you

He extended his hand to me for a handshake, the moment we shook hands I felt the touch gently extending to my soul. I don't really know how to explain the feeling, but it was more like a soothing ailment to my wounded heart and soul..

Him: Trust me, the feeling is mutual

Me: What was that? The feeling I felt? I've never felt it before

Him: I am a healer, my warm touch extends to the core place that causes you pain He looked at the bench..

Him: May I?

Me: Yes

He sat down..

Him: I am Nazo.. Rev Nazo Buthelezi

Now it came back to me, I have seen him on Tv. Xolelwa used to watch him almost every day, she was obsessed with him..

Him: As I've said before I am a spiritual healer

A warm feeling crossed my chest and for some reason, tears flooded my eyes... Him: I

know.. I felt your pain through your Angel

I wiped my tears..

Him: I know what you thinking and those tears say a lot. You confused, you don't know why such and such happened to you. You thought that heaven was deaf to your cries, you ended up accepting a fate that wasn't yours. You purposed deep down that you destined for misery, you accepted a destiny that wasn't created for you. Everything that happened in your life, everything that you've been through. It came and went but you still here.. The Bible says in the book of Matthew 11 verse 28-30:

"Come to me, all you who are struggling hard and carrying heavy loads, and I will give

you rest. Put on my yoke, and learn from me. I'm gentle and humble. And you will find rest for yourselves. My yoke is easy to bear, and my burden is light." You are a living proof that God won't give you more than you can handle. Everything that you have been through, was weighed by him before it was thrown at you and no matter what happened you are still here to show his grace upon your life and the strength you possess deep inside of you. God works in mysterious ways, he works in ways that we can never understand that's why he is God. If God brings you to it, he will bring you through it. And he has definitely brought you through it.. My being here is heaven saying to you "We are sorry for all the times when pain brought you down and you thought God was blind to see how you were breaking", heaven honoured you this morning to let you know that everything you went through God wasn't blind to your pain and tears. He saw what you were going through and he knew that you were going to make it. You deserve happiness, you deserve love, and you deserve peace. Your new life, your new love is God restoring all that you have lost...

He held my hand..

Him: And one more thing, you will see God's grace upon your life one more time. By this time next year, you will be mothering your second child. All these experiences that you've been through, look back at them and see how much you have conquered.

I needed to hear that, I needed to hear that very much..

Him: You can close your eyes and allow me to pray for you, lift up this curse disguised as "Miscarriage" in your life

I closed my eyes..

—

ALAN

A

I looked around in the corridor and it was quiet. I closed the door and locked it, then I made my way to the balcony. Mongz was not around, he had gone golfing with his Father. His little Brother was probably in his room playing games as always. I locked the sliding door and waited until I saw Uri flying over..

I looked around if no other angels were following..Me:

Hey

Uri stood in front of me and looked at me..

Uri: Niyə mənə zəng etdiniz? (Why did you call me)Me: Biz

ailəniz (We are family)

Uri: Sən bir düşmənisən (you're an enemy)

Me: Əgər belədirsə, onda niyə çağırdığım zaman gəldin? (If so, then why did you come when I called)

(Silence)

Me: Look Uri I am in a very difficult situation, I need to know what my fate isUri:

Nazo is in town

My eyes widened..

Me: For me?

Uri: He came to heal someone but he might also be here for youMe: It

won't work.. I have found love

Uri: You are a succubus.. You still have evil in you, Love doesn't have evil.. You are one with a succubus therefore you no longer belong to us

Me: Uri please.. You need to help me, you need to help stop Ramiel.. It's me, it's Helena

Uri: You are no longer one of us, you are no longer pure. Worse, you have fallen for a human being.. Orders have been carried out, you escaped Purgatory and Ramiel will strike you dead... Goodbye Helena

Me: Uri wait

Uri: It's for the best.. Don't fight it!

–

MONG

Z

Dad: You seem happy with Alana

Me: I am

Dad: I like her.. She is a good influence on you, better than what Armani wasMe: She

makes me a better person

Dad: How is your company holding up?

Me: I need you to do me a favour

Dad: What favour?

Me: Alana is in trouble, someone is after her

Him: What trouble?

Me: It's a crazy ex boyfriend

Him: Why is he after her?

Me: You know how it is.. Sometimes breakups don't go well, he doesn't want to accept that it's over between them so he is going after her

Him: Mongezi you are doing very well, I don't want you getting into trouble again Me:

Please I just want him tracked down so that I can talk to him

He exhaled...

Me: Please.. I love this girl

Him: Fine.. I'll see what I can do, but I'm not promising Me:

Thank you

—

JOJO

Me: Where is everyone?

Lonwabo: They went to church

Me: You didn't go?

Him: No...I didn't feel like going

My phone rang started ringing.. I answered Me:

Hello?

It was silent..

Me: Hello??

Voice: Jojo it's me.. It's Tash

I looked at Lonwabo and moved a bit far from him..Me:

What do you want?

Her: I need to talk to you

Me: Listen here.. Don't ever call me okay? Stay away from me and my family!!Her:

Jojo wait..

I hung up..

Tash is slowly but surely becoming a thorn in our lives again, even behind bars she's an nuisance..

–

UR

I

Ramiel: Niyə məni bir dağın üstünə çağırdın? (Why did you call me here on top of a mountain)

Me: Mən tapdım Helena (I found Helena)Ramiel:

Harada? (Where)

I touched her shoulder so see where Helena is through me..Me:

Daha bir şey var (There's one more thing)

Her: Danışmaq (Speak)

Me: O, insana pisliliyi köçürdü. İnsan şafalı öldürmək istəyir (She has transferred evil to the human being. The human being wants to kill the healer)

Her: Sevgi öldürmür (Love does not kill)

Me: Sevgi və nifrət bir-birinə yanaşı mövcud ola bilməz (Love and hate cannot exist along side each other)

Her: Şəfaətçini hər zaman qoruyub saxlayacağam (I am to guard and protect our healer against evil at all times)

Me: İnsanın pisliyindən başqa bir şey yoxdur. Sən bir döyüşçü Mələksən, pislilyə qarşı mübarizə və aradan qaldırmaq üçün yaradılmışsan. Siz həm Helena, həm də İnsanı aradan qaldırmaq məcburiyyətində qalacaqsınız (The human being possesses nothingbut evil. You are a warrior Angel, you were created to fight and eliminate evil. You willhave to eliminate both Helena and the Human being)

I put my hand on her shoulder again..

Her: Cox yaxsi (very well).

117

JOJO

When Nomfundo got back from church she dropped off the girls at my Dad's place. Now she was lazy to go and get them so she asked me to fetch them. My Dad has done well for himself so far, he is a perfect example that no matter what happens do not give up on your dreams..

Me: I hope the girls didn't give you any trouble

Him: No they didn't, they spent most of their time playing with Portia's makeup

Portia is his girlfriend, I'm not sure if their relationship is serious or what but she been around for a while now..

Him: How is everything going with you?

Me: Everything is going well, just very busy at work Him:

How is Lonwabo?

Me: He is good.. Speaking of Lonwabo I need you to do me a favour Him:

What is it?

Me: He has to go to the doctor tomorrow, for circumcision. His appointment is at 10:00am, I won't make it.. That's only if you won't be busy

Him: No it's fine I'll do it.. I'll use that time to bond with him Me:

Thank you

Him: I'll get the girls for you

–

NOMFUND

O

Jojo had gone to fetch the girls and Lonwabo was around doing his own thing and shutting out the whole world, and everyone. It worries me a lot that he doesn't like the company of others, he is a loner.

I opened the freezer to take out some chicken breasts as I was about to prepare dinner, I had asked Lonwabo to come and help me. I'm going to use this time to see if he is okay and how he is holding up.. When I got back up again, I felt a hand covering my mouth. My heart almost stopped beating..

Voice: Shhhhhhhh

I didn't try to move nor fight the person off..

Voice: I'm going to remove my hand, you better not scream

I nodded repeatedly. The hand was removed from my mouth and I turned around, it was Tash. She was wearing all black. Black track pants, black Sneakers, and a black hoodie..

I dropped the pack of chicken breasts that I was holding..Me: What are you doing here?

Her: I need to talk to you

Me: How did you even get in?

Her: I know the code.. I used to date the owner of this house remember? I pushed her off a little..

Me: I'm calling the cops

Her: Nomfundo wait!

I walked over to get my phone from the counter when I felt her grabbing me by my hair..Her: I don't wanna hurt you just listen to me!!

I stepped on her foot repeatedly and she let go of me, I quickly grabbed my phone and the knife..

Me: I don't wanna hear anything from you, you a psychopath!!

I pointed the knife at her and unlocked my phone, then I called Jojo..Me:

Stand right there.. Don't move

Jojo: Hello?

Me: Tash is in our house I need you to come back and call the-She took out a gun and aimed it at me..

Her: You shouldn't have done that.. I tried reasoning with youI dropped my phone and the knife on the floor..

Me: Exactly what do you want from me? What do you want from us?Her: You took everything from me

Me: What are you talking about?

Her: You are liv-

Lonwabo disturbed us..

Lonwabo: Ma?

Me: Nwabo go back to your room

Lonwabo: What's going on?

Me: I said go back to your room!

Tash: He is all grown now

I looked at her as her eyes were fixed on my Son...Tash: Hi

Lonwabo didn't say anything.. She lowered the gun..Tash:

Sorry about that.. I didn't mean too, it's..

My phone started ringing.. We both looked at it..

Tash: Don't move

Me: Tash it's over.. I'm sure the cops are on their way

Tash: Lonwabo go to your room

He looked at me and I nodded.. He left us there and went to his room..Me: It's

over Tash I'm sure the cops are on their way

She nodded..

Her: You right.. It is over, but it's over for youShe

pulled the trigger..

–

REV NAZO

Uri and Ramiel were being sneaky for my liking. I know that when they act like this, something is not right. I walked over to the balcony and looked at them, I was going to stay over at the hotel and leave tomorrow morning.. Since Ramiel had to handle the Helena issue tonight..

Me: What is going on?

Being in the presence of two big Angels made me look and feel very small..

Ramiel: I am ready to go and carry out my task at hand, Uri will stay with you for the time being and make sure that you are protected

Me: Is that all?

Ramiel: There's new developments

Me: What developments?

Ramiel: The human being that is involved with Helena, he is planning to kill youUri:

Ramiel will carry out the task for both Helena and the human being

Me: No..

They both looked at me..

Me: You're not going to kill a human being

Uri: The human being is evil

Ramiel: It's my duty to keep you safe at all times

Me: There's no human being that's going to be killed

Uri: He hardly has a conscience, he has no regard for human life

Me: So was Saul before he became St Paul the Apostle, and so was I.. Before I became a healer

Ramiel: This is different

Me: How so? No matter what he has done and no matter what he intends to do. We cannot kill a human life that we never created, that's not who we are. The same God who created you and me is the same God who created him, and only the one who created him has the right to judge him

Uri: He is planning to have you killed

Me: If I'm meant to die then I will, if not then God won't allow it

I looked at Ramiel..

Me: Go do what you have to do, but don't harm the human being
She slightly bowed..

Uri: Cennet səninlə olsun (Heaven be with you) Ramiel

took off..

Me: Well then Uri I think that leaves you and I to go in and have coffee while we discuss something

Uri: I don't drink coffee

Me: I know.. I was just trying to be nice
We went back inside..

Uri: You are nice, it's in your nature. You don't have to offer me coffee to show that you're nice

Me: Thank you..

I opened my laptop..

Uri: Thank you for telling you the truth?

I shook my head..

Me: Just come and look at this.. Dawn sent me this earlier today since I'll be doing an exorcism with him next week, I'm unfamiliar with this type of demon. What can you tell me about it?

—

JOJO

When Nomfundo told me that Tash is at the house, I got in my car and drove back home like a maniac. Something just didn't make sense, I thought she was still in jail.. While driving back home I tried calling Nomfundo several times but she wasn't picking up, I don't think I've ever been this scared in my life before. I left the girls with my Dad, I didn't wanna take them with and possibly put their lives in danger. My biggest worry right now was Nomfundo and Lonwabo...

I got to my house and cops were already present with an Ambulance also parked inside, I had called them right after Nomfundo informed me about Tash being at the house.. I got out of my car and quickly made my way to the house, the cops stopped me from entering..

Me: It's my house

Officer: You can't go in

Me: I need to go in.. My Son and my wife are in there

He allowed me to go in and I was welcome by a gruesome scene. There was a lot of blood on the kitchen floor and a dead body that they covered with a plastic..

Me: No.. No.. No..

Another officer stopped me from going to the dead body..Me:

Where is my wife and my son?

Officer: I'm going to need you to step backMe:

Where is my wife and my Son?

Lonwabo: Dad!!

He made his way to me with a mini blanket around his shoulder, he was with some paramedic. I was relieved to see him okay, I gave him a hug..

Me: Are you okay?

Him: I'm okay

I looked at the dead body one last time..

Me: Where is my wife? And where is Tash? Who is laying there?I let go of Lonwabo and stepped closer..

Officer: Sir

Me: I need to see who it is

He allowed me to step closer. I went and crouched next to the body, I lowered the plastic and I believed that right there my eyes were deceiving me..

—

TASH

I looked around until I spotted some officer who was busy with some documents. Since he wasn't attending to anyone I made my way to him..

Me: Good evening

Him: Join the queue Mam'

I looked at the Queue and then looked at him again..Me: I

don't wanna join the Queue

Him: Mam' you need to join the Queue just like everyone elseMe:

You don't understand

Him: What don't I understand?

Me: I am here to hand myself in.. I have killed someoneI

took out my gun and put it on the counter..

118

ARMANI

I couldn't wait to be discharged tomorrow and go back home to plan my wedding. Ever

since that visit from Rev Buthelezi, I felt somehow lighter. Like a heavy burden was lifted off my shoulders. That heaviness and pain that I carried deep inside felt lighter..

Addo suggested that we go outside and get some fresh air. It was a bit cold but I enjoyed gazing at the stars, they looked so beautiful at night. We were sitting on some bench, I was in his arms and he was squeezing me tight making sure that I was warm..Addo is very much into science, he doesn't believe in what I believe in. Telling him about Rev Buthelezi's visit, he will only brush it off and not take me seriously. So I won't tell him until the miracle of me having a baby comes true

Me: I can't wait to go home tomorrow

Him: And guess what?

Me: What?

Him: I am no longer going back to Cape Town, my friend will be coming back tomorrow and he will go back to work on Tuesday

I looked at him..

Me: That's good to hear.. At least you won't be going anymore, then I won't have to miss you

Him: I guess not

He kissed me and my phone started ringing..Me:

Let me get that

It was Xolelwa..

Me: Hey Xoks

Her: Hey Armani

Me: How are you?

Her: Not good

Me: What's wrong?

Her: It's Nomfundo

Me: Don't tell me they having another baby

Her: No...

Me: okay you sound a bit down.. What's wrong?Her:

Nomfundo is no more

Me: What do you mean she is no more?

Her: She got shot by Tash

Me: What?

Her: We still can't believe it but it's true

Me: Wasn't Tash in jail?

Her: She was out on Parole

Me: my goodness!! How is Jojo holding up?

Her: He is not doing good

Me: I can't believe this.. It doesn't feel real

Her: I got a call too, when the paramedics got there.. The was no longer any signs of lifeMe: This is very heartbreaking

Her: It is.. Anyway I wanted to tell you that

Me: Thank you for informing me

Her: Bye

Me: Bye

—

NONTSIKELELE

O

I took the chamomile tea to him..

Me: Here you go baby

He didn't say anything. I sat next to him..

Him: It's all my fault, I should have never played Tash and Fufu against each other

I shook my head no..

Me: It's not your fault.. You can't hold yourself responsible for another person's actions
Him: What am I even going to tell the twins?

I put my hand on his shoulder.. Me:

I'm here.. I'll explain it to them

Jojo and the kids will be staying here at my place for a while since his house is a crimescene.. I had called Nomfundo's Parents to let them know about what happened, her father is not taking this very well. He is blaming Jojo and he wants his Daughter to be buried at home. Nomfundo died as a Ndarha, therefore culturally we should bury her..

Him: My Son was there when everything happened, how is Lonwabo going to get through this

Me: he will have to start counseling after Nomfundo's funeral

It hurt me so much to see my Son hurting and knowing that I can't do anything about it. Life is indeed unpredictable, This was unexpected..

—

TASH

Detective: The tape recorder will be recording everything that you say
Me: I understand

We were in the interrogation room..

Detective: Take me through what happened today

Me: I tried contacting both Nomfundo and Jojo, but they both wouldn't give me a chance
Detective:

Why did you try to contact them?

Me: I just wanted to talk to Jojo

Him: Why did you wanna talk to him?

Me: I needed to know why he did what he did to me, I needed to know where I went wrong, I needed to get closure from this and I wanted Nomfundo to know how deeply sorry I was for kidnapping her son

Him: Take me through what happened today, you broke into their place?

Me: No Sir I didn't.. It turned out that Jojo didn't change his code, he was still using the old one that's how I was able to get in

Him: And then what happened?

Me: Nomfundo was at the kitchen taking something out from the freezer and I snuck upon her. All I wanted was for us to talk but she got very angry when she realized it was me and she wanted to call the cops. I was going to get arrested for trespassing and I couldn't have that because I was out on Parole. If I go back to jail it had to be for something real so I shot her

Him: How many times did you shoot her? Me:

4 or 5 times

Him: Do you even have any regrets about what you did? Me:

No Sir I don't.. I don't have any regrets

—

MONG

Z

My Dad ended up not agreeing to help me deal with Nazo. He told me that he is not going to compromise his position for something like this, he told me that the best that can be done in this situation is to get a restraining order. Since he won't be helping me, I'll have to take matters into my own hands I won't let any harm come to Alana.

It was just me and her in the house, my Dad and Monde were invited over for dinner by one of the ministers..

Me: I'll play and you sing

Her: Okay

We spend most of our time playing the piano and singing, Alana has a beautiful voice. She was an Angel after all so I am not surprised

I started playing the piano, and before Alana could sing the sliding door opened. What I saw making its way in is something that will never get me back my sanity.. It was a very big Angel. It was something that I have never seen before..

Alana: Ramiel

The Angel got it's sword out, the sword was very bright that it almost blinded me. I got up from the chair..

Alana: Mongz get out of here

Me: I'm not going anywhere

Her: This is not a game

Me: I don't care

The Angel looked very different from what I thought..

Me: She doesn't look like a normal Angel, you know the one that we are shown on TV Alana: She is a warrior Angel.. Warrior Angels look a bit different

Ramiel: Don't fight it

Her voice almost trembled the whole room..

Alana: I wasn't planning on doing that, so long you let him go Me:

Let me go? I am not going anywhere!

I looked at the Angel..

Me: Let's get one thing straight.. If you hurt her, I'm going to kill the Reverend Alana:

Mongz!

Me: I mean it!

Ramiel: Just because I can't kill you, it doesn't mean that I can't hurt you

She held up her hand against me, when she moved it. I levitated, and then she threw me against the wall

Alana: Noooooo!!!

The Angel made her way to Alana, and at that instant I saw Alana changing into something I have never seen before..

Ramiel: The succubus!

She looked a bit scary..

Alana somehow got the sword from the Angel's grip and it fell on the ground. She released a fire ball at the Angel, the Angel levitated and the fireball went straight to the wall. They both looked at the sword, the Angel held her hand against Alana and flew her across the room.. The Angel moved to get her sword..

Alana: Görünməyənləri görək, görək!!

Out of nowhere a two headed big cobra snake appeared right next to the sword. The Angel stopped and looked at it. It dispensed poison straight from it's mouth to the Angel but a ball of energy formed and circled the angel, the poison couldn't penetrate..

Ramiel: Sword!!

The sword rose up in the air on its own and struck the snake, the snake started burning..Alana:

Nooo!!

As Alana got up to make her way to the snake, the sword moved to her direction meeting her halfway. It went through her chest, you could literally see it protruding from the other side too

Alana: Ahhhhhhh!!

Me: Nooo!!

I got up and ran to her but the angel stood in my way, I couldn't pass through..

Me: You have just made the biggest mistake of your life.. I will be going after the Reverend

Her: No you won't

She got her hand inside my head, I don't know how she penetrated it through but she did. And it was the most painful thing I have ever experienced. The pain was in a form of an aching headache, one that pain killers wouldn't get rid off..

Angel: Bütün yaddaşınızı sildim

I sank down to the floor with her hand still inside my head.. She got her hand out
Her: Good night

It was like she fried my brain or something..

All I remember seeing after my blackout was Alana on the floor with the sword still

piercing through her

119

PRESENT

DAYLOLITHA

Xolelwa: Where do you keep your salad bowls?Me:

bottom cupboard

Her: Thank you

Me: You don't have to do it, I can do it

Her: You very sweet but it's okay I got it. You have done a lot for us alreadyMe: You

welcome

Her phone beeped, she checked it..

Her: It's Armani again, she's really freaking out about tomorrow

Me: I can imagine.. I would also freak out if I was getting married tomorrow, just a fewhours left

Her: You know Armani's life just turned around for the better when we all least expected.She is truly blessed

Me: And her soon to be husband is very yummy

Her: You also noticed? I thought I was the only one who noticed I just didn't wanna sayanything because I'm married. Like where was he before I got married

I laughed..

Me: He is truly a snack

Her: Are you going to manage with the kids tonight?

Me: I'll be fine it's only Sbahle because Yonela is going to visit her cousinsHer: I'll

drop her off later on when I leave

Me: Are your dresses ready?

Her: The last time I heard.. Yes, I still can't believe she asked me to be her one of her bride's maids

Me: You and her were pretty close I heard, you were like sisters

Her: Ya that's true.. We have been through the most together, she was always there for me when I needed someone

Me: She sounds like a very nice person

Her: That she is.. She is very nice

–

ISAAC NDARHA

Khanya: Grandpa I can't find my other sock

Khanyi: Grandpa I need you to comb my hair and tie it into a bun I put the pot down..

Me: The Oats will get cold, can't we eat first and we will do everything later on?

Khanya: I can't walk around with only one sock

Me: Okay where is Lonwabo?

Khanya: He is busy with his Playstation

Me: Tell Lonwabo to help you look for your other sock Khanya:

Okay

Khanyi: What about me Grandpa?

Me: Okay let's see

I picked her up and placed her on the counter.. She gave me the comb Me: Let's see

Her: Maybe you should call Dad and ask him how it's done

Things are still a bit hard for Jojo and the kids since the passing of Nomfundo. I had offered to take Lonwabo and his Mom offered to take the girls but Jojo refused. He wants to raise all his kids under one roof, says the kids are the only people who make

him feel close to Nomfundo. I applaud him for taking responsibility, it's not easy for him to be a single Parent but he is really trying. Lonwabo has been attending therapy following his Mother's passing and I can safely say that he is doing pretty well so far.

The kids usually visit me or Nontsikelelo on weekends, just to relieve Jojo a bit of the responsibility..

—

JOJO

I read the epitaph..

"In the loving memory of Prudence Nomfundo Ndarha. A Wife, Mother, Daughter, and Sister. May your soul continue to rest in peace". I put the flowers down..

It has been almost a year now since she's been gone and it doesn't get better, the pain doesn't get better. The kids always ask about her and they don't understand why she left them and went to heaven, they also ask me if she's ever going to come back. I have a video of her funeral and I watch it from time to time, just so I can remind myself that she's never coming back..

Me: It's all my fault. You being here is my fault. I should have never played you against Tash, I should have made my decision on who I want to be with from the start. If I did, then you wouldn't be here today. I don't think that I'll ever forgive myself, Now you won't get a chance to be there and see your kids grow up. All because I was a confused man, I couldn't even decide whom I wanted to be with. I should be the one lying here today, not you. You didn't deserve to die like that, it was too soon.. I'm sorry

—

TASH

I looked at the camera..

Camera man: We are back on (whispering)

Presenter: We are back and talking to Nataschi Gobbler the woman who first kidnapped her ex boyfriend's son, then later on killed his wife. She was initially serving 15 years for the kidnapping and was released on Parole when she murdered her ex boyfriend's wife.. Before we went to the ad break, she was telling us about her relationship with her ex boyfriend and now we will move on and finally hear her reason on why she killed the wife..

She looked at Me..

Her: Thank you again for talking to us and allowing us to interview youMe:

You welcome

Her: I believe that now you serving a life sentence?Me: Yes

I am

Her: How do you feel about that?

Me: I don't know.. I mean I did the crime so I have to face the consequencesHer: If you could go back to that day, would you change anything?

Me: No Mam' I wouldn't change anything

Her: Do you have any remorse for what you did?

Me: No I don't.. I am only sorry that those kids will have to grow up without a Mother,that's the only thing that I am sorry for

Her: What drove you to pull that trigger more than once?I

shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I don't know.. I think seeing her again made me angry and it broke me to know that she married the man that I loved, a man that broke my heart into a million pieces. She doesn't know what me and Jojo had been through, nor what I did for him. All she did was to just give him a baby and she thought that now she could control him.. I knew myrelationship was doomed the minute I found out that Nomfundo was pregnant

Her: So you blaming her for your failed relationship?

Me: No I'm not.. All I wanted was to talk to both of them but they kept on shutting meout. Mostly I wanted to talk to Jojo, I wanted closure so that I could try and move on

Her: If Jojo was there.. Would you perhaps have shot him instead of his wife?Me: No

Mam' I would've still shot her

Her: Why?

Me: Because I wanted to hurt him, I knew that killing Nomfundo it was going to hurt himfor the rest of his life and it did, I wanted him to feel the exact pain that I felt

Her: Do you ever think that it was now an obsession?

Me: I just loved him a lot, I doubt that it was an obsession.. I was a woman scorned,that's all it was

–

ARMAN

I

Tomorrow it's a very big day for Addo and I. We getting married. We were supposed to have gotten married a while back but we had to postpone the wedding because we found out that I was pregnant, Addo didn't want me to stress much in my first trimester to a point where I would've miscarried. Especially considering that my womb was labeled "unfit" to carry a baby full term. I am now 6 months pregnant, I still can't believe that we got here. I usually miscarry when I am one month pregnant, my previous pregnancies never surpassed a month. I have been to the Dr several times, she told me that the baby is growing well in my womb and that I shouldn't stress myself that much there's nothing wrong with my pregnancy.. We not going to have a big wedding, we just going to have a small private ceremony between family and close friends. I had asked Xolelwa and my friend Khethi to be my bride's maids..

Communication between my Grandmother and my mother in law is a bit difficult, seeing that my Grandmother doesn't know English that well and Addo's mom doesn't know how to speak Vernac. I try to translate where I can

Khethi gave me the fruit salad..

Me: Thank you

Her: did you have anything concrete to eat this morning? Me: I

had a bowl of cereal

Her: Serious?

Me: I've been cautious about what I eat, the last thing I want is not fit in my dress tomorrow. Already I am big

She shook her head..

Me: And I'm also very nervous about tomorrow so I don't have much appetite

Her: Akusenani ke as long as you have eaten something.. Vele why didn't you wait until you had given birth to get married?

Me: I didn't wanna wait anymore, I want to be Mrs Addo already

Her: I'm really happy for you my friend, I'm even jealous he is very fine.. Does he have a Brother or a Cousin?

Me: Don't start Khethi

Her: Serious yazi.. Look at you guys, you guys have been together for a long time now Me: Ya..

It's my longest relationship

(Silence)

She started laughing..

Me: What?

Her: Just to think a few years back you were hiding at my toilet running away from your kidnapper. I remember how scared you were, all those black eyes you had

She shook her head..

Her: I accompanied you to the taxi rank, when you got in that taxi I didn't even know if you were going to make it but I prayed deep down that you made it.. And look at you now

Me: I am even getting emotional right now.. If someone had told me then that my life would be different some day, I probably would've laughed. I never thought I was going to make it, and I still don't know how I wasn't suicidal

Her: I'm glad that you didn't kill yourself or else we wouldn't be here right now Me:

Very true

—

MONG

Z

Me: Now I was 18 out there on the block

Selling drugs.. With a gun at my waist

and for people I had no love. See the streets was my home, And family and friends were all gone, Had no one to trust and deep inside I was all alone.. A deal went bad one day and it was enough to pause me, I was shot four times and before I knew it I was on my

knees

Blood pushing out my body, My heart's beating faster, Don't know what I'm gonna do

I don't think I'm gonna last.. Then I began to flash back on the things I done in my past Then I heard a small voice that said to me,

"I'll give you peace if you believe." I acc-

I heard someone clapping their hands, I turned back and it was Ramiel.. Her:

That was good Mongz

Me: It's a song that I've heard a few days back, I can't get it out of my mind Her: You can go back and sit down

I went to sit down on the chair..

Her: I'm impressed.. You doing very well

Me: I still can't remember who I am, or who I was

Her: You see that doesn't matter anymore, you are not your past Me:

But still..

Her: Remember I told you that you very fortunate. You were involved in an incident that could've potentially taken your life, but God saved you. Not everyone can get a second chance, you were blessed to get a second chance and that's why you must use it wisely

We heard a knock at the door..

Ramiel: Come in

The door opened and my Father walked in..

Ramiel: The session is over?

Dad: I believe so.. I have to be somewhere but I wanna drop him off at home first Ramiel: Of

course

He walked up to us and out his hand on my shoulder.. Him: Are

you ready to go Son?

Me: I think so

Dad: Can I ask you something?

Ramiel: Go ahead Sir

Dad: I did a little research on you and there's no record of a Psychologist by the name of "Ramiel" it's almost as if like you don't exist. Don't get me wrong I appreciate what you doing for my son but.. Who are you?

Ramiel: Sometimes you can have an Angel on earth and not even realize it, I am glad that the therapy sessions are working well for your son.. He has come too far, and I believe that now he is going to be a better person

Dad: If you say so.. What about his memory?

Ramiel: I read his medical report and unfortunately the Amnesia is permanent but look on the bright side, new memories can be created.. Better memories

Dad: Maybe the Amnesia is a blessing in disguise

Ramiel: My point exactly Sir

Dad: Let's get going Son, I guess he will see you next week Ramiel:

Very well

I got up..

Me: See you next week Monday doc

Ramiel: Monday it is

We walked out..

Me: Can we pass by at the church around the corner Him:

Why?

Me: I wanna say my prayers He

stopped and looked at me.. Him:

Since when do you pray?

Me: It's been a while now everytime after therapy Ramiel takes me to the church so I

can pray

Him: What else have you been doing that I don't know of? Me:

She takes me to church every Sunday and Tuesday night Him: That's

a new development

Me: It's not bad.. It's a very peaceful environment Him:

I see, we will pass by at the church

Me: Thank you

Him: Your new relationship with your therapist is a concern Me:

Why?

Him: Well you always involve yourself with weird characters Me:

She's my therapist and I don't see her that way

Him: That's good to know.

120

JOJO

[DAY OF ARMANI'S WEDDING]

I woke up with the intentions of going to Armani's wedding but I found myself driving straight to the studio. I don't think that I'm emotionally ready to be attending such a ceremony, it will definitely date my mind back to my own wedding and I didn't want to think of that right now. Not when my wife is gone. I carry Nomfundo's ring with me all the time, I had put it in my chain and it's always around my neck. That ring will forever remind me of the special moments that me and her once shared together. My love for her will always be there.. The kids attended the wedding with my Parents, I had sent Armani a text message apologizing I'll get them a present sometime. I know that she will understand..

I heard someone knocking at my office.. Me:

Come in

It was one of my crew members Jakes..

Him: It's good to know that I'm not the only one who is working on a SaturdayMe: Ya I

didn't wanna sit at home and think a lot

Him: I get what you saying.. Wanna grab a bite?Me:

Yeah sure.. Why not

Him: Do you know that The Servant's Daughter has been nominated for a SAFTA Award?Me:

Really?

Him: People are loving us man, I have no doubt that we going to take it this yearMe: I am

looking forward to it

I took my wallet and car keys..

Him: Jojo

I looked at him..

Him: You will never forget but it does get better with timeMe:

Thanks Man

Jakes lost his wife and his child in a car accident a few years ago, his pain might be worse than mine because he lost his entire family but he does understand exactly how I feel..

Him: You should come with me to the group therapy that I attend on Saturdays, it's a group of man who share the same pain. If it wasn't for the group therapy I don't think I would've made it

Me: I'll definitely consider that, thank you

Him: You welcome

Life has taught me a great lesson and even though it's one painful lesson but I am grateful that it gave me a chance to love someone, love someone truthfully. It's been a journey, and I am proud of the man that I have become from what I used to be. My kids are my greatest motivation in life, they the reason why I'll decide to wake up everyday and live life, even though life wasn't so kind to me. I'm also thankful that even though my girls have lost their Mother but there's females in my family and they gonna help groom them, so that they will become the women that Nomfundo wanted them to be in the

future. No matter what happens, I will always choose to live because of them..

—

TASH

Me: I want you to cut off all my hair, I want to be bald. It's a sign of a fresh startHer:

Welcome back my chommie

Me: Awe my chommie

I lie awake most nights thinking about what I have done and I still don't find any remorse. Killing Nomfundo gave me peace, I no longer bleed deep inside knowing that Jojo is now bleeding more than me. I know that most people will say that I'm evil and I don't care! Because no one will ever understand how much those two people have hurt me. Especially Jojo, after everything that I've done for him. He should have never stopped me that time when I wanted to leave, he should've let me go and Nomfundo's life could've been prevented. I know that I'm going to spend the rest of my life behind bars, that doesn't really worry me. After all I committed the crime, now I have to face the consequences..

—

MONG

Z

Monde: You don't remember Mom's grave?I

glanced down at the tombstone..

Me: No.. I don't

Monde: I don't remember how she died and I don't remember the funeral, Dad said I was very young when Mom died. He said you were the one who was affected the most, that's why you had to live on pills

Me: I don't remember any of thatHe

held my hand..

Him: I am happy that you don't remember any of that, if you don't remember then you won't do bad things anymore and always be locked away with crazy people

I looked at him and I could feel a little that my Brother and I we had a connection, a deep one for that matter..

Me: I would like you to help me familiarise myself with every good thing that you and Iever did together

Him: I will remind you

Our Father was supposed to be here with us but he had to be somewhere else, so he had a driver come drop us off here. It was actually Monde's idea that we should come and visit our Mother's grave

Me: We are very blessed do you know that?

Monde: In what way?

Me: Our Father is the president of this country, we have everything that we need and I'm sure that even when we were growing up we were never in need. Mom was not there but Dad was always there, right?

He nodded..

Me: I bet there's other boys out there who wish to have a father in their lives.. We're blessed to still have ours. Such blessings we should never take for granted, we going to make it a routine to wake up every morning and name everything that we grateful for.. Deal?

Him: Deal

Me: We will have to do it together because I don't remember most of them
Him: I'll remind you

I got to realize that everything happens for a reason. Maybe there's a reason why I lost my memory, and along the way I had come to learn that I come from a very good family. My Father is a very loving Parent, I have my own company, we are financially blessed and I don't think I'll ever take life for granted as long as I live. From hereon, I will always be grateful for everything and I will make sure that since I have been given a second chance in life, I won't waste it..

—

RAMIE

L

Muriel: Thank you

We both stood at a far distance watching Mongz and his Brother..

Me: I believe that my work here is done

Muriel: Underneath it all.. He was a good kid, thank you for saving him from the succubus that was going to take him to the grave but most of all thank you for saving him from himself

Me: You still have a lot of work to do, I erased all his memory. His life must always be filled with good from now on so that hell can continue to be disappointed

Muriel: Very well.. As his guardian angel I'll make sure that I guide him well Me: I

believe you will

Muriel: Thank you again

Me: You and the healer believed in him, all I did was act on what you two believed in Muriel: I

always look forward to such moments, when a charge changes for the better Me: Me too

—

ARMAN

I

Sometimes in life you go through things and you don't understand why, some of the things aren't pleasant and very often we resort to giving up just because we can't see the light at the end of the tunnel. I think everyone knows how my life was, I think everyone knows much I suffered and most of the things I've been through almost took my soul with. I look at my past pain with no regrets, I know that if most of those things didn't happen then I wouldn't be here today. I wouldn't have met this wonderful soul..

"You prepare a table before me, in the presence of my enemies" whatever happens in your life always remember that God will prepare a table for you, in the presence of all your enemies. Let them laugh, let them mock you and when God finally wipe your tears and prepares a table for you, it will be as if like he is showing off. He will restore everything that you had lost, he is the God of restoration. The journey might not be pleasant but always trust and believe in him, God wants nothing but the best for you at all times..

Dad: uReady? (Are you ready)

Me: Yes

I put my hand under his arm as he was about to walk me down the aisle, my Mother's words echoed next to my ears "Love will find you".. As soon as we walked in, everyone stood up and instead of the old traditional "Here comes the bride" song Addo had organized a singer for me who sang a very beautiful song for me as I was walked downthe aisle. As much as I tried, I couldn't stop the tears. Seeing everyone gathered like thatto share in my happiness with me, it was definitely Heaven looking down and smiling at me.. I know that my life from hereon, is going to be filled with more good.. Addo was standing there with his ever beautiful smile waiting for me to finally be his wife..

"You need direction, love and affection Someone to be there, a man that truly cares. Put your trust in me, and I will set you free I know of a better place, and I happen to be going that way.. Take a ride with me, baby on a highway that leads to love.. Come with me, sailfree under the sky way Just both of us..

I AM ARMANI NGWENYA - ADDO. THIS, WAS MY STORY

*****THE END*****

**More New African Novels PDF Downlaod Here www.eBooksTeach.Com
Thankssss**